

---

---

THE  
LIVES  
OF THE  
Primitive Fathers.

---

---

A



---

---

# Imprimatur.

Jan. 5. 1681.

*C. Alston, R. P. D. Hen. Episc.  
Lond. à Sacris Domesticis.*

---

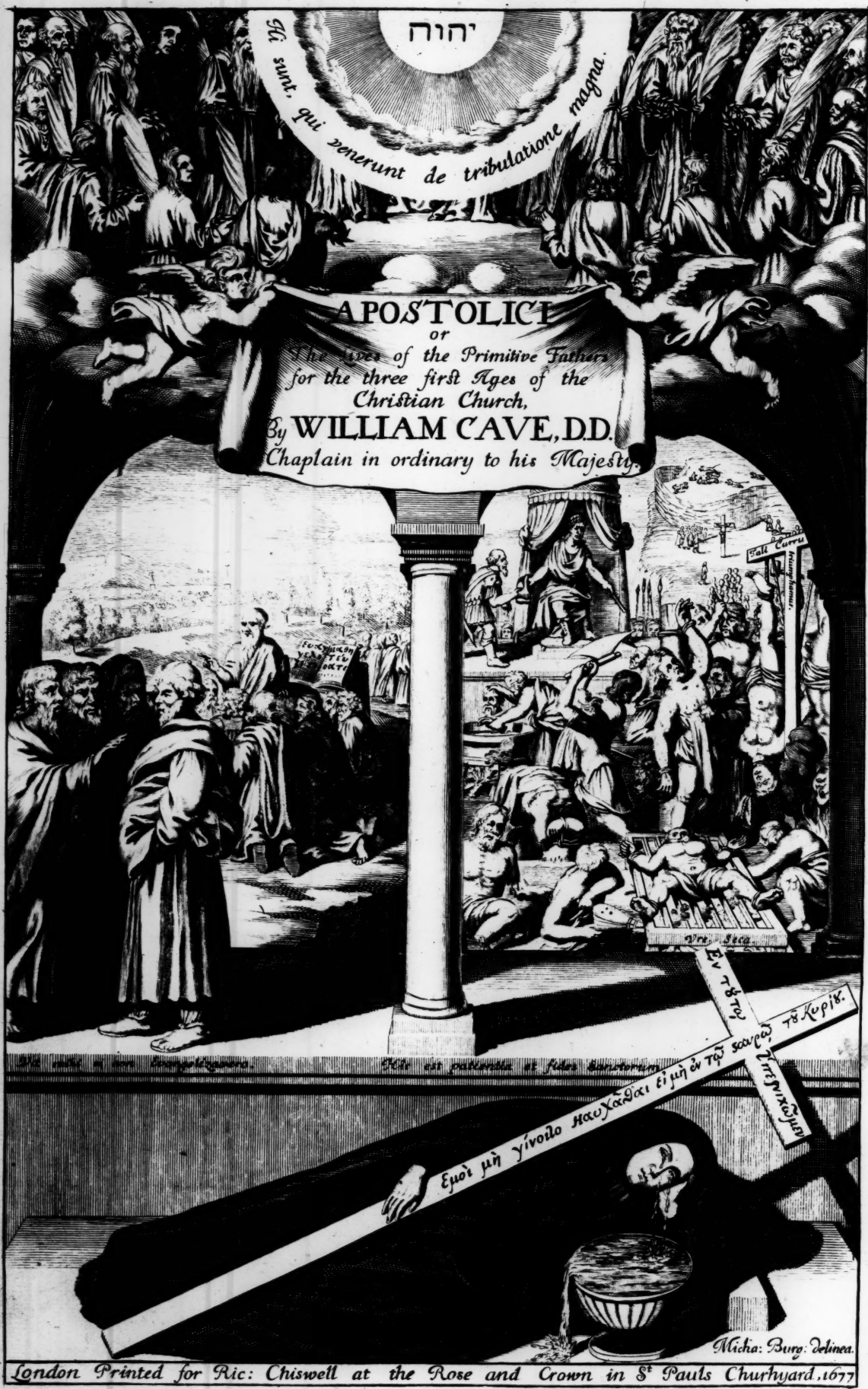
---

1000

1

1000

1000



APOSTOLICI:  
OR, THE  
HISTORY  
OF THE  
Lives, Acts, Death,  
AND  
MARTYRDOMS  
OF THOSE

Who were Contemporary with, or immediately  
Succeeded the APOSTLES.

As also the most Eminent of the  
Primitive Fathers

For the First Three Hundred Years.

To which is added, A  
CHRONOLOGY  
OF THE  
*Three First Ages* of the CHURCH.

---

By WILLIAM CAVE, D. D.  
Chaplain in Ordinary to His MAJESTY.

---

The Third Edition Corrected.

---

Euseb. Hist. Eccl. l. 3. c. 37. p. 109.

Ἄλλοι δὲ οὗτοι πάλαι ἐγνωσμένοι καὶ τὸς δὲ, ὅτι πρῶτον τῶν τῶν Ἀποστόλων ἐπιχορηγίας διδοῦναι οἱ  
καὶ αὐτοὶ παλαιῶνδε ὄντες διωκομένοι μαρτυροῦνται, καὶ καὶ πάντα τὸν οὗτον ἡμεῖς ἐκκαλεσθῶμεν ἀποστολικὴν  
καὶ τῶν Ἀποστόλων διωκομένων ἐπιχορηγίας αὐτοῖς οἰς πάλαι τὸ κήρυγμα, καὶ τὰς ἐκείνων ἐκκαλεσθῶμεν  
ἐκείνων ἐκκαλεσθῶμεν ἀπὸ πάντων οἰς πάλαι οὕτως ἐκκαλεσθῶμεν τὴν οἰκονομίαν.

---

LONDON,  
Printed by B. W. for Richard Chiswell at the *Rose and Crown* in  
S. Paul's Church-Yard. MDC LXXXVII.

APR 27 1894  
POST OFFICE  
NEW YORK

TO THE  
Messrs. J. & W. Seligman & Co.  
AND

RECEIVED  
The New York Central & Hudson River  
Railroad Company  
New York

Dear Sirs:

I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 27th inst. in relation to the above named bonds, and to inform you that the same have been forwarded to the proper authorities for their consideration.

I am, Sir, very respectfully,  
Your obedient servant,  
J. M. Smith



---

TO THE  
RIGHT HONOURABLE

AND

Right Reverend Father in God

**NATHANAEAL**

Lord Bishop of *D U R H A M*,

**Clerk of the Closet,**

*And one of His MAJESTY'S most Honourable*  
P R I V Y - C O U N C I L .

MY LORD,



**H A T** I once more presume to give your Lordship the trouble of such an Address, is not from any confidence I have in the value of these Papers; but partly because I well know, that your Lordship's candor and charity will be ready to pardon the faults, and to cover the weaknesses of the Undertaking, partly because I thought it very reasonable and decorous, there to offer the *Remaining Portions*, where I had consecrated the *First-Fruits*.

*My Lord,*

You will here meet with Persons of your own Quality and Order, Men Great and Venerable, whose



---

*The Epistle Dedicatory.*

---

whose excellent Learning and exemplary Lives, whose Piety and Patience, Zeal and Charity, Sobriety and Contempt of the World, rendred them the honour of their Times, and recommended them as incomparable Examples to Posterity. We may here see in more instances than one, the Episcopal Order immediately deriving it self from *Apostolic* hands: whereof, were not some men strangely biassed by Passion and Prejudice, there could be no shadow of dispute. For he that can read the Lives of *Timothy* and *Titus*, of *Ignatius*, *Polycarp*, &c. and yet fancy them to have been no more than meer Parish-Priests, that only superintended a little Congregation, must needs betray either prodigious Ignorance, or unreasonable Partiality. Here also we may find what a mighty Reverence these First and Better Ages had for the Governours of the Church, and the Guides of Souls; no respects being then thought great enough. Wherein they acted agreeably not only to the Rules of Christianity, but to the common sense of mankind. And indeed with what Honours and Dignities, what Rights and Revenues, what Privileges and Immunities the *Sacred Function* has been invested in all Ages and Nations, as well the rude and barbarous, as the more polite and civilized Countreys, I could abundantly shew, were it as proper to this place, as it is necessary to the Age we live in. For we are fallen into the worst of Times, wherein men have been taught, by bad Principles and worse Practices, to despise the holy Order, and to level it with the meanest of the People. And this is done not only by profest *Enemies* (for then we could have born it) but by pretended *friends*, who seem to have

---

*The Epistle Dedicatory.*

---

have a high zeal for Religion and themselves. By which means the hands of evil men have been strengthened, and the designs of those sufficiently gratified, who 'tis like would rejoice at the ruine of us both. I confess that the Persons and Credit of the Regular Clergy should by some men be treated with Contempt and Scorn, is the less to be wondered at, when Religion it self is not secure from the rude and bold railleries of some, and the serious attempts of others, who gravely design to banish the awe of Religion, and the impressions of whatever is Divine and Sacred out of the minds of men.

But, My Lord, It is not my design to entertain your Lordship with an invective against the *Iniquity* of the Times. I had rather silently bewail them, and heartily pray for their reformation, that the best of Churches may prosper and flourish under the best of Princes. May Her Peace and Order be preserved inviolable, her Liturgy and Divine Offices universally complied with, Her Solemn Assemblies duly frequented, Her Canons and Constitutions observed and practised! May Her Priests be clothed with *Righteousness*, and able by sound *Doctrine* both to *Exhort* and to *Convince Gain-sayers*! May they be laborious in their Ministeries, and be *very highly esteemed in love*, at least for their relation to God and *their Works sake*! May Her Governours diligently superintend *the Flock of God*, and *they that rule well*, be *accounted worthy of double Honour*! In which number may your Lordship share a double portion! May you fill up all the measures of a wise and able Counsellour in the State, and of a faithful and vigilant Governour in the Church! To all which great and  
† holy

---

*The Epistle Dedicatory.*

---

holy ends, if the following Papers ( wherein these things are represented in lively instances ) may be capable of contributing any assistance, and in the least measure serviceable to retrieve the Primitive temper and spirit of Religion, it will be thought an invaluable compensation of the mean endeavours of,

MY LORD,

Your Lordship's faithful

and affectionate Servant,

WILLIAM CAVE.

---

TO

# TO THE READER.



It is not the least argument for the spiritual and incorporeal Nature of humane Souls, and that they are acted by a higher principle than meer *Matter* and *Motion*, their boundless and inquisitive researches after knowledge. Our minds naturally grasp at a kind of Omniscieny, and not content with the speculations of this or that particular Science, hunt over the whole course of Nature; nor are they satisfied with the present state of things, but pursue the notices of former Ages, and are desirous to comprehend whatever transactions have been since Time it self had a Being. We endeavour to make up the shortness of our lives by the extent of our knowledge; and because we cannot see forwards and spy what lies concealed in the Womb of Futurity, we look back, and eagerly trace the Footsteps of those Times that went before us. Indeed to be ignorant of what happened before we our selves came into the World, is (as *Cicero* truly observes) to be always Children, and to deprive our selves of what would at once entertain our minds with the highest pleasure, and add the greatest authority and advantage to us. The knowledge of Antiquity, besides that it gratifies one of our noblest curiosities, improves our minds by the wisdom of preceding Ages, acquaints us with the most remarkable occurrences of the Divine Providence, and presents us with the most apt and proper rules and instances that may form us to a life of true Philosophy and vertue; History (says *Thucydides*) being nothing else but φιλοσοφία ἐκ παραδειγμάτων, *Philosophy drawn from Examples*: the one is a more gross and popular Philosophy, the other a more subtle and refined History.

*In Oratore*  
pag. 268.

*Ap. Dion.*  
*Halic.* π.  
ει λόγων  
βιβλ. p. 65.  
Tom. 2.

These considerations, together with a desire to perpetuate the memory of brave and great actions, gave birth to History, and obliged mankind to transmit the more observable passages both of their own and foregoing Times to the notice of Posterity. The first in this kind was *Moses*, the great



---

To the READER.

---

Prince and Legislator of the *Jewish Nation*, who from the Creation of the World conveyed down the Records of above MMDL. years; the same course being more or less continued through all the periods of the *Jewish State*. Among the *Babylonians* they had their public *Archives*, which were transcribed by *Berosus* the Priest of *Belus*, who composed the *Chaldean History*. The *Egyptians* were wont to record their memorable Acts upon Pillars in *Hieroglyphic* notes and sacred Characters, first begun (as they pretend) by *Thouth*, or the first of their *Mercuries*; out of which *Manethos* their Chief Priest collected his three Books of *Egyptian Dynasties*, which he dedicated to *Ptolomy Philadelphus*, second of that line. The *Phœnician History* was first attempted by *Sanchoniathon*, digested partly out of the Annals of Cities, partly out of the Books kept in the Temple, and communicated to him by *Jerombaal* Priest of the God *Joa*: this he dedicated to *Abibalus* King of *Berytus*, which *Philo Byblius* about the time of the Emperour *Adrian* translated into *Greek*. The *Greeks* boast of the Antiquity of *Cadmus*, *Archilochus*, and many others, though the most ancient of their Historians now extant, are *Herodotus*, *Thucydides*, and *Xenophon*. Among the *Romans* the foundations of History were laid in *Annals*, the public Acts of every year being made up by the *Pontifex Maximus*, who kept them at his own house, that the people upon any emergency might resort to them for satisfaction. These were the *Annales Maximi*, and afforded excellent materials to those who afterwards wrote the History of that great and powerful Commonwealth.

But that which of all other challenges the greatest regard both as it more immediately concerns the present enquiry, and as it contains accounts of things relating to our biggest interests, is the History of the Church. For herein, as in a Glass, we have the true face of the Church in its several Ages represented to us. Here we find with what infinite care those Divine Records, which are the great instruments of our eternal happiness, have through the several periods of time been conveyed down to us; with what a mighty success Religion has triumphed over the greatest oppositions, and spread its Banners in the remotest corners of the World. With how incomparable a zeal good Men have contended earnestly for that Faith which was once delivered to the Saints; with what a bitter  
and

and implacable fury the Enemies of Religion have set upon it, and how signally the Divine Providence has appeared in its preservation, and returned the mischief upon their own heads. Here we see the constant succession of Bishops and the Ministers of Religion in their several stations, *the glorious company of the Apostles, the goodly fellowship of the Prophets, the noble Army of Martyrs*, who with the most chearful and composed minds have gone to Heaven through the acutest torments. In short, we have here the most admirable examples of a divine and religious Life, of a real and unfeigned Piety, a sincere and universal Charity, a strict Temperance and Sobriety, and unconquerable Patience and Submission clearly represented to us. And the higher we go, the more illustrious are the instances of Piety and Vertue. For however later Ages may have improved in knowledge, Experience daily making new additions to Arts and Sciences, yet former Times were most eminent for the practice and virtues of a holy life. The Divine Laws while newly published, had a stronger influence upon the minds of Men, and the Spirit of Religion was more active and vigorous, till Men by degrees began to be debauched into that impiety and prophaneness, that in these last Times has over-run the World.

It were altogether needless and improper for me to consider what Records there are of the state of the Church before our Saviours Incarnation: it is sufficient to my purpose to enquire by what hands the first affairs of the Christian Church have been transmitted to us. As for the Life and Death, the Actions and Miracles of our Saviour, and some of the first acts of his Apostles, they are fully represented by the Evangelical Historians. Indeed immediately after them we meet with nothing of this nature, the Apostles and their immediate Successors (as *Eusebius* observes) not being at leisure to write many Books, as being imployed in Ministeries greater and more immediately serviceable to the World. The first that engaged in this way, was *Hegeſippus*, an ancient and Apostolic Man (as he in *Photius* styles him) an *Hebrew* by descent, and born (as is probable) in *Paleſtin*. He flourished principally in the reign of M. *Aurelius*, and came to *Rome* in the time of *Anicetus*, where he resided till the time of *Eleutherius*. He wrote five Books of Ecclesiastical History, which he stiled, *Commentaries of the Acts of the Church*, wherein in a plain and familiar

*H. Eccl. l. 3.  
c. 24. p. 94.*

*Cod. 232.  
col. 893.*



Lib. I. c. I.  
p. 3.

Præfat. de  
Vir. &  
Script.  
Euseb.

liar stile he described the Apostles Travels and Preachings, the remarkable passages of the Church, the several Schisms, Heresies, and Persecutions that infested it from our Lord's death till his own time. But these, alas, are long since lost. The next that succeeded in this Province, though the first that reduced it to any exactness and perfection, was *Eusebius*. He was born in *Palestin*, about the later times of the Emperour *Gallienus*, ordained Presbyter by *Agapius* Bishop of *Cæsarea*, who suffering about the end of the *Dioclesian* Persecution, *Eusebius* succeeded in his See. A Man of incomparable parts and learning, and of no less industry and diligence in searching out the Records and Antiquities of the Church. After several other Volumes in defence of the Christian Cause against the assaults both of the *Jews* and *Gentiles*, he set himself to write an *Ecclesiastical History*, wherein he designed (as himself tells us) to recount from the birth of our Lord till his time the most memorable Transactions of the Church, the Apostolical successions, the first Preachers and Planters of the Gospel, the Bishops that presided in the most eminent Sees, the most noted Errours and Heresies, the calamities that beset the *Jewish* state, the attempts and Persecutions made against the Christians by the Powers of the World, the torments and sufferings of the Martyrs, and the blessed and happy period that was put to them by the conversion of *Constantine the Great*. All this accordingly, he digested in Ten Books, which he composed in the declining part of his life, and (as *Valerius* conjectures) some years after the Council of *Nice*, tho' when not long before he expressly affirms that History to have been written before the *Nicene* Synod; how he can herein be excused from a palpable contradiction, I cannot imagine. 'Tis true *Eusebius* takes no notice of that Council, but that might be partly because he designed to end in that joyful and prosperous Scene of things, which *Constantine* restored to the Church (as he himself plainly intimates in the beginning of his History,) which he was not willing to discompose with the controversies and contentions of that Synod, according to the humour of all Historians, who delight to shut up their Histories with some happy and successful period; and partly because he intended to give some account of the affairs of that Council in his Book of *the Life of Constantine the Great*.

The Materials wherewith he was furnished for this great under-

---

To the READER.

---

undertaking ( which he complains were very small and inconsiderable ) were, besides *Hegesippus* his *Commentaries* then extant, *Africanus* his *Chronology*, the Books and Writings of several Fathers, the Records of particular Cities, Ecclesiastical Epistles written by the Bishops of those Times, and kept in the Archives of their several Churches, especially that famous Library at *Jerusalem*, erected by *Alexander* Bishop of that place, but chiefly the Acts of the Martyrs, which in those times were taken at large with great care and accuracy. These, at least a great many of them, *Eusebius* collected into one Volume, under the Title of Ἀρχαίων Μαρτυρίων Συλλογὴ, *A Collection of the Ancient Martyrdoms*; which he refers to at every turn; besides a particular Narrative which he wrote ( still extant as an Appendage to the Eighth Book of his Ecclesiastical History ) concerning the Martyrs that suffered in *Palestine*. A great part of these Acts by the negligence and unfaithfulness of succeeding Times, were interpolated and corrupted, especially in the darker and more undiscerning Ages, when Superstition had overspread the Church, and when Ignorance and Interest conspired to fill the World with idle and improbable Stories, and men took what liberty they pleased in venting the issue of their own Brains, insomuch that some of the more wise and moderate, even of the *Roman* Communion, have complained, not without a just resentment and indignation, That *Laërtius* has written the Lives of Philosophers with more truth and chastity, than many have done the Lives of the Saints. Upon this account a great and general out-cry has been made against *Simeon Metaphrastes*, as the Father of incredible Legends, and one that has notoriously imposed upon the World by the most fabulous reports. Nay, some, to reflect the more disgrace upon him, have represented him as a petty Schoolmaster. A charge, in my mind, rash and inconsiderate, and in a great measure groundless and uncharitable. He was a person of very considerable birth and fortunes, advanced to the highest Honours and Offices, one of the *Primier* Ministers of State, and, as is probable, *Great Chancellor* to the Emperour of *Constantinople*; learned and eloquent above the common standard, and who by the persuasions, not only of some great ones of that time ( he flourished under *Leo the Wise* about the Year DCCCC. but principally wrote under the reign of his successor ) but of the Emperour

perour himself was prevailed with to reduce the Lives of the Saints in order. To which end by his own infinite labour, and the no less expences of the Emperour, he ransacked the Libraries of the Empire, till he had amassed a vast heap of Volumes. The more ancient Acts he passed without any considerable alteration, more than the correcting them by a collation of several Copies, and the enlarging some circumstances to render them more plain and easie, as appears by comparing some that are extant at this day. Where Lives were confused and immethodical, or written in a stile rude and barbarous, he digested the history into order, and clothed it in more polite and elegant language. Others that were defective in neither, he left as they were, and gave them place amongst his own. So that I see no reason for so severe a censure, unless it were evident, that he took his accounts of things not from Writings of those that had gone before him, but forged them of his own head. Not to say that things have been made much worse by Translations, seldom appearing in any but the dress of the *Latine* Church, and that many Lives are laid at his door, of which he never was the Father, it being usual with some, when they met with the Life of a Saint, the Author whereof they knew not, presently to fasten it upon *Metaphrastes*. But to return to *Eusebius*, from whom we have digressed.

His Ecclesiastical History, the almost only remaining Records of the ancient Church, deserves a just esteem and veneration, without which those very fragments of Antiquity had been lost, which by this means have escaped the common Shipwrack. And indeed *S. Hierom*, *Nicephorus*, and the rest do not only build upon his foundation, but almost entirely derive their materials from him. As for *Socrates*, *Sozomen*, *Theodoret*, and the later Historians, they relate to Times, without the limits of my present business, generally conveying down little more than the History of their own Times, the Church-History of those more early Ages being either quite neglected, or very negligently managed. The first that to any purpose broke the ice after the Reformation, were the *Centuriators* of *Magdeburgh*, a combination of learned and industrious Men, the chief of whom were *John Wigandus*, *Matth. Judex*, *Basilus Faber*, *Andreas Corvinus*, but especially *Matth. Flaccius Illyricus*, who was the very Soul of the undertaking.



---

To the READER.

---

taking. They set themselves to traverse the Writings of the Fathers, and all the ancient Monuments of the Church, collecting whatever made to their purpose, which with indefatigable pains they digested into an Ecclesiastic History. This they divided into *Centuries*, and each *Century* into fifteen Chapters, into each of which, as into its proper Classis and Repository, they reduced whatever concerned the propagation of Religion, the Peace or Persecutions of the Christians, the Doctrines of the Church, and the Heresies that arose in it, the Rites and Ceremonies, the Government, Schisms, Councils, Bishops, and persons noted either for Religion or Learning, Hereticks, Martyrs, Miracles, the state of the *Jews*, the Religion of *them that were without*, and the political revolutions of that Age. A method accurate and useful, and which administers to a very distinct and particular understanding the affairs of the Church. The four first Centuries were finished in the City of *Magdeburgh*, the rest elsewhere. A work of prodigious diligence and singular use. True it is, that it labours under some faults and imperfections, and is chargeable with considerable errors and mistakes. And no wonder: for besides that, the Persons themselves may be supposed to have been sometimes betrayed into an ἀμετρία ἢ ἀνδολῆς by the heats and contentions of those Times, it was the first attempt in this kind, and which never passed the emendations of a second review; an undertaking vast and diffusive, and engaged in, while Books were yet more scarce and less correct. Accordingly they modestly enough confess, that they rather attempted a delineation of Church-History, than one that was compleat and absolute, desiring only to minister opportunity to those, who were able and willing to furnish out one more intire and perfect. And yet take it with all the faults and disadvantages that can be charged upon it, and they bear no proportion to the usefulness and excellency of the thing it self.

*Prefat. in  
Hist. Ec-  
cles. præ-  
fix. Cem. I.*

No sooner did this work come abroad, but it made a loud noise and bustle at *Rome*, as wherein the corruptions and innovations of that Church were sufficiently exposed and laid open to the World. Accordingly it was necessary that an Antidote should be provided against it. For which purpose *Philip Nereus* (who had lately founded the *Oratorian Order at Rome*) commands *Baronius*, then a very young Man,

† †

and

---

To the READER.

---

and newly entred into the *Congregation*, to undertake it, and in order thereunto, daily to read nothing but Ecclesiastical Lectures in the Oratory. This course he held for thirty years together, seven several times going over the History of the Church. Thus trained up, and abundantly furnished with fit materials, he sets upon the Work itself, which he disposed by way of *Annals*, comprising the affairs of the whole Christian World in the orderly series and succession of every year. A method much more Natural and Historical than that of the *Centuries*. A noble design, and which it were injustice to defraud of its due praise and commendation, as wherein besides whatever occurrences that concern the state of the Church, reduced (as far as his skill in Chronology could enable him) under their proper periods, he has brought to light many passages of the Ancients, not known before, peculiarly advantaged herein by the many noble Libraries that are at *Rome*. A Monument of Incredible pains and labour, as which besides the difficulties of the thing itself, was entirely carried on by his single endeavours, and written all with his own hand, and that too in the midst of infinite avocations, the distractions of a *Parish-Cure*, the private affairs of his own Oratory, Preaching, hearing Confessions, writing other Books, not to mention the many troublesome, though honourable Offices and Employments, which in the course of the Work were heaped upon him. In short, a Work it was by which he had infinitely more obliged the World, than can be well expressed, had he managed it with as much faithfulness and impartiality as he has done with learning and industry. But alas, too evident it is, that he designed not so much the advancement of Truth, as the honour and interest of a Cause, and therefore drew the face of the ancient Church, not as Antiquity truly represents it, but according to the present form and complexion of the Church of *Rome*, forcing every thing to look that way, to justify the traditions and practices, and to exalt the super-eminent power and grandeur of that Church, making both the Scepter and the Crosier stoop to the Triple Crown. This is that that runs almost through every page, and indeed both he \* himself, and the † Writer of his Life, more than once, expressly affirms, that his design was to defend the Traditions, and to preserve the Dignity of that Church against the late Innovators,

\* *Epist. Ded. ad Sixt. V. Tom. 1. Annal. prefix.*  
† *Hier. Baronab. de vit. Baron l. 1. c. 18. p. 40. c. 19 p. 43.*

---

To the READER,

---

vators, and the labours of the *Magdeburgensian Centuriators*, and that the opposing of them was the occasion of that Work. So fatally does partiality and the interest of a Cause spoil the most brave and generous Undertakings.

What has been hitherto Prefaced, the Reader, I hope, will not censure as an unprofitable digression, nor think it altogether unsuitable to the present Work, whereof 'tis like he will expect some short account. Being some time since engaged, I know not how, in searching after the Antiquities of the *Apostolic Age*, I was then strongly importuned to have carried on the design for some of the succeeding Ages. This I then wholly laid aside, without any further thoughts of re-assuming it. For experience had made me sufficiently sensible of the difficulty of the thing, and I well foresaw how almost impossible it was to be managed to any tolerable satisfaction; so small and inconsiderable, so broken and imperfect are the accounts that are left us of those early times. Notwithstanding which, I have once more suffered myself to be engaged in it, and have endeavoured to hunt out, and gather together those Ruines of Primitive Story that yet remain, that I might do what honour I was able to the memory of those brave and worthy Men, who were so instrumental to plant Christianity in the World, to seal it with their Blood, and to oblige Posterity by those excellent Monuments of Learning and Piety which they left behind them. I have bounded my account within the first three hundred Years, notwithstanding the barrenness and obscurity of those Ages of the Church. Had I consulted my own ease or credit, I should have commenced my design from that time which is the period of my present undertaking, *viz.* the following *Sæculum*, when Christianity became the Religion of the Empire, and the Records of the Church furnish us with large and plentiful materials for such a Work. But I confess my humour and inclination led me to the first and best Ages of Religion, the *Memoires* whereof I have picked up, and thereby enabled my self to draw the lineaments of as many of those *Apostolical* persons, as concerning whom I could retrieve any considerable notices and accounts of things. With what success, the Reader must judge: with whom what entertainment it will find, I know not, nor am I much solicitous. I have done what I could, and am not conscious to my self, that I have been  
wanting



---

To the READER.

---

wanting in any point either of Fidelity or Care. If there be fewer persons here described than the space of almost three hundred Years may seem to promise, and less said concerning some of them than the Reader does expect; he will I presume be more just and charitable, than to charge it upon me, but rather impute it to the unhappy fate of so many ancient Records as have been lost through the carelessness and unfaithfulness of succeeding Times. As far as my mean abilities do reach, and the nature of the thing will admit, I have endeavoured the Readers satisfaction; and though I pretend not to present him an exact Church-History of those Times, yet I think I may without vanity assure him, that there is scarce any material passage of Church-Antiquity, of which in some of these Lives he will not find a competent and reasonable account. Nor is the History of those Ages maimed and lame only in its main limbs and parts, but (what is greatly to be bewailed) purblind and defective in its eyes, I mean, confused and uncertain in point of Chronology. The greatest part of what we have is from *Eusebius*, in whose account of Times some things are false, more uncertain, and the whole the worse for passing through other hands after his. Indeed next to the recovering the lost portions of Antiquity, I know nothing would be more acceptable, than the setting right the disjointed Frame of those times: a Cure, which we hope for shortly from a very able hand. In the mean time for my own part, and so far as may be useful to the purposes of the following Papers, I have by the best measures I could take in some haste, drawn up a Chronology of these three Ages, which though it pretends not to the utmost exactness and accuracy that is due to a matter of this nature, yet it will serve however to give a quick and present prospect of things, and to shew the connexure and concurrence of Ecclesiastical Affairs with the Times of the *Roman* Empire. So far as I follow *Eusebius*, I principally rely upon the accounts given in his History, which being written after his *Chronicon*, may be supposed the issue of his more exact researches, and to have passed the judgment of his riper and more considering thoughts. And perhaps the Reader will say (and I confess I am somewhat of his mind) had I observed the same rule towards these Papers, he had never been troubled with them. But that is too late now to be recalled; and 'tis folly to bewail what is impossible to be remedied.

T H E

---

# THE CONTENTS.

---

## The Introduction.

**T**HE several periods of the three first Ages. Our Lord's coming, and the seasonableness of it for the propagation of the Gospel. His entrance upon his Prophetic Office, and the sum of his Ministry. The success of his doctrine, and the several places where he preached. The Story of Agbarus not altogether improbable. Our Lord's Death. What attestation given to the passages concerning Christ by Heathen Writers. The testimony of Tacitus. Pilat's relation sent to Tiberius. The Acts of Pilat, what. Pilat's Letter now extant, Spurious. The Apostles entering upon their Commission, and first Acts after our Lord's Ascension. How long they continued in Judæa. Their dispersion to preach in the Gentile Provinces, and the success of it. The state of the Church after the Apostolic Age. The mighty progress of Christianity. The numbers and quality of its Converts. Its speedy and incredible success in all Countreys, noted out of the Writers of those Times. The early conversion of Britain to Christianity. The general declension of Paganism. The silence and ceasing of their Oracles. This acknowledged by Porphyry to be the effect of the Christian Religion appearing in the World. A great argument of its truth and divinity. The means contributing to the success of Christianity. The miraculous Powers then resident in the Church. This proved at large out of the Primitive Writers. The great learning and abilities of many of the Churches Champions. The most eminent of the Christian Apologists. The principal of them that engaged against the Heresies of those Times. Others renowned for other parts of Learning. The indefatigable zeal and industry used in the propagation of Christianity. Instructing and Catechizing new Converts. Schools erected. Travelling to preach in all parts of the World. The admirable lives of the ancient Christians. The singular efficacy of the Christian doctrine upon the minds of Men. A holy life the most acceptable sacrifice. Their incomparable patience and constancy under sufferings. A brief Survey of the Ten Persecutions. The first begun by Nero. His brutish extravagances, and inhumane cruelties. His burning Rome, and the dreadfulfulness of that conflagration. This charged upon the Christians, and their several kinds of punishment noted out of Tacitus. The chief of them that suffered. The Persecution under Domitian. The Vices of that Prince. The cruel usage of S. John. The third begun by Trajan. His character. His proceeding against the Christians as illegal Societies. Pliny's Letter to Trajan concerning the Christians, with the Emperour's answer. Adrian, Trajan's successor; a mixture in him of Vice and Vertue. His persecuting the Christians. This the fourth Persecution. The mitigation of it, and its breaking out again under Antoninus Pius. The excellent temper and learning of M. Aurelius. The fifth Persecution raised

(\*)

---

## The CONTENTS.

---

*raised by him. Its fierceness in the East, at Rome, especially in France; the most eminent that suffered there. The Emperours Victory in his German Wars gained by the Christians Prayers. Severus his temper: his cruelty towards the Christians. The chief of the Martyrs under the sixth Persecution. Maximinus his immoderate ambition and barbarous cruelty. The Author of the seventh Persecution. This not universal. The common evils and calamities charged upon the Christians. Decius the eighth Persecutor; otherwise an excellent Prince. The violence of this Persecution, and the most noted sufferers. The foundations of Monachism when laid. The ninth Persecution, and its rage under Valerian. The most eminent Martyrs. The severe punishment of Valerian. His miserable usage by the Persian King. The tenth Persecution begun under Dioclesian, and when. The fierceness and cruelty of that time. The admirable carriage and resolution of the Christians under all these sufferings. The proper influence of this Argument to convince the World. The whole concluded with Lactantius his excellent reasonings to this purpose.*

Page. i.

---

### The Life of S. STEPHEN the Protomartyr.

*The violent opposition that Christianity at its first appearance met with both from Jews and Gentiles. S. Stephen's Kindred unknown. One of the Seventy. The great Charity of the Primitive Believers. Dissension between the Hebrews and Grecians. Hellenists who. The Original of Deacons in the Christian Church. The nature of their Office. The number and qualification of the Persons. Stephen's eminent accomplishments for the place. The envy and opposition of the Jews against him. The Synagogue of the Libertines, what. Of the Cyrenians, Alexandrians, &c. Their disputation with S. Stephen, and the success of it. False Witnesses suborned to depose against him. The several parts of their charge considered. The mighty veneration of the Jews for their Temple and the Mosaic Institutions. Its destruction by Titus; and their attempts to rebuild it under Julian frustrated by a miracle. Stephen's Apology before the Sanhedrin. The Jews rage against him. He is encouraged by a vision. Stoning to death, what kind of punishment; the manner of it among the Jews. S. Stephen's Martyrdom. His Character and excellent Vertues. The time and place of his suffering. The place and manner of his burial. His body first discovered, when and how. The story of its translation to Constantinople. The miracles said to be done by his Reliques, and at his Memoria. Several reported by S. Augustin. What credit to be given to them. Miracles how long, and why continued in the Church. The vain pretences of the Church of Rome.*

Pag. i.

---

### The Life of S. PHILIP the Deacon and Evangelist.

*His Birth-place. The confounding him with S. Philip the Apostle. His election to the Office of a Deacon. The dispersion of the Church at Jerusalem. Philip's preaching at Samaria. Inveterate prejudices between the Samaritans and the Jews. The great success of S. Philip's Ministry.*

The



---

## The CONTENTS.

---

*The Impostures of Simon Magus, and his embracing Christianity. The Christians at Samaria confirmed by Peter and John. Philip sent to Gaza. His meeting with the Ethiopian Eunuch. What Ethiopia here meant. Candace who. The custom of retaining Eunuchs in the Courts of the Eastern Princes. This Eunuch who. His Office. His Religion and great Piety. His Conversion and Baptism by S. Philip. The place where he was baptized. The Eunuchs return, and propagating Christianity in his own Country. Philip's journey to Caesarea, and fixing his abode there. His four daughters Virgin-Prophetesses. His death.* Pag. 23.

---

### The Life of S. BARNABAS the Apostle.

*His Surname Joses. The title of Barnabas whence added to him. His Country and Parents. His Education and Conversion to Christianity. His generous Charity. S. Paul's address to him after his Conversion. His Commission to confirm the Church of Antioch. His taking S. Paul into his assistance. Their being sent with contributions to the Church at Jerusalem. Their peculiar separation for the Ministry of the Gentiles. Imposition of hands the usual Rite of Ordination. Their travels through several Countries. Their success in Cyprus. Barnabas at Lystra taken for Jupiter, and why. Their return to Antioch. Their Ambassy to Jerusalem about the controversie concerning the legal Rites. Barnabas seduced by Peter's dissimulation at Antioch. The dissension between him and S. Paul. Barnabas his journey to Cyprus. His Voyage to Rome, and preaching the Christian Faith there. His Martyrdom by the Jews in Cyprus. His Burial. His Body when first discovered. S. Matthew's Hebrew Gospel found with it. The great privileges hereupon conferred upon the See of Salamis. A description of his person and temper. The Epistle anciently published under his name. The design of it. The practical parts of it excellently managed under the two ways of Light and Darkeness.* Pag. 33.

---

### The Life of S. TIMOTHY the Apostle and Evangelist.

*S. Timothy's Country and Kindred. His religious education. The great advantages of an early Piety. Converted to Christianity by S. Paul, and made choice of to be his Companion. Circumcised by S. Paul, and why. This no contradicting S. Paul's doctrine concerning Circumcision. His Travels with S. Paul for the propagation of the Faith. His return from Thessalonica, and S. Paul's two Epistles to that Church. S. Timothy consecrated Bishop of Ephesus. The consent of Antiquity herein. Ordination in those times usually done by Prophetic Designation, and the reason of it. Timothy's age enquired into. The importance of *ἐγὼ καὶ νεότης* (let no Man despise thy youth) the words shewed to be used by the best Writers for a considerable age. S. Paul's first and second Epistle to him, and the importance of them. The manners of the Ephesians noted. Their Festival called *ἡμέρα τῆς γενέσεως*. S. Timothy's Martyrdom. The time of his death, place of his Burial, and translation of his Body. His weak*

---

## The CONTENTS.

---

*and infirm constitution. His great abstinence, and admirable zeal. S. Paul's singular affection for him. Different from Timotheus in S. Denys the Areopagite. Another Timothy S. Paul's Disciple, Martyred under Antoninus.*

Pag. 45.

---

### The Life of S. TITUS Bishop of Crete.

*His Country enquired into. The report of his noble extract. His Education and Conversion to Christianity. His acquaintance with, and accompanying S. Paul to the Synod at Jerusalem. S. Paul's refusing to circumcise him, and why. His attending S. Paul in his travels. Their arrival in Crete. Titus constituted by him Bishop of that Island. The testimonies of the Ancients to that purpose. The intimations of it in S. Paul's Epistle to him. S. Paul's censure of the People of Crete, justified by the account which Gentile Writers give of their evil manners. A short view of the Epistle it self. The directions concerning Ecclesiastic persons. His charge to exhort and convince Gain-sayers. Crete abounding with Heretical Teachers. Jewish Fables and Genealogies what, and whence derived. The Æones and οὐρανία of the ancient Gnostics borrowed from the Τρογονία of the Heathen Poets. This shewn by particular instances. Titus commanded to attend S. Paul at Nicopolis. His coming to him into Macedonia. His following S. Paul to Rome, and departure into Dalmatia. The Story of Pliny the Younger's being converted by him in Crete, censured. His age and death. The Church erected to his memory.*

Pag. 55.

---

### The Life of S. DIONYSUS the Areopagite.

*Dionysius born at Athens. The quality of his Parents. His domestic Studies. His foreign Travels. Egypt frequented as the staple place of all recondite Learning. His residence at Heliopolis. The strange and miraculous Eclipse at our Saviours Passion. Dionysius his remarques upon it. His return to Athens, and being made one of the Judges of the Areopagus. The nature of this Court: the number and quality of its Judges. S. Paul arraigned before it: his Discourse, and its success. Dionysius his conversion. His further instruction by Hierotheus. Hierotheus, who. Dionysius constituted Bishop of Athens. A brief account of his Story according to those that confound him with Dionysius Bishop of Paris. These shewn to be distinct. The original and procedure of the Mistake enquired into. A probable account given of it. Dionysius his Martyrdom at Athens, and the time of it. A fabulous miracle reported of his Scull. The description of his person, and the hyperbolical commendations which the Greeks give of him. The Books ascribed to him. These none of his. Apollinaris (probably) shewed to be the Author of them. Several passages of the Ancients noted to that purpose. Books why oft published under other Mens names. These Books the Fountain of Enthusiasm and mystical Theology. A passage in them instanced in to that purpose.*

Pag. 65.

The

---

## The C O N T E N T S.

---

### The Life of S. CLEMENS Bishop of Rome.

*His Birth-place. His Parents, Kindred, Education, and Conversion to Christianity noted out of the Books extant under his name. His relation to the Imperial Family shewed to be a mistake. His being made Bishop of Rome. The great confusion about the first Bishops of that See. A probable account endeavoured concerning the order of S. Clemens his succession, and the reconciling it with the times of the other Bishops. What account given of him in the ancient Epistle to St. James. Clemens his appointing Notaries to write the Acts of the Martyrs, and dispatching Messengers to propagate the Gospel. The Schism in the Church of Corinth; and Clemens his Epistle to that Church. An enquiry into the time when that Epistle was written. The Persecution under Trajan. His proceeding against the Heteriæ. A short relation of S. Clemens his troubles out of Simeon Metaphrastes. His banishment to Cherson. Damnatio ad Metalla, what. The great success of his Ministry in the place of his exile. S. Clemens his Martyrdom, and the kind of it. The anniversary miracle reported on the day of his solemnity. The time of his Martyrdom. His genuine Writings. His Epistle to the Corinthians: the commendations given of it by the Ancients. Its Stile and Character. The great modesty and humility that appears in it. The fragment of his second Epistle. Supposititious Writings. The Recognitions; their several titles, and different Editions. Their Antiquity, what. A conjecture concerning the Author of them. The censures of the Ancients concerning the corrupting of them, considered. The Epistle to S. James.* Pag. 77.

---

### The Life of S. SIMEON Bishop of Jerusalem.

*The heedless confounding him with others of the like name. His Parents and near Relation to our Saviour. The time of his Birth. His strict Education and way of Life. The Order and institution of the Rechabites, what. His conversion to Christianity. The great care about a Successor to S. James Bishop of Jerusalem. Simeon chosen to that place, when and why. The causes of the destruction of the Jewish state. The original and progress of those Wars briefly related. The miserable state of Jerusalem by Siege, Pestilence, and Famine. Jerusalem stormed. The burning of the Temple, and the rage of the Fire. The number of the Slain and Captives. The just accomplishment of our Lords predictions. The many Prodigies portending this destruction. The Christians forewarned to depart before Jerusalem was shut up. Their withdrawalment to Pella. The admirable care of the Divine Providence over them. Their return back to Jerusalem, when. The flourishing condition of the Christian Church there. The occasion of S. Simeon's Martyrdom. The infinite jealousy of the Roman Emperours concerning the line of David. Simeon's apprehension and crucifixion. His singular torments and patience. His great age, and the time of his death.* Pag. 89.



---

## The CONTENTS.

---

### The Life of S. IGNATIUS Bishop of Antioch.

*His Originals unknown. Called Theophorus, and why. The Story of his being taken up into our Saviours arms, refuted. His Apostolic education. S. John's Disciple. His being made Bishop of Antioch. The eminency of that See. The order of his succession stated. His prudent Government of that Church. The tradition of his appointing Antiphonal hymns by revelation. Trajan's persecuting the Church at Antioch. His discourse with Ignatius. Ignatius his cruel usage. His sentence passed. His being transmitted to Rome: and why sent so far to his execution. His arrival at Smyrna, and meeting with S. Polycarp. His Epistles to several Churches. His coming to Troas, and Epistles thence. His arrival at Porto Romano. Met on the way by the Christians at Rome. His earnest desire of Martyrdom. His praying for the prosperity of the Church. The time of his Passion. His being thrown to wild Beasts. What kind of punishment that among the Romans. The Collection of his Remains, and their transportation to Antioch; and the great honours done to them. The great plenty of them in the Church of Rome. Trajan's surceasing the Persecution against the Christians. The dreadful Earthquakes happening at Antioch. Ignatius his admirable Piety. His general solicitude for the preservation and propagation of the Christian Doctrine, as an Apostle. His care, diligence, and fidelity, as a Bishop. His patience and fortitude, as a Martyr. His Epistles. Polycarp's commendation of them.* Pag. 99.

---

### The Life of S. POLYCARP Bishop of Smyrna.

*The place of his Nativity. The honour and eminency of Smyrna. His education under S. John. By him constituted Bishop of Smyrna. Whether the same with the Bishop to whom S. John committed the young Mar. S. Polycarp the Angel of the Church of Smyrna mentioned in the Apocalyp. Ignatius his arrival at Smyrna. His Letters to that Church, and to S. Polycarp. His Journey to Rome about the Quartodeciman Controversie. The time of it enquired into. Anicetus his succession to the See of Rome. His reception there by Anicetus. Their mutual kindness notwithstanding the difference. His stout opposing Heretics at Rome. His sharp treatment of Marcion, and mighty zeal against those early corrupters of the Christian Doctrine. Irenæus his particular remarques of S. Polycarp's actions. The Persecution under M. Antoninus. The time of Polycarp's Martyrdom noted. The Acts of it written by the Church of Smyrna: their great esteem and value. S. Polycarp sought for. His Martyrdom foretold by a Dream. His apprehension, and being conducted to Smyrna. Irenarchæ, who. Polycarp's rude treatment by Herodes. His being brought before the Proconsul. Christians refused to swear by the Emperour's genius, and why. His pious and resolute answers. His slighting the Proconsul's threatnings. His sentence proclaimed. Afiarchæ, who. Preparation for his burning. His Prayer before his death. Miraculously preserved in the fire. Dispatched with a Sword. The care of the*

---

## The C O N T E N T S.

---

*the Christians about his Remains. This far from a superstitious veneration. Their annual meeting at the place of his Martyrdom. His great Age at his death. The day of his Passion. His Tomb how honoured at this day. The judgments happening to Smyrna after his death. The Faith and Patience of the Primitive Christians noted out of the Preface to the Acts of his Martyrdom. His Epistle to the Philippians. Its usefulness. Highly valued and publicly read in the ancient Church. The Epistle it self.*  
Pag. 111.

---

### The Life of S. Q U A D R A T U S Bishop of Athens.

*His Birth-place enquired into. His Learning. His Education under the Apostles. Publius Bishop of Athens. Quadratus his succession in that See. The degenerate state of that Church at his coming to it. His indefatigable zeal and industry in its reformation. Its purity and flourishing condition noted by Origen. Quadratus his being endowed with a spirit of Prophecy, and a power of Miracles. This person proved to be the same with our Athenian Bishop. The troubles raised against the Christians under the Reign of Adrian. Adrian's Character. His disposition towards Religion, and base thoughts of the Christians. His fondness for the Learning and Religion of Greece. His coming to Athens, and kindness to that City. His being initiated into the Eleusinian mysteries. These mysteries what, and the degrees of initiation. Several addresses made to the Emperour in behalf of the Christians. Quadratus his Apologetic. Ser. Gratianus his Letter to Adrian concerning the Christians. The Emperours Rescript. His good opinion afterwards of Christ and his Religion. Quadratus driven from his charge. His Martyrdom and place of Burial.*  
Pag. 131.

---

### The Life of S. J U S T I N the Martyr.

*His vicinity to the Apostolic times. His Birth-place and Kindred. His Studies. His Travels into Egypt. To what Sect of Philosophy he applied himself. The occasion and manner of his strange conversion to Christianity related by himself. Christianity the only safe and satisfactory Philosophy. The great influence which the patience and fortitude of the Christians had upon his conversion. The force of that argument to persuade Men. His vindication of himself from the charges of the Gentiles. His continuance in his Philosophic habit. The Φιλοσοφικὸν Σχημα what, and by whom worn. Ο γράμμις ἑνδεκάμηνος. His coming to Rome, and opposing Heretics. Marcion who, and what his Principles. Justin's first Apology to the Emperours, and the design of it. Antoninus his Letter to the Common-Council of Asia in favour of the Christians. This shewed not to be the Edict of Marcus Antoninus. Justin's journey into the East, and conference with Trypho the Jew. Trypho who. The malice of the Jews against the Christians. Justin's return to Rome. His contests with Crescens the Philosopher. Crescens his temper and Principles. Justin's second Apology. To whom presented. The occasion of it. M. Antoninus*  
his

## The CONTENTS.

*his temper. Justin fore-tells his own fate. The Acts of his Martyrdom. His arraignment before Rusticus Praefect of Rome. Rusticus who. The great honours done him by the Emperour. Justin's discourse with the Praefect. His freedom and courage. His sentence and execution. The time of his death. His great Piety, Charity, Impartiality, &c. His natural parts and excellent learning. His unskilfulness in the Hebrew Language noted. A late Author censured. His Writings. The Epistle to Diognetus. Diognetus, who. His stile and character. The unwarrantable opinions he is charged with. His indulgence to Heathens. Μετὰ λόγῳ βίωσιν, what. Λόγῳ in what sense used by the ancient Fathers. How applied to Christ, how to Reason. His opinion concerning Chiliafm. The concurrence of the Ancients with him herein. This by whom first started; by whom corrupted. Concerning the state of the Soul after this life. The doctrine of the Ancients in this matter. His assertion concerning Angels, maintained by most of the first Fathers. The original of it. Their opinion concerning Free-will shewed not to be opposed by them to the Grace of God. What influence Justin's Philosophic education had upon his opinions. His Writings enumerated.*

Pag. 139.

---

### The Life of S. IRENÆUS Bishop of Lyons.

*His Countrey enquired into. His Philosophical Studies. His institution by Papias. Papias, who. His education under S. Polycarp. His coming into France, and being made Presbyter of Lyons. Pothinus who; how and by whom sent into France. The grievous Persecution there under M. Aurelius. The Letters of the Martyrs to the Bishop of Rome. Pope Eleutherius guilty of Montanism. Irenæus sent to Rome. His writing against Florinus and Blastus. The Martyrdom of Pothinus Bishop of Lyons, and the cruelty exercised towards him. Irenæus succeeds. His great diligence in his charge. His opposition of Heretics. The Synods said to have been held under him to that purpose. The Gnostic Heresies spread in France. Their monstrous Villanies. His confutation of them by word and writing. Variety of Sects and Divisions objected by the Heathens against Christianity. This largely answered by Clemens of Alexandria. Pope Victor's receiving the controversy about Easter. The contests between him and the Asiatics. Several Synods to determine this matter. Irenæus his moderate interposal. His Synodical Epistle to Victor. The Persecution under Severus. Its rage about Lyons. Irenæus his Martyrdom and place of Burial. His Vertues. His industrious and elaborate confutation of the Gnostics. His stile and phrase. Photius his censure of his Works. His error concerning Christ's Age. Miraculous gifts and powers common in his time. His Writings.*

Pag. 161.

---

## The C O N T E N T S.

---

### The Life of S. THEOPHILUS Bishop of *Antioch*.

*The great obscurity of his Originals. His learned and ingenuous Education, and natural parts. An account of his conversion to Christianity, and the reasons inducing him thereunto, collected out of his own Writings. His scrupling the Doctrine of the Resurrection. The great difficulty of entertaining that Principle. Synesius his case. Theophilus his conquering this objection. His great satisfaction in the Christian Religion. His election to the Bishoprick of Antioch. His desire to convert Autolyceus. Autolyceus, who. His mighty prejudice against Christianity. Theophilus his undertaking him, and his free and impartial debating the case with him. His excellent manage of the controversy. His vigorous opposing the Heresies of those times. His Books against Marcion and Hermogenes. His death and the time of it. S. Hierom's Character of his Works. His Writings.*

Page. 173.

---

### The Life of S. MELITO Bishop of *Sardis*.

*His Countrey and Birth-place. His excellent Parts and Learning. His being made Bishop of Sardis. His cælibacy. His Prophetic gifts. The Persecution under Marcus Aurelius. Melito his Apology for the Christians. A fragment of it cited out of Eusebius. The great advantages of Christianity to the Emptre. His endeavour to compose the Paschal Controversie. His Book concerning that Subject. His journey to Jerusalem to search what Books of the Old Testament were received by that Church. The Copy of his Letter to his Brother Onesimus concerning the Canon of the Old Testament. What Books admitted by the ancient Church. Solomon's Proverbs stiled by the Ancients the Book of Wisdom. His death and burial. The great variety of his Works. Unjustly suspected of dangerous Notions. An account given of the titles of two of his Books most liable to suspicion. His Writings enumerated.*

Page. 179.

---

### The Life of S. PANTÆNUS Catechist of *Alexandria*.

*The various conjectures concerning his Original. The probabilities of his Jewish descent, what. Whether born in Sicily or at Alexandria. His first institution. The famous Platonic School erected by Ammonius at Alexandria. The renown of that place for other parts of Learning. Pantænus addicted to the Sect of the Stoics. The Principles of that Sect shewed to agree best with the dictates of Christianity. His great improvements in the Christian Doctrine. The Catechetic School at Alexandria, with its antiquity. Pantænus made Regent of it. When he first entered upon this Office. An Embassage from India to the Bishop of Alexandria for some to preach the Christian Faith. Pantænus sent upon this errand. This Countrey where situate. His arrival in India, and converse with the Brach-*

(\*\*)

mans.



---

## The CONTENTS.

---

mans. *Their temper, principles, and way of life. Their agreement with the Stoics. Foot-steps of Christianity formerly planted there. S. Matthew's Hebrew Gospel found among them and brought by Pantænus to Alexandria. How far and by whom Christianity was propagated in India afterwards. Pantænus his return to Alexandria, and resuming his Catechetic Office. His Death. His great Piety and Learning.* Pag. 185.

---

### The Life of S. CLEMENS of Alexandria.

*His Country. The progress of his Studies. His instruction in the Christian doctrine. His several Masters. His impartial enquiry after truth. The elective Sect, what. Its excellent genius. Clemens of this Sect. His succeeding Pantænus in the Catechetic School. He is made Presbyter of Alexandria. His Stromata published, when. Lawfulness of flying in time of Persecution. His journey into the East. What Tracts he wrote there. His going from Jerusalem to Antioch, and return to Alexandria. His death. The Elogia given of him by the Ancients. His admirable learning. His Writings. His Hypotyposes. Photius his account of them; corrupted by the Arrians. His Books yet extant, and the orderly gradation of them. His Stromata, what the design of it. His stile, what in this, what in his other Books. A short Apology for some unwary assertions in his Writings. His Writings enumerated.* Pag. 193.

---

### The Life of TERTULLIAN Presbyter of Carthage.

*His names, whence. His Father, who. His education in all kinds of Learning. His skill in the Roman Laws. Different from Tertulian the Lawyer. His way of life before his conversion, enquired into. His married condition. His conversion to Christianity, when. The great cruelty used towards the Christians. Severus his kindness to them. Tertullian's excellent Apology in their behalf. His address to Scapula, and the tendency of that discourse. Severus his violent persecuting the Christians. His prohibition of the Heteriæ. Tertullian's Book to the Martyrs, and concerning Patience. His zeal against Heresies, and Writings that way. His Book De Pallio, when written, and upon what occasion. His becoming Presbyter, when. His Book De Corona, and what the occasion of it. His declining from the Catholic Party. Montanus who and whence. His principles and practices. Tertullian's owning them, and upon what occasion. His morose and stubborn temper. How far he complied with the Montanists, and acknowledged the Paraclete. How he was imposed upon. His Writings against the Catholics. The severity of the ancient Discipline. Episcopus Episcoporum, in what sense meant by Tertullian concerning the Bishop of Rome. His separate meetings at Carthage. His death. His Character. His singular parts and learning. His Books. His phrase and stile. What contributed to its perplexedness and obscurity. His un-orthodox opinions. A brief plea for him.* Page. 201.

# The CONTENTS.

## The Life of ORIGEN Presbyter, Catechist of Alexandria.

Origen, *where and when born.* Several conjectures about the original of his name. His Father who. His juvenile Education, and great forwardness in the knowledge of the Scriptures. His Philosophical Studies under Clemens Alexandrinus. His Institution under Ammonius. Ammonius who. His fame and excellency confessed by the Gentile Philosophers. Another Origen his Contemporary: These two heedlessly confounded. His Fathers Martyrdom, and the confiscation of his Estate. Origen's resolute encouragement of his Father. His own passionate desire of Martyrdom. His maintenance by an honourable Matron of Alexandria. His zeal against Heretics. His setting up a private School. He succeeds Clemens in the Catechetical School at eighteen Years of Age. The frequency of his Auditors. Many of them Martyrs for the Faith. Origen's resolution in attending upon the Martyrs. His danger. His courageous act at the Temple of Serapis. His emasculating himself, and the reasons of it. The eminent chastity of those Primitive Times. Origen's journey to Rome, and return to Alexandria. His taking in a Colleague into the Catechetical Office. He learns the Hebrew Tongue. The prudent method of his Teaching. Ambrosius converted. Who he was. His great intimacy with Origen. Origen sent for by the Governour of Arabia. His journey into Palestine, and teaching at Cæsarea. Remanded by the Bishop of Alexandria. Alexander Severus his excellent Vertues, and kindness for the Christian Religion. Origen sent for by the Empress Mammæa to Antioch. He begins to write his Commentaries. How many Notaries, and Transcribers employed, and by whom maintained. Notaries, their Original and Office: Their use and institution in the Primitive Church. His Journey into Greece. His passage through Palestine, and being ordained Presbyter at Cæsarea. Demetrius of Alexandria his envy and rage against him. Origen condemned in two Synods at Alexandria, and one at Rome. The resignation of his Catechetical School to Heraclas. Heraclas who. The Story of his offering Sacrifice. The credit of this Story questioned, and why. His departure from Alexandria, and fixing at Cæsarea. The eminency of his School there. Gregorius Thaumaturgus his Scholar. His friendship with Firmilian. Firmilian who. The Persecution under Maximinus. Origen's Book written to the Martyrs. His retirement whither. He compares the Versions of the Bible. His Tetrapla, Hexapla, and Octapla, what, and how managed: A Specimen given of them. His second Journey to Athens. His going to Nicomedia, and Letter to Africanus about the History of Susanna. His confutation of Beryllus in Arabia. His answer to Celsus. Celsus who. Origen's Letter to Philip the Emperor. The vanity of making him a Christian. Origen's journey into Arabia to refute Heresies. The Helcæfaiæ who: What their Principles. Alexander's Miraculous Election to the See of Jerusalem. His Coadjutorship, Government, Suffering, and Martyrdom. Origen's grievous Sufferings at Tyre under the Decian Persecution. His deliverance out of Prison; Age, and Death. His Character. His strict life. His mighty zeal, abstinence, contempt of the World, indefatigable diligence, and patience noted. His natural

---

## The CONTENTS.

---

*parts: incomparable learning. His Books, and their several Classes. His stile, what. His unsound Opinions. The great Out-cry against him in all Ages. The Apologies written in his behalf. Several things noted out of the Ancients to extenuate the charge. His assertions not Dogmatical, not intended for public view. Generally such as were not determined by the Church. His Books corrupted, and by whom. His own complaints to that purpose. The Testimonies of Athanasius, and Theodotimus, and Haymo in his vindication. Great errors and mistakes acknowledged. What things contributed to them. His great kindness for the Platonic Principles. S. Hierom's moderate censure of him. His repenting of his rash Propositions. His Writings enumerated, and what now extant.*

Pag. 213.

---

### The Life of S. BABYLAS Bishop of Antioch.

*His Originals obscure. His education and accomplishments enquired into. Made Bishop of Antioch, when. Antioch taken by the King of Persia. Recovered by the Roman Emperour. Babylas his fidelity in his charge. The Decian Persecution, and the grounds of it: severely urged by the Emperours Edicts. Decius his coming to Antioch. His attempt to break into the Christian Congregation. Babylas his bold resistance. This applied to Numerianus, and the ground of the mistake. The like reported of Philip the Emperour. Decius his bloody act related by S. Chrysostom. His rage against Babylas, and his examination of him. The Martyrs resolute answer. His imprisonment and hard usage. The different accounts concerning his death. Three Youths his fellow-sufferers, in vain attempted by the Emperour. Their Martyrdom first, and why. Babylas beheaded. His command that his chains should be buried with him. The translation of his body under Constantius. The great sweetness and pleasantness of the Daphne. Apollo's Temple there. S. Babylas his bones translated thither by Gallus Cæsar. The Oracle immediately rendered dumb. In vain consulted by Julian. The confession of the Dæmon. Julian's command for removing Babylas his bones. The Martyrs Remains triumphantly carried into the City. The credit of this Story sufficiently attested. The thing owned by Libanus and Julian. Why such honour suffered to be done to the Martyr. Julian afraid of an immediate vengeance. His Persecution against the Christians at Antioch. The sufferings of Theodorus. The Temple of Apollo fired from Heaven.*

Pag. 241.

---

## The C O N T E N T S.

---

### The Life of S. CYPRIAN Bishop of Carthage.

*His Birth-place. The Nobility of his Family exploded. The confounding him with another Cyprian Bishop of Antioch. These two vastly distinct. St. Cyprian's education. His professing Rhetoric. His conversion to Christianity by the persuasions of Cæcilius. Their mutual endearment. His great Charity to the Poor. His Baptism. Made Presbyter and Bishop of Carthage. His modest declining the honour. His proscription, recess, and care of his Church during that retirement. The case of the Lapsed. A brief account of the rise of the Novatian Sect. The fierceness of the Persecution at Carthage under Decius. The courage and patience of the Christians. Cyprian's return. A Synod at Carthage about the case of the Lapsed, and the cause of Novatian. Their determination of these matters, Ratified by a Synod at Rome: and another at Antioch. A Second Synod about the same affair. Moderation in the Ecclesiastic Discipline used in the time of Persecution. The great Pestilence at Carthage. The miserable state of that City. The mighty Charity of St. Cyprian and the Christians at that time. These evils charged upon the Christians. St. Cyprian's vindication of them. The time of Baptizing Infants determined in a Synod. Another Synod to decide the case of the Spanish Bishops that had lapsed in the time of Persecution. The Controversie concerning the Re-baptizing those who had been Baptized by Heretics. This resolved upon in a Synod of LXXXVII. African Bishops. The immoderate heats between Cyprian, Firmilian, and Stephen Bishop of Rome about this matter. Cyprian arraigned before the Proconsul. His resolute carriage. His banishment to Curubis. His Martyrdom foretold him by a Vision. His Letters during his exile. The severe usage of the Christians. His withdrawalment, and why. His apprehension and examination before the Proconsul. The Sentence passed upon him. His Martyrdom, and place of burial. His Piety, Fidelity, Chastity, Humility, Modesty Charity, &c. His natural parts. His Learning wherein it mainly consisted. The politeness and elegance of his style. His quick proficiency in Christian studies. His frequent converse with Tertullian's Writings. His Books. The excellency of those ascribed to him. The great honours done to his memory.*

Page. 251.

---

### The Life of S. G R E G O R Y Bishop of Neocæsarea.

*S. Gregory, where born. His Kindred and Relations. The rank and quality of his Parents. His youthful studies. His study of the Laws. His travels to Alexandria. The calumny there fixed upon him, and his miraculous vindication. His return through Greece. His studying the Law at Berytus, and upon what occasion. His fixing at Cæsarea, and putting himself under the tutorage of Origen. The course of his studies. His Panegyric to Origen at his departure. Origen's Letter to him, and the importance of it. His refusal to stay at Neocæsarea, and retirement into the Wilderness. His shunning to be made Bishop of Neocæsarea.*

Con-



---

## The CONTENTS.

---

*Consecrated Bishop of that City during his absence. His acceptance of the charge, and the state of that place at his entrance upon it. His miraculous instruction in the great mysteries of Christianity. His Creed. The miracles wrought by him in his return. His expelling Dæmons out of a Gentile Temple, and the success of it. His welcome entrance into the City, and kind entertainment. His diligent preaching to the People. His erecting a Church for Divine Worship, and its signal preservation. An horrible Plague stopped by his Prayer. The great influence of it upon the minds of the People. His judging in Civil Causes. His drying up a Lake by his Prayers, which had been the cause of an implacable quarrel between two Brothers; and his restraining the overflowings of the River Lycus. The signal vengeance inflicted upon two Jews, counterfeited Beggars. The fame and multitude of his miracles, and the Authorities to justify the credibility of them. The rage and cruelty of the Decian Persecution in the Regions of Pontus and Cappadocia. His persuading the Christians to withdraw. His own retirement. The narrow search made for him, and his miraculous escape. His betrayer converted. His return to Neocæsarea, and instituting solemnities to the memories of the Martyrs, and the reasons of it. The inundations of the Northern Nations upon the Roman Empire. His Canonical Epistle to rectify the disorders committed by occasion of those inroads. His meeting with others in the Synod at Antioch, about the cause of Paulus Samosatenus. His return home, age, and death. His solemn thanks to God for the flourishing state of his Church, and command concerning his Burial. The excellent Character given of him by S. Basil. His Writings. The charge of Sabellianism. S. Basils Apology for him in that behalf. Modesty to be used in censuring the ancient Fathers, and why.* Pag. 267.

---

### The Life of S. DIONYSIUS Bishop of Alexandria.

*The place of his Nativity. His Family and Relations. His conversion how. His studies under Origen. Whether a professed Rhetorician. His succeeding Heraclas in the Catechetical School. His being constituted Bishop of Alexandria, and the time of it. A preparatory Persecution at Alexandria, how begun. The severity of it. The Martyrdom of Apollonia, and the fond honours done her in the Church of Rome. The Persecution continued and promoted by Decius his Edicts. The miserable condition of the Christians. The sudden Conversion and Martyrdom of a Guard of Souldiers. Dionysius apprehended and carried into banishment, there to be beheaded. A pleasant account of his unexpected deliverance by means of a drunken rout. His retirement into the Desarts. His return to Alexandria. The great number and quality of the Lapsed in the late Persecution. The contests about this matter. Dionysius his judgment and practice herein. The case of Serapion. His dealing with Novatian about his Schism, and the copy of his Letter to him. His being engaged in the controversy about Rebaptization, and great moderation in it. His Letter to Pope Sixtus about a person baptized by Heretics. Valerianus the Emperours kindness to Christians. How turned to cruelty. Dionysius brought before Æmilian. His discourse with him, and resolute constancy. He is condemned to be banished. His transportation into the Desarts*

---

## The C O N T E N T S.

---

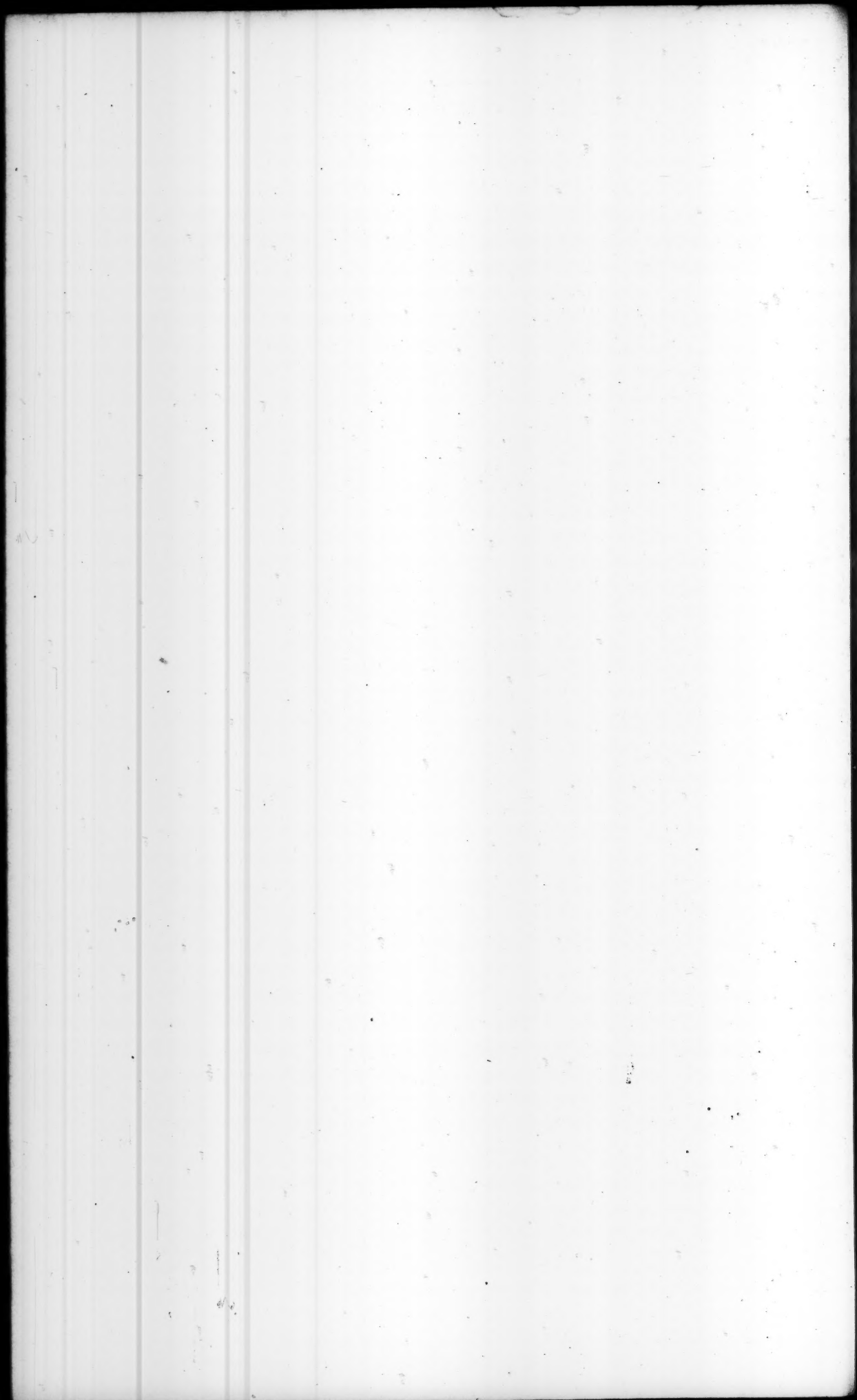
*Desarts of Lybia. The success of his Ministry there. Innumerable Barbarians converted to the Faith. Gallienus his relaxing the Persecution. His Letter to Dionysius granting liberty to the Christians. Alexandria shut up by the usurpation of Æmilian. The Divisions within, and Siege without. The horrible Pestilence at Alexandria; and the singular kindness and compassion of the Christians there above the Heathens. Dionysius his confutation of Sabellius. His unwary expressions, and the charge against him. His vindication, both by himself and by S. Athanasius. His writing against Nepos. Nepos who, and what his Principles and Followers. Dionysius his encounter with the heads of the Party; His convincing and reducing them back to the Orthodox Church. His engaging in the Controversie against Paulus Samosatenus. The loose, extravagant, and insolent temper and manners of that Man. Dionysius his Letter to the Synod at Antioch concerning him. The success of that affair. Dionysius his death. His Writings and Epistles. The loss of them bewailed.*

Pag. 283.

---

THE

---



# T H E INTRODUCTION.

*The several Periods of the three first Ages. Our Lords coming, and the seasonableness of it for the propagation of the Gospel. His entrance upon his Prophetic Office, and the sum of his Ministry. The success of his Doctrine, and the several places where he preached. The Story of Agbarus not altogether improbable. Our Lords Death. What attestation given to the passages concerning Christ by Heathen Writers. The testimony of Tacitus. Pilat's relation sent to Tiberius. The Acts of Pilat, what. Pilat's Letter now extant, Spurious. The Apostles entering upon their Commission, and first Acts after our Lords Ascension. How long they continued in Judæa. Their dispersion to preach in the Gentile Provinces, and the success of it. The state of the Church after the Apostolic Age. The mighty progress of Christianity. The numbers and quality of its Converts. Its speedy and incredible success in all Countries, noted out of the Writers of those Times. The early conversion of Britain to Christianity. The general declension of Paganism. The silence and ceasing of their Oracles. This acknowledged by Porphyry to be the effect of the Christian Religion appearing in the World. A great argument of its truth and divinity. The means contributing to the success of Christianity. The miraculous Powers then resident in the Church. This proved at large out of the Primitive Writers. The great learning and abilities of many of the Churches Champions. The most eminent of the Christian Apologists. The principal of them that engaged against the Heresies of those Times. Others renowned for other parts of Learning. The indefatigable zeal and industry used in the propagation of Christianity. Instructing and Catechizing new Converts. Schools erected. Travelling to preach in all parts of the World. The admirable lives of the ancient Christians. The singular efficacy of the Christian Doctrine upon the minds of Men. A holy life the most acceptable sacrifice. Their incomparable patience and constancy under sufferings. A brief Survey of the Ten Persecutions. The first begun by Nero. His brutish extravagances, and inhumane cruelties. His burning Rome, and the dreadfulness of that conflagration. This charged upon the Christians, and their several kinds of punishment noted out of Tacitus. The chief of them that suffered. The Persecution under Domitian. The Vices of that Prince. The cruel usage of S. John. The third begun by Trajan. His character. His proceeding against the Christians as illegal Societies. Pliny's Letter to Trajan concerning the Christians, with the Emperours answer. Adrian, Trajan's successor; a mixture in him of Vice and Vertue. His persecuting the Christians. This the fourth Persecution. The mitigation of it, and its breaking out again under Antoninus Pius. The excellent temper and learning of M. Aurelius. The fifth persecution raised by him. Its fierceness in the East, at Rome, especially in France; the most eminent that suffered there. The Emperours Victory in his German Wars gained by the Christians Prayers. Severus his temper: his cruelty towards the Christians. The chief of the Martyrs under the sixth*

( a )

*Persecution.*



*Persecution. Maximinus his immoderate ambition and barbarous cruelty: The Author of the seventh Persecution. This not universal. The common evils and calamities charged upon the Christians. Decius the eighth Persecutor; otherwise an excellent Prince. The violence of this Persecution, and the most noted sufferers. The foundations of Monachism, when laid. The ninth Persecution, and its rage under Valerian. The most eminent Martyrs. The severe punishment of Valerian: his miserable usage by the Persian King. The tenth Persecution begun under Dioclesian, and when. The fierceness and cruelty of that time. The admirable carriage and resolution of the Christians under all these sufferings. The proper influence of this argument to convince the World. The whole concluded with Lactantius his excellent reasonings to this purpose.*

I.



HE state of the Christian Church in the three first Ages of it may be considered under a three-fold Period: as it was first planted and established by our Lord himself during his residence in the World; as it was enlarged and propagated by the Apostles, and first Missionaries of the Christian Faith; and as it grew up and prospered from the Apostolic Age till the times of *Constantine*,

when the Empire submitted it self to Christianity. God, who in former times was pleased by various methods of Revelation to convey his will to mankind, *hath in these last days spoken to us by his Son*. For the great blessing of the promised Seed after a long succession of several Ages being come to its just maturity and perfection; God was resolved to perform the mercy promised to the Fathers, and to remember his Holy Covenant, the Oath which he swore to our Father Abraham. Accordingly, *In the fulness of time God sent his Son*. It was in the declining part of *Augustus* his reign, when this great Ambassador arrived from Heaven, to publish to the World the glad tidings of Salvation.

(a) *Contr. Cels. lib. 2. p. 79.*

A period of time (as (a) *Origen* observes) wisely ordered by the divine Providence. For the Roman Empire being now in the highest pitch of its grandeur, all its parts united under a Monarchical Government, and an universal Peace spread over all the Provinces of the Empire, that had opened a way to a free and uninterrupted commerce with all Nations, a smoother and speedier passage was hereby prepared for the publishing the doctrine of the Gospel, which the Apostles and first Preachers of Religion might with the greater ease and security carry up and down to all quarters of the World. As for the *Jews*, their minds were awakened about this time with busie expectations of their *Messiah's* coming: and no sooner was the birth of the holy *Jesus* proclaimed by the arrival of the *Eastern Magi*, who came to pay homage to him, but *Jerusalem* was filled with noise and tumult, the *Sanhedrin* was convened, and consulted by *Herod*, who jealous of his late gotten Sovereignty, was resolved to dispatch this new Competitor out of the way. Deluded in his hopes of discovery by the *Magi*, he betakes himself to acts of open force and cruelty, commanding all Infants under two years old to be put to death, and among them it seems his own Son, which made (b) *Augustus* pleasantly say (alluding to the Jewish custom of abstaining from Swineflesh) *It is better to be Herods Hog than his Son*. But the Providence of God secured the Holy Infant, by timely admonishing his Parents to retire

(b) *Macrobius Saturn. l. 2. c. 4. p. 279.*

tire

tire into *Egypt*, where they remained till the death of *Herod*, which happening not long after, they returned.

II. N E A R thirty years our Lord remained obscure under the retirements of a private life, applying himself (as the Ancients tell us, and the Evangelical History plainly intimates) to *Joseph's* employment, the trade of a *Carpenter*. So little Patronage did he give to an idle unaccountable course of Life. But now he was called out of his Shades and Solitudes, and publickly owned to be that person, whom God had sent to be the great Prophet of his Church. This was done at his Baptism, when the Holy Ghost in a visible shape descended upon him, and God by an audible voice testified of him, *This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased*. Accordingly he set himself to declare the Counsels of God, *Going about all Galilee, teaching in their Synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the Kingdom*. He particularly explained the Moral Law, and restored it to its just Authority and dominion over the minds of Men, redeeming it from those corrupt and perverse interpretations which the Masters of the *Jewish* Church had put upon it. He next insinuated the abrogation of the *Mosaic* Oeconomy, to which he was sent to put a period, to enlarge the bounds of Salvation, and admit both *Jew* and *Gentile* to terms of mercy: that he came as a Mediator between God and Man, to reconcile the World to the favour of Heaven by his death and sufferings, and to propound pardon of sin and eternal life to all that by an hearty belief, a sincere repentance, and an holy life, were willing to embrace and entertain it. This was the sum of the Doctrine which he preached every where, as opportunity and occasion led him; and which he did not impose upon the World meerly upon the account of his own Authority and power, or beg a precarious entertainment of it: he did not tell Men they must believe him, because he said he came from God, and had his Warrant and Commission to instruct and reform the World, but gave them the most satisfactory and convictive evidence; by doing such miracles as were beyond all powers and contrivances either of Art or Nature, whereby he unanswerably demonstrated, that *he was a Teacher come from God, in that no Man could do those miracles which he did, except God were with him*. And because he himself was in a little time to return back to Heaven, he ordained *twelve* whom he called *Apostles*, as his immediate Delegates and Vicegerents, to whom he deputed his Authority and power, furnished them with miraculous gifts, and left them to carry on that excellent Religion which he himself had begun; to whose assistance he joyned LXX Disciples, as ordinary coadjutors and companions to them. Their Commission for the present was limited to *Palestine*, and they sent out only *to seek and to save the lost sheep of the house of Israel*.

III. H O W great the success of our Saviours Ministry was; may be guessed from that complaint of the *Pharisees*, *Behold the World is gone after him*; people from all parts in such vast multitudes flocking after him, that they gave him not time for necessary solitude and retirement. Indeed he *went about doing good, preaching the word throughout all Judaea, and healing all that were possessed of the Devil*. The seat of his ordinary abode was *Galilee*, residing for the most part (says one of the Ancients\*) in *Galilee of the Gentiles*, that he might there sow and reap the first-fruits of the calling of the *Gentiles*. We usually find him preaching at *Nazareth*, at *Cana*, at *Corazin* and *Bethsaida*, and the Cities about the Sea of *Tiberias*, but especially at *Capernaum*, the Metropolis of the Province, a

John 12. 19.

\* *Ensb. Demonstrat. Evang.* l. 9. p. 439.

place of great commerce and traffique. He often visited *Judaea*, and the parts about *Jerusalem*, whither he was wont to go up at the *Paschal* solemnities, and some of the greater Festivals, that so the general concourse of people at those times might minister the fitter opportunity to spread the net, and to communicate and impart his doctrine to them. Nor did he who was to be a common Saviour, and came to break down the Partition-wall, disdain to converse with the *Samaritans*, so contemptible and hateful to the *Jews*. In *Sychar* not far from *Samaria*, he freely preached, and gained most of the inhabitants of that City to be Profelytes to his doctrine. He travelled up and down the Towns and Villages of *Cæsarea Philippi*, and went into the borders of *Tyre* and *Sidon*, and through the midst of the coasts of *Decapolis*, and where he could not come, the renown of him spread it self, bringing him Disciples and Followers from all quarters. Indeed *his fame went throughout all Syria, and there followed him great multitudes of people from Galilee, Judaea, Decapolis, Idumæa, from beyond Jordan, and from Tyre and Sidon*. Nay might we believe the Story, so solemnly reported by *Eusebius*\* and the Ancients, (and excepting the silence of the Evangelical Historians, who recorded only some of the actions and passages concerning our Saviour, I know no wise argument against it) *Abarnus* Prince of *Edessa* beyond *Euphrates*, having heard of the fame of our Saviours miracles, by Letters humbly besought him to come over to him, whose Letter, together with our Lords answer, are extant in *Eusebius*, there being nothing in the Letters themselves that may justly shake their credit and authority, with much more to this purpose, transcribed (as he tells us) out of the Records of that City, and by him translated out of *Syriac* into *Greek*, which may give us some account why none of the Ancients before him make any mention of this affair, being generally strangers to the Language, the Customs and Antiquities, of those Eastern Countries.

IV. OUR Lord having spent somewhat more than three years in the publick exercise of his Ministry, kept his last Passover with his Apostles; which done, he instituted the Sacramental Supper, consigning it to his Church as the standing memorial of his death, and the Seal of the Evangelical Covenant, as he appointed Baptism to be the Fœderal Rite of Initiation, and the public *Tessera* or Badge of those that should profess his Religion. And now the fatal hour was at hand: being betrayed by the treachery of one of his own Apostles, he was apprehended by the Officers and brought before the public Tribunals. Heavy were the crimes charged upon him, but as false as spiteful; the two main Articles of the Charge were Blasphemy against God, and Treason against the Emperour: and though they were not able to make them good by any tolerable pretence of proof, yet did they condemn and execute him upon the Cross, several of themselves vindicating his innocency, that he was a *righteous man, and the Son of God*. The third day after his interment he rose again, appeared to, and conversed with his Disciples and Followers, and having taken care of the affairs of his Church, given a larger Commission, and fuller instructions to his Apostles, he took his leave of them, and visibly ascended into Heaven, and *sate down on the right hand of God, as head over all things to the Church, Angels, Authorities, and Powers being made subject unto him*.

V. THE Faith of these passages concerning our Saviour, are not only secured to us by the report of the Evangelical Historians, and that

\* *H. Eccl. l. i. c. 13. p. 31.*



that justified by eye-witnesses, the evidence of miracles, and the successive and uncontrolled consent of all Ages of the Church, but (as to the substance of them) by the plain confession of Heathen Writers: and the enemies of Christianity. (a) *Tacitus* tells us, That the Author of this Religion was Christ, who under the reign of *Tiberius* was put to death by *Pontius Pilat*, the Procurator of *Judea*: whereby though this detestable Superstition was suppressed for the present, yet did it break out again, spreading it self not only through *Judea*, the fountain of the mischief, but in the very City of *Rome* it self; where whatever is wicked and shameful meets together, and is greedily advanced into reputation. (b) *Eusebius* assures us, that after our Lords Ascension, *Pilat* according to custom, sent an account of him to the Emperour: which *Tiberius* brought before the *Senate*, but they rejected it under pretence that cognizance had been taken of it before it came to them; it being a fundamental Law of the *Roman Senate*, that no new God could be taken in without the Decree of the *Senate*; but that however *Tiberius* continued his good thoughts of Christ, and kindness to the Christians. For this he cites the testimony of *Tertullian*, who in his (c) *Apology* presented to the *Roman Powers* affirms, that *Tiberius* in whose time the Christian Religion entred into the World, having received an account from *Pilat*, out of *Palestin* in *Syria* concerning the truth of that Divinity that was there, brought it to the *Senate* with the Prerogative of his own vote: but that the *Senate*, because they had not before approved of it, would not admit it; however the Emperour continued of the same mind, and threatned punishment to them that accused the Christians. And before *Tertullian*, *Justin Martyr* (d) speaking concerning the death and sufferings of our Saviour, tells the Emperours, that they might satisfy themselves in the truth of these things from the *Acts* written under *Pontius Pilat*. It being customary not only at *Rome* to keep the *Acts* of the *Senate* and the People, but for the Governors of Provinces to keep account of what memorable things happened in their Government, the *Acts* whereof they transmitted to the Emperour. And thus did *Pilat* during the Procuratorship of his Province. How long these *Acts* remained in being, I know not: but in the controversy about *Easter*, we find the *Quartodecimans* (e) justifying the day on which they observed it from the *Acts* of *Pilat*, wherein they gloried that they had found the truth. Whether these were the *Acts* of *Pilat*, to which *Justin* appealed, or rather those *Acts* of *Pilat* drawn up and published by the command of (f) *Maximinus*, *Dioclesian's* successor, in disparagement of our Lord and his Religion, is uncertain, but the latter of the two far more probable. However *Pilat's* Letter to *Tiberius* (or, as he is there called *Claudius*) at this day extant in the *Anacephalaosis* (g) of the younger *Egesippus*, is of no credit, though that Author challenges greater antiquity than some allow him, being probably contemporary with *S. Ambrose*, and by many, from the great conformity of stile and phrase, thought to be *S. Ambrose* himself, who with some few additions compiled it out of *Josephus*. But then it is to be considered, whether that *Anacephalaosis* be done by the same, or (which is most probable) by a much later hand. Some other particular passages concerning our Saviour are taken notice of by *Gentile* Writers, the appearance of the Star by *Calcidius*, the murder of the Infants by *Macrobius*, the Eclipse at our Saviours Passion by *Phlegon Trallianus* (not to speak of his miracles frequently acknowledged by *Celsus*, *Julianus*, and *Porphyry*) which I shall not insist upon.

(a) *Annal. l. 15. c. 44. p. 319.*

(b) *H. Eccl. l. 2. c. 2 p. 40. vid. Oros. adv. Pag. l. 7. c. 4. fol. 293.*

(c) *Apolog. c. 9. p. 6. & c. 21. p. 20.*

(d) *Apolog. II. p. 76.*

(e) *Ap. Ephiph. Harif. L. p. 182.*

(f) *Euseb. H. Eccl. l. 9. c. 5. p. 350.*

(g) *Ad calcem l. de Excid. Urb. Hierof. p. 683.*



VI. IMMEDIATELY after our Lords ascension (from whence we date the next period of the Church) the Apostles began to execute the Powers intrusted with them. They presently filled up Judas his vacancy by the election of a new Apostle, the lot falling upon Matthias, and he was numbred with the eleven Apostles. Being next endued with power from on high (as our Lord had promised them) furnished with the miraculous gifts of the Holy Ghost, they set themselves to preach in places of the greatest concourse, and to the faces of their greatest enemies. They who but a while before fled at the first approach of danger, now boldly plead the cause of their Crucified Master, with the immediate hazard of their lives. And that nothing might interrupt them in this employment, they instituted the Office of *Deacons*, who might attend the inferiour Services of the Church while they devoted themselves to what was more immediately necessary to the good of Souls. By which prudent course Religion got ground apace, and innumerable Converts were daily added to the Faith: till a Persecution arising upon St. Stephen's Martyrdom, banished the Church out of *Jerusalem*, though this also proved its advantage in the event and issue, Christianity being by this means the sooner spread up and down the neighbour Countries. The Apostles notwithstanding the rage of the Persecution, remained still at *Jerusalem*, only now and then dispatching some few of their number to confirm and settle the Plantations, and to propagate the Faith, as the necessities of the Church required. And thus they continued for near twelve years together, our Lord himself having commanded them not to depart *Jerusalem* and the parts thereabouts, till twelve years after his Ascension, as the ancient Tradition mentioned both by (a) *Apollonius*, and (b) *Clemens Alexandrinus* informs us. And now they thought it high time to apply themselves to the full execution of that Commission which Christ had given them, *to go teach and baptize all Nations*. Accordingly having settled the general affairs and concerns of the Church, they betook themselves to the several Provinces of the *Gentile World*, preaching the Gospel to every Nation under Heaven, so that even in a literal sense, *their sound went into all the earth, and their words unto the ends of the World*. "Infinite multitudes of people in all Cities and Countries (says (c) *Eusebius*) like Corn into a well-filled Granary, being brought in by that grace of God that brings Salvation. And they whose minds were heretofore distempered and over-run with the error and idolatry of their Ancestors, were cured by the Sermons and Miracles of our Lords Disciples, and shaking off those chains of Darkness and Slavery which the merciless Demons had put upon them, freely embraced and entertained the knowledge and service of the only true God, the great Creator of the World; whom they worshipped according to the holy Rites and Rules of that divine and wisely contrived Religion which our Saviour had introduced into the World. But concerning the Apostles travels, the success of their Ministry, the Places and Countries to which they went, the Churches they planted, their Acts and Martyrdoms for the Faith, we have given an account in a Work peculiar to that Subject, so far as the Records of those times have conveyed any material notices of things to us. It may suffice to observe, that God was pleased to continue St. John to a very great age, beyond any of the rest, that he might superintend and cultivate, confirm and establish what they had planted, and be as a stand-

ing

(a) *Ap. Euseb.*  
*H. Eccl.* l. 5. c.  
 18. p. 186.  
 (b) *Stromat.* l.  
 6. p. 636. *vid.*  
*Life of S. Peter*,  
 Sect. 11.  
 num. 5.

(c) *Lib. 2. c.*  
 3. p. 41.

ing and lively Oracle, to which they might from all parts have recourse in any considerable doubts and exigences of the Church, and that he might seal and attest the truth of those things, which Men of corrupt and perverse minds, even then began to call in question.

VII. H E N C E then we pass on to survey the state of the Church from the Apostolic Age till the times of *Constantine*, for the space of at least two hundred years. And under this period we shall principally remarque two things. What progress the Christian Religion made in the World. Secondly, What it was that contributed to so vast a growth and increase of it. That Christianity from the nature of its precepts, the sublimeness of its principles, its contrariety to the established Rites and Religions of the World, was likely to find bad entertainment, and the fiercest opposition, could not but be obvious to every impartial considerer of things; which accordingly came to pass. For it met with all the discouragement, the secret undermining, and open assaults which malice and prejudice, wit and parts, learning and power were able to make upon it. Notwithstanding all which, it lift up its head, and prospered under the greatest oppositions. And the triumph of the Christian Faith will appear the more considerable, whether we regard the number and quality of its Converts, or the vast circumference to which it did extend and diffuse it self. Though it appeared under all manner of disadvantages to recommend it self, yet no sooner did it set up its Standard, but persons from all parts, and of all kind of principles and educations began to flock to it, so admirably affecting very many both of the *Greeks* and *Barbarians* (as *Origen* (a) tells *Celsus*) and they both wise and unwise, that they contended for the truth of their Religion even to the laying down their lives, a thing not known in any other Profession in the World. And (b) elsewhere he challenges him to shew such an unspeakable multitude of *Greeks* and *Barbarians* reposing such a confidence in *Aesculapius*, as he could of those that had embraced the Faith of the holy *Jesus*. And when (c) *Celsus* objected that Christianity was a clandestine Religion, that sculked and crept up and down in corners; *Origen* answers, That the Religion of the Christians was better known throughout the whole World, than the dictates of their best Philosophers. Nor were they only mean and ignorant persons that thus came over, but (as (d) *Arnobius*, observes) Men of the acutest parts and learning; *Orators*, *Grammarians*, *Rhetoricians*, *Lawyers*, *Physicians*, *Philosophers*, despising their formerly-beloved sentiments, sate down here. (e) *Tertullian* addressing himself to the *Roman* Governours in behalf of the Christians; assures them, that although they were of no long standing, yet that they had filled all places of their Dominions; their Cities, Islands, Castles, Corporations, Councils, Armies, Tribes, Companies, the Palace, Senate, and Courts of Judicature: that if they had a mind to revenge themselves, they need not betake themselves to clancular and sculking Arts, their numbers were great enough to appear in open Arms, having a Party not in this or that Province, but in all quarters of the World: nay, that naked as they were, they could be sufficiently revenged upon them; for should they but all agree to retire out of the *Roman* Empire, the World would stand amazed at that solitude and desolation that would ensue upon it, and they would have more Enemies than Friends or Citizens left among them. And he (f) bids the *President Scapula* consider, that if he went on with the Persecution, what he would do with those many thousands both of Men and

(a) *Contr. Cels.*  
l. 1. p. 21, 22.

(b) *Ibid.* l. 3.  
p. 124.

(c) *Ib.* l. 1. p. 7.

(d) *Adv. Gent.*  
l. 2. p. 21.

(e) *Apol.* c. 37.  
p. 30.

(f) *Ad Scapul.*  
c. 4. p. 71.

and Women, of all ranks and ages, that would readily offer themselves, what Fires and Swords he must have to dispatch them. Nor is this any more than what (a) *Pliny* himself confesses to the Emperour, that the case of the Christians was a matter worthy of deliberation, especially by reason of the multitudes that were concerned, for that many of each Sex, of every age and quality were and must be called in question; this *Superstition* having infected and over-run not the City only, but Towns and Countries, the Temples and Sacrifices being generally desolate and forsaken.

VIII. NOR was it thus only in some Parts and Provinces of the Roman Empire, but in most Nations and Countries. (b) *Justin Martyr* tells the *Jew*, that whatever they might boast of the universality of their Religion, there were many places of the World whither neither they nor it ever came: whereas there was no part of mankind, whether *Greeks* or *Barbarians*, or by what name soever they were called, even the most rude and unpolished Nations, where Prayers and Thanksgivings were not made to the great Creator of the World through the name of the crucified *Jesus*. The same *Bardeanes* (c) the *Syrian*, *Justin's* contemporary, affirms, that the followers of the Christian Institution, though living in different parts of the World, and being very numerous in every Climate and Countrey, were yet all called by the name of Christians. So (d) *Lactantius*, the Christian Law (says he) is entertained from the rising of the Sun to the going down thereof, where every Sex, and Age, and Nation, and Country does with one heart and Soul worship God. If from generals we descend to particular Places and Countries, (e) *Irenæus*, who entered upon the See of *Lyons Ann. Ch. CLXXIX.* affirms, that though there were different Languages in the World, yet that the force of Tradition, (or that Doctrine that had been delivered to the Church) was but one and the same; that there were Churches settled in *Germany, Spain, France, in the East, in Egypt and Lybia*, as well as in the middle of the World. (f) *Tertullian*, who probably wrote not above twenty years after *Irenæus*, gives us in a larger account. "Their sound" (says he) "went through all the Earth, and their words to the ends of the World." For in whom but Christ did all Nations believe? *Parthians, Medes, Elamites, the inhabitants of Mesopotamia, Armenia, Phrygia, and Cappadocia, of Pontus, Asia, and Pamphylia*, those who dwell in *Egypt, Afric*, and beyond *Cyrene*, strangers at *Rome*, *Jews at Jerusalem*, and "other Nations; as also now the *Getuli*, and the *Mauri*, the *Spaniards*, and the *Gauls*, yea and those places of *Britain*, which were unapproachable by the *Roman Armies*, are yet subdued to Christ; the *Sarmata* also and the *Daci*, the *Germans* and the *Scythians*, together with "many undiscovered Countries, many Islands and Provinces unknown to us, which he professes himself unable to reckon up. In all which places (says he) the name of Christ reigns, as before whom the Gates of all Cities are set open, and to whom none are shut; before whom Gates of Brass fly open, and Bars of Iron are snapt asunder. To which (g) *Arnobius* adds the *Indians*, the *Persians*, the *Sera*, and all the Islands and Provinces, which are visited by the rising or setting Sun, yea and *Rome* it self, the Empress of all.

IX. FROM *Tertullian's* account we have a most authentic testimony how early Christianity stretched it self over this other World, having before his time conquered the most rough and inaccessible parts of *Britain*



tain to the Banner of the Cross, which may probably refer to the conversion of King *Lucius* (the first Christian King that ever was) a potent and considerable Prince in this Island, who embraced the Christian Religion about the year CLXXXVI. and sent a solemn Embassy to *Eleutherius*, Bishop of *Rome*; for some who might further instruct him and his people in the Faith; who accordingly dispatched *Faganus* and *Dervianus* hither upon that errand. Not that this was the first time that the Gospel made its way through the *ἄνευρος ἀνέπαυτος* (as *Clemens* (a) calls the *Brittish Ocean*, and so the Ancients constantly stile it) *the unpassable Ocean, and those Worlds which are beyond it*; that is, the *Britannic Islands*: it had been here many years before, though probably stifled and overgrown with the Ancient Paganism and Idolatry. *St. Clemens* (b) tells us of *St. Paul*, that he preached both in the *East* and *West*; and having instructed the whole World in righteousness, made his way to the utmost bounds of the *West*: by which he must either mean *Spain*; or more probably *Britain*, and it may be both. Accordingly *Theodoret* (c) speaking of his coming into *Spain*, says, that besides that, he brought great advantage to the Isles of the Sea; and he reckons (d) the *Cimbri* and the *Britains* among the Nations which the Apostles (and he particularly mentions the *Tent-maker*) converted to the Christian Faith. If after all this, it were necessary to enter into a more minute and particular disquisition, I might enquire not only in what Countries, but in what Towns and Cities in those Countries Christianity fixed it self, in what places Episcopal Sees were erected, and what succession of Bishops are mentioned in the Records of the Church; but that this would not well consist with the designed shortness of this Introduction, and would be more parhaps than the Readers patience would allow.

(a) *Epist. ad Corinth. p. 28.*

(b) *Ibid. p. 8.*

(c) *Comment. in Psal. 116.*

(d) *De curand. Græcor. affect. Serm. LX. p. 125.*

X. THE shadows of the night do not more naturally vanish at the rising of the Sun, than the darkness of Pagan Idolatry and Superstition fled before the Light of the Gospel; which the more it prevailed, the clearer it discovered the folly and impiety of their worship: Their solemn Rites appeared more trifling and ridiculous, their Sacrifices more barbarous and inhumane; their *Demons* were expelled by the meanest Christian, their Oracles became mute and silent, and their very Priests began to be ashamed of their Magic Charms and Conjurations; and the more prudent and subtle heads among them, who stood up for the Rites and Solemnities of their Religion, were forced to turn them into mystical and allegorical meanings, far enough either from the apprehension or intention of the vulgar. The truth is, the Devil, who for so many ages had usurped an Empire and Tyranny over the Souls of Men, became more sensible every day, that his Kingdom shaked; and therefore sought, though in vain, by all ways to support and prop it up. Indeed some time before our Saviours Incarnation the most celebrated Oracle at *Delphos* had lost its credit and reputation; as after his appearance in the World they sunk and declined every day; whereof their best Writers universally complain, that their gods had forsaken their Temples, and Oracular Recesses, and had left the World in darkness and obscurity; and that their Votaries did in vain solicit their Counsels and answers. *Plutarch*, who lived under *Trajan*, wrote a particular Tract (still extant) concerning the ceasing of Oracles, which he endeavours to resolve partly into natural, partly into moral, partly into political causes, though all his Philosophy was too short to give a just and satisfactory account of it.

(b)

Qns



Περὶ τῶν ἐκ-  
λελοιπ. Κρη-  
τικ. β. 419.

(a) Prepar.  
Evang. l. 5. c.  
17. p. 207.

One cause he assigns of it is, the death and departure of those *Demons*, that heretofore presided over these Oracles. To which purpose he relates a memorable passage, concerning a voice that called three times aloud to one *Thamus* an *Egyptian* Ship-master and his company, as they sailed by the *Echinade* Islands, commanding him when they came near to *Palodes* to make Proclamation, that *the great Pan was dead*, which he did; and the news was entertained not with the resentment of one or two, but of many, who received it with great mourning and consternation. The circumstances of this story he there reports more at large, and adds, that the thing being published at *Rome*, *Thamus* was sent for by *Tiberius*, to whom he gave an account, and satisfied him in the truth of it. Which circumstance of time (a) *Eusebius* observes corresponds with our Lords conversing in the world, when he began openly to dispossess *Demons* of that power and tyranny which they had gained over mankind. And (if the calculation which some make, hit right) it fell in about the time of our Saviour's Passion, who led captivity captive, spoiled principalities and powers, and made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in his Cross, and by his death destroyed him that had the power of death, that is, the Devil.

XI. HOWEVER that the silence of Oracles, and the enervating the power of *Demons* was the effect of the Christian Religion in the world, we need no more than the plain confession of *Porphyrus* himself (truth will sometimes extort a confession out of the mouth of its greatest enemy)

Περὶ ὃ τὰ μυκάπ δυνάμει π καὶ ἰσχύειν ποτ φαύ-  
λος δαίμονας, μὲν τὸ πρὸς αὐτοὺς ἡμεῖς εἰς ἀν-  
θρώπους πάρεσθον, καὶ αὐτοὶ δὲ καὶ ἡμᾶς οἱ δὲ δι-  
μόνων ἀνθρώπων, ἐν τῇ κατὰ ἡμεῖς συγκαθίσ-  
τῶν πρὸς λέγων μαρτυρεῖ τὸ βόπον. Νυνὶ δὲ  
δαυμάζουσιν, εἰ ποσὶ τῶν ἐξ ἡμεῖς κατελείπει τὸ πρὸς  
αὐτοὺς ἡ νόστος, Ἀσκληπιὸς μὲν ἐπιδουμίας καὶ οἱ  
ἄλλων θεῶν μυκάπ ἔσθον. Ἰνσὲ δὲ πρὸς μὲν  
ἐξ ἡμᾶς πρὸς θεῶν δημοσίας ἀφελείας ἡδυνάτο.  
Ταῦτα ῥήμασιν αὐτοῖς ὁ Περφύριος. Euseb.  
ubi sup. c. i. p. 179.

who says, that now it's no wonder if the City for so many years has been overrun with sickness, *Æsculapius* and the rest of the gods having withdrawn their converse with men: For that since Jesus began to be worshipped, no man hath received any public help or benefit by the gods. A great argument, as *Eusebius* well urges, of our Saviours Divine authority, and the truth of his Doctrine. For when (says he a little before) such number of fictitious deities fled at our Lords appearance, who would not with admi-

ration behold it as an uncontrollable demonstration of his truly saving and excellent Religion, whereby so many Churches and Oratories through all the world both in Cities and Villages, and even in the Deserts and Solitudes of the most barbarous Nations have been erected and consecrated to the great Creator, and the only Sovereign of the World: when such multitudes of Books have been written, containing the most incomparable rules and institutions to form mankind to a life of the most perfect Virtue and Religion, precepts accommodate not to Men only, but to Women and Children: when he shall see that the Oracles and Divinations of the *Demons* are ceased and gone; and that the Divine and Evangelical Vertue of our Saviour no sooner visited mankind, but they began to leave off their wild and frantic ways of worship, and to abhor those humane sacrifices (many times of their dearest relations) wherewith they had been wont to propitiate and atone their bloody and merciless *Demons*, and into which their wisest and greatest Men had been bewitched and seduced, I add no more but *S. Chrysostom's* (b) challenge, "Judge now with me, O thou incredulous Jew, and learn the excellency of the truth; what Impostor ever gathered to himself so many Churches throughout the World, and propagated his worship from one end of

(b) Orat. III.  
adv. Judæos,  
p. 425. Tom. I.

“it to the other, and subdued so many Subjects to his Crown, even when thousands of impediments lay in the way to hinder him? certainly no Man: a plain evidence that Christ was no Impostor; but a Saviour and Benefactor, and the Author of our life and happiness.

XII. WE have seen with what a mighty success Christianity displayed its banners over the World; let us next consider what it was that contributed to so vast an increase and propagation of it. And here not to insist upon the blessing of the Divine Providence, which did immediately superintend its prosperity and welfare, nor upon the intrinsic excellency of the Religion itself, which carried essential characters of Divinity upon it, sufficient to recommend it to every wise and good Man, there were five things among others that did especially conduce to make way for it; the miraculous powers then resident in the Church, the great learning and abilities of its champions and defenders, the indefatigable industry used in propagating of it, the incomparable lives of its professors, and their patience and constancy under sufferings. It was not the least means that procured the Christian Religion a just veneration from the World, the miraculous attestations that were given to it. I shall not here concern my self to shew, that miracles truly and publicly wrought are the highest external evidence that can be given to the truth of that Religion, which they are brought to confirm; the force of the argument is sufficiently pleaded by the Christian Apologists. That such miraculous powers were then ordinary in the Church, we have the concurrent testimonies of all the first Writers of it. *Justin Martyr* (a) tells the Emperor and the Senate, that our Lord was born for the subversion of the *Demons*, which they might know from the very things done in their sight; for that very many who had been vexed and possessed by *Demons*, throughout the World, and in this very City of theirs; whom all their exorcists and conjurers were not able to relieve, had been cured by several Christians through the name of *Jesus* that was crucified under *Pontius Pilate*; and that at this very time they still cur'd them, disarming and expelling the *Demons* out of those whom they had possessed. The same he affirms in his discourse with *Trypho* (b) the Jew, more than once, that the Devils trembled and stood in awe of the power of Christ; and to this day being adjured by the name of *Jesus Christ* crucified under *Pontius Pilate* the Procurator of *Judea*, they were obedient to Christians. *Irenaeus* (c) assures us that in his time, the Christians enabled by the Grace of Christ, raised the dead, ejected *Demons*, and unclean spirits; the persons so dispossessed coming over to the Church: others had Visions and the gift of Prophecy; others by Imposition of hands healed the Sick, and restored them to perfect health. But I am not able (says he) to reckon up the number of those gifts, which the Church throughout the World receiving from God, does every day freely exercise in the name of *Jesus Christ* crucified under *Pontius Pilate*, to the benefit of the World. *Tertullian* (d) challenges the Roman Governors to let any possessed person be brought before their own Tribunals, and they should see, that the spirit being commanded to speak, by any Christian, should as truly confess himself to be a Devil, as at other times he falsely boasted himself to be a God. And he tells *Scapula*, (e) that they rejected, disgraced, and expelled *Demons* every day, as most could bear them witness. *Origen* (f) bids *Celsus* take notice, that whatever he might think of the reports which the Gospel makes concerning our Saviour; yet that it was the great and mag-

(a) *Apol. i.*  
p. 45.

(b) *Dial. cum Trypho.* p. 247.  
or p. 302.

(c) *Adv. Hæres.*  
l. 2. c. 56. p.  
215. c. 57. p.  
218.

(d) *Apol. c. 23.*  
p. 22.

(e) *Ad Scap. c.*  
2. p. 6.  
(f) *Contr. Cels.*  
l. 2. p. 80.

(a) Ib. 3. p.  
124.

(b) Lib. 1. p. 34.

nificent work of *Jesus*, by his name to heal even to this day, whom God pleased; that he (a) himself had seen many, who by having the name of God and Christ called over them, had been delivered from the greatest evils, frenzy and madness, and infinite other distempers, which neither Men nor Devils had been able to cure. What influence these miraculous effects had upon the World, he lets us know elsewhere. "The Apostles of our Lord (says (b) he) without these miraculous powers would never have been able to have moved their Auditors, nor persuaded them to desert the institutions of their Country, and to embrace their new Doctrine; and having once embraced it, to defend it even to death, in defiance of the greatest dangers. Yea even to this day the foot-steps of that Holy Spirit, which appeared in the shape of a Dove, are preserved among the Christians; they exorcize *Demons*, perform many cures, and according to the will of God foresee and foretell things to come. At which, though *Celsus* and his personated *Jew* may laugh, yet I affirm further, that many even against their inclinations have been brought over to the Christian Religion, their former opposition of it being suddenly changed into a resolute maintaining of it unto death, after they have had Visions communicated to them; several of which nature we our selves have seen. And should we only reckon up those at which we our selves have been present and beheld, it may be it would only make the Infidels merry; supposing that we like themselves did forge and feign them. But God bears witness with my conscience, that I do not endeavour by falsely contrived stories, but by various powerful instances to recommend the Divine Religion of the Holy *Jesus*. More testimonies of this kind I could easily produce from *Minutius Felix*, *Cyprian*, *Arnobius*, and *Lastantius*; but that these are enough to my purpose.

XIII. ANOTHER advantage that exceedingly contributed to the triumph of Christianity, was the singular learning of many, who became champions to defend it: For it could not but be a mighty satisfaction, especially to Men of ordinary capacities, and mean employments (which are the far greatest part of mankind) to see persons of the most smart and subtil reasonings, of the most acute and refined understandings, and consequently not easily capable of being imposed upon by arts of sophistry and plausible stories, trampling upon their former sentiments and opinions, and not only entertaining the Christian Faith, but defending it against its most virulent opposers. 'Tis true indeed the Gospel at its first setting out was left to its own naked strength, and Men of the most unpolish'd breeding made choice of to convey it to the World, that it might not seem to be an humane artifice, or the success of it be ascribed to the parts and powers of Man. But after that for an hundred years together it had approved it self to the World, and a sharper edge was set upon the malice and keenness of its adversaries, it was but proper to take in external helps to assist it. And herein the care of the Divine Providence was very remarkable, that as miracles became less common and frequent in the Church, God was pleased to raise up even from among the *Gentiles* themselves, Men of profound abilities, and excellent learning, who might *τοις ὀφείοις πλεονεξίας βάλλειν* (as *Julian* (c) said of the Christians of his time) beat them at their own weapons, and wound them with arrows drawn out of their own quiver; and it was high time to do so: for the *Gentiles* did not only attack the Christians and their Religion by methods

(c) Theod. H.  
Eccl. 1. 3. 3. 6. 8.  
p. 131.



Methods of cruelty, and by arts of insinuation, not only object what wit and subtilty could invent, to bear any shadow and pretence of reason, but load them with the blackest crimes, which nothing but the utmost malice and prejudice could ever suspect to be true. This gave occasion to the Christian Apologists, and the first Writers against the *Gentiles*, who by their learned and rational discourses assail'd the Christians from the things charged against them; justified the reasonableness, excellency, and divinity of their Religion; and expos'd the folly and falshood, the brutishness and impiety, the absurd and trifling rites of the *Pagan* Worship; by which means prejudices were removed, and thousands brought over to the Faith. In this way they that rendred themselves most renowned, and did greatest service to the Christian cause, were especially these, *Quadratus* Bishop of *Athens*, and *Aristides*, formerly a famous Philosopher of that City, a Man wise and eloquent, dedicated each an *Apologetic* to the Emperor *Adrian*: *Justin* the Martyr, besides several Tracts against the *Gentiles*, wrote two Apologies; the first presented to *Antoninus Pius*, the second to *M. Aurelius*, and the Senate: about which time also *Athenagoras* presented his Apology to *M. Aurelius*, and *Aurelius Commodus*: not to mention his excellent discourse concerning the Resurrection. To the same *M. Aurelius*, *Melito* Bishop of *Sardis* exhibited his Apologetic Oration for the Christians: under this Emperor also flourished *Apollinaris* Bishop of *Hierapolis* in *Asia*, and dedicated to him an incomparable discourse in defence of the Christian Faith; besides five Books which he wrote against the *Gentiles*, and two concerning the truth. Not long after *Theophilus* Bishop of *Antioch* compos'd his three excellent Books for the conviction of *Autolycus*: and *Miltiades* presented an Apology (probably) to the Emperor *Commodus*. *Tatian* the Syrian, Scholar to *Justin Martyr*, a Man learned and eloquent, among other things wrote a Book against the *Gentiles*, which sufficiently evidences his great abilities. *Tertullian*, a Man of admirable learning, and the first of the *Latins* that appeared in this cause, under the Reign of *Severus*, published his *Apologetic*, directed to the Magistrates of the Roman Empire; besides his Books, *Ad Nationes*, *De Idololatria*, *Ad Scapulam*, and many more. After him succeeded *Origen*, whose eight Books against *Celsus* did not greater service to the Christian cause, than they did honour to himself. *Minutius Felix*, an eminent advocate at *Rome*, wrote a short, but most elegant Dialogue between *Octavius* and *Caecilius*, which (as *Lactantius* (a) long since observed) shews, how fit and able an advocate he would have been to assert the truth, had he wholly applyed himself to it. About the time of *Gallus* and *Volusian*, *Cyprian* address'd himself in a discourse to *Demetrian* the Proconsul of *Afric*, in behalf of the Christians and their Religion, and published his Tract *De Idolorum vanitate*, which is nothing but an Epitome of *Minutius* his Dialogue. Towards the close of that Age under *Dioclesian*, *Arnobius* taught Rhetoric with great applause at *Sicca* in *Afric*; and being convinc'd of the truth of Christianity, could hardly make the Christians at first believe that he was real. In evidence therefore of his sincerity, he wrote seven Books against the *Gentiles*, wherein he smartly and rationally pleads the Christian cause: as not long after his Scholar *Lactantius*, who under *Dioclesian* profess'd Rhetoric at *Nicomedia*, set himself to the composing several discourses in defence of the Christian, and subversion of the *Gentile* Religion. A Man witty and eloquent, but more happy in attacking his Adversaries, than

(a) *De Instit.* l. 9.  
c. 1. p. 459.



than in establishing the Principles of his own Religion, many whereof he seems not very distinctly to have understood. To all these I may add *Apollonius*, a Man versed in all kind of Learning and Philosophy; and (if *St. Hierom* say right) a *Senator* of *Rome*, who in a set Oration with so brave and generous a confidence, eloquently pleaded his own, and the cause of Christianity before the Senate it self; for which he suffered as a Martyr in the Reign of *Commodus*.

XIV. AND as they thus defended Christianity on the one hand from the open assaults and calumnies of the *Gentiles*, so were they no less careful on the other to clear it from the errors and Heresies, wherewith Men of perverse and evil minds sought to corrupt and poison it. And the chief of those that engaged in this way were these, *Agrippa Castor*, a Man of great learning, in the time of *Adrian*, wrote an accurate Refutation of *Basilides* and his Principles in xxiv. Books. *Theophilus* of *Antioch* against *Hermogenes* and *Marcion*; *Apollinaris*, *Philip* Bishop of *Gortyna* in *Crete*, *Musanus*, *Modestus*, *Rhodon*, *Tatian's* Scholar, *Miltiades*, *Apollonius*, *Serapion* Bishop of *Antioch*, and hundreds more, who engag'd against the *Marcionites*, *Montanists*, and other Heretics of those times. But the principal of all was *Irenaeus*, who took to task the most noted Heresies of those Ages, and with incomparable industry and quickness of reasoning unravelled their Principles, exposed their practices, refuted their errors, whereby (as he frequently intimates) many were reduced and recovered to the Church. I might also mention several others, who though not known to have particularly adventured in either of these ways, are yet renowned for their excellent skill in all Arts and Sciences, whereby they became eminently useful to the Church. Such (besides those whereof an account is given in the following work) were *Dionysius* Bishop of *Corinth*, *Bardesanes* the *Syrian*, whose learning and eloquence were above the common standard, though he also wrote against almost all the Heresies of the Age he lived in. *Ammonius* the celebrated Philosopher of *Alexandria*, *Julius Africanus*, a Man peculiarly eminent for History and Chronology; *Dorotheus* Presbyter of *Antioch*, famous for his skill in *Hebrew*, as well as other parts of learning; *Anatolius* the *Alexandrian*, whom *Eusebius* magnifies so much as the most learned Man, and acute Philosopher of his age, exquisitely skill'd in Arithmetic, Geometry, Astronomy, Logic, Physic, Rhetoric, and indeed what not? *Pierius* Presbyter of *Alexandria*, an eloquent Preacher, and so great a Scholar, that he was commonly styled *Origen Junior*. But this is a field too large to proceed any further in, and therefore I stop here. By all which it is evident, what *St. Hierom* (a) remarques, how little reason *Celsus*, *Porphyry*, and *Julian* had to clamour against the Christians, as a rude and illiterate generation, who had no Learning, no Eloquence, or Philosophy to recommend them.

(a) Discant ergo Celsus, Porphyrius, Julianus, rabidi adversus Christum canes, discant eorum se-

ctatores, qui putant Ecclesiam, nullos Philosophos & eloquentes, nullos habuisse Doctores, quanti & quales viri eam fundaverint, extruxerint, & ornauerint, & desinant fidem nostram rustice tantum simplicitatis arguere, suamque potius imperitiam agnoscent. S. Hieron. praef. ad Catalog. de script. Eccl. 1.

XV. A third advantage that helpt on the progress of Christianity, was the indefatigable zeal and industry used in the propagation of it. No stone was left unturn'd, no Method unattempted, whereby they might reclaim Men from error, and bring them over to the acknowledgment of the truth. Hence in an ancient Inscription (b) said to be set up in

(b) Ap. Crater. Inscript. p. 238. N. IX.

Spain,

Spain, to the honour of Nero, they are described under this Character, *QUI NOVAM GENERI HUM. SUPERSTITION. INCULCAB.* Those who inculcated and obtruded a new Superstition upon mankind. Indeed they were infinitely zealous to gain Profelytes to the best Religion in the World. They preached it boldly, and prayed heartily for the conversion and reformation of mankind, solicited their neighbours that were yet strangers to the Faith, instructed and informed new converts, and built them up on the most holy Faith. Those that were of greater parts and eminency erected and instituted Schools, where they publicly taught those that resorted to them, grounding them in the rudiments of the Faith, and antidoting them both against Heathens on the one side, and Hereticks on the other. Among us (says (a) Tatian) not only the rich and the wealthy learn our Philosophy, but the poor are freely disciplined and instructed; we admit all that are willing to learn, whether they be old or young. And what the success was, he tells (b) us a little after, that all their Virgins were sober and modest, and were wont to discourse concerning divine things, even while they were sitting at their Distaffs. Nor did they content themselves only to do thus at home, many of them freely exposing themselves to all manner of hazards and hardships: no pains were thought great, no dangers considerable, no difficulties insuperable, that they might enlarge the bounds of the Gospel, travelling into the most barbarous Nations, and to the remotest corners of the World. "The divine and admirable Disciples of the Apostles (says (c) Eusebius) built up the superstructures of those Churches, the foundations whereof the Apostles had laid in all Places where they came: they every where promoted the publication of the Gospel, sowing the seeds of that heavenly Doctrine throughout the whole World. For their minds being inflamed with the love of a more divine Philosophy; according to our Lords counsel, they distributed their estates to the poor; and leaving their own Countries, took upon them the office of Evangelists; preaching Christ, and delivering the Evangelical Writings to those who had not yet so much as heard of the Christian Faith. And no sooner had they founded the Faith in any foreign Countries, and ordained Guides and Pastors, to whom they committed the care of those new Plantations, but they presently betook themselves to other Nations, ratifying their Doctrine with the miraculous powers of that Divine Spirit that attended them: so that as soon as ever they began to preach, the people universally flocked to them, and cheerfully and heartily embraced the worship of the true God, the great Creator of the World. In the number of these Evangelical Missionaries, that were of the first Apostolical succession, were Silas, Sylvanus, Crescens, Andronicus, Trophimus, Marcus, Aristarchus, &c. as afterwards Pantenus who went into India, Pothinus and Irenaus from Smyrna into France, each successively becoming Bishop of Lyons, and infinite others mentioned in the Histories and Martyrologies of the Church, who counted not their lives to be dear unto them, so that they might finish their course with joy, and make known the mystery of the Gospel to the ends of the earth.

XVI. FOURTHLY, Christianity recommended it self to the World by the admirable lives of its professors, which were so truly consonant to all the laws of virtue and goodness, as could not but reconcile the wiser and more unprejudiced part of the Gentile world to a better opinion of it, and vindicate it from those absurd and senseless cavils that

(a) Orat. contr. Grac. p. 167.

(b) Ibid. p. 168.

(c) H. Eccles. l. 3. c. 37. p. 209.

that were made against it. For when they saw Christians every where so seriously devout and pious, so incomparably chaste and sober, of such humble and mortified tempers, so strictly just and righteous, so kind and charitable, not to themselves only, but to all mankind, they concluded there must be something more than humane in it: as indeed no argument is so convictive, as a demonstration from experience. Their singular piety, and the discipline of their manners weighed down all the disadvantages they were under. The divine and most admirable Apostles of Christ (says (a) *Eusebius*) how rude soever they were in speech, were yet τὸν βίον ἀκρῶς κεκαθαρμένοι, καὶ ἀρετῇ πάσῃ τοῖς ψυχῇς κεκοσμημένοι, of the most pure and holy lives, and had their minds adorned with all sorts of virtue. And such generally were the Christians of the succeeding Ages; they did not entertain the World with a parcel of good words and a plausible story, but shewed their Faith by their works, and proved the divinity of their Religion by the heavenliness of their lives. We (b) *M. Fæl. Dial. non longè à fin. p. 31.* (says the Christian in (b) *Minutius Fælix*) despise the pride and superciliousness of Philosophers, whom we know to be debauched persons, and always eloquent against those vices of which themselves are most guilty. For we measure not wisdom by mens garbs and habits, but by their mind and manners; nor do we speak great things so much as live them, glorying that we have attained what they earnestly sought, but could never find. Christians were then the only persons that really were what they pretended to, Men heartily reformed from vice to virtue: "Being persuaded (as *Justin Martyr* tells (c) the Emperors) by the "Word, we have renounced the *Demons*, and through the Son worship "the only and unbegotten Deity: and we who heretofore took pleasure "in adulteries, do now embrace the strictest chastity; and who were ad- "dicted to magic arts, have devoted our selves to the benign and immor- "tal God: we who valued estate and riches before all things in the "World, do now cast what we have in common, distributing to every "one according to his need: we who by hatred and slaughters mutually "raged against each other, and refus'd to sit at the same fire with those "who were not of our own tribe; since Christ's appearing in the World, "familiarily converse together, pray for our enemies, and for the conver- "sion of those that unjustly hate us, endeavouring to persuade them to "live according to the excellent precepts of Christ, that so they may "have just ground to hope for the same rewards with us from the great "judge of the World. Indeed strange was the efficacy of the Christian Doctrine over the minds of Men, which the Christian Apologists at every turn plead as an uncontrollable evidence of their Religion; that it made all sorts of persons that complied with it, chaste and temperate, quiet and peaceable, meek and modest, and afraid of the least appearance and colour of what was evil. When the Heathens derided them for the mean and unpompous solemnities of their Religion, they universally declared, that God respected no Man for any external excellencies or advantages, it was the pure and the holy Soul he de-

lighted in; that he stood in no need of blood or smoke, perfumes and incense; that the greatest and best sacrifice was to offer up a mind truly devoted to him: that meekness and kindness, and humble heart, and an inno-

(a) *Ubi supr.*  
c. 24. p. 94.

(b) *M. Fæl. Di-*  
*al. non longè à*  
*fin. p. 31.*

(c) *Apol. II.*  
p. 61.

*Tertul. Apol. c. 3. p. 4. ad Nation. c. 1. p. 41.*  
*Orig. contr. Cels. l. 1. p. 9. 15, 21, 36, 50, 53.*  
*lib. 2. p. 61. 85, 88, 110. lib. 3. p. 128, 147, 152,*  
*157. lib. 4. p. 167. lib. 6. p. 306. lib. 7. p. 364.*  
*lib. 8. p. 409. & alibi passim. Lactant. lib. 3.*  
*c. 26. p. 328. lib. 4. c. 3. p. 351.*

*J. Mart. Orat. ad Grec. p. 40. Athenag. Legat.*  
*p. 13. Clem. Alex. Strom. l. 7. p. 706, 709, 714,*  
*719, 728. Minuc. Fæl. p. 26, 30. Arnob. adv.*  
*Gent. l. 7. p. 104. Orig. contr. Cels. l. 8. p. 385,*  
*389, 392. Lactant. l. 1. c. 20. p. 108. l. 6. c. 1.*  
*p. 540. c. 24. p. 636. Epitom. c. 2. p. 736.*



innocent life, was the Sacrifice with which God was well pleased, and infinitely beyond all *Holocausts* and Oblations; that a pious and devout mind was the fittest Temple for God to dwell in, and that to do one's duty, to abstain from sin, to be intent upon the Offices and Ministrations of Prayer and Praise, is the truest Festival; yea, that the whole life of a good Man is nothing else but a holy and festival solemnity. This was the Religion of Christians then, and it rendered their profession amiable and venerable to the World; and forced many times its most violent opposers to fall down, and say *that God was in them of a truth*. But the less of this Argument is said here, a full account having been given of it in a work peculiar to this Subject.

XVII. FIFTHLY, The Disciples of this holy and excellent Religion gained innumerable Profelytes to their Party by their Patience and Constancy under Sufferings. They were immutably resolved to maintain their station, notwithstanding all the attempts made to beat them from it: They entertained the fiercest threatnings with an unshaken mind, and fearlessly beheld the Racks and Engins prepared for them: They laughed at torments, and courted flames, and went out to meet Death in its blackest dress: They dyed rejoicing, and triumphed in the midst of the greatest tortures; which hapning for some ages almost every day, could not but convince their enemies that they were in good earnest; that they heartily believed their Religion to be true, and that there must be a divine and supernatural power going along with it, that could support them under it; which *Justin Martyr* confesses, was one main inducement of his Conversion to Christianity. What particular methods of cruelty were used towards the Primitive Christians, and with how brave and generous a patience, with what evenness and tranquillity of mind they bore up under the heaviest and acutest torments, we have sufficiently declared in another place: and therefore shall here only take a short survey of those ten famous *Persecutions*, that so eminently exercised the Faith and Patience of the Primitive Saints, and then collect the force of the Argument resulting from it. And this the rather, because it will present us with the best prospect of the state of the Church in those early ages of it. As to the particular dates and Periods of some of these persecutions, different accounts are assigned by *Sulpitius Severus*, *Ensebius*, *Orosius*, *Hierom*, and others; we shall follow that which shall appear to be most likely and probable.

*Prim. Christi.  
Part. II. Ch. 7.*

XVIII. THE first that raised a general Persecution against the Christians, was *Nero*, as *Tertullian* (a) tells the *Gentiles*; and for the truth of it, refers them to their own public *Archives* and Records. A Prince of that wild and ungovernable temper, of such brutish and extravagant manners, that their own Writers scruple not to style him, a Beast in humane shape, and the very monster of mankind. He was guilty of the most unbounded Pride and Ambition, Drunkenness, Luxury, and all manner of Debauchery, Sodomy and Incest, which he attempted to commit with his own Mother. But cruelty seemed to predominate among his other vices; besides infinite others, he dispatched the greatest part of the Senate, put to death his Tutor *Seneca* and his Wife, *Lucan* the Poet; nay violated all the Laws of Nature, in falling upon his own near Relations: he was privy to, if not guilty of the death of his Father *Claudius*; killed his two Wives, *Octavia* and *Poppæa*, and murdered *Antonia* because refusing to succeed in their Bed; he poisoned his Brother *Britannicus*:

(a) *Apol. c. 5.  
p. 6.*

(c)

and



and to compleat all these villanies, fell next upon his own Mother *Agrip-pina*, whom he hated for her free reproving his looseness and extravagancy; and having first spoiled her of all public honours and caused her to be openly disgraced and derided, then thrice attempted her life by poison, he at last sent an Assassin to stab her. And the tradition then went, that not content to do this, he himself came and beheld her naked Corps, contemplating and handling its several parts; commending some and dispraising others. And if thus barbarous and inhumane towards his own Kindred and Subjects, we cannot think he was over-favourable to Christians; wanting this title (says *Eusebius*) (a) to be added to all the rest, to be styled the first Emperor that became an Enemy to the Christian Religion, publishing Laws and Edicts for the suppressing of it; and prosecuting those that professed it, with the utmost rigour in every place; and that upon this occasion. Among infinite other instances of his madness and folly, he took up a resolution to burn *Rome*, either as being offended with the narrowness of the streets, and the deformity of the buildings, or ambitious to become the author of a more stately and magnificent City, and to call it after his own name. But however it was, he caused it to be set on fire, about the XIX. of July, *Ann. Christ. LXIV.* The conquering flames quickly prevailed over that City, that had so often triumphed over the rest of the World, in six or seven days spoiling and reducing the far greatest part of it (ten *Regions* of fourteen) into ashes; laying waste Houses and Temples, and all the venerable Antiquities and Monuments of that place, which had been preserved with so much care and reverence for many ages; himself in the mean while from *Mecenas* his Tower beholding the sad spectacle with pleasure and delight, and in the habit of a Player, singing the destruction of *Troy*. And when the People would have but searched the Ruines of their own houses, he forbade them, not suffering them to reap what the Mercy of the flames had spared. This Act (as well it might) exposed him to all the hatred and detestation, wherewith an injured and abused People could resent it, which he endeavoured to remove by large promises, and great rewards, by consulting the *Sibylline* Books, and by public supplications and sacrifices to the gods. Notwithstanding all which, *Tacitus* (b) tells us, the People still believed him to be the author of the mischief. This not succeeding, he sought to clear himself by deriving the *odium* upon the Christians, whom he knew to be sufficiently hateful to the People, charging them to have been the Incendiaries, and proceeding against them with the most exquisite torments. Having apprehended some, whom they either forced or perswaded to confess themselves guilty, by their means great numbers of others were betrayed; whom *Tacitus* confesses, that not the burning of the City, but the common hatred made criminal. They were treated with all the instances of scorn and cruelty; some of them were wrapt up in the skins of wild Beasts, and worried by Dogs; others crucified; others burnt alive, being clad in paper coats dipt in pitch, wax, and such combustible matters; that when day-light failed, they might serve for Torches in the night. These spectacles *Nero* exhibited in his own Gardens, which yet the People entertained with more pity than pleasure; knowing they were done not for the public benefit, but meerly to gratifie his own private rage and malice. Little better usage did the Christians meet with in other parts of the Empire, as appears from the inscription (c) found at *Clunia* in *Spain*, dedicated

(a) *H. Eccl. l. 1.*  
26. 45. p. 67.

(b) *Annal. l. 15.*  
6. 44. p. 319.

(c) *Ap. Gruter.*  
602. *Ins. citat.*

to *Nero* in memory of his having cleared the Province of those that had introduced a new Superstition amongst mankind. Under this Persecution suffered *Tecla*, *Torques*, *Torquatus*, *Marcellus*, and several others mentioned in the ancient Martyrologies; especially the Apostles *Peter* and *Paul*; the one upon the Cross, the other by the Sword.

XIX. THE troublesome vicissitudes and revolutions of affairs that hapned under the succeeding Emperors, *Galba*, *Otho*, and *Vitellius*; and the mild and merciful disposition of *Vespasian* and *Titus*, gave some rest to the Christians: till *Domitian* succeeding, began a SECOND PERSECUTION. A Man of a temper vastly different from that of his Father, and his Brother; for though at first he put on a plausible carriage, yet he soon left off the vizard, and appeared like himself; lazy and unactive, ill-natur'd and suspicious, griping and covetous, proud and insolent: yea, so vainly ambitious as to affect Divinity, in all public Edicts assuming to himself, and in all Petitions and Addresses requiring from others the titles of *Lord* and *God*. He never truly loved any Man; and when he most pretended it, it was a sure sign of that mans ruine. His cruelty he exercis'd first upon flies, thousands whereof he dispatched every day; next upon Men, and those of all ranks and states: putting to death the most illustrious Senators, and persons of the greatest honour and nobility upon the most trifling pretences; and many times for no cause at all. In the fierceness and brutality of his temper he equall'd *Nero*, *Portio Neronis de crudelitate*, as *Tertullian* styles him; nay, in this exceeded him: that *Nero* was content to command execution to be done at a distance, while *Domitian* took pleasure in beholding his cruelties exercised before his eyes: An argument of a temper deeper died in blood. But the Christians, alas, bore the heaviest load of his rage and malice, whom he every where persecuted either by death or banishment. Under him *St. John the Evangelist* was sent for to *Rome*, and by his command thrown into a Cauldron of boiling oil: in the midst whereof when the Divine Providence had miraculously preserved him, he immediately banished him into *Patmos*. He put to death his Cousin-German *Fl. Clemens* (at that time *Consul*) for being a Christian, and banished his Wife *Fl. Domitilla* (his own kinswoman also) upon the same account into the Island *Pandataria*. At length his brutish and bloody practices rendred him intolerable to his own friends and servants, who conspir'd against him (his own Wife *Domitia* being of the confederacy) and slew him. His successor *Nerva* abrogated his Acts, and recalled those whom he had proscribed and banished; among whom *St. John* taking the benefit of that Act of Revocation, quitted *Patmos*, and returned to *Ephesus*. Loc. super cit.

XX. THE THIRD PERSECUTION commenced under *Trajan*, whom *Nerva* had adopted to be his Successor. A Prince he was of excellent and incomparable virtues, whose justice and impartiality, gentleness and modesty, munificence and liberality, kindness and affability, rendred him infinitely dear and acceptable to the people; the extravagancies of his Predecessors not a little contributing to sweeten his Government to them. He was mild and dispassionate, familiar and courteous; he shewed a great reverence to the Senate, by whose advice he usually acted; and they to requite him, gave him the title of *Optimus*, as whom they judged the best of all their Princes. He conversed freely and innocently with all Men, being desirous rather to be beloved,

(a) L. 1. c. 3.  
ff. de Colleg. &  
corp. Lib. 47.  
tit. 22.  
(b) Ulpian de  
off. proconsul. l. 6.  
ib. l. 2.  
(c) Lib. 10. E.  
pist. 42, & 43.

than either fear'd or honour'd by the people. The glory of all which is exceedingly stain'd in the Records of the Church by his severe proceedings against the Christians. He looked upon the Religion of the Empire as daily undermin'd by this new way of Worship, that the numbers of Christians grew formidable, and might possibly endanger the peace and tranquillity of the *Roman State*; and that there was no better way to secure to himself the favour of the gods, especially in his Wars, than to vindicate their cause against the Christians. Accordingly therefore he issued out orders to proceed against them, as *illegal Societies* erected and acting contrary to the Laws; in which number all Colleges and Corporations were accounted, that were not (a) settled either by the Emperors constitution, or the Decree of the Senate; and the persons (b) frequenting them adjudged guilty of High Treason. Indeed the Emperors (as we have elsewhere observed) were infinitely suspicious of such meetings, as which might easily conspire into Faction and Treason: and therefore when *Pliny* (c) interceded with *Trajan* in the behalf of the City of *Nicomedia*, that being so subject to fires, he would constitute a corporation of *Smiths*, though but a small number, which might be easily kept in order, and which he promised to keep a particular eye upon: The Emperor answered, By no means, for we ought to remember (*says he*) that that Province, and especially those Cities are greatly disturbed by such kind of Factions; and whatever the title or the occasion be, if they meet together, they will be *Heterie*, though less numerous than the rest. That they look'd upon the Christian Assemblies as in the number of these unlawful Corporations; and that under this pretence *Trajan* endeavour'd to suppress them, will appear from *Pliny's* Letter to him. In the mean time he commanded them either to offer sacrifice to the Gods, or to be punished as contemners of them. The people also in several places by popular tumults falling foul upon them. The chief of those who obtained the Crown of Martyrdom under him were *S. Clemens* Bishop of *Rome*, *S. Simeon* Bishop of *Jerusalem*, and *S. Ignatius* Bishop of *Antioch*, whom *Trajan* himself condemned, and sent to *Rome*, there to be thrown to wild Beasts.

XXI. THE Persecution rag'd, as in the other parts of the Empire, so especially in the Provinces of *Pontus* and *Bithynia*, where *Pliny* the younger (who had some time since been *Consul*) then governed as *Pro-Pretor* with *Consular* power and dignity. Who seeing vast multitudes of Christians indicted by others, and pressing on of themselves to execution, and that to proceed severely against all that came, would be in a manner to lay waste those Provinces, he thought good to write to the Emperor about this matter; to know his pleasure in the case. His Letter, because acquainting us so exactly with the state of the Christians, and the manner of proceeding against them, and giving so eminent a testimony to their innocence and integrity, we shall here insert.



## C. PLINIUS to the Emperor T R A J A N.

**I**T is my custom, Sir, in all affairs wherein I doubt, to have recourse to you. For who can better either sway my irresolution, or instruct my ignorance? I have never been heretofore present at the examination and trial of Christians; and therefore know not what the crime is, and how far it is wont to be punished, or how to proceed in these enquiries. Nor was I a little at a loss, whether regard be to be had to difference of Age; whether the young and the weak be to be distinguished from the more strong and aged? whether place may be allowed to repentance, and it may be of any advantage to him, who once was a Christian, to cease to be so? Whether the name alone without other offences, or the offences that go along with the name, ought to be punished? In the mean time towards those who as Christians have been brought before me, I have taken this course; I asked them whether they were Christians? If they confessed, I asked them once and again, threatening punishment; if they persisted, I commanded them to be executed. For, I did not at all doubt but that, whatever their confession was, their stubbornness and inflexible obstinacy ought to be punished. Others there were guilty of the like madness, whom because they were Roman Citizens, I adjudged to be transmitted to Rome. While things thus proceeded, the error, as is usual, spreading farther, more cases did ensue. A nameless Libel was presented, containing the names of many who denied themselves to be, or to have been Christians. These, when after my example they invoked the Gods, and offered Wine and Incense to your Statue (which for that purpose I had commanded to be brought together with the images of the Gods) and had moreover blasphemed Christ (which it's said none that are true Christians can be compelled to do) I dismiss'd; others mentioned in the Libel confessed themselves Christians, but presently denied it, that they had indeed been such, but had renounced it; some by the space of three years, others many years since, and one five and twenty years ago. All which paid their reverence and veneration to your Statue, and the images of the Gods, and blasphemed Christ. They affirmed that the whole sum of that Sect or error lay in this, that they were wont upon a set solemn day to meet together before Sun-rise, and to sing among themselves a Hymn to Christ, as the God whom they worshipped, and oblige themselves by an Oath, not to commit any wickedness, but to abstain from Theft, Robbery, Adultery, to keep Faith, and when required, to restore any pledge intrusted with them. Which done, then to depart for that time, and to meet again at a common meal, to partake of a promiscuous and harmless food; which yet they laid aside, after I had published an Edict, forbidding, according to your order, the Heteriæ (or unlawful Assemblies) to be kept. To satisfy my self in the truth hereof, I commanded two Maidens called Deaconesses, to be examined upon the Rack. But I perceived nothing but a lewd and immoderate Superstition; and therefore surceasing any further process, I have sent to pray your advice: For the case seemed to me very worthy to be consulted about; especially considering the great numbers that are in danger: for very many of all ages and ranks, both Men and Women are, and will be called in question: the contagion of this Superstition having over-spread not only Cities, but Towns and Country Villages, which yet seems possible to be stopt and cur'd. It's very evident that the Temples, which were almost quite forsaken, begin



to be frequented, that the holy Rites and Solemnities of a long time neglected are set on foot again, and that Sacrifices are from all parts brought to be sold, which hitherto found very few to buy them. Whence 'tis easie to conjecture, what multitudes of persons might be reclaim'd, if place be given to repentance.

(a) Tacit. Annal. l. 15. c. 44. p. 319.  
(b) Sueton. in Neron. c. 16. p. 571.

This Letter was written, as is probable, about the year of our Lord CVII. Traj. IX. Trajan lying then at *Antioch*, in order to his Wars in the *East*, and where the Persecution was very hot. By which 'tis evident, what unreasonable and inveterate prejudices even the more moderate and ingenuous part of the *Gentile-world* had entertained against the Christian Religion; that though so innocent and unblameable, as to extort an honourable Character from its greatest enemies, and most malicious Apostates, though Racks and Tortures could force out nothing to its disadvantage; yet rather than not express their resentments (what was unbecoming Men of parts and breeding) they loaded it with ill names and hard words. *Pliny* we see here scruples not to style it not only an error, but madness, and a wicked and immoderate Superstition, charging the constant profession of it, for stubbornness, and an incurable obstinacy, what in it self was the effect of the most brave and generous resolution. And the very same civility it found from his two intimate friends, *Tacitus* and *Suetonius*, the one whereof calls it a (a) detestable, the other a (b) novel and mischievous Superstition. By this account also we see, that though the severity of the Persecution might tempt some to turn *Renegades*, yet that so vast was the spread which Christianity had made in those parts, that this great Man knew not how to deal with them. To direct him therefore in this affair, the Emperor returned this following Rescript.

### TRAJAN to PLINY, Greeting.

AS to the mannner of your procedure, my Secundus, in examining the causes of those who have been brought before you for being Christians, you have taken the course which you ought to take: for no certain and general Law can be so framed, as shall provide for all particular cases. Let them not be sought for; but if they be accus'd and convicted, let them be punished: yet so, that if any denies himself to be a Christian, and shall give evidence of it by doing sacrifice to our gods, although heretofore he has been suspected, let him be pardoned upon his repentance. But as for Libels, published without the name of the Authors, let them not be valid as to the Crimes they charge; for that were an ill precedent, and is not the usage of our Reign.

(c) Apol. c. 2. c. 3.

*Tertullian* (c) speaking of this Imperial Edict, calls it "A sentence founded by a strange necessity: it allows them not to be sought for, as if they were innocent, and yet commands them to be punished, as if they were guilty: it spares and rages, dissembles, and yet punishes. Why does he intangle himself in his own censure? If he condemns them, why does he not hunt them out? If he thinks them not to be search'd out, why does he not acquit them? Where *Tertullian* seems to

to

to argue more like an Orator than Logician. For *Trajan* might be unwilling the Christians should be nicely hunted out; and yet not think them innocent: he could not find them guilty of any enormous crime, but only of a strange and novel Superstition: and therefore while they concealed themselves, did not think it reasonable that they should be left to the malice and rapine of busy under-Officers; who acted under the Presidents and Governors of Provinces, meer Sycophants and Calumniators, ἀναδείκνυσθαι καὶ τῶν ἀποδείων ἱερασι, as (a) *Melito* styles them in his Apology to *M. Antoninus*, impudent accusers; and ravenous devourers of other mens estates, of whom he complains; that under a pretence of the Imperial Edicts they day and night openly spoil and plunder the harmless and the Innocent. These *Trajan* might think fit to restrain; but where there was notoriety of Fact, where Christians were duly cited before the public Tribunals; and the charge substantially made good, there they were to be left to the sentence of the Law. But however it was, by this means the edge of their enemies Fury was taken off; and though the popular rage might in some particular places still continue, yet the general force and rigour of the Persecution did abate and cease.

(a) *Ap. Eusebii*  
*H. Eccl. l. 4.*  
c. 26. p. 147.

XXII: *TRAJAN* dying at *Selinus* in *Cilicia*, *Adrian* (whom he had adopted) succeeded in the Empire. A Prince of excellent parts, and no inconsiderable learning, μυσηώτατος βασιλεύς, as (b) *Athenaeus* calls him, a Prince greatly devoted to the Muses, and yet one in whom 'tis hard to say whether Vice or Virtue had the upper hand; and which is more, who seemed to reconcile most vices with their contrary virtues. He highly honoured the Senate, without whose Authority he would never transact any affairs of moment; and upon solemn days would condescend to wait upon the *Consuls* to their own houses; and yet was proud and vain-glorious, and ambitious of Honour, which he greedily caught at upon every little occasion. He was magnificent in his works, and liberal in his gifts; but withal envious, detracting from the glory of his Predecessor, censuring and discommending the most eminent Artists in all kind of faculties. He familiarly conversed with his friends, visited them in their sickness many times twice or thrice a day, treated them with the freedom and kindness of companions; and yet he was fierce and cruel; as is evident by the many persons of nobility and renown whom he put to death. But we have noted enough of his character elsewhere; in the life of *St. Quadratus*. He was addicted to Magic, and a great Zealot for Religion; especially the Rites of *Greece*: but despised and hated all other Religions, upon which account he was no good friend to Christians. In his time, a FOURTH PERSECUTION was raised against them, and so *Sulpitius Severus* (c) positively calls it: I know *Eusebius* followed by *Orosius* and some others, assigns the Fourth Persecution to the Reign of *M. Aurelius*; but whoever impartially considers the state of things, will see that it ought to be fixed here. 'Tis true, we do not find any new Laws which this Emperor made against the Christians, but the Laws of his Predecessors were still in force, and the People in most places were ready enough to run upon this errand of their own accord, and to sacrifice the poor innocent Christians to their own spight and malice. Whence *Eusebius* speaking of the Apologies presented to this Emperor, says (d) it was because wicked and ill-minded Men began to vex and disturb the Christians. And *S. Hierom* (e) more particu-

(b) *Deipnos.* l. 8.  
c. 16. p. 361.

(c) *H. Sac.* l.  
2. p. 142.

(d) *H. Eccl.* l.  
4 c. 3. p. 116.  
(e) *De script.* in  
*Quadrat.*

larly

(a) *Epist. ad Magn. Orat.*  
p. 327. Tom. 2.

(b) *Tertul. lib. ad Scapul. c. 4.*  
p. 71.

larly tells us, that the zeal which the Emperor shewed in being initiated into the holy mysteries and the Rites of Greece, gave opportunity and encouragement to the People (though without any particular Warrant) to fall upon them; and this he else-where (a) calls a *most grievous Persecution*. And so indeed it was, as is evident, not only from the Apologies which both *Quadratus* and *Aristides* presented to the Emperor in behalf of the Christians, but that when *Arrius* (b) *Antoninus* (whom most supposed to have been the same with him that succeeded *Adrian*) was *Proconsul* of *Asia*, and severely persecuted the Christians there, all the Christians of the City where he resided as one Man beset his Tribunal, openly confessing themselves to be Christians. He amazed at the multitude, caused some few of them to be executed, telling the rest, that if they had a mind to end their lives, they had Precipices and Halters enough at home, and need not come thither for execution. Nay so high did it arise, that *Serenius Graniannus*, one of the following *Proconsuls* was forced to write to *Adrian* for its mitigation: which the Emperor accordingly commanded by a *Rescript*, directed to *Minutius Fundannus*, *Graniannus* his Successor in that Province; as he did also to several others; as *Melito* particularly tells us in his Apology. But though the fire seemed to be pretty well quenched at present, yet did it break out again in the succeeding Reign of *Antoninus Pius*, devouring many, whose Sufferings are recorded in the Martyrologies of the Church; and for the stopping whereof, *Justin Martyr* exhibited an Apology to this Emperor, which produced this excellent Letter of his to the *Common Council* of *Asia*, in favour of the Christians, which we have exemplified in the Life of *Justin Martyr*.

(c) *Eutrop. H. Rom. lib. 8. p.*  
1919.

XXIII. TO *Antoninus Pius* succeeded *M. Aurelius Antoninus*, and his Brother *L. Verus*. *M. Aurelius* was a person of whom the Writers of his Life deservedly speak great things. He was a good Man, and a great Philosopher, and whom the Historian (c) says, 'tis easier to admire, than to commend. But he was infinitely superstitious in his Religion, and therefore easily blown up by the Priests and Philosophers that were about him into a prejudice against Christianity, and persuaded to set on foot the FIFTH PERSECUTION against the Christians; whom he endeavoured to curb and suppress by new Laws and Edicts, exposing them to all the malice and fierceness of their enemies. The Persecution began in the *Eastern* parts about the seventh year of his Reign, where it continued almost all his time; and not content to stay there, spread it self into the *West*, especially *France*, where it raged with great severity. That the conflict was very sharp and fierce, may be guessed at by the crowd of Apologies that were presented to him by *Justin Martyr*, *Melito*, *Athenagoras*, and *Apollinaris*. In *Asia* *St. Polycarp* Bishop of *Smyrna* was first condemned to the fire, and then run through with a Sword, with twelve more from *Philadelphia*, who suffered with him, and *Germanicus* who a little before was devoured by wild Beasts. At *Rome*, besides *Ptolomy* and *Lucius*, *Justin the Martyr* with his six companions, *Charito*, *Charitina*, *Euelpistus*, *Hierax*, *Peon*, and *Valerianus* were beheaded. In the *French* Persecution suffered *Vettius Epagathus*, a young Man of incomparable Piety and Magnanimity; *Blandina* a Lady of singular Virtue, who after infinite and inexpressible torments was tied to a beam in fashion of a Cross, and thrown to wild Beasts; *Biblis*, who though at first through frailty she denied the Faith, yet recovered her



her courage, and expired in the midst of the acutest tortures. *Pothinus* Bishop of *Lyons* above XC. years old beaten and stoned to death. *Sanctus*, a Deacon of *Vien*, together with *Maturus*, exposed in the *Amphitheater*, tormented, and imprisoned several days together, presented to wild Beasts, placed in an Iron Chair red hot, and at last run through with a Spear. *Attalus* a Roman Citizen disgracefully led up and down in triumph, roasted in an Iron Chair, and then beheaded; as was also *Alexander* the Physician, a *Phrygian*, who readily professed himself a Christian: and *Ponticus* a youth of fifteen years of Age, who through all the methods of Cruelty and torment, which might have shaken a mature age, entered into the Kingdom of Heaven. A larger and more particular account of all whose Martyrdoms is recorded in the Letter written by the Churches of *Lyons* and *Vien* in *France*, to those of *Asia* and *Phrygia*, yet extant in *Eusebius*. At length the Emperor seems to have relaxed the Persecution, inclined to it, as is thought, by the remarkable Victory which he gained in his *German* Wars, by the Prayers of the Christian Legion, when the fortunes of the *Roman* Empire lay at stake, and the Christians so signally, so immediately engaged Heaven in its rescue and deliverance, by supplying them with rain, and fighting against the enemy with lightning and thunder. Whereupon the Emperour is said to have written to the Senate, acknowledging the greatness of the blessing, and commanding all just favour and indulgence to be shewed to the Christians. The substance of the story is universally owned by the *Gentile* writers, though out of spight to the Christians they either ascribe it to the power of Magic, or the prevalency of the Emperors own Prayers. That there were such Letters written, is plain, in that *Tertullian* (a) who lived but a little after, cites them, and appeals to them; though I confess little stress can be laid upon the Epistle that is extant at this day. There is still extant (b) a Law of *M. Aurelius*, and his Brother *Verus*, permitting those who follow the *Jewish* Superstition to obtain honours, and granting them guards to defend them from wrong and injury. By this very learned Men (c) understand Christians, at least equally with the *Jews*; these two being commonly confounded by the Writers of those times, and *Superstition* the word by which they usually denote Christianity. But however it was, this Law was made before that *German* Victory, *M. Aurelius* not being engaged in that War, till after the death of his Brother *Verus*.

XXIV. THE Christian Affairs were tolerably quiet and peaceable during the Reigns of *Commodus*, *Æl. Pertinax*, and *Julian*, till *Severus* got into the Throne; a Prince witty and learned, prudent and politic, hardy and valiant, but withal crafty and subtil, treacherous and unfaithful, bloody and passionate, and as the Historian (d) observes, of a nature truly answering to his name, *Vere Pertinax, vere Severus*. Under him began the SIXTH PERSECUTION: for though at first he shewed himself favourable to the Christians, yet afterwards he changed his mind, and gave ear to those who traduced them as an impious and infamous generation; a People that designed nothing but Treason and Rebellion against the State. Whereupon he not only suffered his Ministers and Governors of Provinces to treat them with all imaginable cruelty; but he himself gave out Edicts, forbidding any under the most terrible penalties to profess either the *Jewish* or *Christian* Religion; which were executed with that rigor and inhumanity, that the Christians of those days verily believed that the times of *Antichrist* did then

(d)

take

(a) *Apol. c. 5.*  
p. 6. vide lib.  
ad *Scap. c. 4.*  
p. 71.

(b) *Ap. Ulpian.*  
l. 3. ff. *Secl. 3.*  
lib. 50. *Tit. 2.*

(c) *Alciat. dif.*  
*punct. l. 3. c. 8.*  
*A. August. ad*  
*Modest. p. 336.*  
*Petit. de jur.*  
*Princip. c. 6.*  
vide *Selden de*  
*Synedr. l. 1. c. 8.*  
p. 233. *Ray-*  
*naud. Indic. SS.*  
*Lugd. proleg. 3.*  
p. 52.

(d) *Spartian in*  
*vit. Sever. c. 29.*  
p. 349.



take place. Martyrs of note whom this Persecution sent to Heaven, were *Victor* Bishop of *Rome*, *Leonidas* *Origen's* Father beheaded at *Alexandria*, *Serenus*, *Heraclides*, *Heron*, another *Serenus*; and *Heraia* a *Catechumen*, all *Origen's* Scholars, *Potamiana* an illustrious Virgin, and her Mother *Marcella*, after various torments, committed to the flames: and *Basilides* one of the Officers that led them to Execution. *Felicitas* and *Perpetua* two noble Ladies; at *Tuburbis* in *Mauritania*, the one brought to bed but the day before, the other at that time a Nurse. *Speratus* and his companions beheaded at *Carthage* by the command of *Saturninus* the *Proconsul*. *Irenaeus* Bishop of *Lyons*, and many thousands of his People Martyred with him, whose names and sufferings though unknown to us, are honourably written in the *Book of Life*.

XXV. THE next that created any disturbance to the Christians, was *Maximinus*, by birth a *Thracian*; a Man of base and obscure originals, of a mean and fordid education: he had been first a Shepherd, then a Highway-Man, and last of all a Souldier: he was of strength and stature beyond the ordinary size and standard; and his manners

were as robust and boisterous as his constitution, and favoured wholly of the rudeness of his Education. Never did a more cruel Beast (says the Historian) tread upon the Earth, relying altogether upon his strength, and upon that account reckoning himself almost immortal. He seized upon whatever came in his way, plundering and destroying without any difference, without any Process or form of Law: his strength was the Law of Justice, and his will the measure of his actions. He spared none, but especially killed all that knew

any thing of his mean descent, that none might reproach him with the obscurity of his birth. Having slain his Master *Alexander Mammæus*, that excellent and incomparable Prince, he usurped the Government, and managed it suitable to his own Maxim, that the Empire could not be maintained but by cruelty. The SEVENTH PERSECUTION was raised by him. Indeed *Sulpitius Severus* admits not this into the number, and therefore makes no more than nine Pagan Persecutions, reserving the tenth for the times of *Antichrist*. But *Eusebius* (b) expressly affirms, that *Maximinus* stirred up a Persecution against the Christians, and that out of hatred to his Predecessor, in whose Family many Christians had found shelter and Patronage, but that it was almost wholly levelled against the Bishops and Ministers of Religion, as the prime authors and propagators of Christianity. Whence *Firmilian* Bishop of *Cappadocia*, in his Letters to St. *Cyprian* (c) says of it, that it was not a general, but a local Persecution, that raged in some particular places, and especially in that Province where he lived, *Serenianus* the President driving the Christians out of all those Countries. He adds, that many dreadful Earthquakes happening in those parts, whereby Towns and Cities were overturned and swallowed up, added life and vigor to the Persecution, it being usual with the *Gentiles*, if a Famine or Pestilence, an Earthquake or Inundation happened, presently to fall foul upon the Christians, and conclude them the causes of all those evils and mischiefs that came upon the World. And this *Origen* (d) meant when he tells, that he knew some places overturned with Earthquakes, the cause whereof the

Hea-

Ὁ δὲ Μαξιμῖνος ἀγλαῶν καὶ ἀρχῇ, πολλῶν καὶ μεταβολῶν ἐποιοῦντο παύματα καὶ ἄλλοι πολλοὶ φόβοι τῇ ἐκείνῃ χρόνῳ. Ἐν τῇ αὐτῇ καὶ πάλιν ἡμεῖς βασιλείας, εἰς τὴν ἐκείνην ὥστε πάντα μεταγεν πάντα ἐπειρεῖται, διατρέφειν αὐτῶν σωεῖσθαι, ἐν τῇ αὐτῇ καὶ ἐν ταύτῃ καὶ ἐν ταύτῃ εἰς ἑκάστην εἰς ταύτην πόλιν ἡλᾶσθαι. οὕτως δὲ ἐν τῇ αὐτῇ, ὡς καὶ ἐν τῇ αὐτῇ, βάρβαρος. τὸ δὲ φονικὸν πάρεστιν ἔχειν καὶ ἐπὶ τοῖς αὐτοῖς, οὕτως ἐπὶ τοῖς αὐτοῖς δὲ ἐπὶ τοῖς αὐτοῖς καὶ ἀρχῇ βασιλεύειν. Herod. lib. 7. in Maxim. p. 253.

(a) Capitol. in vit. Maxim. c. 9. p. 609.

(b) H. Eccl. l. 6. c. 38. p. 228.

(c) Inter Epist. Cypri. p. 146.

(d) Hom. xxviii. in Matt. fol. 55. p. 2.

Heathens cast upon the Christians ; for which their Churches were persecuted and burnt to the ground, and that not only the common people; but the wiser sort among them did not stick openly to affirm, that these things came for the sake of the Christians. Hereupon he wrote his Book *De Martyrio*, for the comfort and support of those that suffered in this evil time.

XXVI. AFTER *Maximinus* Reigned *Pupienus* and *Balbinus*, to them succeeded *Gordian*, and to him *Philip* : all which time for at least ten years together, the Church enjoyed a competent calmness, and tranquillity ; when *Decius* was in a manner forced in his own defence to take the Empire upon him. A Man of great activity and resolution, a stout Commander, a wise and prudent Governor, so universally acceptable for his modest and excellent carriage, that by the Sentence of the Senate he was voted not inferiour to *Trajan*, and had the Title of *Optimus* adjudged to him. But he was a bitter and implacable enemy to Christians, against whom he raised the EIGHTH PERSECUTION, which proved, though the shortest, the hottest of all the Persecutions, that had hitherto afflicted and oppressed the Church. The Ecclesiastic (a) Historians generally put it upon the account of *Decius* his hatred to his Predecessor *Philip*, for being a Christian ; whereas it is more truly to be ascribed to his zeal for the cause of declining Paganism, which he saw fatally undermined by Christianity, and that therefore there was no way to support the one, but by the ruine of the other. We have more than once taken notice of it in some of the following Lives, and therefore shall say the less here. *Decius* Reigned somewhat above two years, during which time the storm was very black and violent, and no place but felt the dreadful effects of it. They were every where driven from their houses, spoiled in their estates, tormented in their bodies ; whips, and prisons, fires and wild Beasts, scalding pitch and melted wax, sharp stakes and burning pincers were but some of the methods of their treatment ; and when the old ones were run over, new were daily invented and contrived. The laws of nature and humanity were broken down, friend betrayed friend, and the nearest relative his own Father or Brother. Every one was ambitious to promote the Imperial Edicts, and thought it meritorious to bring a Christian to the stake. This Persecution swept away at *Alexandria*, *Julian*, *Chronion*, *Epimachus*, *Alexander*, *Ammon*, *Zeno*, *Ptolomy*, *Ammonaria*, *Mercuria*, *Isidore*; and many others mentioned by *Dionysius* Bishop of that Church ; at *Carthage*, *Mappalicus*, *Bassus*, *Fortunio*, *Paulus*, *Donatus*, *Martialis*, &c. it crown'd *Babylas* Bishop of *Antioch*, *Alexander* of *Jerusalem*, *Fabian* Bishop of *Rome*, *Victoria*, *Anatolia*, *Parthenius*, *Marcellianus*, and thousands more : *Nicephorus* (b) affirming it to be easier to count the Sands of the shore, than to reckon up all the Martyrs that suffered this Persecution. Not to say any thing of those incredible numbers of Confessors that were beaten, imprisoned, tormented ; nor of the far greater number of those who betook themselves to a voluntary exile ; chusing rather to commit themselves to the barrenness of Rocks and Mountains, and mercy of wild Beasts, than to those that had put off all reason and humanity. Among whom was *Paul* of *Thebais*, a youth of XV. years of age, who withdrew himself into the *Egyptian* Desarts, where finding a large and convenient Cavern in a Rock ( which heretofore had been a

(a) *Euseb. H. Ec.*  
l. 6. c. 39. p. 234.  
*Chron. ad Ann.*  
*CCLII. Or. l. 7.*  
c. 21. fol. 310.  
*Niceph. l. 5.*  
c. 27. p. 377.

(b) *Lib. 5. c. 296*  
p. 379.

private mint-house in the time of *Antony* and *Cleopatra* ) he took up his abode and residence, led a solitary and Anchoretic course of life, and became the Father of *Hermites*, and those who afterwards were desirous to retire from the World, and to resign up themselves to solitude, and a more strict mortified life. In this pious and devout retirement he continued till he was CXIII. years of age, and in the last period of his life was visited by *Antonius*, who had spent the greatest part of XC. years in those desert places, and who now performed the last offices to him in committing his dead body to the earth.

XXVII. *GALLUS* succeeded *Decius* as in his Government, so in his enmity to Christians, carrying on what the other had begun. But the cloud soon blew over; for he being cut off, was succeeded by *Valerian*, who entered upon the Empire with an universal applause and expectation. In the beginning of his Reign, he was a great Patron of Christians, whom he treated with all offices of kindness of humanity, entertaining them in his own family; so that his Court seemed to be a little Church for Piety, and a Sanctuary for refuge to good Men. But, alas, this pleasant Scene was quickly over; seduced by a chief Magician of *Egypt*, who persuaded him that the only way to prosper his affairs, was to restore the *Gentile* Rites, and to suppress Christianity, so hateful to the gods; he commenced a NINTH PERSECUTION, wherein he Persecuted the Christians with all imaginable fury in all parts of the Empire. With what fierceness it rag'd in *Egypt*, is largely related by *Dionysius* of *Alexandria*, and we have in a great part noted in his Life. It's needless (*says he*) (a) particularly to reckon up the Christians that suffered in this Persecution: only this you may observe, that both Men and Women, young and old, Soldiers and Country people, persons of all ranks and ages, were some of them scourged and whipped, others beheaded, others overcoming the violence of flames, received the Crown of Martyrdom. *Cyprian* elegantly and passionately bewails the miseries and sufferings which the Martyrs underwent, in his Letter to *Nemesian*, and the rest that were condemned to the Mines. Nor did he himself escape, being beheaded at *Carthage*, as *Xistus* and *Quartus* had been before him, and the three hundred Martyrs *De Massa Candida*, who rather than do Sacrifice, cheerfully leapt into a mighty pit of burning Lime, kindled for that purpose, and were immediately stifled in the smoak and flames. In *Spain* suffered *Fruktuosus* Bishop of *Tarragon*, together with his two Deacons, *Augurinus* and *Eulogius* at *Rome*, *Xistus* the Bishop, and *St. Laurence* his Deacon and Treasurer of that Church, at *Casarea*, *Priscus*, *Malchus*, and *Alexander*, who ashamed to think that they lay idle and secure, while so many others were contending for the Crown, unanimously went to the Judge, confessed they were Christians, received their Sentence, and underwent their Martyrdom. But the Divine Providence, which sometimes in this World pleads the cause of oppressed innocence, was resolved to punish the Emperor for his causeless cruelty towards those, whose interest with Heaven (while he continued favourable to them) had secured his happiness: and therefore did not only suffer the *Northern* Nations to break in upon him, but he himself was taken Prisoner by *Sapor* King of *Persia*, who treated him below the rate of the meanest Slave, used him as his footstool to get on horse-back, and after several years Captivity caused him to be flay'd alive, and rubb'd with Salt, and so put a period to his

(a) *Epist. ad*  
*Domit. & Did.*  
*ap. Euseb. l. 7.*  
*c. 11. p. 260.*



his miserable life. A fair warning to his Son *Gallienus*, who growing wifer by the mischiefs and miscarriages of his Father, stopt the Persecution, and restored Peace and Security to Christians.

Ἀλλὰ σύγῃ,  
Οὐαλειανῶ,  
ᾧ μαρτυρίαν  
ἐνδείξαμεν

τοῖς ὑπακόοις τῷ Θεῷ, ᾧ ὁσίαν κρίσιν ἐξεφῆναι, ἀλλὰ ἀχμαλωτὶς τε καὶ δέσμιος ἀχθεῖς σὺ αὐτῇ περφεύει καὶ τῷ λοιπῷ βασιλικῷ κόσμῳ. Τίλθῃ ὑπὸ Σαπῶρος Περσῶν βασιλείας ἐνδερύνει καλεσθεῖς καὶ περὶ χυδαίους, βόταιον δὲ σπανεῖς δυσυχίας ἐκστῶσι αἰώνιον. Constant. M. Orat. ad SS. Cœtum, cap. 24. pag. 600.

XXVIII. A long Peace and Prosperity (for except a little disturbance in the time of *Aurelian*, they met with no opposition through the reigns of *Gallienus*, *Claudius*, *Tacitus*, *Florianus*, *Probus*, *Carus*, and *Numerian*) had somewhat corrupted the manners of Christians, and therefore God was pleased to permit a Tenth Persecution to come upon them to purge and winnow the rubbish and the chaff: the Ulcer began to putrifie, and it was time to call for the Knife and the Caustick. It began under *Dioclesian* and his Colleague *Maximian*. *Dioclesian* was a Princee active and diligent, crafty and subtil, fierce in his nature, but which he knew how cunningly to dissemble. His zeal for the Pagan Religion engaged him with all possible earnestness to oppose Christianity, which he carried on with a high hand, it being as the last, so the fiercest Persecution, like the last efforts of a dying enemy, that summons all his strength to give the parting blow. *Dioclesian* then residing at *Nicomedia* published his Edicts about the very solemnity of our Saviours Passion, commanding the Christian Churches to be pulled down, their Bibles to be burnt, the better sort of them to be branded with infamy, the vulgar to be made slaves; as by subsequent orders he commanded the Bishops to be every where imprisoned, and forced to Sacrifice. But these were but a *praludium* to what followed after, other Proclamations being put forth, commanding those that refused to offer Sacrifice to be exposed to all manner of torments. 'Twere endless to reckon up particular persons that suffered in this evil time. *Eusebius* who lived under this very Persecution, has recorded a vast number of them, with the Acts of their Martyrdom; too many to account for in this place. It may suffice to note from him, that they were scourged to death, had their flesh torn off with pincers, or raked off with pieces of broken Pots, were cast to Lyons and Tygers, to wild Boars and Bears, provoked and enraged with fire to set upon them; burnt, beheaded, crucified, thrown into the Sea, torn in pieces by the distorted boughs of trees, or their legs miserably distended in the Stocks, roasted at a gentle fire, or by holes made on purpose had melted lead poured into their bowels. But impossible it is to conceive, much more to express the cruelties of that time: *Eusebius* himself who saw them, tells (a) us, that they were innumerable, and exceeded all relation. All which he assures us they endured with the most admirable and undaunted patience; they thronged to the Tribunals of their Judges, and freely told them what they were; despised the threatnings and barbarity of their enemies, and received the fatal and decretory Sentence with a smile; when perswaded to be tender of their lives, and to compassionate the case of their Wives and Children, they bore up against the temptation with a manly and Philosophic mind, μάλλον δὲ ὁσεβῆν καὶ φιλοτιμεῖσθαι ψυχῇ as he adds, yea rather with a Soul truly pious and devoted unto God; so that neither fears nor charms could take hold upon them, at once giving undeniable evidences both of their own courage and fortitude, and of that Divine and unconceivable power of our Lord that went along with them.

(a) Lib. 8. c. 12.  
p. 307.



them. The acutest torments did not shake the firmness and stability of their minds, but they could with as much unconcernedness lay down their lives ( as *Origen* (a) tells *Celsus* ) as the best Philosopher could put off his coat. They valued their innocency above their ease, or life it self, and sufficiently shewed they believed another state, by an argument beyond what any institution of Philosophy can afford. " The great Philosophers " of the *Gentiles* ( as *Eusebius* (b) reasons in this matter ) as much as they " talk of immortality, and the happiness of the future state, did yet shew " that they look'd upon it only as a childish and trifling report : whereas " amongst us even Boys and Girls, and as to outward appearance, the mean- " est and rudest Persons, being assisted by the power and aid of our Blef- " sed Saviour, do by their actions, rather than their words, demonstrate the " truth of this great Principle, the immortality of the Soul. Ten years this Persecution lasted in its strength and vigour, under *Dioclesian* in the *East*, and *Maximian* in the *West* ; and they thought, it seems, they had done their work, and accordingly to tell the World in some ancient Inscription, (c) that they had utterly defaced the name and superstition of the Christians, and had restored and propagated the worship of the gods. But were miserably mistaken in the case ; and as if weary of the work, laid down their purple, and retir'd to the solitudes of a private life. And though *Galerius*, *Maximianus*, *Jovius Maximinus*, *Maxentius* and *Licinius* did what they could to set the Persecution on foot again, yet all in vain ; both they and it in a very few years expiring and dwindling into nothing.

XXIX. THUS we have seen the hardships and miseries, the torments and sufferings which the Christians were exposed to for several ages, and with how invincible a patience they went through with them. Let us now a little review the argument, and see what force and influence it had to convince the World of the truth of their Religion, and bring in Converts to the Faith. *Tertullian* (d) tells the *Gentiles*, " That all their cruelty was " to no purpose, that it was but a stronger invitation to bring over others " to the party ; that the oftner they mowed them down, the faster they " sprang up again ; and that the blood of Christians was a seed that grew " up into a more plentiful harvest ; that several among the *Gentiles* had " exhorted their auditors to patience under suffering, but could never " make so many Proselytes with all their fine discourses, as the Christians " did by their actions : that that very obstinacy which was so much charg- " ed upon them was a tutor to instruct others. For who when they beheld " such things, could not but be powerfully moved to enquire what really " was within ? who when he had once found it, would not embrace it ? and " having once imbraced it, not be desirous to suffer for it ; that so he " may obtain the full Grace of God, and the pardon of his sins assured " by the shedding of his blood. *Lactantius* (e) manages this argument with incomparable eloquence and strength of reason : his discourse is somewhat long, but not unworthy the Readers consideration. " Since " our number (says he) is always increased from amongst the Votaries of " the Heathen deities, and is never lessened, no not in the hottest Perse- " cution, who is so blind and stupid, as not to see in what Party true Wis- " dom does reside ? But they, alas, are blinded with rage and malice, and " think all to be fools, who when 'tis in their power to escape punishment, " chuse rather to be tortured and to die ; when as they might perceive " by this, that that can be no such folly, wherein so many thousands " throughout the whole World do so unanimously conspire. Suppose that

(a) *Contr. Cels.*  
l. 7. p. 357.

(b) *Prepar. E-*  
*van. l. 1. c. 4 p.*  
13.

(c) *Ap. Gruter.*  
p. CCLXXX.  
num. 3. & 4.

(d) *Apolog. c.*  
ult. p. 40.

(e) *De Just. l.*  
3. c. 13. p. 494.

"Women through the weakness of their Sex may miscarry (and they are  
 "pleased sometimes to style this Religion *effeminate* and *old-wives Super-*  
 "*stition*) yet certainly Men are wiser. If Children and young Men may  
 "be rash, yet at least those of a mature age and old Men have a more sta-  
 "ble judgement. If one City might play the fool, yet innumerable  
 "others cannot be supposed to be guilty of the same folly. If one  
 "Province, or one Nation should want care and providence, yet  
 "all the rest cannot lack understanding to judge what is right. But  
 "now when the Divine Law is entertained from the rising of the Sun,  
 "to the going down thereof, and every Sex, Age, Nation and Country,  
 "serves God with one Heart and one Soul: when there is every where  
 "the same patience, and contempt of death, they ought to consider that  
 "there is some reason for it, and that it is not without cause, that it is  
 "maintained even unto death: that there is some fixed foundation  
 "when a Religion is not only not shattered by injuries and persecutions;  
 "but always increased and rendered more firm and stable. When the very  
 "common People see Men torn in pieces by various Engines of torment,  
 "and yet maintain a patience unconquerable in the midst of their tir'd tor-  
 "mentors; they cannot but think what the truth is, that the consent of  
 "so many, and their perseverance unto death, cannot be in vain; nor that  
 "patience it self, without the Divine assistance, should be able to over-  
 "come such exquisite tortures. High-way-men and persons of the most  
 "robust constitutions are not able to bear such pulling asunder; they roar,  
 "and groan, and sink under pain, because not furnished with a Divine  
 "patience. But our very Children (to say nothing of our Men) and our  
 "tender Women, do by silence conquer their tormentors; nor can the  
 "flames extort one sigh from them. Let the *Romans* go now, and boast  
 "of their *Mutius* and their *Regulus*: one of which delivered up himself  
 "to be put to death by his enemies, because he was ashamed to live a pri-  
 "soner; the other thrust his hand into the fire when he saw he could not  
 "escape death. Behold, with us the weaker Sex, and the more delicate  
 "age suffers the whole Body to be torn and burnt; not because they could  
 "not avoid it if they would, but voluntarily, because they trust in God.  
 "This is true virtue, which Philosophers in vain only talk of, when they  
 "tell us, that nothing is so suitable to the gravity and constancy of a wise  
 "Man, as not by any terrors to be driven from his sentiments and opini-  
 "ons; but that it is virtuous, and great indeed, to be tortured and die, ra-  
 "ther than betray ones Faith, or be wanting in his duty, or do any thing  
 "that's unjust or dishonest, though for fear of death, or the acutest tor-  
 "ment, unless they thought their own Poet raved, when he said,

*Horat. Carm. l.*  
*3. Od. 3. p. 154*

*Iustum & tenacem propositi virum,*  
*Non Civium ardor prava jubentium,*  
*Non vultus instantis Tyranni*  
*Mente quatit solida.*

The Just Man that resolved stands,  
 Not Tyrants frowns, nor fierce commands,  
 Nor all the Peoples rage combin'd,  
 Can shake the firmness of his mind:

"Than which nothing can be more truly said, if meant of those,  
 "who refuse no tortures, nor death it self, that they may preserve fi-  
 delity

“delity and justice; who regard not the command of Tyrants, nor the  
“Swords of the Governors, that they may with a constant mind pre-  
“serve real and solid liberty, wherein true Wisdom alone is to be main-  
tained. Thus far that elegant Apologist. And certainly the truth of his  
reasonings was abundantly verified by the experience of the World, Chri-  
stians getting ground, and conquering opposition by nothing more, than  
their patience and their constancy, till they had subdued the Empire it  
self to the acknowledgment of the truth. And when once the great *Con-  
stantine* had entertained Christianity, it went along with wind and tide,  
and bore down all before it. And surely it might be no unpleasant survey,  
to consider what was the true state of *Paganism* under the first Christian  
Emperors, and how and by what degrees that Religion, which for so  
many Ages had governed the World, slunk away into obscurity and si-  
lence. But this is a business without the bounds of my present inquiry  
to search into.

*The end of the* INTRODUCTION.

---

THE

---



THE LIFE OF  
**S. STEPHEN**  
 THE  
 PROTOMARTYR.




Act. vii. lxx. And they stoned STEPHEN. calling vpon God.  
 and saying, Lord Iesus receive my spirit. *M. Burghers, sculptor*

*The violent opposition that Christianity at its first appearance met with both from Jews and Gentiles. S. Stephen's Kindred unknown. One of the Seventy. The great Charity of the Primitive Believers. Dissension between the*

## The Life of St. STEPHEN the Protomartyr.

*the Hebrews and Grecians. Hellenists who. The Original of Deacons in the Christian Church. The nature of their Office. The number and qualification of the Persons. Stephen's eminent accomplishments for the place. The envy and opposition of the Jews against him. The Synagogue of the Libertines, what. Of the Cyrenians, Alexandrians, &c. Their disputation with S. Stephen, and the success of it. False Witnesses suborned to depose against him. The several parts of their charge considered. The mighty veneration of the Jews for their Temple and the Mosaic Institutions. Its destruction by Titus; and their attempts to rebuild it under Julian frustrated by a miracle. Stephen's Apology before the Sanhedrin. The Jews rage against him. He is encouraged by a vision. Stoning to death, what kind of punishment; the manner of it among the Jews. S. Stephen's Martyrdom. His Character and excellent Vertues. The time and place of his suffering. The place and manner of his burial. His body first discovered, when and how. The story of its translation to Constantinople. The miracles said to be done by his Reliques, and at his Memorials. Several reported by S. Augustin. What credit to be given to them. Miracles how long, and why continued in the Church. The vain pretences of the Church of Rome.*

- I.  HE Christian Religion being designed by God for the reformation of Mankind, and the rooting out that Barbarism and Idolatry wherewith the World was so over-grown, could not but meet with opposition, all corrupt Interests conspiring to give it no very welcom entertainment. Vice and Errour had too long usurped the Throne, to part with it by a tame and easie resignation, but would rather summon all their Forces against a Doctrine, that openly proclaimed the subversion and ruine of their Empire. Hence *this Sect was every where spoken against*, equally opposed both by Jew and Gentile. The Gentiles despised it for its lateness and novelty, as having no antiquity to recommend it, nor could they endure that their Philosophy, which then every where ruled the Chair, should be controlled by a plain simple Doctrine, that pretended to no elaborate Schemes, no insinuating strains of Eloquence, no nice and subtle arts of Reasoning, no abstruse and sublime Speculations. The Jews were vexed to see their expectations of a mighty Prince who should greatly exalt their State, and redeem it from that oppression and slavery under which it groaned, frustrated by the coming of a Messiah, who appeared under all the circumstances of meanness and disgrace; and who was so far from rescuing them from the power of the Roman Yoke, that for their obstinacy and unbelief he threatned the final and irrevocable ruine of their Country, and by the Doctrine he published, plainly told them he intended to abolish those ancient Mosaic Institutions, for which they had such dear regards, and so solemn a veneration. Accordingly when he came amongst them, they entertained him with all the instances of cruelty and contempt, and whatever might expose him to the scorn and odium of the People; they vilified and reproached his person, as *but the Son of a Carpenter, a Glutton and a Drunkard, a Traitor and an Enemy unto Caesar*; they slighted his Doctrine as the talk only of a rude and illiterate person, traduced his Miracles as tricks of Imposture, and the

the effects of a black Confederacy with the infernal Powers. And when all this would not do, they violently laid hands upon him, and took away his life. And now one would have thought their spite and fury should have cooled and died: but malice and revenge are too fierce and hot to stop at the first attempt. On they resolve to go in these bloody methods, and to let the World see that the Disciples and Followers must expect no better than their Master, it was not many Months before they took occasion to refresh their rage in St. Stephen's Martyrdom: the History of whose Life and Death we now come to relate, and to make some brief Remarks upon it.

II. THE sacred Story gives us no particular account either of the Country or Kindred of this Holy Man. That he was a Jew is unquestionable, himself sufficiently owns the relation in his Apology to the People, but whether originally descended of the stock of Abraham, or of Parents incorporated and brought in by the gate of Profelytism, whether born at Jerusalem or among the dispersed in the Gentile Provinces is impossible to determine. Baronius (grounding his conjecture upon an Epistle of Lucian, of which more afterwards) makes him to have been one of Gamaliel's Disciples, and fellow-Pupil with St. Paul, who proved afterwards his mortal enemy; but I must confess, I find not in all that Epistle the least shadow of probability to countenance that conjecture. Antiquity \* makes him, probably enough, to have been one of the LXX Disciples, chosen by our Lord as Co-adjutors to the Apostles in the Ministry of the Gospel: and indeed his admirable knowledge in the Christian Doctrine, his singular ability to defend the cause of Christ's Messiahship against its most acute opposers, plainly argue him to have been some considerable time trained up under our Saviours immediate institutions. Certain it is, that he was a Man of great zeal and piety, endowed with extraordinary measures of that divine Spirit that was lately shed upon the Church, and incomparably furnished with miraculous powers, which peculiarly qualified him for a place of honour and usefulness in his Church, whereto he was advanced upon this occasion.

III. THE Primitive Church among the many instances of Religion for which it was famous and venerable, was for none more remarkable than their Charity, they lived and loved as Brethren, *were of one heart and one Soul, and continued together with one accord.* Love and Charity were the common Soul that animated the whole body of Believers, and conveyed heat and vital Spirits to every part. They prayed and worshipped God in the same place, and fed together at the same table. None could want, for *they had all in common.* The rich sold their estates to minister to the necessities of the poor, and deposited the mony into one common Treasury, the care whereof was committed to the Apostles, to see distribution made as every ones case and exigency did require. But in the exactest harmony there will be some jars and discord, Heaven only is free from quarrels, and the occasions of offence. The Church increasing every day by vast numbers of Converts to the Faith, the Apostles could not exactly superintend the disposure of the Churches stock, and the making provision for every part, and were therefore probably forced to take in the help of others, sometimes more and sometimes less, to assist in this affair. By which means a due equality and proportion was not observed, but either through favour and partiality; or the oversight of

Ad Ann.  
XXXIV. n.  
275, 298.

\* Epiph. Hæres.  
XX. p. 27. De-  
votb. Synops. de  
Vit. App. in  
Bibl. PP. Tom. 3.



A<sup>ct</sup>. 6. i.

those that managed the matter, some had larger portions, others less relief than their just necessities called for. This begat some present heats and animosities in the first and purest Church that ever was, *the Grecians murmuring against the Hebrews, because their Widows were neglected in the daily ministration.*

Joh. 7. 35.

Comment. de  
Hellenist. Qu. 1.  
2, 3, 4, 5. præci-  
pue pag. 232.  
Etc. vid. etiam  
inter alios Bez.  
& Camer. in  
loc.

IV. WHO these *Grecians* or *Hellenists* were, opposed here to the *Hebrews*, however a matter of some difficulty and dispute, it may not be unuseful to enquire. The opinion that has most generally obtained, is that they were originally *Jews* born and bred in *Grecian* or *Heathen* Countries, of *the dispersed among the Gentiles* (the Ἀπαρσεντες τῶν Ἑλλήνων, the Word Ἑλλῆνες in the stile of the New Testament, as also in the Writings of the Fathers, being commonly used for the Gentile World) who accommodated themselves to their manner of living, spake the Greek Language, but altogether mixed with *Hebraisms* and *Jewish* forms of speech, (and this called *Lingua Hellenistica*) and used no other Bible but the Greek Translation of the *Septuagint*. A notion which *Salmasius* has taken a great deal of pains to confute, by shewing that never any People went under that notion and character, that the *Jews* in what parts of the World soever they were, were not a distinct Nation from those that lived in *Palestine*; that there never was any such peculiar distinct *Hellenistic* Dialect, nor any such ever mentioned by any ancient Writer; that the Phrase is very improper to express such a mixt Language, yea rather that Ἑλληνιστής implies one that expresth himself in better *Greek* than ordinary, as Ἀττικιστής denotes one that studies to speak pure *Attic* Greek. Probable therefore it is, that they were not of the *Hebrew* race, but *Greek* or *Gentile* Profelytes, who had either themselves, or in their Ancestors deserted the Pagan Superstitions, and imbodyed themselves into the *Jewish* Church, taking upon them Circumcision and the observation of the Rites of the *Mosaic* Laws (which kind the *Jews* call *צדק* Profelytes of Justice,) and were now converted to Christianity. That there were at this time great numbers of these Profelytes at *Jerusalem*, is evident; and strange it were, if when at other times they were desirous to have the Gospel preached to them, none of them should have been brought over to the Faith. Even among the *seven* made choice of to be *Deacons* (most, if not all, of whom we may reasonably conclude to have been taken out of these *Grecians*) we find one expressly said to have been a *Profelyte of Antioch*, as in all likelihood some if not all the other might be Profelytes of *Jerusalem*. And thus where ever we meet with the word Ἑλληνιστής or *Grecians* in the History of the *Apostolic Acts* (as 'tis to be met with in two places more) we may, and in reason are to understand it. So that these *Hellenists* (who spake *Greek*, and used the Translation of the *LXX*) were *Jews* by Religion, and *Gentiles* by descent; with the Ἑλλῆνες or *Gentiles* they had the same common Original, with the *Jews* the same common Profession; and therefore are not here opposed to *Jews*, (which all those might be stiled, who embrace *Judaism* and the Rites of *Moses*, though they were not born of *Jewish* Ancestors) but to the *Hebrews*, who were *Jews* both by their Religion and their Nation. And this may give us some probable account, why the Widows of these *Hellenists* had not so much care taken of them as those of the *Hebrews*, the persons with whom the Apostles in a great measure intrusted the ministration, being kinder to those of their own Nation, their Neighbours, and it may be Kindred, than

A<sup>ct</sup>. 9. 29.  
11. 20.

than to those who only agreed with them in the profession of the same Religion, and who indeed were not generally so capable of contributing to the Churches Stock as the native Jews, who had Lands and Possessions, which they sold and laid at the Apostles feet.

V. THE peace and quiet of the Church being by this means a little ruffled and discomposed, the Apostles, who well understood how much Order and Unity conduced to the ends of Religion, presently called the Church together, and told them, that the disposing of the Common Stock, and the daily providing for the necessities of the Poor, however convenient and necessary, was yet a matter of too much trouble and distraction to consist with a faithful discharge of the other parts and duties of their Office, and that they did not judge it fit and reasonable to neglect the one, that they might attend the other; that therefore they should chuse out among themselves some that were duly qualified, and present them to them, that they might set them apart peculiarly to superintend this affair, that so themselves being freed from these incumbrances, might the more freely and uninterruptedly devote themselves to Prayer and preaching of the Gospel. Not that the Apostles thought the care of the Poor an Office too much below them, but that this might be discharged by other hands, and they, as they were obliged, the better attend upon things of higher importance, Ministeries more immediately serviceable to the Souls of Men. This was the first Original of *Deacons* in the Christian Church, they were to serve Tables, that is, to wait upon the necessities of the Poor, to make daily provisions for their public Feasts, to keep their Churches Treasure, and to distribute to every one according to their need. And this admirably agrees to one ordinary notion of the word Διακονῶ in Foreign Writers, where 'tis used for that peculiar Servant who waited at

Feasts, whose Office it was to distribute the portions to every Guest, either according to the command of the Ἀρχιεπίσκοπος the Orderer of the Feast, or according to the rule of Equality, to give every one alike. But though 'tis true this was a main part of the *Deacons* Office, yet was it not the whole. For had this been all, the Apostles needed not to have been so exact and curious in their choice of persons, seeing Men of an ordinary rank, and of a very mean capacity might have served the turn, nor have used such solemn Rites of Consecration to Ordain them to it. No question there-

fore but their serving Tables implied also their attendance at the Table of the Lords Supper. For in those days their *Agape* or common Love-Feasts, (whereat both Rich and Poor sat down together) were at the same time with the Holy Eucharist, and both administered every day, so that their ministration respected both the one and the other. And thus we find it was in the practice of the Church: for so *Justin Martyr* tells us it was in his time, that when the President of the Assembly had consecrated the Eucharist, the Deacons distributed the Bread and the Wine to all that were present, and after carried them to those who were necessarily absent from the Congregation. Nor were they restrained to this one particular Service, but were in some cases allowed to Preach, Baptize, and Absolve Penitents, especially where they had the peculiar warrant and authority

Μοίχα κρείων, καὶ ἴσον ἅπαν· οἱ Διακονοὶ  
πρὸς χάριν κηδεύει κηδεύει· Μη τὸ μὲν μετὰ  
λα, τὸ δὲ κομιδῇ μετὰ πρῶτον δίδω, ἀλλ'  
ἰσότητι ἐπὶ πάντων. Lucian. Chronosol. seu  
de Legg. Saturnal. Tom. 2. p. 823.

Δεῖ δὲ καὶ τοὺς Διακόνους ὄντας μυστικῶν  
Ἱησῦ Χριστῷ καὶ ἅντα τέρπον πᾶσιν ἀρίσ-  
την ἐν βρωμάτων καὶ ποτῶν (h. e. non so-  
lum) εἶσιν Διακονοί, ἀλλ' ἐκκλησιαστικῶν  
ἐκκλησιῶν. Διδόντες ἐν αὐτοῖς φυλάσσοντες τὰ ἐγ-  
κλησιαστικά αὐτοῖς πρὸς. Ignat. Epist. ad Trall.  
Append. Usser. p. 17.

Apst. II. p. 97.



rity of the Bishop to bear them out: nor need we look far beyond the present Story to find *St. Philip*, one of the Deacons here elected, both preaching the Gospel, and baptizing Converts with great success.

VI. THAT this excellent Office might be duly managed, the Apostles directed and enjoined the Church to nominate such persons as were fitted for it, pious and good Men, Men of known honesty and integrity, of approved and untainted reputations, furnished and end owned with the extraordinary gifts of the Holy Ghost, wise and prudent Men, who would discreetly discharge the trust committed to them. The number of these persons was limited to *seven*, probably for no other reason but because the Apostles thought these sufficient for the business; unless we will also suppose the whole body of Believers to have been disposed into seven several Divisions, for the more orderly and convenient managery of their common Feasts, and distributions to the Poor, and that to each of these a Deacon was appointed to superintend and direct them; without further designing any peculiar Mystery, which \* some would fain pick out of it. However the Church thought good for a long time to conform to this Primitive Institution, inasmuch that the Fathers of the † *Neo-Cæsarean* Council ordained, that in no City, how great soever, there should be more than seven *Deacons*; a Canon which they found upon this place: and \* *Sozomen* tells us that in his time, though many other Churches kept to no certain number, yet that the Church of *Rome* in compliance with this *Apostolical* example, admitted no more than seven Deacons in it. The People were infinitely pleased with the order and determination which the Apostles had made in this matter, and accordingly made choice of seven, whom they presented to the Apostles, who (as the solemnity of the thing required) first made their address to Heaven by Prayer for the divine blessing upon the undertaking, and then laid their hands upon them, an ancient symbolic Rite of Investiture and Consecration to any extraordinary Office. The issue of all was, that the Christian Religion got ground and prospered, Converts came flocking over to the Faith, yea very many of the *Priests* themselves, and of their Tribe and Family, of all others the most zealous and pertinacious asserters of the *Mosaic* Constitutions, the bitterest adversaries of the Christian Doctrine, the subtlest defenders of their Religion, laid aside their prejudices, and embraced the Gospel. So uncontrollable is the efficacy of Divine truth, as very often to lead its greatest enemies in triumph after it.

VII. THE first and chief of the persons he elected, (who were all chosen out of the LXX Disciples, as \* *Epiphanius* informs us,) and whom the Ancients frequently stile *Arch-deacon*, as having the πρῶτος (as † *Chrysostom* speaks) the Primacy and Precedence among these new-elected Officers, was our *St. Stephen*, whom the Author of the Epistle to \* *Hero* under the name of *Ignatius*, as also the *Interpolator* of that to the † *Trallians* makes in a more peculiar manner to have been Deacon to *St. James*, as Bishop of *Jerusalem*. He is not only placed first in the Catalogue, but particularly recommended under this character, a *Man full of Faith, and of the Holy Ghost*; he was exquisitely skil'd in all parts of the Christian Doctrine, and fitted with great eloquence and elocution to declare and publish it; enriched with many miraculous gifts and powers, and a spirit of courage and resolution to encounter the most potent opposition. He preached and pleaded the cause

\* *Vid. Baron. ad Ann. 112. n. 7. Tom. 2.*

† *Conc. Neo-Cæs. can. 15. Conc. Tom. 1. Col. 1484. \* Hist. Eccl. lib. 7. c. 19. p. 734.*

\* *Heret. XX. p. 27.*

† *Homil. XV. in Act. p. 555.*

\* *Epist. ad Heron. in Bibl. PP. Gr. Lat. p. 37.*

† *Ep. ad Trall. p. 6. ibid.*



cause of Christianity with a firm and undaunted mind, and that nothing might be wanting to render it effectual, he confirmed his doctrine by many publick and unquestionable miracles, plain evidences and demonstrations of the truth and divinity of that Religion that he taught. But Truth and Innocency, and a better Cause, is the usual object of bad mens Spight and Hatred. The zeal and diligence of his Ministry, and the extraordinary success that did attend it, quickly awakened the malice of the *Jews*, and there wanted not those that were ready to oppose and contradict him. So natural is it for Error to rise up against the Truth, as Light and Darknes mutually resist and expel each other.

VIII. THERE were at *Jerusalem* besides the Temple, where Sacrifices and the more solemn parts of their Religion were performed, vast numbers of Synagogues for Prayer and Expounding of the Law, whereof the *Jews* themselves tell us there were not less than CCCCLXXX in that City. In these, or at least some apartments adjoining to them, there were *Schools* or *Colledges* for the instruction and education of Scholars in their Laws: many whereof were erected at the charges of the *Jews* who lived in Foreign Countries, and thence denominated after their names; and hither they were wont to send their Youths to be trained up in the knowledge of the Law, and the mysterious Rites of their Religion. Of these, five combined together to send some of their Societies to encounter and oppose St. Stephen. An unequal match! ἀνδρῶν ἀσθενέων Πεντάπολις (as *Chrysostom* calls it) a whole Army of wicked adversaries, the chief of five several Synagogues are brought out against one, and him but a stripling too, as if they intended to oppress him rather with the number of assailants, than to overcome him by strength of Argument.

Ovat. in S.  
Steph. Tom. 4.  
p. 276.

IX. THE first of them were those of the *Synagogue of the Libertines*; but who these Libertines were, is variously conjectured. Passing by *Junius* his conceit of *Labra* signifying in the *Egyptian* Language the whole Precinct that was under one Synagogue, whence *Labratenu*, or corruptly (says he) *Libertini*, must denote them that belonged to the *Synagogue of the Egyptians*; omitting this as altogether absurd and fantastical, besides that the *Synagogue of the Alexandrians* is mentioned afterwards; *Suidas* tells us 'twas the name of a Nation, but in what part of the World this People or Country were, he leaves us wholly in the dark. Most probably therefore it relates to the *Jews* that were emancipated and set at liberty. For the understanding whereof we must know that when *Pompey* had subdued *Judea*, and reduced it under the *Roman* Government, he carried great numbers of *Jews* captive to *Rome*, as also did those Generals that succeeded him, and that in such multitudes, that when the *Jewish* State sent an Embassy to *Augustus*, *Josephus* tells us, that there were about eight thousand of the *Jews* who then lived at *Rome*, that joined themselves to the Embassadors at their arrival thither. Here they continued in the condition of Slaves, till by degrees they were manumitted and set at liberty, which was generally done in the time of *Tiberius*, who (as *Philo* informs) suffered the *Jews* to inhabit the *Transiberin* Region: most whereof were *Libertines*, such who having been made Captives by the Fortune of War, had been set free by their Masters, and permitted to live after the manner of their Ancestors. They had their *Proseucha's* or Oratories, where they assembled, and performed their devotions according to the Religion of their Country: every year

Jun. in loc. &  
in Gen. 8. 4.

Suid. in voc.  
Λιβερτινῶν.

Antiquit. Jud.  
lib. 17. c. 12.  
p. 610.

Phil. de legat.  
ad Cai. p. 785.

\* Tac. Annal.  
lib. 2. c. 85.  
p. 88.  
† Sueton in vit.  
Tib. c. 35. p.  
334.  
\* Antiq. l. 18.  
c. 5. p. 623.

year they sent a Contribution in stead of first-fruits to *Jerusalem*, and deputed certain persons to offer sacrifices for them at the Temple. Indeed afterwards ( as we find in \* *Tacitus* and † *Suetonius* ) by an Order of Senate he caused four thousand *Libertini generis*, of those *Libertine Jews*, so many as were young and lusty, to be transported into *Sardinia* to clear that Island of Robbers ( the occasion whereof is related by \* *Josephus* ) and the rest, both *Jews* and *Proselytes*, to be banished the City, *Tacitus* adds, *Italy* it self. This occasion, I doubt not, many of these *Libertine-Jews* took to return home into their own Country, and at *Jerusalem* to erect this Synagogue for themselves and the use of their Countrymen who from *Rome* resorted thither, stiling it from themselves, the *Synagogue of the Libertines*; and such questionless *St. Luke* means, when among the several Nations that were at *Jerusalem* at the day of *Pentecost* he mentions *Strangers of Rome*, and they both *Jews* and *Proselytes*.

Ap. Joseph. Ant.  
tiq. Jud. lib.  
18. c. 10. p.  
551.

Act. 2. 10.

Act. 13. 1.  
11. 19, 20.

X. THE next Antagonists were of the *Synagogue of the Cyrenians*, that is, *Jews* who inhabited *Cyrene*, a noted City of *Lybia*, where ( as appears from a *Rescript* of *Augustus* ) great numbers of them did reside, and who were annually wont to send their holy Treasure or accustomed Offerings to *Jerusalem*, where also ( as we see ) they had their peculiar Synagogue. Accordingly we find among the several Nations at *Jerusalem*, those who dwelt in the ports of *Lybia* about *Cyrene*. Thus we read of *Simon of Cyrene*, whom the *Jews* compelled to bear our Saviours Cross; of *Lucius of Cyrene*, a famous Doctor in the Church of *Antioch*; of *Men of Cyrene*, who upon the persecution that followed *St. Stephen's* death, were scattered abroad from *Jerusalem*, and preached as far as *Phœnice*, *Cyprus*, and *Antioch*. The third were those of the *Synagogue of the Alexandrians*, there being a mighty intercourse between the *Jews* at *Jerusalem* and *Alexandria*, where what vast multitudes of them dwelt, and what great privileges they enjoyed, is too well known to need insisting on. The fourth were them of *Cilicia*, a known Province of the lesser *Asia*, the Metropolis whereof was *Tarsus*, well stored with *Jews*; it was *S. Paul's* birth-place, whom we cannot doubt to have born a principal part among these assailants, finding him afterwards so active and busie in *St. Stephen's* death. The last were those of the *Synagogue of Asia*: where by *Asia* we are probably to understand no more than part of *Asia* properly so called, ( as that was but part of *Asia minor* ) viz. that part that lay near to *Ephesus*, in which sense 'tis plain *Asia* is to be taken in the New Testament. And what infinite numbers of *Jews* were in these parts, and especially at *Ephesus*, the History of the Apostles Acts does sufficiently inform us.

Lec. supra citat.

XI. THESE were the several parties that were to take the Field, persons of very different Countries, Men skilled in the subtleties of their Religion, who all at once rose up to dispute with *Stephen*. What the particular subject of the disputation was, we find not, but may with *St. Chrysostom* conceive them to have accosted him after this manner. " Tell us, " Young Man, what comes into thy mind thus rashly to reproach the " Deity? Why dost thou study with such cunningly-contrived dis- " courtes to inveigle and persuade the People? and with deceitful mi- " racles to undo the Nation? Here lies the crisis of the Controversie. " Is it like that he should be God, who was born of *Mary*, that the ma- " ker of the World should be the Son of a Carpenter? was not *Bethlehem* " the place of his Nativity, and *Nazareth* of his Education? canst thou  
imagine

“ imagine him to be God, that was born upon Earth ? who was so poor  
 “ that he was wrapt up in swadling cloaths and thrown into a Manger ?  
 “ who was forced to flye from the rage of *Herod*, and to wash away his  
 “ Pollution by being Baptized in *Jordan* ? who was subject to hunger  
 “ and thirst, to sleep and weariness, who being bound, was not able to  
 “ escape, nor being buffeted, to rescue or revenge himself ? who when  
 “ he was hang’d could not come down from the Cross, but underwent  
 “ a cursed and shameful death ? wilt thou make us believe that he is in  
 “ Heaven, whom we know to have been buried in his Grave ? that he  
 “ should be the Life of the Dead, who is so near akin to Mortality him-  
 “ self ? Is it likely that God should suffer such things as these ? would  
 “ he not rather with an angry breath have struck his adversaries dead at  
 “ the first approach, and set them beyond the reach of making attempts  
 “ upon his own person ? either cease therefore to delude the People with  
 “ these impostures, or prepare thy self to undergo the same fate.

XII. IN answer to which we may imagine S. Stephen thus to have  
 replied upon them. “ And why, Sirs, should these things seem so incredi-  
 “ ble ? have you not by you the Writings of the Prophets ? do you  
 “ not read the Books of *Moses*, and profess your selves to be his Disci-  
 “ ples ? did not *Moses* say, a Prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto  
 “ you of your Brethren, like unto me, him shall ye hear ? Have not the Pro-  
 “ phets long since foretold that he should be born at *Bethlehem*, and  
 “ conceived in the Womb of a Virgin ? that he should flye into *Egypt*, that  
 “ he should bear our griefs and carry our sorrows ? that they should pierce  
 “ his hands and his feet, and hang him on a tree ? that he should be buri-  
 “ ed, rise again, and ascend up to Heaven with a shout ? Either now  
 “ shew me some other in whom all these Prophecies were accomplished,  
 “ or learn with me to adore as God our crucified Saviour. Blind and  
 “ ignorant that you are of the predictions of *Moses*, you thought you  
 “ crucified a meer Man, but had you known him, you would not have  
 “ crucified the Lord of Glory : you denied the Holy one, and the Just,  
 “ and desired a Murderer to be granted to you, but put to death the Prince  
 “ of Life.

XIII. THIS is the sum of what that ingenious and eloquent Fa-  
 ther conceives S. Stephen did, or might have returned to their enquiries.  
 Which whatever it was, was delivered with that life and zeal, that  
 evidence and strength of reason, that freedom and majesty of elocution,  
 that his Antagonists had not one word to say against it ; *they were not*  
*able to resist the wisdom and the spirit by which he spake.* So particularly did  
 our Lord make good what he had promised to his Disciples, *Settle it in* Luke 21. 14.  
*your hearts, not to meditate before what you shall answer, for I will give you* 15.  
*a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gain-say*  
*nor resist.* Hereupon the Men presently began to retreat, and departed  
 the Lists, equally divided between shame and grief. Ashamed they were  
 to be so openly baffled by one single adversary ; vexed and troubled that  
 they had not carried the day, and that the Religion which they op-  
 posed had hereby received such single credit and confirmation. And  
 now being no longer able *ἀντιπαραλμάν τῇ ἀληθείᾳ* ( as the addition in Col. Beza. MS.  
 some very Ancient Manuscript Copies do elegantly express it ) *with open* & 2 Codd. H.  
*face to resist the truth,* they betake themselves to clancular Arts, to slye and Steph.  
 sinister Designs, hoping to accomplish by craft and subtilty what they  
 could not carry by fairness and force of reason.



ubi supra, pag.  
278.

XIV. TO this purpose they tamper with Men of debauched profligate consciences, to undermine him by false accusations, that so he might fall as a Sacrifice to their spight and malice, and that by the hand of public Justice. S. Chrysostom brings them in with smooth and plausible insinuations encouraging the Men to this mischievous attempt. "Come on, worthy and honourable Friends, lend your assistance to our declining cause, and let your Tongues minister to our Counsels and Contrivances. Behold a new Patron and Advocate of the *GALILEEAN* is started up: one that worships a God that was buried; and Preaches a Creator shut up in a Tomb; who thinks that he whom the Souldiers despised and mocked upon Earth, is now conversing with the Host of Angels in Heaven, and promises that he shall come to judge the World, who was not able to vindicate and right himself: His Disciples denied him, as if they thought him an impostor, and yet this man affirms, that every tongue shall confess and do homage to him: himself was not able to come down from the Cross, and yet he talks of his second coming from Heaven; the vilest miscreants reproached him at his death, that he could not save either himself or them, and yet this man peremptorily proclaims him to be the Saviour of the World. Did you ever behold such boldness and impudence? or have you ever heard words of so much madness and Blasphemy? Do you therefore undertake the cause, and find out some specious colour and pretence, and thereby purchase to your selves glory and renown from the present Generation.

XV. THE Wretches were easily persuaded to the undertaking, and to swear whatsoever their Tutors should direct them. And now the cause is ripe for action, the case is divulged, the Elders and Scribes are dealt with, (and a little Rhetoric would serve to persuade them) the People possessed with the horror of the Fact, the Sanhedrim is summoned, the Malefactor haled to the Bar, the Witnesses produced, and the charge given in. *They suborned men which said, we have heard him speak Blasphemous words against Moses and against God; the false witnesses said, this man ceaseth not to speak Blasphemous words against this holy place and the Law: for we have heard him say, that this Jesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the Customs which Moses delivered us: that is,* (that we may still proceed with that excellent Man in opening the several parts of the charge) "he has dared to speak against our wise and great Law-giver, and blasphemed that Moses, for whom our whole Nation has so just a veneration; that Moses, who had the whole Creation at his beck, who freed our Ancestors from the house of Bondage, and with his rod turned the Waters into Walls, and by his Prayer drowned the Egyptian Army in the bottom of the Sea; who kindled a fiery Pillar for a light by night, and without plowing or sowing fed them with Manna and Bread from Heaven, and with his Rod pierced the Rock and gave them drink. But what do we speak of Moses, when he has whetted his tongue, and stretched it out against God himself, and set up one that is dead as an Anti-god to the great Creator of the World? He has not blushed to reproach the Temple, that holy place, where the divine Oracles are read, and the Writings of the Prophets set forth, the Repository of the Shew-bread and the Heavenly Manna, of the Ark of Covenant, and the Rod of Aaron; where the hoary and venerable heads of the High-Priests, the dignity of the Elders, and the honour  
"of

“ of the Scribes is seen: this is the place which he has reviled and set  
 “ at naught; and not this only, but the Law it self; which he boldly  
 “ declares to be but a shadow, and the ancient Rites but Types and Fi-  
 “ gures: he affirms the *Galilean* to be greater than *Moses*, and the Son  
 “ of *Mary* to be stranger than our Law-giver; he has not honoured the dig-  
 “ nity of the Elders, nor had any reverence to the Society of the Scribes.  
 “ He threatens us with a dead Master; the young Man dreams sure,  
 “ when he talks of *Jesus of Nazareth* rising again, and destroying this  
 “ holy place: he little considers with how much wisdom it was con-  
 “ trived, with what infinite charges it was erected, and how long be-  
 “ fore it was brought to its perfection. And yet forsooth, this *Jesus of*  
 “ *Nazareth* must destroy it, and change the customs which *Moses* delivered  
 “ to us: our most holy *Sabbath* must be turned out of doors; Circum-  
 “ cision abolished, the *New-Moons* rejected, and the Feast of Taberna-  
 “ cles laid aside; our Sacrifices must no longer be accepted with God,  
 “ our sprinklings and solemn Purgations must be done away: as if we  
 “ knew not this *Nazaren's* end, and as if one that is dead could revenge  
 “ himself upon them that are living. How many of the ancient Pro-  
 “ phets and holy Men have been cruelly murdered, whose death none  
 “ ever yet undertook to revenge; and yet this Man must needs appear  
 “ in the cause of this crucified *Nazaren's*, and tell us of a dead Man that  
 “ shall judge us: Silly Impostor! to fright us with a Judge who is him-  
 “ self imprisoned in his own Grave.

XVI. This then is the sum of the charge, that he should threaten the  
 ruin of the Temple, and the abolition of the *Mosaic* Rites, and blasphe-  
 mously affirm that *Jesus of Nazareth* should take away that Religion  
 which had been established by *Moses*, and by God himself. Indeed the  
*Jews* had an unmeasurable reverence and veneration for the *Mosaic* In-  
 stitutions, and could not with any patience endure to hear of their being  
 laid aside, but accounted it a kind of blasphemy so much as to mention  
 their dissolution. Little thinking in how short a time these things  
 which they now so highly valued should be taken away, and their Tem-  
 ple it self laid level with the ground. Which a few years after came  
 to pass by the *Roman* Army under the Conduct of *Titus Vespasian* the  
*Roman* General, when the City was sacked, and the Temple burnt  
 to the Ground. And so final and irrevocable was the Sentence by  
 which it was doomed to ruin, that it could never afterwards be re-  
 paired, Heaven it self immediately declaring against it. Insomuch that  
 when *Julian* the Emperor, out of spite and opposition to the Christi-  
 ans, was resolved to give all possible encouragement to the *Jews*, and  
 not only permitted but commanded them to rebuild the Temple, fur-  
 nishing them with all charges and materials necessary for the Work;  
 (hoping that hereby he should prove our Saviour a false Prophet) no  
 sooner had they begun to clear the Rubbish, and lay the Foundation, but  
 a terrible Earthquake shattered the Foundation, killed the Undertakers;  
 and shaked down all the Buildings that were round about it. And  
 when they again attempted it the next day, great balls of fire suddenly  
 breaking out from under the Foundations consumed the Workmen and  
 those that were near it, and forced them to give over the Attempt. A  
 strange instance of the displeasure of Heaven towards a place which  
 God had fatally devoted to destruction. And this related not only  
 by Christian \* Writers, but as to the substance of it, by the Heathen

\* *Socrat. H. Ec.*  
*l. 3. c. 20. p. 193.*  
*Socrat. H. Ec. l.*  
*5. c. 22. p.*  
*631.*

\* *A. Marcel. l.*  
23. *non longe*  
*av init.*

† *Greg. Nyssen*  
*Orat. in Steph.*  
*Tom. 2. p. 791.*

\* Historian himself. And the same Curse has ever since pursued and followed them, they having been destitute of Temple and Sacrifice for sixteen hundred years together. "Were that bloody Sanhedrim now in being, and here present, (says one of the † Ancients speaking of this accusation) I would ask them about those things for which they were here so much concerned, what is now become of your once famous and renowned Temple? where are those vast stones, and incredible Piles of building? Where is that Gold that once equalled all the other materials of the Temple? what are become of your legal Sacrifices? your Rams and Calves, your Lambs and Heifers, Pigeons, Turtles, and Scape-goats? if they therefore condemned *Stephen* to die, that none of these miseries might befall them, let them shew which of them they avoided by putting him to death; but if they escaped none of them, why then did they imbrue their hands in his innocent blood?

XVII. THE Court being thus set, and the Charge brought in and opened, that nothing might be wanting to carry on their mock Scene of Justice, they give him liberty to defend himself. In order whereunto while the Judges of the *Sanhedrim* earnestly looked upon him, they discovered the appearances of an extraordinary Splendor and brightness upon his face, the innocency of his cause and the clearness of his conscience manifesting themselves in the brightness and cheerfulness of his countenance. The High-priest having asked him whether guilty or not, he in a large discourse pleaded his own cause to this effect: "That what apprehensions soever they might have of the flatulency of the magnificence of their Temple, of the glory and *grandeur* of its services and ministrations, of those venerable customs and usages that were amongst them, as if they looked upon them as indispensibly necessary, and that 'twas blasphemy to think, God might be acceptably served without them; yet that if they looked back to the first originals of their Nation, they would find, that God chose *Abraham* to be the Father and Founder of it, not when he lived in *Jerusalem*, and worshipped God with the pompous services of a Temple, but when he dwelt among the Idolatrous Nations: that then it was that God called him from the Impieties of his Fathers House, and admitted him to a familiar acquaintance and intercourse with himself; wherein he continued for many years without any of those external and visible Rites which they laid so much stress upon; and that when at last God entred into Covenant with him, to give his Posterity the Land of *Canaan*, and that in *his Seed all the Nations of the World should be Blessed*, he bound it upon him with no other ceremony, but only that of Circumcision, as the Badge and Seal of that federal compact that was between them: that without any other fixed Rite but this, the succeeding Patriarchs worshipped God for several ages, till the times of *Moses*, a wise, learned, and prudent person, to whom God particularly revealed himself, and appointed him Ruler over his People, to conduct them out of the House of Bondage, a great and famous Prophet, and who was continually inculcating this Lesson to their Ancestors, *A Prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your Brethren like unto me, him shall ye hear*; that is, that God in the latter days would send amongst them a mighty Prophet who should do as *Moses* had done, introduce new Rites; and set up more excellent Institutions and ways of Worship, to whom they should yield all diligent attention, and ready obedience: that



“that when their fore-fathers had frequently lapsed into Idolatry, God  
 “commanded *Moses* to set up a *Tabernacle*, as a place of public and so-  
 “lemn Worship, where he would manifest himself, and receive the ad-  
 “dresses and adorations of his People ; which yet however was but a  
 “transient and temporary ministraton, and though erected by the im-  
 “mediate order of God himself, was yet after some years to give place  
 “to a standing Temple designed by *David*, but built by *Solomon* ; state-  
 “ly indeed and Majestic, but not absolutely necessary, seeing that infi-  
 “nite Being that made the World, who *had the Heaven for his Throne, and*  
 “*the Earth for his Footstool*, could not be confined within a material Tem-  
 “ple, nor tied to any particular way of worship ; and that therefore there  
 “could be no such absolute and indispensable necessity for those *Mosai-*  
 “*cal* Rites and Ceremonies, as they pretended ; especially when God  
 “was resolved to introduce a new and better Scene and state of things.  
 “But it was the humour of this loose and unruly, this refractory and  
 “undisciplinable generation, ( as it ever had been of their Ancestors )  
 “to *resist the Holy Ghost*, and oppose him in all those methods, whereby  
 “he sought to reform and reclaim them ; that there were few of the  
 “Prophets whom their fore-fathers had not persecuted, and slain them  
 “that had foretold the *Messia’s* coming, the *just and the holy Jesus*, as they  
 “and their unhappy Posterity had actually betrayed and murdered him,  
 “without any due reverence and regard to that *Law*, which had been  
 “solemnly delivered to them by the ministry of Angels, and which he  
 “came to fulfil and perfect.

XVIII. THE holy Man was going on in the Application, when the  
 patience of his Auditors, which had hitherto holden out, at this began  
 to fail ; that fire which gently warms at a distance, scorches when it  
 comes too near ; their consciences being sensibly stung by the too near  
 approach of the truths he delivered ; they began to fume and fret, and  
 express all the signs of rage and fury. But he regardless of what was  
 done below, had his eyes and thoughts directed to a higher and a nobler  
 object, and looking up *saw the Heavens opened*, and some bright and sen-  
 sible appearances of the Divine Majesty, and the *holy Jesus* cloathed in the  
 robes of our glorified nature, not sitting ( in which sense he is usually de-  
 scribed in Scripture ) but *standing* ( as ready to protect and help, to  
 crown and reward his suffering Servant ) *at the right hand of God*. So  
 easily can Heaven delight and entertain us in the want of all earthly  
 comforts ; and divine consolations are then nearest to us, when humane  
 assistances are farthest from us. The good Man was infinitely ravished  
 with the Vision, and it inspired his Soul with a fresh zeal and courage,  
 and made him long to arrive at that happy place, and little concerned what  
 use they would make of it, he could not but communicate and impart  
 his happiness ; the Cup was full, and it easily overflowed ; he tells his ad-  
 versaries what himself beheld, *Behold I see the Heavens opened, and the Son*  
*of Man standing on the right hand of God*.

XIX. THE Heavenly Vision had very different effects, it encour-  
 aged *Stephen*, but enraged the *Jews*, who now taking it *pro confesso* that  
 he was a blasphemer, resolved upon his death, without any further pro-  
 cess. How furious and impatient is misguided Zeal ! they did not  
 stand to produce a Warrant from the *Roman* Governor ( without  
 whose leave they had not power to put any Man to death ) nay they had  
 not the patience to stay for the judicial sentence of the *Sanhedrem*, but  
 acted

acted the part of *Zelots*, ( who were wont to execute vengeance upon Capital Offenders without staying for the ordinary formalitie of Justice ) and raising a great noise and clamour, and *stopping their ears*, that they might hear no further Blasphemies, and be deaf to all cries for mercy, they unanimously rushed upon him. But zeal is Superstitious in its maddest fury : they would not execute him within the Walls; lest they should pollute the holy City with his Blood, but hurried him *without the City*, and there fell upon him with a shower of stones. Stoning was one of the four Capital punishments among the *Jews*, inflicted upon greater and more enormous crimes, especially Blasphemy, Idolatry, and strange Worship: and the *Jews* tell us of many particular circumstances used in this sort of punishment. The Malefactor was to be led out of the Consistory, at the door whereof a person was to stand with a Napkin in his hand, and a Man on Horseback at some distance from him, that if any one came and said, he had something to offer for the deliverance of the Malefactor, upon the moving of the Napkin the Horseman might give notice, and bring the offender back. He had two grave persons to go along with him to exhort him to Confession by the way ; a Crier went before him, proclaiming who he was, what his crime, and who the witnesses ; being come near the place of Execution ( which was two cubits from the ground ) he was first stripped, and then stoned, and afterwards hanged, where he was to continue till Sun-set, and then being taken down, he and his Gibbet were both buried together.

*Vid. P. Fagin*  
*Exod. 21. 16.*

*Deut. 17. 7.*

*Acts 22. 20.*

XX. S U C H were their Customs in ordinary cases , but alas their greediness of St. Stephen's Blood would not admit these tedious proceedings; only one formality we find them using, which the Law required, which was, *that the hands of the Witnesses should be first upon him, to put him to death, and afterwards the hands of the People* : a Law surely contrived with great Wisdom and Prudence, that so the Witness, if forsworn, might derive the guilt of the Blood upon himself, and the rest be free ; *so thou shalt put the evil away from among you*. Accordingly here the Witnesses *putting off their upper Garments* ( which rendred them less nimble and expedite, being loose and long, according to the mode of those *Eastern Countries* ) *laid them down at Saul's feet*, a zealous Youth, at that time Student under *Gamaliel*, the fiery zeal and activity of whose temper made him busie no doubt in this, as we find he was in the following Persecution. An Action which afterwards cost him tears and penitent reflections, himself perfering the Indictment against himself ; *When the blood of the Martyr Stephen was shed, I also was standing by, and consenting unto his death, and kept the raiment of them that slew him*. Thus prepared they began the Tragedy, whose example was soon followed by the multitude. All which time the innocent and holy Man was upon his knees, sending up his Prayers faster to Heaven than they could rain down Stones upon him, piously recommending his own Soul to God, and charitably intending for his Murderers, that God would not charge this guilt upon them, nor severely reckon with them for it : and then gave up the Ghost, or as the sacred Historian elegantly expresses it, *fell asleep*. So soft a pillow is death to a good Man, so willingly, so quietly does he leave the World, as a weary Labourer goes to Bed at night. What Storms or Tempests soever may follow him while he lives, his Sun in spite of all the malice and cruelty of his enemies sets serene and calm ; *mark the perfect and behold the upright, for the end of that man is peace*.

XXI. T H U S

XXI. THUS died St. Stephen, the Protomartyr of the Christian Faith, obtaining  $\delta$  ἀντὶς φερώνυμον Στέφανον (says Eusebius) a reward truly answering to his name, a Crown. He was a Man in whom the Virtues of a divine life were very eminent and illustrious; a Man full of Faith, and of the Holy Ghost. Admirable his zeal for God and for Religion, for the propagating whereof he refused no pains, declined no troubles or difficulties: his courage was not baffled either with the angry frowns, or the fierce threatnings of his enemies, nor did his Spirits sink, though he stood alone, and had neither Friend nor Kinsman to assist and comfort him; his constancy firm and unshaken, notwithstanding temptations on the one hand, and the dangers that assailed him on the other: in all the oppositions that he met with, under all the torments and sufferings that he underwent, he discovered nothing but the meek and innocent temper of a Lamb, never betraying one passionate and revengeful word, but calmly resigned up his Soul to God. He had a charity large enough to cover the highest affronts, and the greatest wrongs and injuries that were put upon him; and accordingly after the example of his Master, he prayed for the pardon of his Murderers, even while they were raking in his Blood. And the effectual

fervent prayer of the righteous Man availed much; Heaven was not deaf to hear his Petition, as appeared in the speedy Conversion of S. Paul, whose admirable change we may reasonably suppose to have been the birth of the good mans dying groans, the fruit of his Prayer and Interest in Heaven. And what set off all these excellencies, he was not elevated with lofty and arrogant conceits, nor thought more highly of himself than he ought to think, esteeming meanly of and preferring others before himself. And therefore the Author of the Apostolic (a) Constitutions brings in the Apostles commending St. Stephen for his humility, that though he was so great a person, and honoured with such singular

and extraordinary Visions and Revelations, yet never attempted any thing above his place, did not Consecrate the Eucharist, nor confer Orders upon any; but (as became a Martyr of Christ  $\mu\eta\ \delta\iota\tau\alpha\gamma\iota\alpha\ \nu\alpha\pi\omega\sigma\tau\epsilon\iota\ \nu$ , to preserve Order and Decency) he contented himself with the station of a Deacon, wherein he persevered to the last minute of his life.

XXII. HIS Martyrdom hapned (say some) three years after our Saviours Passion, which Eusebius Bishop of Antioch (if that Epistle were his cited by (b) Nicephorus; which 'tis probable enough was not) extends to no less than seven years. Doubtless a very wide mistake. Sure I am (c) Eusebius affirms, that it was not long after his Ordination to his Deacons Office, and the Author of the Excerpta Chronologica published by (d) Scaliger more particularly, that it was some few days less than eight months after our Lords Ascension. He is generally supposed to have been young at the time of his Martyrdom; and (e) Chrysost. makes no scruple of styling him young Man at every turn, though for what reason, I confess I am yet to learn. He was Martyred without the walls, near the gate on the North side that leads to Cedar, (as (f) Lucian tells us) and which was afterwards called St. Stephens Gate; anciently (say some) styled the Gate of Ephraim, or as others the Valley Gate, or the Fish Gate which stood on the East side of the City, where the place we are told is still shewed, where St. Paul late when he kept

Ego sum Jesus Nazarenus, quem tu persequeris. Quid mihi & tibi? Quare te erigis contra me, ad tanta mala que commisi in me? Olim quidem debui perdere te, sed Stephanus meus oravit pro te. O Saul lupo rapax, comediti; expecta paululum, & digeres. Dicam plene, elisus est filius perditionis. Nam si Sanctus STEPHANUS sic non orasset, Ecclesia PAULUM non haberet. Sed ideo erectus est Paulus, quia in terra inclinatus exauditus est Stephanus. Quod fecit persecutor, patitur predictor. August. Sermon. 1. de St. Steph. Tom. 10. col. 1168.

(a) Lib. 8. cap. 46. Concil. Tom. 1. Col.

509.

(b) H. Eccl. 1. 2.

c. 3. p. 134.

(c) Loc. sup.

laudat.

(d) Ad calc.

Chro. Euseb.

pag. 82.

(e) Orat. in S.

Steph. ubi sup.

(f) Ep. de In-

vent. 3. Steph.

ap. Sar. ad

Aug. 3. Bed.

de loc. S. c. 1.

p. 352. T. 3.

Broc. descript.

Terr. f. p. m. 328.

Cotovic. itin.

l. 2. c. 11. p.

254.

the



the cloaths of them that slew him. Over this place ( where ever it was ) the Empreſs (a) *Eudocia* Wife of *Theodoſius*, when ſhe repaired the Walls of *Jeruſalem*, erected a beautiful and ſtately Church to the honour of St. *Stephen*, wherein ſhe her ſelf was buried afterwards. The great Stone upon which he ſtood while he ſuffered Martyrdom, (b) is ſaid to have been afterwards removed into the Church built to the honour of the Apoſtles upon Mount *Sion*, and there kept with great care and reverence: yea one of the Stones wherewith he was killed, being preſerved by ſome Chriſtian, was afterwards ( as we are (d) told ) carried into *Italy*, and laid up as a choice Treasure at *Ancona*, and a Church their built to the memory of the Martyr.

(a) *Evagr. H. Eccl. l. 1. c. 22. p. 280.*  
(b) *Bed. lib. c. 3. p. 354.*  
(c) *Bar. not. in Martyr. Rom. ad Aug. 3. p. 475. ex Martyros. S. Cyriac.*

XXIII. THE Church received a great wound by the death of this pious and good Man, and could not but expreſs a very deep reſentment of it: *Devout Men* (probably Proſelytes) carried *Stephen* to his burial, and made great lamentation for him. They carried, or as the word *συνεχόμενοι* properly ſignifies, they dressed him up, and prepared the dead body for the burial. For we cannot reaſonably ſuppoſe, that the *Jews* being at this time ſo mightily enraged againſt him, the *Apoſtles* would think it prudent further to provoke the exaſperated humour by making a ſolemn and pompous Funeral. His burial ( if we might believe (d) one of the Ancients, who pretends 'twas revealed to him in a Viſion by *Gamaliel*, whom many of the Ancients make to have been a Chriſtian Convert ) was on this manner. The *Jewiſh Sanhedrim* having given order that his Carcaſe ſhould remain in the place of its Martyrdom to be conſumed by wild Beaſts; here it lay for ſome time night and day, untouched either by Beaſt or Bird of Prey. Till *Gamaliel* compaſſionating the caſe of the Holy Martyr, perſuaded ſome Religious Chriſtian Proſelytes, who dwelt at *Jeruſalem*, and furniſhed them with all things neceſſary for it, to go with all poſſible ſecrecy and fetch off his Body. They brought it away in his own Carriage, and conveyed it to a place called *Caphargamala*, ( corruptly, as is probable, for *Caphargamaliel*, otherwiſe *כפר גמלי* properly ſignifies the *Town of Camels* ) that is, the *Village of Gamaliel*, twenty miles diſtant from *Jeruſalem*; where a ſolemn mourning was kept for him ſeventy days at *Gamaliel's* charge, who alſo cauſed him to be buried in the *East ſide* of his own Monument, where afterwards he was

interred himſelf. The *Greek Menaon* adds, that his body was put into a Coffin made of the wood of the Tree called *Perſea*, ( this was a large beautiful *Egyptian* Tree, as (e) *Theophrastus* tells us, of which they were wont to make Statues, Beds, Tables, &c. ) though how they came by ſuch very particular intelligence ( there being nothing

of it in *Gamaliel's* Revelation ) I am not able to imagine. \* *Johannes Photius* agrees in the relation of his Interment by *Gamaliel*, but adds, that he was firſt buried in Mount *Sion*, in the houſe where the Apoſtles were aſſembled when our Lord came in to them, the doors being ſhut, after his Reſurrection, and afterwards removed by *Gamaliel* to another place which ( ſays he ) was on the left ſide of the City, as it looks towards *Samaria*, where a famous Monastery was built afterwards.

XXIV. BUT where ever his Body was interred, it reſted quietly for ſeveral Ages, till we hear of its being found out in the Reign of *Honorius*, for

\* *Ο θεῖος πατριάρχης ὁ ἀντίπαλος κατὰ λαῶν, ὁ γλυκὺν ὕπνον ἀνεπαύσατο συσκομίζετο τὸ ἱερὸν εὐαγγέλιον σκλῆμα ἰσθμῶν ἀνδρῶν εὐλαβῶν ἐν γλωσσόκομφ Περσίαι· εἶδε δὲ τὸ πορτὶν Μενάων Γραῖον. τῇ κ' τῆ Δεκεμβρῆς* sub. lit. Σ. 111.

(e) *Hiſtor. Plant. l. 4. c. 2. p. 286.*

\* *Εκφραστ.* of it in *Gamaliel's* Revelation ) I am not able to imagine. \* *Johannes Photius* agrees in the relation of his Interment by *Gamaliel*, but adds, that he was firſt buried in Mount *Sion*, in the houſe where the Apoſtles were aſſembled when our Lord came in to them, the doors being ſhut, after his Reſurrection, and afterwards removed by *Gamaliel* to another place which ( ſays he ) was on the left ſide of the City, as it looks towards *Samaria*, where a famous Monastery was built afterwards.

*Ibid. c. 15. p. 25.*

10. Edit Allat.

for then as (a) *Sozomen* informs us, it was discovered at the same time with the bones of the Prophet *Zachary*, an account of both which he promises to give; and having spoken of that of the Prophet, there abruptly ends his History. But what is wanting in him is fully supplied by other hands, especially the forementioned (b) *Lucian*, Presbyter of the Town of *Caphargamala* in the Diocese of *Jerusalem*, who is very large and punctual in his account, the sum whereof (so far as concerns the present case, and is material to relate) is this. Sleeping one night in the *Baptisterium* of his Church, (this was *Ann. CCCCXV. Honor. Imper. XXI.*) there appeared to him a grave venerable old Man, who told him he was *Gamaliel*, bad him go to *John* Bishop of *Jerusalem*, and will him to remove his remains and some others (whereof *S. Stephen* was the principal) that were with him from the place where they lay. Three several times the Vision appeared to him before he would be fully satisfied in the thing, and then he acquainted the Bishop with it, who commanded him to search after the place. After some attempts, he found the place of their repository, and then gave the Bishop notice, who came and brought two other Bishops, *Eleutherius* of *Sebaste*, and *Eleutherius* of *Hiericho*, along with him. The Monument being opened, they found an Inscription upon *S. Stephen's* Tomb-stone in deep Letters, *C E L I E L*, signifying (says mine Author) the *Servant of God*; at the opening of the Coffin there was an Earthquake, and a very pleasant and delightful fragrancy came from it, and several miraculous cures were done by it. The remains being closed up again (only some few bones, and a little of the dust that was taken out, and bestowed upon *Lucian*) were with great triumph and rejoicing conveyed to the Church that stood upon Mount *Sion*, the place where he himself while alive had discharged the Office of a Deacon. I add no more of this, but that this Story is not only mentioned by (c) *Photius*, and before him by (d) *Marcellinus Comes*, sometimes *Chancellor* or *Secretary* to *Justinian*, afterwards *Emperour* (who sets it down as done in the very same year, and under the same Consuls wherein *Lucian's* Epistle reports it) but before both by (e) *Gennadius* Presbyter of *Marseilles*, who lived *Ann. CCCCXC.* and many years before, and consequently not long after the time of *Lucian* himself; who also adds, that *Lucian* wrote a relation of it in *Greek* to all the Churches, which *Avitus* a *Spanish* Presbyter translated into *Latine*, whose Epistle is prefixed to it, wherein he gives an account of it to *Balchonius* Bishop of *Braga*, and sent it by *Orosius* into *Spain*.

XXV. THESE remains (whether before or after, the Reader must judge by the sequel of the Story, though I question whether he will have Faith enough to believe all the circumstances of it) were translated to *Constantinople* upon this occasion. (f) *Alexander* a Noble-man of the *Senatorian* Order, having a particular veneration for the *Protomartyr*, had erected an Oratory to him in *Palestine*, commanding that himself when dead being put into a Coffin like that of *St. Stephen*, should be buried by him. Eight years after, his Lady (whose name, say some, was *Juliana*) removing to *Constantinople*, resolved to take her Husbands body along with her: but in a hurry she chanced to mistake *St. Stephen's* Coffin for that of her Husband, and so set forward on her Journey. But it soon betrayed itself by an extraordinary odor, and some miraculous effects: the same whereof flying before to *Constantinople*, had prepared the people to conduct it with great joy and solemnity into the *Imperial Palace*.

D

Which

(a) *H. Eccl. l. 9. c. 16, 17. p. 817.*

(b) *Vid. loc. supr. citat. & Phot. Cod. CLXXI. Col. 383.*

(c) *Loc. citat. (d) Mircel. Chr. Indict. XIII. p. m. 17. (e) De Script. Ecc. c. 46, 47. p. 55.*

(f) *Nicet. H. Ec. lib. 14. c. 9. p. 554. Tom. 2. Eadem habet Me-neon Græc. Aug. 5. 7. 8. Sub. lit. 8. 11.*

Which yet could not be effected; for the sturdy Mules that carried the Treasure being come as far as *Constantine's Baths*, would not advance one step further. And when unreasonably whipped and pricked, they spake aloud, and told those that conducted them, that the Martyr was to be reposed and interred in that place. Which was accordingly done, and a beautiful Church built there. But certainly they that first added this passage to the Story, had been at a great loss for invention, had not the Story of *Balaam's Ass* been upon record in Scripture. I confess \* *Baronius* seems not over-forward to believe this relation, not for the trifling and ridiculous improbabilities of it, but only because he could not well reconcile it with the time of its being first found out by *Lucian*. Indeed my Authors tell us, that this was done in the time of *Constantine*, *Metrophanes* being then Bishop of *Constantinople*, and that it was only some part of his remains buried again by some devout Christians, that was discovered in a Vision to *Lucian*, and that the Empress *Pulcheria*, by the help of her brother *Theodosius*, procured from the Bishop of *Jerusalem* the Martyr's right hand, which being arrived at *Constantinople*, was with singular reverence and rejoycing brought into the Palace, and there laid up, and a stately and magnificent Church erected for it, set off with all rich and costly ornaments and advantages.

\* *Bar. ad Ann.*  
439. Tom. 5.  
681.

† *Marcell. Chr.*  
*Indict. VII. p.*  
24.  
*Theodor. Lect.*  
*lib. 2. p. 568.*

(a) *Ad VII.*  
*Mali p. 284.*

(b) *Vld. Avit.*  
*Ep. Pref. Ep.*  
*Lucian. Gen.*  
*ad. de script.*  
*Ecl. in Oros.*  
c. 39. p. 53.  
*Marcell. Chron.*  
p. 17.

(c) *De glor.*  
*Martyr. lib. 1.*  
*cap. 33. p. 42.*  
c.c.

(d) *Annot. in*  
*Martyr. Rom.*  
*ad Aug. III.*  
p. 474.

XXVI. † **AUTHORS** mention another remove *Ann. CCCCXXXIX*, (and let the curious and inquisitive after these matters reconcile the different accounts) of his remains to *Constantinople* by the Empress *Eudocia*, Wife to *Theodosius*, who having been at *Jerusalem* upon some pious and charitable designs, carried back with her to the Imperial City the remains of *S. Stephen*, which she carefully laid up in the Church of *S. Laurence*. The *Roman* (a) Martyrology says, that in the time of Pope *Pelagius* they were removed from *Constantinople* to *Rome*, and lodg'd in the Sepulchre of *S. Laurence* the Martyr in agro *Verano*, where they are honoured with great piety and devotion. But I find not any Author near those times mentioning their translation into any of these *Western* parts, except the little parcel which (b) *Orosius* brought from *Jerusalem* (whither he had been sent by *S. Augustin* to know *S. Hierom's* sense in the Question about the Original of the Soul) which he received from *Avitus*, who had procured it of *Lucian*, and brought it along with him into the *West*, that is, into *Afric*, for whether it went any further, I find not.

XXVII. **AS** for the miracles reported to have been done by the remains of this Martyr, (c) *Gregory* Bishop of *Tours*, and the Writers of the following Ages have furnished the World with abundant instances, which I insist not upon, Superstition having been the peculiar genius and humour of those middle Ages of the Church, and the Christian World miserably over-run with an excessive and immoderate Veneration of the Reliques of departed Saints. However I can venture the Readers displeasure for relating one, and the rather because 'tis so solemnly averred by (d) *Baronius* himself. *S. Gaudiosus* an *African* Bishop, flying from the *Vandalic* Persecution, brought with him a Glass Vial of *S. Stephen's* blood to *Naples* in *Italy*, where it was famous especially for one miraculous effect, that being set upon the Altar, at the time of *Mass* it was annually wont upon the third of *August* (the day whereon *S. Stephen's* body was first discovered) to melt and bubble, as if it were but newly shed.

But



But the miracle of the miracle lay in this, that when Pope Gregory the XIII. reformed the *Roman Kalendar*, and made no less than ten days difference from the former, the Blood in the Vial ceased to bubble upon the third of *August* according to the old computation, and bubbled upon that that fell according to the new Reformation. A great justification I confess (as *Baronius* well observes) of the divine Authority of the *Gregorian Kalendar*, and the Popes Constitutions: but yet it was ill done to set the *Kalendar* at variance, when both had been equally justified by the miracle. But how easie it was to abuse the World with such tricks, especially in these later Ages, wherein the Artifice of the Priests was arrived to a kind of perfection in these affairs, is no difficult matter to imagin.

XXVIII. LET us then look to the more early Ages, when Covetousness and Secular Interests had not so generally put Men upon Arts of craft and subtlety; and we are told both by *Lucian* and *Photius*, that at the first discovery of the Martyrs Body many strange miraculous cures were effected, seventy three healed only by smelling the odor and fragrantcy of the body; in some, *Demons* were cast out, others cured of Issues of Blood, Tumours, Agues, Fevers, and infinite other distempers that were upon them. But that which most sways with me, is what *S. Augustin* reports of these matters; who seems to have been inquisitive about matters of Fact, as the Argument he managed did require. For being to demonstrate against the Gentiles that miracles were not altogether ceased in the Christian Church, among several others he produces many instances of Cures miraculously done at the remains of *S. Stephen*, brought thither (as before we noted) by *Orosius* from *Jerusalem*; all done thereabouts, and some of them in the place where himself lived, and of which (as he tells us) they made Books, which were solemnly published, and read to the People, whereof (at the time of his Writing) there were no less than seventy written of the Cures done at *Hippo* (the place where he lived) though it was not full two years since the memorial of *S. Stephen's* Martyrdom had begun to be celebrated in that place, besides many whereof no account had been given in writing. To set down all were to tire the Readers patience beyond all recovery, a few only for a specimen shall suffice. At the *Aqua Tibilitana Projectus* the Bishop bringing the remains of the Martyr, in a vast multitude of People a blind Woman desiring to be brought to the Bishop, and some Flowers which she brought being laid upon them; and after applied to her eyes, to the wonder of all she instantly received her sight. *Lucillus* Bishop of *Synica* near *Hippo*, carrying the same remains, accompanied with all the People, was suddenly freed from a desperate disease, under which he had a long time laboured, and for which he even then expected the Chirurgeons Knife. *Eucharius* a Spanish Presbyter, then dwelling at *Calama* (whereof *Possidius* who wrote *S. Augustin's* Life was Bishop) was by the same means cured of the Stone, which he had a long time been afflicted with, and afterwards recovered of another distemper, when he had been given over for dead. *Martialis* an Ancient Gentleman in that place of great note and rank, but a Pagan, and highly prejudiced against the Christian Faith, had been often in vain solicited by his Daughter and her Husband (both Christians) to turn Christian, especially in his sickness, but still resented the motion with indignation. His Son-in-law went to the place dedicated to *St. Stephen's*

*Loc. ante citat.*

*De civ. Dei. lib.*  
*22. cap. col.*  
*1346. &c. Tom.*  
5.

Martyrdom, and there with Prayers and tears passionately begged of God his Conversion. Departing he took some Flowers thence with him, which at night he put under his Fathers head; who slept well, and in the morning called for the Bishop, in whose absence (for he was at that time with *S. Augustin at Hippo*) the Presbyters were sent for; at whose coming he acknowledged himself a Christian, and to the joy and admiration of all, was immediately Baptized. As long as he lived he often had these words in his mouth, and they were the last words that he spake (for he died not long after) *O Christ receive my spirit*, though utterly ignorant that it was the Protomartyrs dying Speech.

XXIX. M A N Y passages of like nature he relates done at his own See at *Hippo*, and this among the rest. Ten Children of eminency at *Cæsarea in Cappadocia* (all the Children of one Man) had for some notorious misdemeanour after their Fathers death been cursed by their Mother, whereupon they were all seized with a continual trembling and shaking in all parts of their Body. Two of these, *Paulus* and *Palladia*, came over into *Afric*, and dwelt at *Hippo*, notoriously known to the whole City. They arrived fifteen days before *Easter*, where they frequented the Church, especially the place dedicated to the Martyrdom of *S. Stephen* every day, praying that God would forgive them, and restore them to their health. Upon *Easter-Day* the Young Man praying as he was wont at the accustomed place, suddenly dropt down, and lay like one asleep, but without any trembling, and awaking found himself perfectly restored to health, who was thereupon with the joyful acclamations of the People brought to *S. Augustin*, who kindly received him, and after the public devotions were over, treated him at Dinner, where he had the whole account of the misery that befel him. The day after, when the narrative of his Cure was to be recited to the People, his Sister also was healed in the same manner, and at the same place, the particular circumstances of both which *S. Augustin* relates more at large.

XXX. W H A T the judicious and unprejudiced Reader will think of these and more the like instances there reported by this good Father, I know not, or whether he will not think it reasonable to believe, that God might suffer these strange and miraculous cures to be wrought in a place where multitudes yet persisted in their *Gentilism* and infidelity; and who made this one great objection against the Christian Faith, that whatever miracles might be heretofore pretended for the confirmation of Christian Religion, yet that now they were ceased, when yet they were still necessary to induce the World to the belief of Christianity. Certain it is, that nothing was done herein, but what did very well consist with the wisdom and the goodness of God, who as he is never wont to be prodigal in multiplying the effects of his omnipotent power beyond a just necessity, so is never wanting to afford all necessary evidences and methods of conviction. That therefore the unbelieving World (who made this the great refuge of their infidelity) might see that his Arm was not grown effete and weak; that he had not left the Christian Religion wholly destitute of immediate and miraculous attestations, he was pleased to exert these extraordinary powers, that he might baffle their unbelief, and silence their objections against the divinity of the Christian Faith. And for this reason God never totally withdrew the power of working Miracles from the Church, till the World was in a manner wholly subdued to the Faith of Christ. And then he left it

to

to be conducted by more humane and regular ways, and to preserve its Authority over the minds of Men by those standing and innate characters of Divinity, which he has impressed upon it. 'Tis true that the Church of *Rome* still pretends to this power, which it endeavours to justify by appealing to these and such like instances. But in vain, and to no purpose; the pretended miracles of that Church being generally trifling and ludicrous, far beneath that gravity and seriousness that should work upon a wise and considering mind, the manner of their operation obscure and ambiguous, their numbers excessive and immoderate, the occasions of them light and frivolous, and after all, the things themselves for the most part false, and the reports very often so monstrous and extravagant, as would choke any sober and rational belief, so that a Man must himself become the greatest miracle that believes them. I shall observe no more, than that in all these cases related by *S. Augustin*, we never find that they invoked or prayed to the Martyr, nor begged to be healed by his merits or intercession, but immediately directed their addresses to God himself.

---

T H E

---





THE LIFE OF  
**S. P H I L I P**  
 THE  
 DEACON and EVANGELIST.



*Mrs. Burghers Sculpsit.*

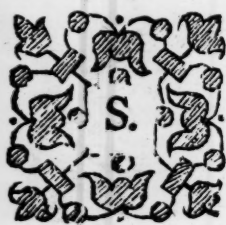
*Act. 8. 38. He commanded the Chariot to stand still: and they went downe both into the water, both PHILIP and the EUNUCH, and he baptized him.*

*His Birth-place. The confounding him with S. Philip the Apostle. His election to the Office of a Deacon. The dispersion of the Church at Jerusalem. Philip's preaching at Samaria. Inveterate prejudices between the Samari-*

Samaritans and the Jews. The great success of S. Philip's Ministry. The Impostures of Simon Magus, and his embracing Christianity. The Christians at Samaria confirmed by Peter and John. Philip sent to Gaza. His meeting with the Ethiopian Eunuch. What Ethiopia here meant. Candace who. The custom of retaining Eunuchs in the Courts of the Eastern Princes. This Eunuch who. His Office. His Religion and great Piety. His Conversion and Baptism by S. Philip. The place where he was baptized. The Eunuchs return, and propagating Christianity in his own Country. Philip's journey to Casarea, and fixing his abode there. His four Daughters Virgin-Prophetesses. His death.

Epist. l. r. Ep.  
449. ad Anti-  
och. p. 95.

I.



PHILIP was born (as Isidore the Peleusiot plainly intimates) at Casarea, a famous Port-Town between Joppa and Ptolemais in the Province of Samaria; but whether he had any other warrant for it than his own conjecture, I know not, there being some circumstances however that make it probable. He has been by some both formerly and of later times for want of a due regard to things

and persons, carelessly confounded with S. Philip the Apostle. A mistake of very Ancient date, and which seems to have been embraced by some of the most early Writers of the Church. But whoever considers that the one was an Apostle, and one of the Twelve, the other a Deacon only, and one of the Seven, chosen out of the People, and set apart by the Apostles, that they themselves might attend the more immediate Ministeries of the Office; that the one was dispersed up and down the Country, while the other remained with the Apostolical College at Jerusalem; that the one though commissioned to Preach and to Baptize, could not impart the Holy Ghost (the peculiar prerogative of the Apostolical Office) will see just reason to force him to acknowledge a vast difference between them. Our S. Philip was one of the Seventy Disciples, and S. Stephen's next Collegue in the Deacons Office, erected for the conveniency of the Poor, and assisting the Apostles in some inferiour Services and Ministrations: which shews him to have been a person of great esteem and reputation in the Church, endowed with miraculous powers, full of Wisdom, and of the Holy Ghost; which were the qualifications required by the Apostles in those who were to be constituted to this place. In the discharge of this Ministry he continued at Jerusalem for some Months after his election, till the Church being scattered up and down, he was forced to quit his station: as what wonder if the Stewards be dismissed, when the Household is broken up?

II. THE Protomartyr had been lately sacrificed to the rage and fury of his Enemies: but the bloody Cloud did not so blow over, but increased into a blacker tempest. Cruelty and revenge never say it is enough, like the temper of the Devil, whose malice is insatiable and eternal. Stephen's death would not suffice, the whole Church is now shot at, and they resolve (if possible) to extirpate the Religion it self. The great Engineer in this Persecution was Saul, whose active and fiery genius, and passionate concern for the Traditions of the Fathers, made him pursue the design with the Spirit of a Zealot, and the rage of a Mad-man. Having furnished himself with a Commission from the Sanhedrim, he quickly put it in execution, broke open Houses, seized whoever he met with



with, that looked but like a Disciple of the crucified Jesus, and without any regard to Sex or Age, beat, and haled them into prison, plucking the Husband from the bosom of his Wife, and the Mother from the Embraces of her Children, blaspheming God, prosecuting and being injurious unto Men, breathing out nothing but slaughter and threatnings where-ever he came; whence *Eusebius* calls it the first and most grievous Persecution of the Church. The Church by this means was forced to retire, the Apostles only remaining privately at *Jerusalem*, that they might the better superintend and steer the affairs of the Church; while the rest were dispersed up and down the neighbouring Countries, publishing the glad tidings of the Gospel, and declaring the nature and design of it in all places where they came; so that what their Enemies intended as the way to ruin them, by breaking the knot of their Fellowship and Society, proved an effectual means to enlarge the bounds of Christianity. Thus excellent perfumes, while kept close in a box, few are the better for them, whereas being once, whether casually or maliciously spilt upon the ground, the fragrant scent presently fills all corners of the house.

*H Eccl. l. 2. c. 1.  
p. 39.*

III. AMONG them that were thus dispersed was our *Evangelist*, so stiled not from his writing, but preaching of the Gospel. He directed his journey towards the Province of *Samaria*, and came into a *City of Samaria* (as those words may be read) probably *Gitton*, the birth-place of *Simon Magus*; though it's safest to understand it of *Samaria* itself. This was the *Metropolis* of the Province, had been for some Ages the Royal Seat of the Kings of *Israel*, but being utterly destroyed by *Hyrcanus*, had been lately re-edified by *Herod the Great*; and in honour of *Augustus* (*Σεβας* &c.) by him stiled *Sebaste*. The *Samaritans* were a mixture of *Jews* and *Gentiles*, made up of the remains that were left of the Ten Tribes which were carried away captive, and those Heathen Colonies which the King of *Babylon* brought into their room; and their Religion accordingly was nothing but *Judaism* blended with *Pagan Rites*; though so highly prized and valued by them, that they made no scruple to dispute place, and to vie with the Worship of the Temple of *Jerusalem*. Upon this account there had been an ancient and inveterate pique and quarrel between the *Jews* and them, so as utterly to refuse all mutual intercourse with each other. Hence the *Samaritan Woman* wondred, that our Lord being a *Jew*, should ask drink of her, who was a *Woman of Samaria*; for the *Jews* have no dealings with the *Samaritans*. They despised them at the rate of Heathens, devoted them under the most solemn execrations, allowed them not to become Profelytes, nor to have any Portion in the Resurrection of the Just, suffered not an *Israelite* to eat with them, no nor to say *Amen* to their Blessing, nor did they think they could fasten upon our Saviour a greater Character of reproach, than to say that he was a *Samaritan*, and had a *Devil*. But God regards not the prejudices of Men, nor always with-holds his kindness from them, whom we are ready to banish the Lines of love and Friendship. 'Tis true the Apostles at their first mission were charged not to go in the way of the *Gentiles*, nor to enter into any *City of the Samaritans*. But when Christ by his death had broken down the partition-wall, and abolished in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances, then the Gospel came and preached peace as well to them that were afar off, as to them that were nigh. Philip therefore freely

*Joh. 4. 9.*

*Matth. 10. 5.*

*Eph. 2. 14, 15.  
& seq.*

preached the Gospel to these *Samaritans*, so odious, so distastful to the *Jews*: to which he effectually prepared his way by many great and uncontrollable miracles, which being arguments fitted to the capacities, and accommodate to the senses of the meanest, do easiliest convey the truth into the minds of Men. And the success here was accordingly, the people generally embracing the Christian Doctrine, while they beheld him curing all manner of diseases, and powerfully dispossessing *Demons*, who with great horror and regret were forced to quit their residence, to the equal joy and wonder of that place.

IV. IN this City was one *Simon*, born at a Town not far off, who by Sorcery and Magic Arts had strangely insinuated himself into the reverence and veneration of the People. A Man crafty and ambitious, daring and insolent, whose Diabolical sophistries and devices, had for a long time so amazed the eyes of the Vulgar, that they really thought him (and for such no doubt he gave out himself) to be the supreme Divinity, probably magnifying himself as that divine Power, that was to visit the *Jews* as the *Messia*, or the Son of God; among the *Samaritans*, giving out himself to be the Father, ( as (a) *Irenaeus* assures us, ) ὁ πρῶτος Θεός, as his Countryman (b) *Justin Martyr* tells us the People worshipped him, as the first and chiefest Deity; as afterwards among the *Gentiles* he stiled himself the *Holy Ghost*. And what wonder if by this train of Artifices the people were tempted and seduced to admire and adore him. And in this case things stood at S. *Philip's* arrival, whose greater and more unquestionable miracles quickly turned the Scale. Imposture cannot bear the too near approach of Truth, but flies before it, as darkness vanishes at the presence of the Sun. The people sensible of their error, universally flocked to S. *Philip's* Sermons, and convinced by the efficacy of his Doctrine, and the power of his Miracles, gave up themselves his Converts, and were by Baptism initiated into the Christian Faith: Yea the *Magician* himself astonished at those mighty things which he saw done by *Philip*, professed himself his Profelyte and Disciple, and was baptized by him; being either really persuaded by the convictive evidence of Truth, or else for some sinister designs craftily dissembling his Belief and Profession of Christianity. A piece of Artifice which (c) *Eusebius* tells us, his Disciples and Followers still observed in his time, who in imitation of their Father, like a Pest or a Leprosie, were wont to creep in among the Christian Societies, that so they might with the more advantage poison and infect the rest, many of whom having been discovered, had with shame been ejected and cast out of the Church.

V. THE fame of S. *Philip's* success at *Samaria* quickly flew to *Jerusalem*, where the Apostles immediately took care to dispatch some of their own number to confirm these new Converts in the Faith. *Peter* and *John* were sent upon this errand, who being come, prayed for them, and laid their hands upon them, ordaining probably some to be Governors of the Church, and Ministers of Religion; which was no sooner done, but the miraculous Gifts of the Holy Ghost fell upon them. A plain evidence of the Apostolic Power: *Philip* had converted and baptized them, but being only a *Deacon*, ( as \* *Epiphanius* and † *Chrysostom* truly observe ) could not confer the Holy Ghost, this being a faculty bestowed only upon the Apostles. *Simon* the *Magician* observing this, that a power of working miracles was conveyed by the imposition of the

(a) Lib. 1. c. 20. p. 115.  
(b) Apol. II. p. 69. vid. Tert. de prescr. Heret. c. 46. p. 219.

(c) H. Eccl. lib. 2. c. 1. p. 39.

\* Epiph. Heres. XXI. p. 29.  
† Chrys. Homil. 18. in Act. p. 580.

the Apostles hands, hoped by obtaining it to recover his credit and reputation with the People; to which end he sought by such methods as were most apt to prevail upon himself, to corrupt the Apostles by a sum of Money, to confer this power upon him. *Peter* resented the motion with that sharpness and severity that became him, told the Wretch of the iniquity of his offer, and the evil state and condition he was in, advised him by repentance to make his Peace with Heaven, that if possible, he might prevent the miserable fate that otherwise did attend him. But what passed between *Peter* and this *Magician* both here, and in their memorable encounter at *Rome* (so much spoken of by the Ancients) we have related more at large in another place. \*

\* *Antiquit.*  
*App. Life of*  
*S. Pet. Sect. 8.*  
*2. 1. Sect. 9. 4.*  
*† Homil. 19. in*  
*Act. App. p. 585*

VI. W H E T H E R S. *Philip* returned with the Apostles to *Jerusalem*, or (as † *Chrysostom* thinks) staid at *Samaria*, and the parts thereabouts, we have no intimations left upon Record. But

Εἶδες ἀγγέλους σὺναντλαμβανομένους πρὸς κηρύγματι; καὶ αὐτοὺς μὲν ἐκ κηρύσσοντας, τὰς τῆς ἡμετέρας; καὶ τὸν ἑαυτοῦ καὶ ἐπὶ τοῦτον δέειν. *Chrysost. ibid. p. 586.*

where-ever he was, an Angel was sent to him with a message from God, to go and instruct a Stranger in the Faith. The Angel one would have thought had been most likely himself to have managed this business with success. But the wise God keeps Method and Order, and will not suffer an Angel to take that Work which he has put into the hands of his Ministers. The sum of his Commission was to go toward the *South*, unto the way that goes down from *Jerusalem* to *Gaza*, which is desert: A circumstance, which whether it relate to the way, or the City, is not easie to decide, it being probably true of both. *Gaza* was a City anciently famous for the strange efforts of *Samson's* strength, for his captivity, his death, and the burial of himself and his enemies in the same Ruin. It was afterwards sacked and laid wast by *Alexander* the Great, and as \* *Strabo* notes, remained wast and desert in his time; the Prophetical curse being truly accomplished in it, *Gaza shall be forsaken*; a Fate which the Prophet *Jeremy* had foretold to be as certain, as if he had seen it already done, *baldness is come upon Gaza*. So certainly do the Divine threatnings arrest and take hold of a proud and impenitent People; so easily do they set open the Gates for ruin to enter into the strongest and best fortified Cities, where Sin has once undermined, and stript them naked of the Divine protection.

\* *Geograph. l.*  
*16. p. 759.*  
*Zach. 2. 4.*  
*Jer. 47. 5.*

VII. N O sooner had S. *Philip* received his Orders, though he knew not as yet the intent of his journey, but he addressed himself to it; he arose and went: he did not reason with himself whether he might not be mistaken, and that be a false and deluding Vision that sent him upon such an unaccountable errand, and into a Desert and a Wilderness, where he was more likely to meet with Trees and Rocks, and wild Beasts, than Men to preach to: but went however, well knowing God never sends any upon a vain or a foolish errand. An excellent instance of obedience; as 'tis also recorded to *Abraham's* eternal honour and commendation, that when God sent his Warrant, he obeyed and went out, not knowing whither he went. As he was on his journey, he espied coming towards him a Man of *Æthiopia*, an Eunuch of great Authority under Candace Queen of the *Æthiopians*; who had the charge of all her treasure, and had come to *Jerusalem* to worship; though in what part of the World the Country here spoken of was situate (the Word being variously used in Scripture) has been some dispute. \* *Dorotheus* and † *Sophronius* of old, and some later Writers, place it in *Arabia* the Happy, not far from the *Persian Gulf*: but

\* *Dorothe. Sy-*  
*nosf. p. 148.*  
*† Sophr. ap.*  
*Hier. de Scrip.*  
*Ecc. in Crl-*  
*sent.*



(a) Hier. ad  
Paul. Tom. 3.  
p. 7.

Amos 9. 7.

it's most generally conceived to be meant of the *African Æthiopia*, lying under or near the torrid Zone, the People whereof are described by *Homer*, to be ἐξ ὧν ἀνδρῶν the remotest part of mankind; and accordingly (a) *S. Hierom* says of this *Eunuch*, that he came from *Æthiopia*, that is, *ab extremis mundi finibus*, from the farthest corners of the World. The Country is sometimes stiled *Cush*, probably from a mixture of the *Arabians*, who inhabiting on the other side of the *Red Sea*, might send over Colonies hither, who settling in these parts, communicated the names of *Cush* and *Sabæa* to them. The manners of the People were very rude and barbarous, and the People themselves, especially to the *Jews*, contemptible even to a Proverb; *Are ye not as the Children of the Æthiopians unto me, O Children of Israel, saith the Lord?* Nay the very meeting an *Æthiopian* was accounted an ill omen, and an unlucky Prognostication. But no Country is a Bar to Heaven, *the grace of God that brings salvation*, plucks up the enclosures, and appears to all; so that *in every Nation, he that feareth God and worketh Righteousness, is accepted with him.*

(b) Antiq. Jud.  
l. 2. c. 5. p. 58.

(c) Hist. Nat. l.  
6. c. 29. p. 105.

VIII. BUT we cannot reasonably suppose that it should be meant of *Æthiopia* at large, especially as parallel at this day with the *Abyssine* Empire, but rather of that part of the Country whose *Metropolis* was called *Meroe*, and *Saba* (as 'tis called both by (b) *Josephus*, and the *Abyssines* themselves at this day) situate in a large Island, encompassed by the *Nile*, and the Rivers of *Astapus*, and *Astobarra*, as *Josephus* informs us: for about these parts it was (as (c) *Pliny* tells us) that *Queens* had a long time governed under the title of *Candace*, a custom (as we find in *Strabo*) first commencing in the time of *Augustus*, when a *Queen* of that name having for her incomparable Vertues been dear to the People, her successors in honour of her took the title of *Candace*, in the same sense that *Ptolomy* was the common name of the Kings of *Egypt*, *Artaxerxes* of the Kings of *Persia*, and *Cesar* of the *Roman* Emperours. Indeed

Ἰσθὶον ὃ ἐπὶ Κασδίκῳ Αἰθιοπίας πατρὶς ἢ  
τῶ βασιλέως μητέρα καλεῖσιν, ἐπειδὴ πατρίδα  
Αἰθιοπίας ἐκ ἀναφύευσιν, ἀλλ' ὡς ὅτις ὑπὸς  
ἡλίου περιήλθαν, ἐκείνη ἢ ἢ μητέρα καλεῖται  
Κασδίκῳ. Oecumen. Comment. in  
Act. VIII. p. 82.

*Oecumenius* was of opinion that *Candace* was only the common name of the *Queen-mothers* of *Æthiopia*, that Nation not giving the name of *Fathers* to their Kings, as acknowledging the Sun only for their Common Father, and their Princes the Sons of that common Parent. But in this

(d) H. Eccl. 2.  
c. 1 p. 40.

I think he stands alone, and contradicts the general Vote and Suffrage of the Ancients, which affirms this Nation to have been subject to Women; sure I am (d) *Eusebius* expressly says, 'twas the custom of this Country to be governed by *Queens* even in his time. The name of the present *Queen* (they say) was *Lacasa*, Daughter of King *Baazena*, and that she outlived the death of our Saviour four Years.

IX. AMONG the great Officers of her Court she had one (if not more) *Eunuch*, probably to avoid suspicion, it being the fashion of those Eastern Countries (as it still is at this day) to imploy *Eunuchs* in places of great trust and honour, and especially of near access to, and attendance upon

Πατρις τῶν βασιλέων προῦπαιτος εἰσι οἱ  
εὐεργετοὶ, πιστοὶ εὐεργετῆ ἄνδρες, οἱ δὲ εὐεργετοὶ.  
Herod. lib. 2.

\* Author *Sinaces*, insigni familia ac perinde opibus, et proxime hunc *Abdus*, ademptæ virilitatis, non despectum id apud barbaros, utroq; potentiam habet. Tacit. Ann. l. 6. c. 31. p. 182.

\* Extat ap. Beza, Ann. Eccl. ad Ann. 1524. v. XXXII. p. 543.

*Queens*. For however among us the very name sounds vile and contemptible, yet in those Countries 'tis otherwise, among the *Barbarians* (says *Herodotus*) that is, the Eastern People, *Eunuchs* are persons of the greatest esteem and value. Our *Eunuchs* name (as we find it in the Confession made by \* *Zaga Zabo* Ambassador from the *Æthio-*  
*pian*

pian Emperor) was *Indich*; *Suvazne*, a potent Courtier, an Officer of State of prime Note and Quality, being no less than High-Treasurer to the Queen; nor do we find that *Philip* either at his Conversion or Baptism found fault with him for his place or greatness. Certainly Magistracy is no ways inconsistent with Christianity, the Church and the State may well agree, and *Moses* and *Aaron* go hand in hand. *Peter* Baptized *Cornelius*; and *S. Paul* *Sergius* the Proconsul of *Cyprus* into the Christian Faith, and yet neither of them found any more fault with them for their places of Authority and Power, than *Philip* did here with the Lord Treasurer of the *Ethiopian* Queen. For his Religion, he was, if not a *Profelyte of Justice* (as some think) Circumcised, and under an obligation to observe the Rites and Precepts of the Law of *Moses*, at least a *Profelyte of the Gate*, (in which respect it is that one of the Ancients calls him a *Jew*) \* entered already into the knowledge of the true God, and was now come to *Jerusalem* (probably at the solemnity of the *Pasover*, or the Feast of *Pentecost*) to give publick and solemn evidences of his Devotions. Though an *Ethiopian*, and many thousand miles distant from it, though a great Statesman, and necessarily swallowed up in a croud of business, yet he came to *Jerusalem* for to worship. No way so long, so rugged and difficult, no charge or interest so dear and great, as to hinder a good Man from minding the concerns of Religion. No slender and trifling pretences, no little and ordinary occasions should excuse our attendance upon places of public Worship; behold here a man that thought not much to take a journey of above four thousand miles, that he might appear before God in the solemn place of Divine adoration, the place which God hath chosen above all other parts of the World, to place his name there.

\* Pont. Diac. in  
vit. Cyp. p. 11.

X. HAVING performed his homage and worship at the Temple, he was now upon his return for his own Country; nor had he left his Religion at Church behind him, or thought it enough that he had been there; but improved himself while travelling by the way: even while he sat in his Chariot (as † *Chrysostom* observes) he read the Scriptures: a good Man is not willing to lose even common minutes, but to redeem what time is possible for holy uses; whether sitting or walking, or journeying, our thoughts should be at work, and our affections travelling towards Heaven. While the *Eunuch* was thus employed, a Messenger is sent to him from God: the best way to meet with Divine communications, is to be conversant in our duty. By a voice from Heaven or some immediate inspiration, *Philip* is commanded to go near the Chariot, and address himself to him. He did so, and found him reading a Section or Paragraph of the Prophet *Isaiah*, concerning the death and sufferings of the *Messiah*, his meek and innocent carriage under the bloody and barbarous violences of his enemies, who dealt with him with all cruelty and injustice. This the *Eunuch* not well understanding, nor knowing certainly whether the Prophet meant it of himself or another, desired *S. Philip* to explain it; who being courteously taken up into his Chariot, shewed him that all this was meant of, and had been accomplished in the Holy *Jesus*, taking occasion thence to discourse to him of his Nativity, his Actions and Miracles, his Sufferings and Resurrection from the dead, and his Ascension into Heaven, declaring to him the whole system of the Christian Faith. His discourse wanted not its de-

† Homil. 19. in  
Act. p. 585.  
Tantus amator  
Legis divinae  
scientie fuit, ut  
etiam in vehi-  
culo sacras li-  
teras legeret.  
Hier. Epist. ad  
Paulin. T. 3.  
p. 7.

fired

fired effect; the *Eunuch* was fully satisfied in the *Messias*hip and Divine Authority of our Saviour, and wanted nothing but the solemn Rite of Initiation to make him a Christian Profelyte. Being come to a place where there was conveniency of Water, he desired that he might be Baptized, and having professed his Faith in the Son of God, and his hearty embracing the Christian Religion, *they both went down into the Water*, where *Philip* Baptized him, and washed this *Ethiopian* white.

(a) Annot. in  
Act. 8. 36.

(b) Descript.  
Terr. Sanct.  
p. m. 330.

(c) Euseb. de  
loc. Hebr. in  
voc. Bed. 66.

(d) Hieron. de  
loc. Hebr. in  
voc. Besur.

(e) Ad. Martyr.  
VIII. Idus Jun.

(f) Cotovic.  
Itin. l. 2. c. 9.  
p. 247.

XI. THE place where this *Eunuch* was Baptized, (a) *Beza* by a very wide mistake makes to be the River *Eleutherus*, which ran near the Foot of Mount *Lebanon* in the most Northern Borders of *Palestine*, quite at the other end of the Country: (b) *Brocard* places it near *Nebel Escol*, or the *Torrent of the Grape*, the place whence the Spies fetched the Bunch of Grapes; on the left side of which Valley about half a League runs a Brook not far from *Sicelech*, in which this *Eunuch* was Baptized. But (c) *Eusebius* and (d) *S. Hierom* (followed herein by (e) *Ado* the *Martyrologist*) more probably place it near *Bethsoron*, (where we are told (f) it is still to be seen at this day) a Village twenty miles distant from *Jerusalem* in the way between it and *Hebron*, near to which there was a spring bubbling up at the foot of a Hill. *S. Hierom* adds, that it was again swallowed up in the same ground that produced it, and that here it was that *S. Philip* Baptized the *Ethiopian*. Which was no sooner done, but Heaven set an extraordinary seal to his Conversion and Admission into the Christian Faith, especially if it be true what some very ancient *Manuscripts* add

V. 39. Πνεῦμα ἁγίον ἐπέπεσεν αὐτὸν καὶ ἐξου-  
χέρη, ἄγγελος δὲ κυρίου ἔστη παρὰ αὐτόν. Cod. Alexand. in Bibl. Reg. Angl.  
aliquae plures Codd. MSS.

to the passage, that being Baptized, the *Holy Ghost* fell upon him, furnishing him with miraculous gifts and powers, and that *S. Philip* was immediately snatched away from him.

XII. THOUGH the *Eunuch* had lost his Tutor, yet he rejoiced that he had found so great a treasure, the knowledge of Christ, and of the true way to Heaven, and he went on his journey with infinite Peace and Tranquillity of mind, satisfied with the happiness that had befallen him. Being returned into his Country, he preached and propagated the Christian Faith, and spread abroad the glad tidings of a Saviour: in which respect (g) *S. Hierom* styles him the *Apostle of the Ethiopians*, and (h) the Ancients generally make that prediction of *David* fulfilled in him, *Ethiopia shall stretch out her hands unto God*; and hence the *Ethiopians* are wont to glory (as appears by the (i) Confession made by the *Abyssin* Embassador) that by means of this *Eunuch* they received Baptism almost the first of any Christians in the World. Indeed they have a constant tradition that for many Ages they had the knowledge of the true God of *Israel*, from the time of the Queen of *Sheba* (and *Seba* being the name of this Country, as we noted before, makes it probable she might govern here) her name (they tell us) was *Maqueda*, who having learnt from *Solomon* the knowledge of the *Jewish* Law, and received the Books of their Religion, taught them her Subjects, and sent her Son *Meilech* to *Solomon* to be instructed and educated by him; the Story whereof may be read in that Confession more at large. I add no more concerning the *Eunuch* than what (k) *Dorotheus* and others relate, that he is reported to have suffered Martyrdom, and to have been honourably buried, and that diseases were cured, and other miracles done at his Tomb even in his time. The (l) Traditions of the Country more particularly tell us, that the *Eunuch* being returned home, first converted his Mistress *Candace* to the Christian

(g) Com. in Esai.  
53. T. 5. p. 195.

(h) Euseb. H.  
Eccl. l. 2. c. p.  
40. Cyril.

Catech. XVII.  
p. 457. Psal.  
68. 31.

(i) Apud Bezov.  
ubi supr. vid.

Godign. de re-  
bus Abyssin. l. 1.  
c. 18 p. 113.

(k) Synops. ubi  
supr. vid. etiam  
Sophr. ap. Hier.  
in Cresc.

(l) Ap. Godign.  
loc. cit. p. 117.



Christian Faith, and afterwards by her leave propagated it throughout *Aethiopia*, till meeting with S. *Matthæw* the Apostle, by their joint-endavours they expelled Idolatry out of all those parts. Which done, he crossed the Red Sea, and preached the Christian Religion in *Arabia*, *Persia*, *India*, and many other of those Eastern Nations, till at length in the Island *Taprobana*, since called *Ceylon*, he sealed his Doctrine with his Blood.

XIII. GOD, who always affords what is sufficient, is not wont to multiply means farther than is necessary. *Philip* having done the errand upon which he was sent, was immediately caught and carried away, no doubt by the ministry of an Angel, and landed at *Azotus*, anciently *Asdod*, a *Philistin* City in the borders of the Tribe of *Dan*, famous of old for the Temple and residence in it of the Idol *Dagon*, and the captivity of the *Ark* kept for some time in this place, and now enlightned with S. *Philip*'s preaching, who went up and down publishing the Gospel in all the parts hereabouts till he arrived at *Cæsarea*. This City was heretofore called *Turris Strationis*, and afterwards rebuilt and enlarged by *Herod the Great*, and in honour of *Augustus Cæsar*, to whom he was greatly obliged, by him called *Cæsarea*; for whose sake also he erected in it a stately Palace of Marble, called *Herod's Judgment-Hall*, wherein his Nephew ambitious of greater honours and acclamations than became him, had that fatal execution served upon him. It was a place remarkable for many devout and pious Men; here dwelt *Cornelius*, who together with his Family, being baptized by *Peter*, was in that respect the first-fruits of the Gentile World: hither came *Agabus* the Prophet, who foretold S. *Paul* his imprisonment and Martyrdom: here S. *Paul* himself was kept prisoner, and made those brave and generous Apologies for himself, first before *Felix*, as afterwards before *Festus* and *Agrippa*. Here also our S. *Philip* had his House and Family, to which probably he now retired, and where he spent the remainder of his life: for here many Years after we find S. *Paul* and his company, coming from *Ptolemais* in their journey to *Jerusalem*, entering into the house of *Philip the Evangelist*, which was one of the seven, and abiding with them; and the same man had four Daughters, Virgins, which did Prophecy. These Virgin-Prophetesses were endowed with the gift of foretelling future events; for though Prophecy in those times implied also a faculty of explaining the more abstruse and difficult parts of the Christian Doctrine, and a peculiar ability to demonstrate Christ's *Messiaship* from the predictions of *Moses* and the Prophets, and to express themselves on a sudden upon any difficult and emergent occasion, yet can we not suppose these Virgins to have had this part of the prophetic faculty, or at least that they did not publicly exercise it in the Congregation. This therefore unquestionably respected things to come, and was an instance of God's accomplishing an Ancient promise, that in the times of the *Messia*, he would pour out of his Spirit upon all flesh, on their Sons, and Daughters, servants and handmaidens, and they should prophesie. The names of two of these Daughters the Greek *Menaon* tells us were *Hermione* and *Eutychie*, who came into *Asia* after S. *John*'s death, and the first of them died, and was buried at *Ephesus*. A&C. 21. 8, 9.

XIV. HOW long S. *Philip* lived after his return to *Cæsarea*, and whether he made any more excursions for the propagation of the Faith, is not certainly known. \* *Dorotheus*, I know not upon what ground, will have A&C. 2. 17, 18.  
\* Synops. de  
Vit. App. loc.  
citat.

(b) Polycrat.  
ap. Euseb. l. 3. c.  
31. p. 102.  
Procul. lib. p.  
103.  
(c) Mart. Rom.  
ad VI. Jun. p.  
349. Martyr.  
Adon. VIII. Id.  
Jun.  
(d) Hier. Epi-  
taph. Paul. ad  
Euseb. T. 1.  
p. 172.

have him to have been *Bishop* of *Trazellis*, a City in *Asia*: (b) others confounding him with *S. Philip* the Apostle, make him resident at *Hierapolis* in *Phrygia*: where he suffered Martyrdom, and was buried (say they) together with his Daughters. Most probable it is that he died a peaceable Death at *Casarea*, where his Daughters were also buried, as some Ancient (c) *Martyrologies* inform us; where his House and the apartments of his Virgin-Daughters were yet to be seen in (d) *St. Hierom's* time, visited and admired by the Noble and Religious *Roman* Lady *Paula* in her journey to the Holy Land.

### *The End of S. PHILIP's Life.*

THE

THE LIFE OF  
**S. BARNABAS**  
 THE  
**APOSTLE.**



MR. BURGHERS. DEL.

ET SCULPSIT.

**S. BARNABAS APOSTOLUS.**


*His Surname Josès. The title of Barnabas whence added to him. His Country and Parents. His Education and Conversion to Christianity. His generous Charity. S. Paul's address to him after his Conversion. His*

F

com-



*Commission to confirm the Church of Antioch. His taking S. Paul into his assistance. Their being sent with contributions to the Church at Jerusalem. Their peculiar separation for the Ministry of the Gentiles. Imposition of hands the usual Rite of Ordination. Their travels through several Countries. Their success in Cyprus. Barnabas at Lystra taken for Jupiter, and why. Their return to Antioch. Their Embassy to Jerusalem about the controversy concerning the legal Rites. Barnabas seduced by Peter's dissimulation at Antioch. The dissension between him and S. Paul. Barnabas his journey to Cyprus. His voyage to Rome, and preaching the Christian Faith there. His Martyrdom by the Jews in Cyprus. His Burial. His body when first discovered. S. Matthew's Hebrew Gospel found with it. The great privileges hereupon conferred upon the See of Salamis. A description of his person and temper. The Epistle anciently published under his name. The design of it. The practical part of it excellently managed under the two ways of Light and Darkness.*

I.  HE proper, and ( if I may so term it ) original name of this *Apostle* ( for with that title *S. Luke*, and after him the Ancients constantly honour him ) was *Joses*, by a softer termination familiar with the *Greeks* for *Joseph*, and so the King's, and several other Manuscript Copies read it. It was the name given him at his Circumcision, in honour no doubt of *Joseph*, one of the great Patriarchs of their Nation, to which after his embracing Christianity, the Apostles added that of *Barnabas*; *Joses*, who by the Apostles was surnamed *Barnabas*, either implying him a *Son of Prophecy*, eminent for his prophetic gifts and endowments, or denoting him ( what was a peculiar part of the Prophets Office ) a *Son of Consolation*, for his admirable dexterity in erecting troubled minds, and leading

Καὶ δοκεῖ μοι δοτὶ ἡ ἀρετὴς εἰλημένην τὸ  
ἔθνος, ὡς καὶ τὸ ἱερὸν ἔργον, καὶ ἡ ἐκκλησία.  
Chrysost. Homil. XI. in Act. App. p.  
529.

Vid. Notker.  
Martyr. ad III.  
Id. Jun. ap. Ca-  
nis. Antiq.  
Lect. Tom 6.

them on by the most mild and gentle methods of persuasion: though I rather conceive him so stiled for his generous charity in *refreshing the bowels of the Saints*; especially since the name seems to have been imposed upon him upon that occasion. He was born in *Cyprus*, a noted Island in the *Mediterranean Sea*, lying between *Cilicia*, *Syria*, and *Egypt*; a large and fertile Country, the Theatre anciently of no less than nine several Kingdoms, so fruitful and richly furnished with all things that can minister either to the necessity, or pleasure of mans life, that it was of old called *Macaria*, or *The Happy*; and the Historian reports, that *Portius Cato* having conquered this Island, brought hence, greater treasures into the Exchequer at *Rome*, than had been done in any other triumph. But in nothing was it more happy, or upon any account more memorable in the Records of the Church, than that it was the Birth-place of our Apostle, whose Ancestors in the troublesome times of *Antiochus Epiphanes*, or in the Conquest of *Judea* by *Pompey* and the Roman Army, had fled over hither ( as a place best secured from Violence and Invasion ) and settled here.

L. Flor. lib. 3.  
c. 9. p. 67.

II. HE was descended of the *Tribe of Levi*, and the line of the Priesthood, which rendred his Conversion to Christianity the more remarkable, all interests concurring to leaven him with mighty prejudices against the

the Christian Faith. But the grace of God delights many times to exert it self against the strongest opposition, and loves to conquer, where there is least probability to overcome. His Parents were rich and pious, and finding him a beautiful and hopeful youth ( says my \* Author, deriving his intelligence concerning him, as he tells us, from *Clemens of Alexandria*, and other ancient Writers ) they sent, or brought him to *Jerusalem*, to be trained up in the knowledge of the Law, and to that end committed him to the tutorage of *Gamaliel*, the great Doctor of the Law, and most famous Master at that time in *Israel*, at whose Foot he was brought up together with *S. Paul*; which if so, might lay an early foundation of that intimate familiarity that was afterwards between them. Here he improved in learning and piety, frequenting the Temple, and devoutly exercising himself in Fasting and Prayer. We are further told, that being a frequent Spectator of our Saviours miracles, and among the rest, of his curing the Paralytic at the Pool of *Bethesda*, he was soon convinced of his Divinity, and persuaded to deliver up himself to his discipline and institutions: and as the Nature of true goodness is ever communicative, he presently went and acquainted his Sister *Mary* with the notice of the *Messia*, who hastned to come to him, and importuned him to come home to her House, where our Lord afterwards ( as the Church continued to do after his decease ) was wont to assemble with his Disciples, and that her Son *Mark* was that young man, who bore the Pitcher of Water, whom our Lord commanded the two Disciples to follow home, and there prepare for the celebration of the Passover.

\* *Alexand. Monach. Excom. S. Barnab. inter. vitas S. Metaph. extat. ap. Sur. ad. Jus XI. p. 170. vid. ib. n. 4. 5. 6.*

*Ibid. n. 7.*

Mark 14. 13.

III. BUT however that was, he doubtless continued with our Lord to the last, and after his Ascension stood fair to be chosen one of the twelve, if it be true ( what is generally taken for granted, though I think without any reason, † *Chrysostom* I am sure enters his dissent ) that he is the same with *Joseph* called *Barsabas*, who was put candidate with *Matthias* for the Apostolate in the room of *Judas*. However that he was one of the LXX. \* *Clemens Alexandrinus* expressly affirms, as others do after him. And when the necessities of the Church daily increasing, required more than ordinary supplies, he according to the free and noble Spirit of those Times, having Lands of good value, sold them and laid the Money at the Apostles feet. If it be enquired how a Levite came by Lands and Possessions, when the *Mosaic* Law allowed them no particular portions, but what were made by public provision, it needs no other answer than to suppose that this Estate was his Patrimonial Inheritance in *Cyprus*, where the Jewish Constitutions did not take place: and surely an Estate it was of very considerable value, and the parting with it a greater charity than ordinary, otherwise the sacred Historian would not have made such a particular remark concerning it.

† *Loc. supr. cit.*

\* *Strom. l. 2. p. 410. Euseb. H. Eccles. l. 2. c. 1. p. 38. ex Clem. Hypot. l. 7 Chro. Alex. pag. 530.*

IV. THE Church being dispersed up and down after *S. Stephen's* Martyrdom, we have no certain account what became of him, in all probability he staid with the Apostles at *Jerusalem*, where we find him not long after *S. Paul's* Conversion. For that fierce and active Zealot being miraculously taken off in the height of his rage and fury, and putting on now the innocent and inoffensive temper of a Lamb, came after some little time to *Jerusalem*, and addressed himself to the Church. But they not satisfied in the reality of his change, and fearing it might be nothing but a subtle artifice to betray them, universally shunned his company; and what wonder if the harmless Sheep fled at the sight of the Wolf that

had made such havock of the Flock: till *Barnabas* presuming probably upon his former acquaintance, entered into a more familiar converse with him, introduced him to the Apostles, and declared to them the manner of his Conversion, and what signal evidences he had given of it at *Damascus* in his bold and resolute Disputations with the *Jews*.

Act. 11. 20.

V. *THERE is that scattereth, and yet increaseth*: the dispersion of the Church by *Saul's* Persecution proved the means of a more plentiful harvest, the Christian Religion being hereby on all hands conveyed both to *Jews* and *Gentiles*. Among the rest some *Cyprian* and *Cyrenean* Converts went to *Antioch*, where they preached the Gospel with mighty success; great numbers both of *Jews* and Proselytes (wherewith that City did abound) heartily embracing the Christian Faith. The news whereof coming to the Apostles at *Jerusalem*, they sent down *Barnabas* to take an account of it, and to settle this new Plantation. Being come he rejoiced to see that Christianity had made so fair a progress in that great City, earnestly pressing them cordially and constantly to persevere in that excellent Religion which they had entertained; himself like a pious and a good Man undergoing any labours and difficulties; which God was pleased to crown with answerable success, the addition of multitudes of new Converts to the Faith. But the work was too great to be managed by a single hand: to furnish himself therefore with suitable assistance, he went to *Tarsus*, to enquire for *S. Paul* lately come thither. Him he brings back with him to *Antioch*, where both of them continued industriously ministering to the increase and establishment of the Church for a whole year together; and then and there it was that the Disciples of the Holy *Jesus* had the honourable name of *Christians* first solemnly fixed upon them.

Ritual. Græcor.  
in promot. Oe-  
conom. p. 281.

Act. 12. 25.

VI. IT hapned about this time, or not long after, that a severe Famine (foretold by *Agabus* a *Christian Prophet* that came down to *Antioch*) pressed upon the Provinces of the *Roman Empire*, and especially *Judea*, whereby the Christians, whose estates were exhausted by their continual contributions for the maintenance of the Poor, were reduced to great extremities. The Church of *Antioch* compassionating their miserable case, agreed upon a liberal and charitable supply for their relief, which they intrusted with *Barnabas* and *Paul*, whom they sent along with it to the Governours of the Churches, that they might dispose it as necessity did require. This charitable Embassie the *Greek Rituals* no doubt respect, when in the Office at the Promotion of the *Magnus Oeconomus*, or High Steward of the Church (whose place it was to manage and dispose the Churches Revenues) they make particular mention of the Holy and most famous *Barnabas the Apostle, and generous Martyr*. Having discharged their trust, they returned back from *Jerusalem* to *Antioch*, bringing along with them *John surnamed Mark*, the Son of *Mary*, Sister to *Barnabas*, whose house was the sanctuary, where the Church found both shelter for their persons, and conveniency for the solemnities of their Worship.

VII. THE Church of *Antioch* being now sufficiently provided of spiritual Guides, our two Apostles might be the better spared for the conversion of the Gentile World. As they were therefore engaged in the duties of Fasting and Prayer, and other public exercises of their Religion, the Spirit of God by some prophetic *Afflatus* or revelation made to some of the Prophets there present, commanded that *Barnabas* and

*Saul*



Saul should be set apart to that peculiar Ministry, to which God had designed them. Accordingly having fasted and prayed, hands were solemnly laid upon them, to denote their particular designation to that service. Imposition of hands had been a ceremony of ancient date: Even among the *Gentiles* they were wont to design persons to public Functions and Offices by lifting up, or stretching out the hand, whereby they gave their Votes and Suffrages for those employments. But herein though they did χειροτονῶν, stretch forth, they did not lay on their hands; which was the proper Ceremony in use, and of far greater standing in the Jewish Church. When Moses made choice of the seventy Elders to be his Co-adjutors in the Government, it was (say the Jews) by laying his hands upon them: and when he constituted Joshua to be his Successor, he laid his hands on him, and gave him the charge before all the Congregation. This custom they constantly kept in appointing both Civil and Ecclesiastical Officers, and that not only while their Temple and Polity stood, but long after the fall of their Church and State. For so \* Benjamin the Jew tells us, that in his time all the Israelites of the East, when they wanted a Rabbi or Teacher in their Synagogues, were wont to bring him to the ראש הגולה as they call him the Αιχμυλωτοδρχης, or, Head of the Captivity, residing at Babylon, (at that time R. Daniel the Son of Hafdai) that he might receive הסמכה ורשור power by imposition of hands to become Preacher to them. From the Jews it was together with some other Rites transferred into the Christian Church, in ordaining Guides and Ministers of Religion, and has been so used through all Ages and Periods to this day. Though the χειροθεσία and the χειροτονια are not of equal extent in the writings and practice of the Church; the one implying the bare Rite of laying on of hands, while the other denotes Ordination it self, and the intire solemnity of the action. Whence the † Apostolical Constitutor speaking of the Presbyters interest in this affair, says χειροθεσιᾶ & χειροτονῶν, he lays on his hands, but he does not ordain; meaning it of the Custom then, and ever since, of Presbyters laying on their hands together with the Bishop in that solemn action.

\* Itinerar. p. 73.

† Lib. 8. c. 28. col. 494.

VIII. BARNABAS and Paul having thus received a divine Commission for the Apostleship of the *Gentiles*, and taking Mark along with them as their Minister and attendant, immediately entered upon the Province. And first they betook themselves to Seleucia, a neighbour City seated upon the influx of the River Orontes into the Mediterranean Sea: hence they set sail for Cyprus, Barnabas's Native Country, and arrived at Salamis, a City heretofore of great account, the ruins whereof are two miles distant from the present Famagusta, where they undauntedly preached in the Jewish Synagogues. From Salamis they travelled up the Island to Paphos, a City remarkable of old for the Worship of Venus, Diva potens Cypri, the tutelar Goddess of the Island, who was here worshipped with the most wanton and immodest Rites, and had a famous Temple dedicated to her for that purpose, concerning which the Inhabitants have a \* Tradition that at S. Barnabas his Prayers it fell flat to the ground; and the ruins of an ancient Church are still shewed to Travellers, and under it an Arch, where Paul and Barnabas were shut up in Prison. At this place was the Court or Residence of the Prator, or President of the Island (not properly Ανδραπαύτης, the Proconsul, for Cyprus was not a Proconsular but a Pratorian Province) who being altogether guided by the counsels and forceries of Bar-Jesur, an eminent Magician, stood off from

\* Ceteric. itin. l. i. c. 16. p. 100.

from the Proposals of Christianity, till the *Magician* being struck by S. Paul with immediate blindness for his malicious opposition of the Gospel, this quickly determined the Governours belief, and brought him over a Convert to that Religion, which as it made the best offers, so he could not but see had the strongest evidences to attend it.

Act. 13. 13.

IX. LEAVING *Cyprus*, they sailed over to *Perga* in *Pamphylia*, famous for a Temple of *Diana*; here *Mark*, weary it seems of this itinerant course of life, and the unavoidable dangers that attended it, took his leave and returned to *Jerusalem*, which laid the foundation of an unhappy difference, that broke out between these two Apostles afterwards. The next place they came to was *Antioch* in *Pisidia*, where in the Jewish Synagogue S. Paul by an elegant Oration converted great numbers both of *Jews* and *Profelytes*, but a persecution being raised by others, they were forced to desert the place. Thence they passed to *Iconium*, a noted City of *Lycaonia*, where in the Synagogues they preached a long time with good success, till a conspiracy being made against them, they withdrew to *Lystra*, the inhabitants whereof upon a miraculous cure done by S. Paul, treated them as gods come down from Heaven in human shape, S. Paul as being principal Speaker, they termed *Mercury*, the interpreter of the gods; *Barnabas* they looked upon as *Jupiter*, their sovereign deity, either because of his Age, (as (a) *Chrysostom* thinks) because he was ἀπὸ τῶν Ἰουδαίων ἀξιωματικός, for the gravity and comeliness of his person, being (as antiquity represents him) a very goodly Man, and of a venerable aspect, wherein he had infinitely the advantage of S. Paul, who was of a very mean and contemptible presence. But the malice of the *Jews* pursued them hither, and prevailed with the People to stone S. Paul, who presently recovering, he and *Barnabas* went to *Derbe*, where when they had converted many to the Faith, they returned back to *Lystra*, *Iconium*, and *Antioch*, and so through *Pisidia*, to *Pamphylia*, thence from *Perga* to *Attalia*, confirming as they came back the Churches which they had planted at their first going out. At *Attalia* they took Ship, and sailed to *Antioch* in *Syria*, the place whence they had first set out, where they gave the Church an account of the whole success of their travels, and what way was made for the propagation of Christianity in the *Gentile* World.

(a) Homil.  
XXX. in Act.  
App. p. 361.

Act. 15. 1.

X. THE restless enemy of all goodness was vexed to see so fair and smooth a progress of the Gospel, and therefore resolved to attempt it by the old subtle arts of intestine divisions and animosities: what the envious Man could not stifle by open violence, he sought to choke by sowing tares. Some zealous Converts coming down from *Jerusalem* to *Antioch*, started this notion, which they asserted with all possible zeal and stiffness, that unless together with the Christian Religion they joined the observance of the *Mosaic* Rites, there could be no hopes of salvation for them. Paul and *Barnabas* opposed themselves against this heterodox opinion with all vigour and smartness, but not able to beat it down, were dispatched by the Church to advise with the Apostles and Brethren at *Jerusalem* about this Matter. Whither they were no sooner come, but they were kindly and courteously entertained, and the right hand of fellowship given them by the three great Apostles, *Peter*, *James*, and *John*, and an agreement made between them, that where-ever they came, they should betake themselves to the *Jews*, while Paul and *Barnabas* applied themselves unto the *Gentiles*. And here probably it was that

that *Mark* reconciled himself to his Uncle *Barnabas*, which \* one tells us, he did with tears and great importunity, earnestly begging him to forgive his weakness and cowardice, and promising for the future a firmer constancy and more undaunted resolution. But they were especially careful to mind the great affair they were sent about, and accordingly opened the case in a public Council convened for that purpose. And *Peter* having first given his sentence, that the *Gentile* Converts were under no such obligation, *Paul* and *Barnabas* acquainted the Synod what great things God by their Ministry had wrought for the conversion of the *Gentiles*, a plain evidence that they were accepted by God without the *Mosaic* Rites and Ceremonies. The matter being decided by the Council, the determination was drawn up into the form of a Synodical Epistle, which was delivered to *Barnabas* and *Paul*, to whom the Council gave this *elogium* and character, that they were *Men that had hazarded their lives for the name of the Lord Jesus Christ*, with whom they joyned two of their own, that they might carry it to the Churches. Being come to *Antioch* they delivered the Decrees of the Council, wherewith the Church was abundantly satisfied, and the controversie for the present laid asleep.

\* *Alexand. Monach. ubi supr.*  
n. XV.

XI. IT was not long after this, that S. *Peter* came down to *Antioch*, who loth to exasperate the zealous *Jews*, withdrew all converse with the *Gentile* Converts, contrary to his former practice, and his late vote and suffrage in the Synod at *Jerusalem*. The minds of the *Gentiles* were greatly disturbed at this, and the Convert *Jews* tempted by his example, abstain from all communion with the *Gentiles*; nay, so strong was the temptation, that S. *Barnabas* himself was carried down the stream, and began now to scruple, whether it was lawful to hold communion with the *Gentiles*, with whom before he had so familiarly conversed, and been so eminently instrumental in their conversion to Christianity. So prevalent an influence has the example of a great or a good Man to determine others to what is good or bad. How careful should we be what course we take, lest we seduce and compel others to walk in our crooked paths, and load our selves with the guilt of those that follow after us? S. *Paul* shortly after propounded to *Barnabas* that they might again visit the Churches wherein they had lately planted the Christian Faith: he liked the motion, but desired his Cousin *Mark* might again go along with them, which S. *Paul* would by no means consent to, having found by his cowardly deserting them at *Pamphylia*, how unfit he was for such a troublesome and dangerous service. This begat a sharp contest, and ripened into almost an irreconcilable difference between these two holy Men. Which as at once it shews, that the best are Men of like passions and infirmities with others, subject to be transported with partiality, and carried off with the heats of an irregular passion, so it lets us see how great a matter a little fire kindles, and how inconsiderable an occasion may minister to strife and division, and hazard the breach of the firmest charity and friendship. The issue was that the τὸ ζεύγος τὸ ἱερόν (as † *Theodoret* styles these two Apostles) this sacred pair, that had hitherto equally and unanimously drawn the Yoke of the Gospel, now drew several ways, and in some discontent parted from each other; S. *Paul* taking *Silas* went to the Churches of *Syria* and *Cilicia*, while *Barnabas* accompanied with his Cousin *Mark* set sail for *Cyprus*, his own Country.

Gal. 2. 11.

† *Comment. in*  
*Esa. 11. p. 55.*  
*Tom. 2.*

XII. THUS far the sacred Historian has for the main gone before us,



(a) *Dorothei Synops. Bibl. PP. Tom. 3. p. 148. Col. 2.*

(b) *Recogn. lib. 1. c. 7. p. 400. edit. Paris. 1672. Clementin. Homil. 1. c. 7. p. 549. ib. Epit. de Gest. B. Petr. c. 7. lib. p. 752.*

(c) *Baron. ad Ann. 51. n. 52. 54. not. ad Martyr. Rom. p. 359.*

(d) *Clem. ib. c. 8. 9. 10. (e) Epitom. c. 8. & seq.*

(f) *Clem. & Epit. ibid. Alex. and. Monach. loc. cit. n. 13, 14.*

(g) *Baron. ad An. 51. n. 54. Sancti. de pred. S. Jac. Tr. 3. c. 1. n. 9.*

(h) *Synops. in Bibl. PP. p. 148. T. 3.*

(i) *Alexand. lib. n. XVIII. & seq.*

(k) *Ad An. 485. n. 4. p. 428.*

us, who here breaks off his accounts concerning him. What became of him afterwards we are left under great uncertainty. (a) *Dorotheus* and the (b) *Author* of the *Recognitions*, and some other Writings attributed to *S. Clements*, make him to have been at *Rome*, and one of the first that preached the Christian Faith in that City; for which (c) *Baronius* falls foul upon them, not being willing that any should be thought to have been there before *S. Peter*, though after him (and 'tis but good manners to let him go first) he is not unwilling to grant his being there. Leaving therefore the difference in point of time, let us see what we find there concerning him. At his first arrival there about Autumn he is said thus publicly to have addressed himself to the People, "Ἀνδρες Ῥωμαῖοι ἀκούετε. "O ye Romans give ear. The Son of God has appeared in "the Country of *Judea*, promising eternal life to all that are willing "to embrace it, and to lead their lives according to the will of the Father that sent him. Wherefore change your course of life, and turn "from a worse to a better state, from things temporal to those that are "eternal. Acknowledge that there is one only God, who is in Heaven, and whose World you unjustly possess before his righteous face. "But if you reform, and live according to his Laws, you shall be translated into another World, where you shall become immortal, and "enjoy the ineffable glories and happiness of that state. Whereas if "you persist in your infidelity, your Souls after the dissolution of these "Bodies, shall be cast into a place of flames, where they shall be eternally tormented under the anguish of an unprofitable and too late "Repentance. For the present life is to every one the only space "and season of repentance. This was spoken with great plainness and simplicity, and without any artificial Schemes of Speech, and accordingly took with the attentive populace: while the Philosophers and more inquisitive heads entertained the discourse with scorn and laughter, (this indeed the (d) *Author* of the τὰ Κληροῦσινα, and the (e) *Epitome Πραξεων*, somewhat differently from the *Recognitions*, refers to his being at *Alexandria*) setting upon him with captious questions and syllogisms, and sophistical Arts of Reasoning. But he taking no notice of their impertinent questions, went on in his plain discourse, concluding that he had nakedly laid these things before them, and that it lay at their door whether they would reject or entertain them; that for his part he could not without prejudice to himself not declare them, nor they without infinite danger disbelieve them.

XIII. DEPARTING from *Rome*, he is by different Writers made to steer different courses. The (f) *Greeks* tell us he went for *Alexandria*, and thence for *Judea*: The (g) *Writers* of the *Roman Church* (with whom agrees (h) *Dorotheus* in this matter) that he preached the Gospel in *Liguria*, and founded a Church at *Milain*, whereof he became the first Bishop, propagating Christianity in all those parts. But however that was, probable it is that in the last Periods of his life he returned unto *Cyprus*, where my (i) *Author* tells us, he converted many, till some Jews from *Syria* coming to *Salamis*, where he then was, enraged with tury set upon him as he was disputing in the Synagogue, in a corner whereof they shut him up till night, when they brought him forth, and after infinite tortures, stoned him to death. He adds (and the Faith of it must rest upon the credit of the Relater, who, (k) *Baronius* tells us, lived at the same time when his Corps was first found out) that they threw

threw his body into the fire with an intent to consume it, but that the flames had not the least power upon it, and that *Mark* his Kinsman privately buried it in a Cave not far distant from the City, his Friends resenting the loss with solemn lamentation. I omit the miracles reported to have been done at his Tomb: the remains of his Body were discovered in the reign of (a) *Zeno* the Emperor ((b) *Nicephorus* by a mistake makes it the XII. year of *Anastasius*) Ann. CCCCLXXXV. dug up under a *Bean* or *Carob* Tree, and upon his Breast was found *S. Matthew's* Gospel written with *Barnabas* his own hand; which *Athemius* the Bishop took along with him to *Constantinople*, where it was received by the Emperor with a mighty reverence, and laid up with great care and diligence. The Emperor as a testimony of his joy, honouring the Episcopal See of *Salamis* with this Prerogative, that it should be *sedes autonoma*, independent upon any Foreign Jurisdiction, a Privilege ratified by *Justinian* the Emperor, whose Wife *Theodora* was a *Cypriot*: The Emperor also greatly enriched the Bishop at his return, commanding him to build a Church to *St. Barnabas* over the place of his Interment, which was accordingly erected with more than ordinary stateliness and magnificence. 'Tis added in the (c) Story, that these remains were discovered by the notice of *S. Barnabas* himself, who three several times appeared to *Athemius*; which I behold as a meer addition to the Story, designed only to serve a present turn. For *Peter* surnamed the *Fuller*, then Patriarch of *Antioch*, challenged at this time a jurisdiction over the *Cyprian* Churches as subject to his See; this *Athemius* would not agree to, but stiffly asserted his own Rites, and how easie was it to take this occasion of finding *S. Barnabas* his Body, to add that of the appearances to him, to gain credit to the Cause, and advance it with the Emperor? And accordingly it had its designed effect; and whoever reads the whole Story, and the circumstances of the apparitions, as related by my Author, will see that they seem plainly calculated for such a purpose.

XIV. FOR his outward form and shape, he is thus represented by the (d) Ancients, he was a man of a comely countenance, a grave and venerable aspect, his eye-brows short, his eye chearful and pleasant, darting something of Majesty, but nothing of fowness and austerity, his speech sweet and obliging; his garb was mean, and such as became a man of a mortified life, his gait composed and unaffected, grave and decent. This elegant structure was but the lodging of a more noble Tenant, a Soul richly furnished with divine graces and vertues, a profound humility, diffusive charity, firm Faith, an immoveable constancy, and an unconquerable patience, a mighty zeal, and an unwearied diligence in the propagating of Christianity, and for the good of Souls. So entirely did he devote himself to an ambulatory course of life, so continually was he employed in running up and down from place to place, that he could find little or no time to leave any Writings behind him for the benefit of the Church; at least none that have certainly arrived to us. Indeed anciently there were some, and (e) *Tertullian* particularly, who supposed him to be the Author of the Epistle to the *Hebrews*, an opinion generally rejected and thrown out of doors: there is also an Epistle still extant under his name of great Antiquity, frequently cited by *Clemens Alexandrinus*, and his Scholar *Origen* (to pass by others) the latter of whom styles it the (f) *Catholic Epistle of Barnabas*, but placed by (g) *Eusebius* among the *τὰ νοθὰ*, the

(a) *Theod. Lect. H. Eccl. l. 2. p. 557. Alex. Mon. loc. cit. n. XXXI.*  
(b) *Niceph. H. Eccl. l. 16. c. 37. p. 716. Tom. 2.*

(c) *Alex. ut sup. n. XXIX, XXX.*

(d) *Id. ibid. n. XVIII.*

(e) *Depudicit. c. 20. p. 432. vid. Philastr. de Heres. c. 60.*  
(f) *Contr. Cels. lib. 1. p. 49.*  
(g) *H. Eccl. l. 3. c. 25. p. 701.*

the Writings that were not genuine. The frame and contexture of it is intricate and obscure, made up of uncouth Allegories, forced and improbable interpretations of Scripture, though the main design of it is to shew, that the Christian Religion has superseded the Rites and Usages of the *Mosaic Law*. The latter part of it contains an useful and excellent exhortation managed under the notion of two ways, the one of *light*, the other of *darkness*, the one under the conduct of the *Angels of God* ( φωταγωγοὶ ἄγγελοι, those illuminating Ministers, as he calls them, ) the other under the guidance of the *Angels of Satan*, the Prince of the iniquity of the Age. Under the way of *light* he presses to most of the particular duties and instances of the Christian and the Spiritual Life, which are there with admirable accuracy and succinctness reckoned up : under that of *darkness* he represents those particular sins and vices, which we are to decline and shun ; and I am confident the pious Reader will not think it time lost, nor repent his pains to pursue so ancient and useful a discourse. Thus then he expresses himself.

Barnab. Epist.  
p. 248. Edit.  
Voss.

XV. THE way of Life is this. Whoever travels towards the appointed place, will hasten by his works to attain to it. And the knowledge that is given us how to walk in this way is this : *Thou shalt love thy Creator : Thou shalt glorifie him who redeemed thee from death. Thou shalt be simple in heart, and being rich in Spirit shalt not joyn thy self to him that walks in the way of death. Thou shalt hate to do that which is displeasing unto God. Thou shalt hate all manner of hypocrisie. Thou shalt not forsake the Commandments of the Lord. Exalt not thy self, but be of an humble mind. Thou shalt not assume glory to thy self. Neither shalt thou take evil counsel against thy neighbour. Thou shalt not add boldness to thy Soul. Thou shalt not commit Fornication, nor be guilty of Adultery or Buggery. Thou shalt not neglect Gods command in correcting other mens impurity, nor shalt thou have respect of persons, when thou reprovest any man for his faults. Thou shalt be meek and silent, and stand in awe of the words which thou hearest. Thou shalt not remember evil against thy Brother. Thou shalt not be of a double and instable mind, doubting whether thus or thus. Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord in vain. Thou shalt love thy neighbour above thy life. Thou shalt not destroy a Child by abortion, nor make it away when it is born. Thou shalt not withhold thy hand from thy Son or from thy Daughter, but from thy youth shalt teach them the fear of the Lord. Be not desirous of thy Neighbours goods, nor covet much. Neither shalt thou heartily joyn with the proud, but shalt be numbred with the just and the humble. Entertain trials and temptations when they happen to thee, as instruments of good. Thou shalt not be double-minded, nor of a deceitful tongue, for a double tongue is the snare of death. Thou shalt be subject to the Lord, and to Masters as Gods representatives, in reverence and fear. Thou shalt not command thy Maid or Man-servant with bitterness and severity, those especially that hope in God, lest thou thy self prove one that fearest not him, who is over both : For he came not to call Men according to outward appearance, but those whom his Spirit did prepare. Thou shalt communicate to thy Neighbour in all things, and shalt not call what thou hast thine own : for if you mutually partake in incorruptible things, how much more in things that are corruptible. Be not rash with thy tongue, for the mouth is the snare of death. Keep thy Soul as chaste as thou canst, stretch not forth thy hands to take, and shut them when thou shouldst give. Love all those that speak to thee the word of the Lord, as the Apple of thine Eye. Remember the day of Judgement night and day. Seek out daily the faces of holy Men, and searching by the Word, go forth to*  
exhort

Ἀγαπήσεις ὁ  
παιδίον σου  
καὶ τὸν υἱόν σου  
καὶ τὴν θυγατέρα σου



exhort, and by it study to save a Soul. And with thy hands shalt thou labour for the redemption of thy sins. Delay not to give, nor begrutch when thou art charitable. Give to every one that asks thee; and thou shalt know who is the good recompenser of the reward. Thou shalt keep the things which thou hast received, neither adding to them, nor taking from them. Thou shalt ever hate a wicked Person. Judge righteously. Make no Schism. Make peace between those that are at difference, reconciling them to each other. Confess thy sins, and come not to prayer with an evil Conscience. This is the way of Light.

XVI. BUT now the way of darkness is crooked and full of curses. For it is the way of eternal death attended with punishment; wherein are things destructive to their Souls, idolatry, audaciousness, height of domination, hypocrisie, double-heartedness, adultery, murder, rapine, pride, transgression, deceit, malice, arrogance, witchcraft, magic, covetousness, want of the fear of God, persecutors of good Men, haters of the truth, Men who love but do not know the wages of righteousness, persons that adhere not to what is good, nor who by righteous judgment regard the case of the Widow and the Orphan, watchful not for the fear of God but for what is evil, great strangers to meekness and patience, lovers of vanity, greedy of revenge, who compassionate not the poor, nor endeavour to relieve the oppressed, prone to detraction, not knowing their Maker, murderers of Children, defacers of God's workmanship, such as turn away themselves from the needy, add affliction to the afflicted, plead for the rich, and unjustly judge the poor, sinners altogether. And having thus described these two different ways, he concludes his discourse with a hearty and passionate exhortation, that since the time of rewards and punishments was drawing on, they would mind these things, as those that were taught of God, searching after what God required of them, and setting themselves to the practice of it, that they might be saved at the day of Judgment. I have no more to remark concerning this excellent person, than to add the character given of him by a Pen that could not err, *he was a good Man, full of Faith, and of the Ho'y Ghost.* A&C. II. 24

### *The End of S. BARNABAS's Life.*

THE  
LIBRARY  
OF THE  
MUSEUM OF  
COMPARATIVE ZOOLOGY  
AT  
HARVARD UNIVERSITY  
CAMBRIDGE, MASSACHUSETTS  
U.S.A.

THE LIFE OF  
**S. TIMOTHY**  
 THE  
 APOSTLE and EVANGELIST.



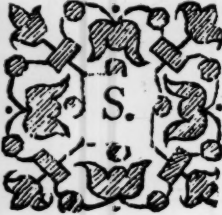
*Michael Burghers sculptor.*

**S. TIMOTHEUS.**

*S. Timothy's Country and Kindred. His Religious Education. The great advantages of an early Piety. Converted to Christianity by S. Paul, and made choice of to be his Companion. Circumcised by S. Paul, and why. This*



This no contradicting S. Paul's doctrine concerning Circumcision. His Travels with S. Paul for the propagation of the Faith. His return from Thessalonica, and S. Paul's two Epistles to that Church. S. Timothy consecrated Bishop of Ephesus. The consent of Antiquity herein. Ordination in those times usually done by Prophetic Designation, and the reason of it. Timothy's age enquired into. The importance of *νῆς* and *νεότης* (let no Man despise thy youth.) the words shewed to be used by the best Writers for a considerable age. S. Paul's first and second Epistle to him, and the importance of them. The manners of the Ephesians noted. Their Festival called *ἡμερομηνία*. S. Timothy's martyrdom. The time of his death, place of his burial, and translation of his body. His weak and infirm constitution. His great abstinence, and admirable zeal. S. Paul's singular affection for him. Different from Timotheus in S. Denys the Arcopagite. Another Timothy, S. Paul's Disciple, martyred under Antonius.

I.  TIMOTHY was, as we may probably conceive, a Lycaonian, born at Lystra, a noted City of that Province. He was a person in whom the Jew, the Gentile, and the Christian met altogether. His Father, was by Birth a Greek, by Religion a Gentile, or if a Profelyte, at most but *גר רשע* a Profelyte of the Gate, who did not oblige themselves to Circumcision, and the Rites of Moses, but

only to the observance of the seven Precepts of the Sons of Noah: his Mother Eunice, Daughter to the devout and pious Lois, was a Jewess, who yet scrupled not to marry with this Greek. An Argument that the partition-wall now tottered, and was ready to fall, when Jew and Gentile began thus to match together. His Mother and Grandmother were Women very eminently vertuous and holy, and seem to have been amongst the first that were converted to the Christian Faith. Nor was it the least instance of their piety, the care they took of his Education, instructing him in the knowledge of divine things, and seasoning his tender years with vertuous and sober principles; so that from a Child he was acquainted with the Holy Scriptures, whereby he was admirably prepared for the reception of Christianity, and furnished for the conduct of a strict pious life. And indeed Religion never thrives more kindly, than when 'tis planted betimes, and the foundations of it laid in an early piety. For the mind being then soft and tender, is easily capable of the best impressions, which by degrees insinuate themselves into it, and insensibly reconcile it to the difficulties of an holy life, so that what must necessarily be harsh and severe to a Man that endeavours to rescue himself from an habitual course of sin, the other is unacquainted with, and goes on smoothly in a way that's become pleasant and delightful. None start with greater advantages, nor usually persevere with a more vigorous constancy, than they who remember their Creator in the days of their youth, and sacrifice the first-fruits of their time to God and to Religion, before corrupt affections have clapt a bias upon their inclinations, and a train of vices depraved, and in a great measure laid asleep the natural notions of good and evil.

II. PREPARED by so excellent a culture in the Jewish Religion, God was pleased to transplant him into a better soil. S. Paul in pursuance of his Commission to Preach the Gospel to the Gentiles had come as far as

Antioch

Ὁ γὰρ παῖς  
ἦν ἡλοῖο ὁ νό-  
μος καὶ ἀλλύ-  
εσθαι, ὅτι ἐπὶ  
μίσθων τῶ-  
νων γινόμε-  
νων Chrys.  
Chrysof. Ho-  
mil. i. in 2 Tim.  
p. 16. 27.

2 Tim. 3 15.

Πηγήν ἐν ᾗ  
παλαιὰ γὰρ  
τὸ νόμιμον τυ-  
χεῖν παιδεί-  
ας, de liber.  
educ. pag.  
4.

*Antioch in Pisidia*, thence to *Iconium*, and so to *Lystra*, where the miraculous cure of an impotent Cripple made way for the entertainment of the Christian Doctrine. Among others there converted, we are (a) told were S. Timothy's Parents, who courteously treated and entertained the Apostle at their house, wholly resigning up their Son to his care and conduct. About two years after in his review of these late Plantations he came again to *Lystra*, where he made choice of *Timothy*, recommended to him by the universal testimony of the Christians thereabouts, as an Evangelist, to be his assistant and the companion of his travels; that he might have some body always with him, with whom he could entrust matters of importance, and whom he might dispatch upon any extraordinary affair and exigence of the Church. Indeed *Timothy* was not circumcised, for this being a branch of the Paternal Authority, did not lie in his Mothers power: this was notoriously known to all the *Jews*, and this S. Paul knew would be a mighty prejudice to his Ministry where ever he came. For the *Jews* being infinitely zealous for Circumcision, would not with any tolerable patience endure any man to preach to them, or so much as to converse with them, who was himself uncircumcised. That this obstacle therefore might be removed, he caused him to be circumcised, becoming in lawful matters *all things to all Men, that he might gain the more*. Admirable (says (b) *Chrysostom*) the wisdom and prudence of S. Paul, who had this design in it, Περὲς τούτου, ἵνα ἀπομυλῇ καὶ δέλῃ, he circumcised him, that he might take away circumcision, that is, be the more acceptable to the *Jews*, and by that means the more capable to undeceive them in their opinion of the necessity of those legal Rites. At other times we find him smartly contending against Circumcision as a justification of the *Mosaic* Institutions, and a virtual undermining the great ends of Christianity. Nor did he in this instance contradict his own Doctrine, or unwarrantably symbolize with the *Jews*; it being only (as (c) *Clemens of Alexandria* observes concerning this passage) a prudent condescension to the present humour of the *Jews*, whom he was unwilling to disoblige, and make them wholly fly off, by a too sudden and violent rending them from the circumcision in the flesh, to bring them over to the circumcision of the heart. So that he who thus accommodates himself for the salvation of another, can no ways be charged with dissimulation and hypocrisie; seeing he does that purely for the advantage of others, which he would not do for any other reason, or upon account of the things themselves: this being τὸ φιλανθρώπου καὶ φιλοθεοῦ παρδούτης, the part of a wife and kind Instructor, who is a true lover of God, and the souls of Men.

III. S. PAUL thus fitted with a meet companion, forwards they set in their Evangelical Progress, and having passed through *Phrygia* and *Galatia*, came down to *Troas*, thence they set Sail for *Samothracia*, and so to *Neapolis*, whence they passed to *Philippi*, the Metropolis of that part of *Macedonia*: where being evil intreated by the Magistrates and People, they departed to *Thessalonica*, whence the fury and malice of the *Jews* made them fly to *Berea*. Here they met with people of a more generous and manly temper ready to embrace the Christian Doctrine, but yet not till they had first compared it with the predictions which the Prophets had made concerning the *Messiah*. But even here they could not escape the implacable spirit of the *Jews*, so that the Christians were forced privately to conduct S. Paul to *Athens*, while *Silas* and *Timothy*,

(a) S. Metaphr.  
de S. Tim. Ap.  
Sur. ad Jan. 24.  
n. 11. p. 411.

AG. 16. 1, 2, 3.

(b) Homil.  
XXXIV. in  
AG. Ap. p. 684.

(c) Stromat. lib.  
I. pag. 730.

not so much the immediate objects of their spight and cruelty, staid behind, to instruct and confirm the Converts of that place. Whether they came to him during his stay at *Athens*, is uncertain: *S. Luke* takes no farther notice of them, till their coming to him at *Corinth*, his next remove. Where at their first arrival (if it was not at *Athens*) *S. Paul* dispatched away *Timothy* to *Thessalonica*, to enquire into the state of Christianity in that City, and to confirm them in the belief and profession of the Gospel, for he seems to have had a more peculiar kindness for that Church, having since his last being there, more than once resolved himself to go back to them, but that the great Enemy of Souls had still thrown some rub in the way to hinder him.

1 Thes. 3. 1,  
2, 3.

— 2. v. 17,  
18, 19.

1 Thes. 3. 6,  
7, & seqq.

IV. FROM *Thessalonica* *Timothy* returned with the welcom news of their firmness and constancy, notwithstanding the Persecutions they endured, their mutual charity to each other and particular affection to *S. Paul*; news, wherewith the good Man was infinitely pleased: as certainly nothing can minister greater joy and satisfaction to a faithful Guide of Souls, than to behold the welfare and prosperity of his People. Nor did his care of them end here, but he presently writes his first Epistle to them, to animate them under their sufferings, and not to desert the Christian Religion, because the Cross did attend it, but rather to adorn their Christian Profession by a Life answerable to the holy designs and precepts of it. In the front of this Epistle he inserted not only his own name, but also those of *Silas* and *Timothy*, partly to reflect the greater honour upon his fellow-workers, partly that their united authority and consent might have the stronger influence and force upon them. The like he did in a second Epistle, which not long after he sent to them, to supply the want of his personal presence, whereof in his former he had given them some hopes, and which he himself seemed so passionately to desire. Eighteen months at least they had continued at *Corinth*, when *S. Paul* resolved upon a journey to *Jerusalem*, where he staid not long, but went for *Antioch*, and having travelled over the Countries of *Galatia* and *Phrygia* to establish Christianity lately planted in those parts, came to *Ephesus*, where though he met with great opposition, yet he preached with greater success, and was so wholly swallowed up with the concerns of that City, that though he had resolved himself to go into *Macedonia*, he was forced to send *Timothy* and *Erastus* in his stead, who having done their errand, returned to *Ephesus*, to assist him in promoting the affairs of Religion in that place.

V. *S. PAUL* having for three years resided at *Ephesus* and the parts about it, determined to take his leave, and depart for *Macedonia*. And now it was (as himself plainly intimates, and the Antients generally conceive) that he constituted *Timothy* Bishop and Governor of that Church; he was the first Bishop (a) says *Eusebius* of the Province or Diocese of *Ephesus*; he did πρῶτος Ἐπίσκοπος Ἐφεσίων, says the (b) Author in *Photius*, first act as Bishop of *Ephesus*, and in the Council of (c) *Chalcedon* XXVII. Bishops are said successively to have sitten in that Chair, whereof *S. Timothy* was the first. In the (d) *Apostolical Constitutions* he is expressly said to have been ordained Bishop of it by *S. Paul*, or as he in *Photius* expresseth it a little more after the mode of his time, he was ordained and enthroned (or installed) Bishop of the Metropolis of the *Eusebians* by the great *S. Paul*. *Ephesus* was a great and populous City, and the Civil Government of the *Pro-Consul*, who resided there reached over the whole *Lydian* or *Pro-consular*

1 Tim. 1. 3.

(a) *H. Eccl.* 1. 3.

c. 4. p. 73.

(b) *Mart. Tim.*

Ap. Phot. Cod.

CCLIV. col.

1401.

(c) *Conc. Chal-*

*cedon.* Act. XI.

*Conc. Tom.* 4.

col. 609.

(d) *Lib.* 7. c.

47. col. 451.



consular Asia. And such in proportion the Ancients make the Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction of that Church, (a) S. Chrysostom affirming it to be plain and evident, that Timothy had the Church, or rather the whole Nation of Asia committed to him; to him (says (b) Theodoret) divine S. Paul committed τῆς Ἀσίας τὴν ἐπιμέλειαν, the care and the charge of Asia; upon which account a little after (c) he calls him the Apostle of the Asians. As for the manner of his Ordination, or rather designation to the ministeries of Religion, it was by particular and extraordinary designation, God immediately testifying it to be his will and pleasure; thence it is said to have been done κατὰ τὰς περὶ αὐτοῦ προφητείας, according to some preceding predictions concerning him, and that he received it not only by the laying on of hands, but by Prophecy, that is, as (d) Chrysostom truly explains it, by the Holy Ghost; it being part of the Prophetic Office (as he adds, and especially it was so at that time) not only to fore-tell future events, but to declare things present, God extraordinarily manifesting whom he would have set apart for that weighty Office. Thus Paul and Barnabas were separated by the special dictate of the Holy Ghost; and of the Governours of the Ephesine Churches that met at Miletus, it is said, that the Holy Ghost had made them Bishops, or Over-seers of the Church. And this way of election by way of prophetic revelation continued in use at least during the Apostolic Age: (e) Clemens in his Epistle to the Corinthians, tells us that the Apostles preaching up and down Cities and Countreys, constituted their first-fruits to be the Bishops and Deacons of those who should believe, δοκιμαζόντες τὸ πνῶμα, making trial of them by the Spirit: and another (f) Clemens reports of S. John, that visiting the neighbour Churches about Ephesus, he ordained Bishops, and such as were signified, or pointed out to him by the Spirit.

VI. THIS extraordinary and miraculous way of chusing Bishops and Ecclesiastic Officers, besides other advantages, begat a mighty reverence and veneration for the Governours of the Church, who were looked upon as God's choice, and as having the more immediate character of Heaven upon them. And especially this way seemed more necessary for S. Timothy than others, to secure him from that contempt which his youth might otherwise have exposed him to. For that he was but young at that time, is evident from S. Paul's counsel to him, so to demean himself, that no man might despise his youth: the Governours of the Church in those days were Προεσβύτεροι, in respect of their age as well as office, and indeed therefore stiled Elders, because they usually were persons of a considerable age that were admitted into the Orders of the Church. This Timothy had not attained to. And yet the word νεότης, youth, admits a greater latitude than we in ordinary speech confine it to. (g) Cicero tells us of himself, that he was adolescentulus, but a very youth when he pleaded Roscius's cause; and yet (h) A. Gellius proves him to have been at that time no less than XXVII years old. Alexander the Son of Aristobulus is called (i) νεανίσκος, a youth, at the time of his death, when yet he was above thirty. Hiero in (k) Polybius is stiled νεῖκος, a very young Man, whom yet Casaubon proves to have been XXXV years of Age; and the same Historian speaking of T. Flaminius his making War upon Philip of Macedon, says he was νεῖκος, a very young Man, for that he was not above thirty years old: it being (as Casaubon observes) the custom both of Greek and Latin Writers to extend the juvenus, or youthful age from the thirtieth till the fortieth year of a mans

H

life.

(a) Homil. XV. in 1 Tim. p. 160d.

(b) Argum. in 1 ad Tim. p. 463.

(c) Com. in 1 Tim. 3. p. 475. T. 3.

1 Tim. 1. 18. 1 Tim. 4. 14.

(d) Homil. V. in 1 Tim. p. 1545.

(e) Epist. ad Corinth. pag. 54.

(f) Clem. Allib. his ē παλαιὸς συνελθόντες; ap. Euseb. H. Eccl. 1. 3. c. 23. p. 92.

1 Tim. 4. 12.

(g) In Orator. p. 266. Tom. 1.

(h) Noct. Attic. 1. 15. c. 28. p. 383.

(i) Joseph. Ant. 1. 14. c. 13. p. 480.

(k) Hist. l. 1. p. 11. Edit. 8. ubi vid. Casaub. Comment. p. 129. & ejusd. exercit. ad Baron. Appar. n. 99. p. 154.

Annot. in loc.

life. To which we may add what *Grotius* observes, that *νεότης* answering to the Hebrew *נחור* denotes the Military Age, all that civil and manly part of a Mans life that is opposed to Old Age; so that *Timothy's* Youth, without any force or violence to the Word, might very well consist with his being at least thirty, or five and thirty Years of Age, and he so stiled only comparatively with respect to that weighty Function; which was wont to be conferred upon none but grave and Aged Men. But of this enough.

Acts 20. 2, 3.  
c.c.

VII. S. TIMOTHY thus fixed at *Ephesus*, did yet accompany S. Paul some part of his journey into *Greece*, at least went to him thither upon some urgent affairs of the Church, and then returned to his charge. Not long after which S. Paul wrote his first Epistle to him, to encourage him in his duty, and direct him how to behave himself in that eminent Station wherein he had set him. And because the success of the Ministry does in a great measure depend upon the persons employed in it, he gives him more particular rules how to proceed in this matter, and how the persons ought to be qualified; whom he admitted to that honourable and important office; *ὡς ἐν τῷ πρῶτῳ τῷ ἐπιστολῶν βίβλῳ καὶ λόγον ἀναγκαῖως διεξῶν*, as \* *Nicephorus* speaks, excellently representing in that Epistle, as in a short draught, the life and conversation of the sacred Governours of the Church, describing the tempers and manners of those who are appointed to be the Guides and Ministers of Religion. Well he knew also that crafty Teachers and false Apostles were creeping into the Church, whose principles and practices he remarks, warning him to beware of them, and to stand continually upon his guard against them. The holy Man followed his institutions, and was no doubt faithful to his trust, which he managed with all care and diligence. About six Years after, S. Paul being then a Prisoner at *Rome*, wrote a second Epistle to him (for that this Epistle was written at his first coming to *Rome*, we have shewed elsewhere †) to excite him to a mighty care and fidelity in his business, and in undermining the false and subtle insinuations of Seducers. In it he orders *Timothy* to come to him with all speed to *Rome*, who accordingly came, and joined with him in the several Epistles written thence to the *Philippians*, *Colossians*, and to *Philemon*, as his name in the front of those Epistles does abundantly declare. During his stay at *Rome* he was upon some occasion cast into prison, and thence released and set at liberty about the time of S. Paul's enlargement, as he clearly intimates in the close of his Epistle to the *Hebrews*; after which he came back to *Ephesus*, nor is it probable that he any more removed from thence, till his translation into Heaven. And here it was that he became acquainted with S. John, whose Apostolical Province mainly lay in *Asia*, and the parts about *Ephesus*; and so the \* *Acts* under the name of *Polycrates*, one of his successors (doubtless of good Antiquity, being those mentioned and made use of by *Photius*) report, that he conversed with, and was an auditor of S. John the Divine, who lay in the bosom of our Lord.

† Antiq. Apost.  
Life of S. Paul  
Sect. 7. n. 5.  
2 Tim. 4. 9.Hebr. 13. 23,  
24.\* Ap. Bolland.  
Januar. XXIV.Strab. Geogr.  
lib. 14. p. 41.

VIII. THE *Ephesians* were a People of great looseness and impiety, their manners were wanton and effeminate, prophane and prodigal: they banished *Hermodorus* only because he was more sober and thrifty than the rest, enacting a Decree, *Let none of ours be thrifty*. They were strangely bewitched with the study of *Magic* and the Arts of Sorcery and Divination; miserably over-run with Idolatry, especially the

Tempe

Temple and worship of *Diana*, for which they were famous through the whole World. Among their many Idolatrous Festivals they had one called \* KATAΓΩΓION, which was celebrated after this manner; Habiting themselves in an antic dress, and covering their faces with ugly *Vizors*, that they might not be known, with Clubs in their hands they carried Idols in a wild and a frantic manner up and down the more eminent places of the City, singing certain Songs and Verses to them; and without any compassion or respect either to Age or Sex, setting upon all persons that they met, they beat out their brains, glorying in it as a brave achievement, and a great honour to their gods. This cursed and execrable custom gave just offence to all pious and good Men, especially S. *Timothy* whose Spirit was grieved to see God so openly dishonoured, humane nature sunk into such a deep degeneracy, and so arbitrarily transported to the most savage barbarities by the great murderer of Souls. The good Man oft endeavoured to reclaim them by lenitive and mild intreaties; but alas, gentle Physic works little upon a stubborn Constitution. When that would not do, out he comes to them into the midst of the street upon one of these fatal solemnities, and reproves them with some necessary sharpness and severity. But cruelty and licentiousness are too head-strong to brook opposition: impatient of being controlled in their wild extravagancies, they fall upon him with their Clubs, beat and drag him up and down, and then leave him for dead, whom some Christians finding yet to breath, took up, and lodged him without the Gate of the City, where the third day after he expired. He suffered martyrdom on the thirtieth day of the fourth month, according to the *Asian* computation, or in the *Roman* account on the XXII of *January*, as the *Greek Church* celebrates his memory, or the XXIV, according to the *Latin*. It happened (as some will have it) in the time of *Nerva*, while others more probably refer it to the reign of *Domitian*, it being done before S. *John's* return from his banishment in *Patmos*, which was about the beginning of *Nerva's* reign. Being dead, the Christians of *Ephesus* took his body, and decently interred it in a place called *Pion*. *Piron* (says † *Isidore*, who adds that 'twas a Mountain) where it securely rested for some Ages, till \* *Constantine the Great*; or as others, his Son *Constantius* caused it to be translated to *Constantinople*, and laid up together with those of S. *Andrew* and S. *Luke*, in the great Church erected by *Constantine* to the holy Apostles.

IX. HE was a Man of no very firm and healthful constitution, frequent distempers assailing him, besides the constant infirmities that hung upon him. Which S. *Chrysostom* conceives were in a great measure owing to his extraordinary temperance, and too frequent fastings. An effectual course to subdue those youthful lusts which S. *Paul* cautioned him to shun, there being no such way to extinguish the fire, as to withdraw the fuel: he allowed himself no delicious Meats, no generous Wines; Bread and Water was his usual Bill of Fare, till by excessive abstinence; and the meanness and courseness of his diet he had weakened his appetite, and rendred his stomach unfit to serve the

\* *Martyr. Timoth. Apost. ap. Phot. Cod. 254. col. 141. 1404. Com. de S. Timoth. S. Metaphr. apud Sur. ad Jan. XXIV. n. 9, 10. Fragment. vit. S. Timoth. Græc. ap. P. Halloix in vit. Polycarp. 558. forsan ex Act. S. Timoth. à Poly-crato. (uti aiunt) scriptis, que eadem habent, ap. Bolland. ad Jan. XXIV. p. 566.*

† *De Vit. et Obi. SS. c. 86. p. 542.*  
\* *Hieron. adv. Vigil. p. 122. Tom. 2. Niceph. Eccl. H. l. 2. c. 43. p. 210. Metaphr. ubi supra n. X.*

Τίς δ' ἀρετῆς ἱκανὸς τὸν τὴν Τίμοθεον, ὅπως ἐκφρά-  
σα πρὸς τῆς, καὶ καλεῖται πολὺς ὅς τε πρᾶξις  
ὡς καὶ εἰς ἀδυναμίαν ἐμπιστεύειν ὅτι δ' ἀγαν σκλη-  
ραγωνίαι, καὶ ὁπτισταρῶν νουσίαι. ὅτι γὰρ ὁ  
φύσει τοῦτος ὡς, ἀλλ' ἐπὶ νουσίαι καὶ ὑπό-  
ποσίαι τὸ σωματικὸν κατέβαλε τὸ ἰκλῆν.  
*Chrysost. Homil. I. ad Pop. Antioch. Tom. 1. p. 9.*



1 Tim. 5. 23.

\* Loc. citat.  
pag. 7.

ends of Nature. Infomuch that S. Paul was forced to impose it as a kind of Law upon him, that he should *no longer drink water, but use a little Wine for his stomachs sake, and his often infirmities.* And yet in the midst of this weak tottering Carcase there dwelt a vigorous and sprightly mind, a Soul acted by a mighty zeal, and inspired with a true love to God: he thought no difficulties great, no dangers formidable, that he might be serviceable to the purposes of Religion, and the interest of Souls; he flew from place to place with a quicker speed, and a more unwearied resolution, than could have been expected from a stronger and a healthier person, now to *Ephesus*, then to *Corinth*, oft into *Macedonia*, then to *Italy*, crossing Sea and Land, and surmounting a thousand hazards and oppositions: in all which (as \**Chrysostom's* words are) the weakness of his Body did not prejudice the divine Philosophy of his mind; so strangely active and powerful is Zeal for God, so nimbly does it wing the Soul with the swiftest flight. And certainly (as he adds) as a great and robust body is little better for its health, which has nothing but a dull and heavy Soul to inform it; so bodily weakness is no great impediment, where there is a quick and a generous mind to animate and enliven it.

1 Thess. 3. 2.

2 Tim. 1. 2.

Philip. 2. 15,  
20, &c.1 Cor. 10. 10,  
11.† Homil. 1. in  
2 Tim. p.  
1626.

X. THESE excellent Vertues infinitely endeared him to S. Paul, who seems to have had a very passionate kindness for him, never mentioning him without great tenderness, and titles of reverence and respect: sometimes styling him his *Son*, his *Brother*, his *fellow-labourer*, *Timotheus our Brother*, and *Minister of God*, and our *fellow-labourer in the Gospel of Christ*; sometimes with additions of a particular affection and honourable regard, *Timothy, my dearly beloved Son*; *Timotheus, who is my beloved Son, and faithful in the Lord*: and to the Church of *Philippi* more expressly, *I trust to send Timotheus shortly to you, for I have no man like-minded* (i.e. *ὁμοψυχον*, equally dear to me as my self) *who will naturally care for your state: for all seek their own, not the things that are Jesus Christ; but ye know the proof of him, that as a Son with the Father, he hath served with me in the Gospel.* And because he knew that he was a young Man, and of a temper that easily resented harsh and unkind treatment, he entered a particular caution on his behalf with the Church of *Corinth*, *If Timotheus come, see that he may be with you without fear, for he worketh the work of the Lord, as I also do: let no Man therefore despise him, but conduct him forth in peace, that he may come unto me.* Instances of a great care and tenderness, and which plainly suppose *Timothy* to have been an extraordinary person. His very calling him his *dearly beloved Son*, † *Chrysostom* thinks a sufficient argument of his Vertue. For such affections not being founded in Nature, can flow from nothing but Vertue and Goodness, the lovely and essential ornaments of a divine and a holy Soul. We love our Children not only because witty, or handsome, kind and dutiful, but because they are ours, and very often for no other reason; nor can we do otherwise, so long as we are subject to the Impressions and the Laws of Nature. Whereas true Goodness and Vertue have no other Arts but their own naked worth and beauty to recommend them, nor can by any other argument challenge regard and veneration from us.

XI. SOME dispute there has been among the Writers of the Church of Rome, whether our S. *Timothy* was the same with him, to whom *Dionysius the Arcopagite* dedicates the Books said to be written by him; and troops of arguments are mustred on either side. But the foundation

dation of the controverſie is quite taken away with us, who are ſufficiently aſſured, that thoſe Books were written ſome hundreds of Years after S. Denys's his head was laid in the duſt. However it may not be improper to remarque, that beſides ours, Biſhop of *Ephesus*, we are \* told of another S. *Timothy*, Diſciple alſo to S. *Paul*, the Son of *Pudens* and *Priscilla*, who is ſaid to have lived unto a great Age; till the times of *Antoninus* the Emperour, and *Pius* Biſhop of *Rome*, and that he came over into *Britain*, converted and baptized *Lucius* King of this Iſland, the firſt King that ever embraced the Chriſtian Faith. *Pius* Biſhop of *Rome*, in a † Letter to *Juſtus* Biſhop of *Vienna* ( which though ſuſpected by moſt: is yet owned by \* *Baronius* ) reckons him among the *Presbyters* that had been educated by the *Apoſtles*, and had come to *Rome*, and tells us that he had ſuffered martyrdom: accordingly the † *Roman Martyrology* informs us, that he obtained the Crown of Martyrdom under *Antoninus* the Emperour. A Story which as I cannot confute, ſo am I not over-forward to believe, nor is it of moment enough to my purpoſe more particularly to enquire about it.

\* Pet. de Natal.  
 Hiſt. SS. l. 1. 24.  
 Nauclet. Chron.  
 vol. 2. gener. 6.  
 conſer. Adon.  
 Martyr. ad XII.  
 Kal. Jul. vid.  
 Uſſer. de pri-  
 mord. c. 3. p. 31.  
 † Concil. Tom. 1.  
 col. 576.  
 \* Bar. ad Ann.  
 166. n. 1. 2.  
 † Martyrol.  
 Rom. ad Mart.  
 24. p. 150.

The End of S. TIMOTHY's Life.

THE

THE  
OFFICE OF THE  
SECRETARY OF THE  
NAVY  
WASHINGTON, D. C.  
JANUARY 1, 1900  
TO THE  
CHIEF OF THE  
NAVY  
DEPARTMENT  
FROM THE  
SECRETARY OF THE  
NAVY  
SUBJECT: [Illegible]

NAVY DEPARTMENT

UNIT



THE LIFE OF  
**S T I T U S**  
 BISHOP of CRETE.



*His Country enquired into. The report of his noble extract. His education and conversion to Christianity. His acquaintance with, and accompanying S. Paul to the Synod at Jerusalem. S. Paul's refusing to circumcise him, and why.*  
*His*

*His attending S. Paul in his travels. Their arrival in Crete. Titus constituted by him Bishop of that Island. The testimonies of the Ancients to that purpose. The intimations of it in S. Paul's Epistle to him. S. Paul's censure of the People of Crete, justified by the account which Gentile Writers give of their evil manners. A short view of the Epistle it self. The directions concerning Ecclesiastic persons. His charge to exhort and convince gain-sayers. Crete abounding with Heretical Teachers. Jewish Fables and Genealogies what, and whence derived. The Æones and οὐρανία of the Ancient Gnosticks borrowed from the θεολογία of the Heathen Poets. Th's shewn by particular instances. Titus commanded to attend S. Paul at Nicopolis. His coming to him into Macedonia. His following S. Paul to Rome, and departure into Dalmatia. The Story of Pliny the Younger's being converted by him in Crete, censured. His Age and Death. The Church erected to his memory.*

I.



(a) Homil. i. in  
Tit. pag. 1693.

Act. 18. 7.

(b) Flor. H.  
Rom. l. 3. c. 7.  
p. 69.

H E Ancient Writers of the Church make little mention of this holy Man; who, and whence he was, is not known, but by uncertain probabilities. (a) S. Chrysostom conjectures him to have been born at *Corinth*, for no other reason, but because in some Ancient Copies (as still is in several Manuscripts at this day) mention is made of S. Paul's going at *Corinth* into the house of one [Titus] named *Tastus*, one that worshipped. The Writers of later Ages generally make him to be born in *Crete*, better known by the modern name of *Candia*, a noble Island (as the (b) *Historian* calls it, who adds that the only cause of the *Romans* making War there, was a desire to conquer so brave a Country) in the *Ægean* Sea, not more famous of old for being the birth-place of *Jupiter*, the Sovereign of the Heathen gods, and the *Dadalean* Labyrinth said to be in it, than of late for its having been so long the seat of War between the *Turkish* Emperor and the State of *Venice*. Antiquity has not certainly conveyed down to us any particular notice of his Parents; though, might we believe the account which some give, he was of no common extract, but of

Τίτος ὁ μακάριος ἐκ Μινώος [Legend. sine dubio Μίνως] τῷ βασιλεῖ Κρήτης, προσφύγις ἄν, ὃς φῆσι Ζηνῶς ἰ νομινῶς, ὃ τ' εἶον αὐτῷ συστραταῖος, ὃ μίμνῃ ὃ ἄγιος ἀπὸστολος. Menæon Græc. Αὐγύς τῇ κί. sub. lit. μ. 111.

the Blood Royal, his pedigree being derived from no less than *Minos* King of *Crete*, whom the *Poets* make the Son of *Jupiter*, and for the equity of his Laws, and the impartial justice of his Government, prefer him to be one of the three great Judges in the infernal Regions, whose place it is to determine Mens future and eternal state; while *Historians* more truly affirm him to have been the Son of *Xanthus* King of that Island, and that he succeeded his Father in the Kingdom. But I pass by that.

Ubi supr.

Τίτῳ, δὲ σὺ ἐπέδωκεν ἐκ δουλίας, καὶ τῷ Ἰουδῶν σὺ σῶσαι ἐξ ὀνόματι σε ἡ παύσεια αὐτῶν. Men. ib.

II. B U T whatever his Parentage was, we are sure that he was a *Greek*, probably both by Nation and Religion. The *Greek* Church in their public Offices, give us this account of his younger years, and conversion to Christianity: that being sprung from noble Parents, his youth was consecrated to Learning and a generous Education. At twenty years old he heard a voice, which told him, he must depart thence, that he might save his Soul, for that all his Learning else would be of little advantage to him. Not satisfied with the warning, he desired

fired again to hear the voice. A year after he was again commanded in a Vision to pursue the Volume of the Jewish Law. He opened the Book, and cast his eye upon that of the Prophet, *Keep silence before me, O Islands, and let the people renew their strength: let them come near, let them speak: let us come near together to Judgement, &c.* Whereupon his Uncle at that time Proconsul of Crete, having heard the fame of our Lord's Miracles in Judaea, sent him to Jerusalem, where he continued till Christ's Ascension, when he was converted by that famous Sermon of S. Peter's, whereby he gained at once three thousand Souls. I cannot secure the truth of this Story, though pretended to be derived out of the *Acts*, said to be written by *Zenas the Lawyer*, mentioned by S. Paul: an Authority, I confess, which without better evidence, I dare not encourage the Reader to lay too much stress upon. Let us therefore come to somewhat more certain and unquestionable.

III. BEING arrived in Judaea, or the parts thereabouts, and convinced of the truth and divinity of the Christian Faith, he became S. Paul's Convert and Disciple, though when or where converted we find not. Likely it is, either that he followed S. Paul in the nature of a Companion and Attendant, or that he incorporated himself into the Church of Antioch: where when the famous controversy arose concerning Circumcision and the Mosaic Institutions, as equally necessary to be observed with the belief and practice of Christianity, they determined that Paul and Barnabas, and certain others of them should go up to Jerusalem unto the Apostles and Elders about this question; nay, a very ancient (a) MS. adds, that when Paul earnestly perswaded them to continue in the Doctrine which they had been taught, those very Jewish Zelots who came down to Antioch, and had first started the scruple, did themselves desire Paul and Barnabas and some others to go and consult with the Apostles and Elders at Jerusalem, and stand to their sentence and determination of the case. In the number of those who were sent upon their Evangelical Embassie was our S. Titus, whom St. Paul (encouraged to this journey by a particular revelation) was willing to take along with him. No sooner were they come to Jerusalem, but Spies were at hand, some zealous Jews pretending themselves to be Christian Converts, insinuated themselves into S. Paul's company and acquaintance, narrowly observing what liberty he took in point of legal Rites, that thence they might pick an accusation against him. They charged him that he preached to, and conversed with the Gentiles, and that at this very time Titus an uncircumcised Greek was his intimate familiar; a scandal which there was no way to avoid, but by circumcising him, that so it might appear that he had no design to undermine the Rites and Customs of the Law. This, S. Paul (who knew when to give ground, and when to maintain his Station) would by no means consent to: he who at another time was content to Circumcise Timothy, a Jew by the Mothers side, that he might please the Jews to their edification, and have the fairer advantage to win upon them, refused here to circumcise Titus a Gentile, that he might not seem to betray the liberties of the Gospel, harden the Jews in their unreasonable and inveterate prejudices against the Heathens, and give just ground of scandal and discouragement to the Gentiles, and make them fly off to a greater distance from Christianity. Accordingly he resisted their importunity with an invincible resolution, and his practice herein was immediately justified by the decretory Sentence of the Council, summoned to determine this matter.

1Sa. 41. 1.

Act. 15. 1, 2.

(a) Cod. Bezae.  
MS. ad Act.  
15. 2.

Gal. 1. 2, &c.



III. THE affair about which they were sent being dispatched in the Synod, he returned no doubt with S. Paul to Antioch, and thence accompanied him in his travels, till having gone over the Churches of Syria and Cilicia, they set sail for Crete. For that period of time I conceive with (a) Capellus most probable for their going over to that Island, rather than with (b) Baronius and others to place it at S. Paul's coming out of Macedonia into Greece, which he supposes to have been by a Sea-voyage, passing by the Cyclada Islands through the Aegean Sea, or with (c) Grotius to refer it till his Voyage to Rome, founding his conjecture upon a double mistake, that S. Paul and his company put in and staid at Crete, when 'tis only said that they sailed under it, and passed by it, and that Titus was then in the company, whereof no footsteps or intimations appear in the Story. Sailing therefore from some Port in Cilicia, they arrived at Crete, where S. Paul industriously set himself to preach and propagate the Christian Faith, delighting (as much as might be) to be the first messenger of the glad tidings of the Gospel to all places where he came, not planting in another man's line, or building of things made ready to his hand. But because the care of other Churches called upon him, and would not permit him to stay long enough here to see Christianity brought to a due maturity and perfection, he constituted Titus Bishop of that Island, that he might nourish that Infant-Church, superintend its growth and prosperity, and manage the Government and Administration of it. This the Ancients with one mouth declare, He was the first Bishop (says (d) Eusebius) of the Churches in Crete: the Apostle consecrated him Bishop of it, so (e) S. Ambrose; so (f) Dorotheus, and (g) Sophronius; he was (says (h) Chrysostom) an approved person, to whom ἡ ὅλη ἡ νῆσος, the whole Island was intirely committed, that he might exercise power and jurisdiction over so many Bishops; he was by S. Paul Ordained Bishop of Crete, though a very large Island, that he might Ordain Bishops under him, says (i) Theodoret expressly. To which might be added the testimonies of Theophylact, Oecumenius, and others, and the subscription at the end of the Epistle to Titus, (which though not dictated by the same hand, is ancient however) where he is said to have been ordained the first Bishop of the Church of the Cretians. And (k) S. Chrysostom gives this as the reason, why of all his Disciples and Followers S. Paul wrote Epistles to Titus and Timothy, and not to Silas or Luke, because he had committed to them the care and government of the Churches, while he reserved the others as attendants and ministers to go along with himself.

IV. NOR is this meerly the arbitrary sense of Antiquity in the case, but seems evidently founded in St. Paul's own intimation, where he tells Titus, For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou shouldst set in order the things that are wanting, and ordain Elders in every City, as I had appointed thee, that is, I constituted thee Governor of that Church, that thou mightest dispose and order the affairs of it according to the rules and directions which I then gave thee. [Ordain Elders] he means Bishops (says (l) Chrysostom) as elsewhere I have oft explained it. [Elders in every City] he was not willing (as he adds) that the whole administration of so great an Island should be managed by one, but that every City might have its proper Governor to inspect and take care of it, that so the burden might be lighter by being laid upon many shoulders, and the people attended with the greater diligence. Indeed Crete was famous for number of Cities above any other Island in the World, thence stiled of old Hecatompolis, the Island of an hundred Cities. In short, plain it is, that Titus had

(a) Histor. Apost. ad ann. Christi 46.

(b) Ad ann. 57. n. 212.

(c) In Argum. Epist. ad Tit. A. B. 27. 7.

(d) H. Eccl. l. 3. c. 4. p. 73.

(e) Praef. in Tit. p. 419. T. 5.

(f) Dorothe. Synopf. p. 148.

(g) Ap. Hier. de Script. in Tit.

(h) Homil. 1. in Tit. p. 1692.

(i) Argum. Ep. ad Tit. Tom 3.

(k) Argum. in 1 ad Tim. p. 1519.

Tit. I. 5.

(l) Homil. 2. in Tim. p. 1700. vid. etiam Theoph. & Oecumen. in loc.

had power of Jurisdiction, Ordination, and Ecclesiastical Censures, above any other Pastors or Ministers in that Church conferred and derived upon him.

V. SEVERAL years S. *Titus* continued at his charge in *Crete*, when he received a Summons from S. *Paul*, then ready to depart from *Ephesus*. The Apostle had desired *Apollos* to accompany *Timothy* and some others whom he had sent to *Corinth*, but he chusing rather to go for *Crete*, by him and *Zenas* he wrote an Epistle to *Titus*, to stir him up to be active and vigilant, and to teach him how to behave himself in that station wherein he had set him. And indeed he had need of all the counsels which St. *Paul* could give him, who had so loose and untoward a generation of Men to deal with. For the Countrey it self was not more fruitful and plenteous than the manners of the People debauched and vicious. St. *Paul* puts *Titus* in mind what a bad character one of their own Poets ( who certainly knew them best ) had given of them :

Tit. I. 1<sup>st</sup>

Κρήτες αἰεὶ ψεύσται, καὶ ἐν ᾧ πρία, γαστέρες ἀργαῖαι.

*The Cretians are always Liars, Evil Beasts, Slow-bellies.* This Verse (A) S. *Chrysostom* supposes the Apostle took from *Callimachus*, who makes use indeed of the first part of it, charging the *Cretians* to be like themselves, notorious *Liars*, in pretending that *Jupiter* was not only born, but died among them, and that they had his Tomb with this Inscription, ΕΝΤΑΥΘΑ ΖΑΝ ΚΕΙΤΑΙ, *Here lies Jupiter*, when as the deity is immortal : whereupon the good Father perplexes himself with many needless difficulties in reconciling it. Whereas in truth St. *Paul* borrowed it not from *Callimachus*, but *Epimenides*, a native of *Crete*, famous among the Antients for Raptures and Enthusiastic Divinations, Θεοφιλης καὶ σοφὸς ὡς τὸ θεῖον, καὶ ἐνθουσιαστικῶς καὶ περὶ πολλὰ σοφίαν, as *Plutarch* says of him. From him *Callimachus* cites part of the Verse, and applies it to his particular purpose, while St. *Paul* quotes it intire from the Author himself. *This Witness* ( says he ) *is true.* And indeed that herein he did not bely them, we have the concurrent testimonies of most Heathen Writers, who charge the same things upon them. So famous for lying, that Κρητίζειν and Κρητίζειν πρὸς Κρήτην became proverbial, *to lye like a Cretian*, and *to cosen a Cheat*, and nothing more obvious than *Mendax Creta*. (c) *Polybius* tells us of them, that no where could be found more subtil and deceitful Wits, and generally more wicked and pernicious Counsels; that their manners were so very fordid and covetous, that of all Men in the World the *Cretians* were the only persons who accounted nothing base or dishonest, that was but gainful and advantageous. Besides they were idle and impatient of labour, gluttonous and intemperate, unwilling to take any pains farther than to *make provision for the flesh*; as the natural effect of ease, idleness, and plenty, they were wanton and lascivious, and prone to the vilest and basest sort of Lust, ὡς καὶ παλαιὰ δαμνυῖν ἐπὶ βόλῳ, ( as (d) *Athenaus* informs us ) outrageously mad upon that sin that peculiarly derives its name from *Sodom*. And such being the case, what wonder if S. *Paul* bids *Titus*

(a) Homil. III. in Tit. p. 5707.

Κρήτες αἰεὶ ψεύσται, καὶ ἐν ᾧ πρία, γαστέρες ἀργαῖαι.  
 Κρήτες ἐπικλήσαντο αὐτὸν δὲ ἔδιδες ἐοικὸς  
 ὡς αἰεὶ.

Callim. Hymn eis τὸ Δία, p. 1. παρὰ μὲν αὐτῷ  
 τὸ κρητίζειν, ὅτι τὸ ψεῦδος. Ver. Schol. ibi.

Κρητίζειν, τὸ ψεῦδος, καὶ ἐπὶ τὰς παρὰ μὲν αὐτῷ  
 Κρητίζειν ὡς Κρήτης ἐπειδὴ ψεύσται, καὶ  
 ἀπατεῶνες εἰσι. Suid in. voc. Κρητίζειν. Eadem  
 Mich. Apostol. in eod. verb. Πάλιν  
 ἰδοὺ μὲν αὐτὸν ἐρραβωδίζαναι μετὰ ταῦτα  
 ἐκ τῶν δόμων καὶ τὸν Κρήτας. Pleil. de operat. Dæmon. p. 37.

(c) Histor. l. 6. p. 681. & l. 4. p. 386. Edit. L. Batavi.

(d) Deipnosopht. l. 13. p. 610.

reprove them sharply, seeing their corrupt and depraved manners would admit of the sharpest Lancets, and the most stinging corrosives he could apply to them.

VI. IN the Epistle it self the main Body of it consists of rules and directions for the several ranks and relations of Men: and because Spiritual and Ecclesiastical affairs are of all others most considerable, he first instructs him in the qualifications of those whom he should set apart to be Bishops, and Guides of Souls; that they be holy and harmless, innocent and inoffensive, such as had not divorced and put away their first Wife that they might marry a second, whose Children were sober and regular, and trained up in the Christian Faith; that they be easie and treatable, meek and unpassionate, free from the love of Wine, and a desire after riches by fordid and covetous designs; that they be kind and hospitable, lovers of goodness and good Men, modest and prudent; just and honest, strict and temperate, firm and constant in owning and asserting the Doctrines of Christianity that have been delivered to them, that being thoroughly furnished with this pure Evangelical Doctrine, they may be able both to perswade and comfort others, and mightily to convince those that resist and oppose the truth. And certainly it was not without great reason, that the Apostle required that the Guides and Governours of the Church should be thus able to convince gain-sayers. For whatever Authors report of Crete, that it bred no Serpents or venomous Creatures, yet certain it is that the poison of Error and Heresie had insinuated it self there together with the entertainment of Christianity, there being many unruly and vain talkers, especially they of the Circumcision, who endeavoured to corrupt the Doctrine of the Gospel with Jewish Fables, groundless and unwarrantable Traditions, mystical and Cabalistic explications, and foolish questions and genealogies. For the Jews, borrowing their notions herein from the Schools of Plato, were fallen into a vein of deriving things from an imaginary generation, first Binah or Understanding, then Achmoth or Cochemah Wisdom, and so till they came to Milcah the Kingdom, and Schekinah or the Divine Presence. Much after the same rate as the Poets of old deduced the pedigrees of their gods, they had first their several συζυγίαι their conjunctions, the coupling and mixing of things together, and thence proceeded their γενεαλογία their genealogies or generations; out of Chaos came Erebus and the dark night, the conjunction of whom begot Æther and the Day, and thence (a) Hesiod proceeds to explain the whole Pagan Theology concerning the original of their gods.

Tit. I. 10.  
Verse 14.

—3. 9.

(a) Hesiod. Theogon. p. m. 466.

VII. IN imitation of all which, and from a mixture of all together the Valentiniens, Basilidians, and the rest of the Gnostic crew formed the senseless and unintelligible Schemes of their Πλήρωμα and XXX Æones, divided into three Classes of conjunction; in the first were four couples, Profundity and Silence, Mind and Truth, the Word and Life, Man and the Church: in the second five, viz. Profound and Mixture, Ageratus and Union, &c. in the third six, the Paraclete and Faith, Patricos and Hope, &c. Of all which if any desire to know more, they may (if they can understand it) find enough in Irenæus, Tertullian, and Epiphanius to this purpose. The (b) last of whom not only affirms expressly that Valentinus and his Party introduced ἐθνόμωδον ποιήσιν, the fabulous and Poetic fancies of the Heathens, but draws a particular parallel between Hesiod's Theogonia, and their thirty Æones or Ages, consisting of

(b) Herod. XXXI. p. 76.  
vid. Tertul. de Prescript. Heret. c. 7. p. 204.



of fifteen Couples or Conjugations, Male and Female, which he shews exactly to agree both in the number, design, and order of them. For instance, *Valentinus* his Tribe begins thus;

<i>Ampsiu</i>	}	that is	}	Profundity
<i>Auraan</i>				Silence.
<i>Bucua</i>	}		}	Mind
<i>Tharthuu</i>				Truth
<i>Ubucua</i>	}		}	Word
<i>Thardeadie</i>				Life.
<i>Merexa</i>	}		}	Man
<i>Atarbarba</i>				Church,
<i>&amp;c.</i>				&c.

All which was nothing but a trifling and fantastical imitation of *Hesiod's* Progeny and generation of the gods, which being joined in conjugations succeeded in this order; *Chaos, Night, Erebus, Earth; Aether; Day, &c.* There being (as he observes) no difference between the one Scheme and the other, but only the change and alteration of the names. This may suffice for a *Specimen* to shew whence this idle Generation borrowed their extravagant conceits, though there were that had set much what the like on foot before the time of *Valentinus*. By such dark and wild notions and principles the *false Apostles* both in *Crete* and elsewhere, fought to undermine

the Christian Doctrine, mixing it also with Principles of great looseness and liberty, that they might the easier insinuate themselves into the affections of Men, whereby they brought over numerous Profelytes to their Party, of whom they made Merchandise, gaining sufficient advantage to themselves. So that 'twas absolutely necessary that these mens mouths should be stopped, and that they should not be suffered to go on under a shew of such lofty and sublime speculations, and a pretence of Christian liberty, to pervert Men from the Christian Religion, and the plainness and simplicity of the Gospel. Having done with Ecclesiastics, he proceeds to give directions for persons of all Ages and Capacities, whether old or young, Men or Women, Children or servants, and then of more public concernment, Rulers and People, and indeed how to deport our selves in the general carriage of our lives. In the close of the Epistle he wishes him to furnish *Zenas* and *Apollos*, the two Apostolical Messengers by whom this Letter was conveyed to him, with all things necessary for their return, commanding that he himself with all convenient speed should meet him at *Nicopolis* (though where that was is not certain, whether *Nicopolis* in *Epirus*, so called from *Augustus* his Victory there over *Antony* and *Cleopatra*, or rather *Nicopolis* in *Thrace*, upon the River *Nessus*, not far from the borders of *Macedonia*, whither *St. Paul* was now going, or some other City, whereof many in those parts of that name) where he had resolved to spend his Winter. And that by with-

Καὶ αὐτὴ μὲν ἡ τοῦ ἁγίου πνεύματος αἰὼν ὡς αὐτοῖς μυθολογούμενη παραβολή, καὶ ἡ κατὰ συνήθειαν πνευματικὴ διδασκαλία πνευματικῶν καὶ νοσηρίων, ὡς ἐάν τις συγκρίνῃ τῇ ἀρχῇ Ἡσίοδου καὶ Σπινδορίου καὶ τοῖς ἄλλοις ποιηταῖς καὶ ἑλλήνων φιλοσόφῳ, εὐραὶ δὲ ἐκ τῶν ἀληθινῶν αὐτὰ ὄντα, καὶ ἐδὲν ἔπεσον, καὶ ἐκ τούτου γινώσκῃ ὡς ἐδὲν ἔπεσον δαυμάσων οἱ καὶ δαυμάτων αἰρεσιάρχαι μυθευμένους ἐπαγγέλλοντες λέγειν ἐδὲν γὰρ ἄλλο, ἢ ἑλλήνων ἀπεμάξατο ὁ ἐπίπλαστον ποιητικῶς ἔξιν ὁ ἐδομύθη πλάνης καὶ διδασκαλίας, ἐδὲν ἄλλοι ὡς οὐκ ἔστιν, ἀλλὰ ὁ παρ' αὐτοῖς ἀληθινῶς βασιλευμένης ὀνομαστοῦται. Id. ibid.

TIT. I. II.

drawing

drawing so useful and vigilant a Shepherd he might not seem to expose his Flock to the fury and the rage of the Wolves, he promises to send *Artemas* or *Tychicus* to supply his place during his absence from them.

VIII. S. PAUL departing from *Ephesus* was come to *Troas*, where though he had a fair opportunity to preach the Gospel offered to him, yet (as himself tells us) *he had no rest in his Spirit, because he found not Titus his Brother*, whom he impatiently expected to bring him an account of the state of the Church of *Corinth*; whether *Titus* had been with him, and been sent upon this errand, or had been commanded by him to take *Corinth* in his way from *Crete*, is not known. Not meeting him here, away he goes for *Macedonia*, where at length *Titus* arrived and comforted him under all his other sorrows and difficulties, with the Joyful news of the happy condition of the Church of *Corinth*, and how readily they had reformed those miscarriages, which in his former Epistle he had charged upon them, fully making good that great character which he had given of them to *Titus*, and whereof they gave no inconsiderable evidence, in that kind and welcome entertainment which *Titus* found amongst them. Soon after St. Paul having received the Collections of the *Macedonian* Churches for the indigent Christians at *Jerusalem*, sent back *Titus*, and with him St. Luke to *Corinth*, to excite their Charity, and prepare their contributions against his own arrival there, and by them, he wrote his second Epistle to that Church.

IX. TITUS faithfully discharged his errand to the church of *Corinth*, and having dispatched the services for which he was sent, returned, we may suppose, back to *Crete*. Nor do we hear any further news of him till S. Paul's Imprisonment at *Rome*, whither he came (if my (a) Author say true) about two years after him, and continued with him till his Martyrdom, whereat he was present, and together with S. Luke committed him to his Grave. An account, which I confess I am the less inclined to believe, because assured by S. Paul himself, that before his death *Titus* had left him, and was gone into into *Dalmatia*, a Province of *Illyricum*, to plant that fierce and warlike Nation with the Gospel of Peace, taking it probably in his way in order to his return for *Crete*. And this is the last notice we find taken of him in the Holy Writings, nor do the Records of the Church henceforward furnish us with any certain *Memoires* or Remarks concerning him. Indeed were the story which some tell us true, one thing alone were enough to make him memorable to posterity, I mean his converting *Pliny the Younger*, that learned and eloquent Man, *Pro-consul* of *Bithynia*, and intimate Privy Councillor to *Trajan* the Emperor. For so they tell us (b), that returning from his Province in *Bithynia*, he landed in *Crete*, where the Emperor had commanded him to erect a Temple to *Jupiter*: which was accordingly done, and no sooner finished, but St. *Titus* cursed it, and it immediately tumbled to the ground. The Man, you may guess, was strangely troubled and came with tears to the Holy Man, to request his counsel, who advised him to begin it in the name of the God of the Christians, and it would not fail to prosper; he did so, and having finished it, was himself, together with his Son Baptized. Nay some to make the Story perfect, add, that he suffered Martyrdom for the Faith at *Novocomum* a City of *Insubria* in *Italy*, where he was born. The Reader I presume will not expect I should take pains to confute this Story, sufficiently improbable in it self, and which I behold as just of the same Metal, and coined in the same

2 Cor. 2. 12, 13.

2 Cor. 7. 5, 6, 7.  
& 13. 14, 15.

3 Cor. 2. 6,  
15, 16.

(a) Pet. de Na-  
tal. Hist. SS.  
lib. 7. c. 108.

2 Tim. 4. 10.

(b) Pet. de Na-  
tal. loc. cit. ex  
Act. S. Titi à  
Zena ( uti fer-  
tur ) script. Fl.  
Pseudo. Dext.  
Chron. ad. Ann.  
CCXX.

fame Mint with that of his Master *Trajan's* Soul being delivered out of Hell by the prayers of St. *Gregory the Great*, so gravely told, so seriously believed by many, not in the *Greek Church* only, but in the Church of *Rome*: nay, which the whole *East* and *West*, (if we may believe (a) *Damascen*) held to be *γνήσιον & ἀνιδέλητον*, true and uncontrollable.

(a) *Damascen.*  
*Serm. cxi. τῶν*  
*ἐν τῇς κακοίμ.*

X. S. *TITUS* lived, as the Ancients tell us, to a great age, dying about the ninety fourth year of his life. He died in peace (says (b) *Sophronius* and (c) *Isidore*) and lies buried in *Crete*: the (d) *Roman Martyrology* adds, that he was buried in that very Church, wherein St. *Paul* ordained him Bishop of that Island. I understand him where a Church was afterwards built, it not being likely there should be any at that time. At *Candia*, the *Metropolis* of the Island, there is, or lately was, an ancient and beautiful (e) Church dedicated to S. *Titus*, wherein under the high Altar his remains are said to be honourably laid up, and are both by the *Greeks* and *Latins* held in great veneration. Though what is become of them since that famous City lately fell into the hands of the *Turk*, that great scourge of Christendom, is to me unknown. His *Festival* is celebrated in the *Western Church* on the IV. day of *January*, in the *Greek Church* *August* the XXV. and among the Christians in *Egypt* (as appears by the *Arabic Calendar* published by (f) Mr. *Selden*) the XXII. of the Month *Bar-mahath*, answering to our *March* the XVIII. is consecrated to his memory.

(b) *Ap. Hieron.*  
*de Script. in*  
*Tit.*

(c) *De vit. &*  
*ob. SS. c. 87.*

(d) *Ad diem. IV*  
*Jan. p. 16.*

(e) *Cotovic.*  
*Itin lib. 1. c.*  
*12. p. 60.*

(f) *De Synedr.*  
*Tom. 3. c. 15.*  
*p. 326.*

The End of S. TITUS's Life.

THE





2. MONYIVE REFORMATIVE

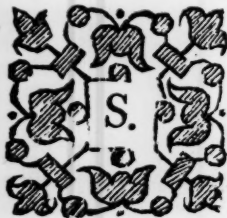
THE LIFE OF  
**S. DIONYSIUS**  
 THE  
 AREOPAGITE.



**S. DIONYSIUS AREOPAGITA.**

Dionysius born at Athens. The quality of his Parents. His Domestic studies. His foreign Travels. Egypt frequented as the staple place of all recondite Learning. His residence at Heliopolis. The strange and miraculous

*raculous Eclipse at our Saviour's Passion. Dionysius his remarques upon it. His return to Athens, and being made one of the Judges of the Areopagus. The nature of this Court: the number and quality of its Judges. S. Paul arraigned before it: his discourse, and its success. Dionysius his conversion. His further instruction by Hierotheus. Hierotheus, who. Dionysius constituted Bishop of Athens. A brief account of his Story according to those that confound him with Dionysius Bishop of Paris. These shewn to be distinct. The Original and procedure of the mistake enquired into. A probable account given of it. Dionysius his Martyrdom at Athens, and the time of it. A fabulous miracle reported of his Skull. The description of his person, and the hyperbolical commendations which the Greeks give of him. The Books ascribed to him. These none of his. Apollinaris (probably) shewed to be the Author of them. Several passages of the Ancients noted to that purpose. Books why oft published under other mens names. These Books the Foundation of Enthusiasm and mystical Theology. A passage in them instanced in to that purpose.*

I.  **DIONYSIUS** was born at *Athens*, the Eye of Greece, and Fountain of Learning and Humanity, the only place that without competition had for so many Ages maintained an uncontrolled reputation for Arts and Sciences, and to which there was an universal confluence of persons from all parts of the World to accomplish themselves in the more polite and useful Studies.

Though we find nothing particularly concerning his Parents, yet we may safely conclude them to have been persons of a noble quality, at least of a better rank than ordinary, seeing none were admitted to be *Areopagite* Judges (as \* one who knew very well informs us) Πᾶσι οἱ καλῶς γεγονότες, καὶ πολλῶν ἀρετῶν καὶ σπουδαίων ἐν τῷ βίῳ ἐνδεδεργμένοι, unless they were nobly born, and eminently exemplary for a vertuous and a sober life. Being born in the very midst of Arts and Civility, his education could not but be learned and ingenuous, especially considering the advantages of his birth and fortunes. Accordingly he was † instructed in all the learned Sciences of *Greece*, where in he made such vast improvements, that he easily out-stripped any of his time: scarce any Sect or Institution in Philosophy then in vogue, which he had not considered and made trial of: it does not indeed appear to which of them he particularly devoted and applied himself; and they who suppose him to have addicted himself to the School of *Plato*, do it, I conceive for no other reason, than because the Doctrine contained in the Books that bear his name, seems so neer of kin to the principles of that noble Sect.

II. **BUT** it was not an homebred Institution, or all the advantages which *Athens* could afford, that could fill the vast capacities of his mind, which he therefore resolved to polish and improve by foreign Travels. Being in the prime and vigour of his Youth, about the age of XXV \* years, he took with him one *Apollophanes* a *Rhetorician*, his fellow-student, and (if † *Syncellus* say true) his Kinsman, who was afterwards at *Smyrna*, Master to *Polemon* the *Loadicean*, as he was to *Aristides* the famous Philosopher and Apologist for the Christians. Thus furnished with a suitable Companion, he is said to have gone for *Egypt*, to converse with

\* *Isocr. Orat. Areopag. p. 147. via. Maxim. Prolog. Oper. S. Dionys. Pref. pag. 34.*

† *Shid. in voc. 3. Διονύσιος. p. 447.*

\* *Shid. ubi supr. Maxim. Pachym. Syncel. aliique plures. † Encom. S. Dionys. p. 349. Tom. 1.*



with their Philosophers and Wise Men, that he might perfect himself in the Study of the *Mathematics*, and the more mysterious and recondite parts of Learning. *Egypt* had in all Ages been looked upon as the prime School not only of *Astrology*, but of the more abstruse and uncommon speculations of *Theology*; and the great Masters of Wisdom and Divinity among the *Gentiles* never thought they had gained enough, till they had crowned their Studies by conversing with the *Egyptian* Sages. Hence it was frequented by *Orpheus*, *Homer*, *Solon*, *Thales* by *Pythagoras* and *Plato*, and whom not? nay of *Pythagoras*, (a) *Clemens of Alexandria* reports that he suffered himself to be circumcised, that so he might be admitted εἰς τὰ ἄδύτα, to the concealed Rites and Notions of their Religion, and be acquainted with their secret and mystical Philosophy. The place he fixed at was *Heliopolis*, a City between *Coptus* and *Alexandria*, where the *Egyptian* Priests for the most resided, as a place admirably advantageous for the contemplation of the Heavenly bodies, and the Study of Philosophy and Astronomy; and where (b) *Strabo* (who lived much about this time) tells us he was shewed the habitations of the Priests, and the apartments of *Plato* and *Eudoxus*, who lived here thirteen years; nay, a very ancient (c) Historian assures us, that *Abraham* himself lived here, and taught the *Egyptian* Priests Astronomy, and other parts of Learning.

(a) *Stromat.*  
lib. 1. p. 302.

(b) *Geograph.*  
lib. 17. p. 80.

(c) *Alexand.*  
*Polyhist. Hist.*  
*de Judeis ap.*  
*Euseb. prep.*  
*Evang.* l. 9.  
c. 17. p. 419.

III. *DIONYSIUS* no doubt plied his Studies in this place, during whose stay there, one memorable accident is reported. The Son of God about this time was delivered up at *Jerusalem* to an acute and shameful death by the hands of Violence and Injustice; when the Sun, as if ashamed to behold so great a wickedness, hid his head, and put on mourning to wait upon the Funerals of its Maker. This *Eclipse* was contrary to all the known Rules and Laws of Nature, it hapning in a Full Moon, when the Moon is in its greatest distance from the Sun, and consequently not liable to a conjunction with him, the Moon moving it self under the Sun from its *Oriental* to its *Occidental* point, and thence back by a retrograde motion, causing a strange defection of light for three hours together. That there was such a wonderful and preternatural darkness over all the Earth for three hours at the time of our Saviours suffering, whereby the Sun was darkened, is unanimously attested by the Evangelical Historians; and not by them only, but (d) *Phlegon Trallianus* sometimes servant to the Emperour *Trajan*, speaks of an *Eclipse* of the Sun that hapned about that time, Μεγάλη ἡ ἐκλειψὶς τοῦ ἡλίου, the greatest of any that had been ever known, whereby the day was turned into night, and the Stars appeared at noon-day, an Earthquake also accompanying it, whereby many houses at *Nice* in *Bithynia* were overturned. *Apollonphanes* beholding this strange *Eclipse*, cried out to *Dionysius* that these were changes and revolutions of some great affairs; to whom the other replied, that either God suffered, or at least sympathized and bore part with him that did. I confess these passages are not to be found in the most ancient Writers of the Church: but that ought to be no just exception, when we consider what little care was then taken to consign things to writing, and how great a part of those few ancient Records that were written were quickly lost, whereof *Eusebius* sufficiently complains; not to say, that a great many writings might, and did escape his notice; and (e) *Maximus*, I remember, answering the objection, that the Books ascribed to S. *Denys* are not mentioned by *Eusebius*, tells us, that

(d) *Chronic. lib.*  
13. apud *Euseb.*  
*Chron. ad Ann.*  
*Chr. XXXII.*  
*vid. Græc. ET*  
*AT.* p. 202. *vid.*  
*Orig. contr.*  
*Cris. l. 2. p. 80.*  
*Et Chron. Alex.*  
*and. ad Ann.*  
*Tiber. XVIII.*  
*Indict. 4. Olymp.*  
*iad. CCII. 4.*  
p. 520.

(e) *Prolog. ante*  
*oper. S. Dionys.*  
p. 36.

himself had met with several pieces of the Ancients, of which not the least footstep in *Eusebius*. But however that be, it concludes not against the matter of fact, many things though never entered upon Record, being as to the substance of them, preserved by constant Tradition and Report. I deny not but that the several Authors who report this passage, might immediately derive it out of the Epistles said to be written to S. Polycarp and Apolophanes. But then cannot suppose that the Author of these Epistles did purely feign the matter of fact of his own head, but rather delivered what Tradition had conveyed down to his time. Indeed that which would more shrewdly shake the foundation of the Story, if it be true, is what \* *Origen* supposes, that this *darkness* that was over all the Earth, and the Earthquake that attended our Lord's Passion, extended no farther than *Judaea*, as some of the Prodigies no farther than *Jerusalem*. But to what degrees of truth or probability that opinion may approve it self, I leave to others to enquire.

\* Tract.  
XXXV. in  
Matth. fol. m.  
89. col. 1.

IV. *DIONYSIUS* having finished his Studies at *Heliopolis*, returned to *Athens*, incomparably fitted to serve his Country, and accordingly was advanced to be one of the Judges of the *Areopagus*, a place of great honour and renown. The *Areopagus* was a famous Senate-house built upon a Hill in *Athens*, wherein assembled their great Court of Justice, τῶν ἐν τοῖς Ἑλλήσι δικαστηρίων τιμωτάτον καὶ ἀγνώτατον, as † one calls it, the most sacred and venerable Tribunal in all Greece. Under their cognizance came all the greater and more capital Causes, and especially matters of Religion, blasphemy against the gods, and contempt of the holy mysteries; and therefore S. Paul was arraigned before this Court, as a setter forth of strange gods, when he preached to them concerning Jesus and Anastasis, or the Resurrection. None might be of this Council but persons of birth and quality, wise and prudent Men, and of very strict and severe manners, and so great an awe and reverence did this solemn and grave Assembly strike into those that sat in it, that \* *Isocrates* tells us, that in his time, when they were somewhat degenerated from their ancient Virtue, however otherwise Men were irregular and exorbitant, yet once chosen into this Senate, they presently ceased from their vicious inclinations, and chose rather to conform to the Laws and Manners of that Court, ἢ ἢ αὐτῶν κακίας ἐμυθεῖν, than to continue in their wild and debauch'd course of life. They were exactly upright and impartial in their proceedings, and heard causes at night, or in the dark, that the person of the Plaintiff or the Pleader might have no undue influence upon them. Their sentence was decretory and final, and from their determination lay no Appeal. Their number was uncertain, by some restrained to nine, by others enlarged to thirty one, by others to fifty one, and to more by some. Indeed that *Novemviri*, who were the *Basileus* or King, the *Archon*, the *Polemarchus*, and the six *Thesmotheta*, were the constant Seminary and Nursery of this great Assembly, who having discharged their several Offices, annually passed into the *Areopagus*, and therefore when *Socrates* was condemned by this \* Court, we find no less than two hundred fourscore and one, giving their Votes against him, besides those whose *White Stones* were for his Absolution: and in an ancient Inscription upon a Column in the *Acropolis* at *Athens*, erected to the memory of *Rufus Festus*, Proconsul of Greece, and one of these Judges, mention is made of the *Areopagite Senate* of three hundred.

† *Aristid. Rom.*  
I. p. 331.

\* *Loco. Supra.*  
*laudat.*

\* *D. Lart. l. 2.*  
*In vit. Socrat.*  
p. 115.

--- ΗΕΞ ΑΡΕΟΠΑΓΟΤ ΒΟΥΛΗ  
ΤΩΝ ΤΡΙΑΚΟΣΙΩΝ, ΚΑΙ Ο  
ΔΗΜΟΣ Ο ΑΘΗΝΑΙΩΝ --- *Cetera*  
*vid. apud R. Volaterran. Comment. Urban. l. 8. col.*  
318.

V. IN

V. IN this grave and venerable judicature sat our S. *Denys*, when S. *Paul* about the year XLIX or L, came to *Athens*, where he resolutely asserted the cause of Christianity against the attempts of the *Stoic* and *Epicurean* Philosophers, who mainly appeared against it. The *Athenians*, who were infinitely curious and superstitious in matters of Religion, not knowing what to make of this new and strange Doctrine that he taught, presently brought him before the *Areopagite*-Senate, to whom the proper cognizance of such causes did delong. Here in a neat and eloquent discourse, delivered not with greater freedom of mind, than strength of reason, he plainly demonstrated the folly and absurdity of those many vain deities, whom they blindly worshipped, explained to them that infinite Being that made and governed the World, and what indispensable obligations he had laid upon all Mankind to worship and adore him, and how much he had enforced all former engagements to gratitude and obedience, to repentance and reformation by this last and best dispensation, by sending his Son to publish so excellent a Religion to the World. His discourse however entertained by some with scorn and laughter, and gravely put off by others, yet wanted not a happy influence upon many, whom it convinced of the reasonableness and divinity of the Christian Faith: among whom was our *Dionysius*, one of the Judges that sat upon him, and *Damaris* his Wife (for so \* *Chrysostom* and others make her) and probably his whole house. An † Author (I confess I know not by what Authority) relates a particular dispute between *Dionysius* and S. *Paul* concerning the *Unknown God*, who was God-man was to appear in the latter Ages to reform the World; this the Apostle shewed to be the Holy *Jesus*, lately come down from Heaven, and so satisfied S. *Denys* that he prayed him to intercede with Heaven, that he might be fully confirmed in this belief. The next day S. *Paul* having restored sight to one that was born blind, charged him to go to *Dionysius*, and by that token claim his promise to be his Convert; who being amazed at this sight, readily renounced his Idolatry, and was with his house baptized into the Faith of Christ. But I know the credit of my Author too well to lay any great stress upon this relation, and the rather because I find that *Baronius* himself is not willing to venture his Faith upon it. To which I might add \* S. *Chrysostom's* observation, that the *Areopagite* was converted ἀπὸ διμυρορίας μόνως, only by S. *Paul's* discourse, there being no miracle that we know of, that might promote and further it.

VI. BEING baptized, he was, we are (a) told, committed to the care and tutorage of S. *Hierotheus*, to be by him further instructed in the Faith, a person not so much as mentioned by any of the Ancients, which creates with me a vehement suspicion, that it is only a feigned name, and that no such person ever really was in the World. Indeed the (b) *Greek Metanion* makes him to have been one of the Nine Senators of the *Areopagus*, to have been converted by S. *Paul*, and by him made Bishop of *Athens*, and then appointed Tutor to S. *Denys*. (c) Others make him by birth a *Spaniard*, first Bishop of *Athens*, and then travelling into his own Country, Bishop of *Segovia* in *Spain*. And both I believe with equal truth. Nor probably had such a person ever been thought of, had there not been some intimations of such an instructor in *Dionysius* his Works, confirmed by the *Scholiasts* that writ upon him, and afterwards by others improved into a formal Story: As for S. *Dionysius* he is made to travel with S. *Paul* for three years after his Conversion, and then to have been

\* De sacerdot.  
l. 4. c. 7. p. 67.  
T. 4. Ambros.  
Epist. 82. p.  
198. Tom. 3.  
† Hild. in passio.  
S. Dionys. c. 6. 7.  
8. ap. Sm. Obseq.  
IX. p. 122.

\* Loc. sup.  
citat.

(a) S. Metaph.  
ap. Sur. ibid.  
Maxim. Synod.  
ubi supr. Pseudo.  
Dionys. de  
divin. nomin. c.  
2. p. 175. T. 1.  
(b) Τῶ δ' ὅτι  
ἡ ἐκπαρ.  
(c) Pseudo.  
Dixt. Chron.  
ad Ann. Cbr.  
LXXI.



been constituted by him Bishop of *Athens*; so that it was necessary it seems to pack *Hierothens* into *Spain*, that room might be made for him. Indeed that *Dionysius* was, and that without any affront to S. *Hierothens*, the first Bishop of *Athens*, we are assured by an Authority that cannot be doubted, (a) *Dionysius* the famous Bishop of *Corinth* (who lived not long after him) expressly affirming it; and (b) *Nicephorus* adds, what is probable enough, that it was done with S. *Paul's* own hands. I shall but mention his journey to *Jerusalem* to meet the Apostles, who are said to have come from all parts of the World to be present at the last hours of the *Blessed Virgin*, and his several Visitations of the Churches in *Phrygia* and *Achaia*, to plant or confirm the Faith.

VII. ALL which, supposing they were true, yet here we must take our leave. For now the Writers of his life generally make him prepare for a much longer journey. Having settled his affairs at *Athens*, and substituted a Successor in his See, he is said to go to *Rome* (a brief account of things shall suffice, where no truth lies at the bottom) at *Rome* he was dispatched by S. *Clemens* into *France*, where he planted the Faith and founded an Episcopal See at *Paris*, whence after many years, about the ninetieth year of his Age, he returned into the *East*, to converse with S. *John* at *Ephesus*, thence back again to *Paris*, where he suffered martyrdom, and among in nine other miracles reported of him, he is said to have taken up his head, after it had been cut off by the Executioners, and to have carried it in his hands (an Angel going before, and an heavenly *Chorus* attending him all the way) for two miles together, till he came to the place of his interment, where he gently laid it and himself down, and was there honourably entombed. This is the sum of a very tedious Story. A Story so improbable in it self, so directly contrary to what (c) *Severus Sulpitius* affirms, that none were martyred for the Faith in *France*, till the fifth Persecution under the reign of M. *Aurelius Antoninus*, that I shall not spend much time in its confutation. Especially when the thing has been unanswerably done by so many learned and ingenious Men in the Church of *Rome*, and by none more effectually than *Sirmond* and *Launoy* who have cleared it beyond all possibilities of just exception.

VIII. INDEED we find in several very ancient (d) *Martyrologies*, as also in (e) *Gregory* Bishop of *Tours*, who reports it out of the *Acts* of *Saturninus* the Martyr, that one *Dionysius* with some others was sent by the Bishop of *Rome* into *France* in the time of *Decius* the Emperour, *Ann. Chr. CCL.* where he preached the Christian Faith, and became Bishop of *Paris*, and after great torments and sufferings, was beheaded for his resolute and constant profession of Religion, and accordingly his martyrdom is recorded in the most ancient *Martyrologies*, upon a day distinct from that of the *Athenian Dionysius*, and the same miracles ascribed to him, that are reported of the other. And that this was the first and true foundation of the Story, I suppose no wise Man will doubt. Nor indeed is the least mention made of any such thing, I am sure not in any Writer of Name and Note, till the times of *Charles the Great*: When (f) *Ludovicus* Emperour, and King of *France* wrote to *Hilduin* Abbot of S. *Denys*, to pick up whatever *Memoirs* he could find concerning him, either in the Books of the *Greeks* or *Latins*, or such Records as they had at home, and to digest and compile them into orderly Tracts. He did so, and furnished out a very large and particular

(a) Apud Euseb.  
H. Eccl. l. 3. c. 4.  
p. 74. & l. 4.  
c. 23. p. 144.  
(b) Niceph.  
H. Eccl. l. 2.  
c. 20. p. 167.

(b) Sacr. Hist.  
lib. 2. pag. 143.

(d) Usuard.  
Martyr. Cal.  
lind. Olib. &  
VII. Id. Olib.  
Martyr. Bede  
VII. Id. Olib.  
(e) Greg. Turon.  
Hist. Franc.  
lib. 1. c. 28. p.  
269. Edit. Du.  
Chesn.

(f) Vid. Epist.  
ejus, & Hilduin.  
Rescript. apud  
Syr. loc. citata

ricular relation; which was quickly improved and defended by *Hincmar* Bishop of *Rhemes* Scholar to *Hilduin*, and *Anastasius*, *Bibliothecarius* of *Rome*, to whom the *Greek* Writers of that and the following Ages readily gave their Vote and Suffrage. Nor has a late (a) Author much mended the matter in point of Antiquity, who tells us that in a convention of Bishops in *France* held *Ann. DCCCXXV.* ten years before *Hilduin* wrote his *Arcopagitics*; mention is made of S. *Dionysius* his being sent into *France* by *Clemens* S. *Peter's* Successor. For we can easily allow that there might about that time be some blind and obscure Tradition, though the fragment of the *Synod*, which he there produces, speaks not one syllable of this *Dionysius* his being the *Arcopagite*, or having any relation to *Athens*. In short the case seems plainly this:

(a) *J. Mabillon*,  
not. ad *Epist.*  
*Hincmar. inter*  
*Analect. Veter.*  
p. 63.

IX. *HILDUIN* set on by his potent Patron, partly that he might exalt the honour of *France*, partly to advance the reputation of his particular Convent, finding an obscure *Dionysius* to have been Bishop of *Paris*, removes him an Age or two higher, and makes him the same with him of *Athens*, a person of greater honour and veneration; and partly from the Records, partly from the Traditions current among themselves, draws up a formal account of him from first to last; adding 'tis like what he thought good of his own, to make up the Story. These Commentaries of his, we suppose, were quickly conveyed to *Rome*, where being met with by the *Greeks*, who came upon frequent Embassies to that See about that time, they were carried over to *Constantinople*, out of which *Methodius* (who had himself been *Aprocrisarius* or Ambassador from *Nicephorus* the *Greek* Patriarch to *Pope Paschal* at *Rome*, and after infinite troubles was advanced to the Patriarchat of *Constantinople*,) furnishes himself with materials to write the life of *Dionysius*: for that he had them not out of the Records of his own Church is plain, in that when *Hilduin* set upon composing his *Arcopagitics*, he expressly says, (b) that the *Greeks* had written nothing concerning the Martyrdom of S. *Denys*, the particulars whereof by reason of the vast distance, they could not attain. Out of *Hilduin* therefore, or at least some reports of that time, *Methodius* must needs derive his intelligence; but most probably from *Hilduin*, between whose relation and that of *Methodius*, there is so exact an agreement, not only in particular passages, but oft-times in the very same words, as (c) *Monsieur Launoy* has demonstrated by a particular collation. *Methodius* his Tract was by the *Greek* Embassadors quickly brought from *Constantinople* to *Rome*, where (d) *Anastasius* confesses he met with it, translated it into *Latin*, and thence transmitted it into *France*, where it was read, owned, and published by (e) *Hincmar*, as appears by his Epistle to *Charles* the Emperour. Where he plainly tells us, that no sooner had he read this Life written by *Methodius*, but he found it admirably to agree with what he had read in his Youth (he means I doubt not, the Writings of *Hilduin*) by whom and how the *Acts* of S. *Denys* and his companions came to the knowledge of the *Romans*, and thence to the notice of the *Greeks*. This is the most likely pedigree and procedure of the Story that I can think of; and from hence how easie was it for the after-Writers both of the *Western* and the *Eastern* Church to swallow down a Story, thus plausibly fitted to their taste? Nor had the *Greeks* any reason over-nicely to examine, or reject what made so much for the honour of their Church and Nation, and seemed to lay not *France* only, but the whole *Western* Church under an obligation to them, for furnish-

(b) *Rescript. ad*  
*Ludov. Imper.*  
n. 10. *ibid.*

(c) *Respons. diss.*  
*cap. 9.*  
p. 120.  
(d) *Epist. ad Ca-*  
*rol. Calv. Imp.*  
*apud. Sur. Ibid.*  
p. 152.  
(e) *Extat apud*  
*Sur. ubi sup. p.*  
*Mabillon. loc.*  
*citat.*

ing

ing them with so great and excellent a person. But to return to our *Dionysius*.

X. **THOUGH** we cannot doubt but that he behaved himself with all diligence and fidelity in the discharge of his Office; yet because the Ancients have conveyed down no particulars to our hands, we shall not venture upon reports of false, or at best doubtful credit. Nothing of certainty can be recovered of him, more than what *Aristides* the Christian Philosopher (who himself lived, and was probably born at *Athens*, not long after *Dionysius*) relates in the \* *Apology* which he published for the Christian Religion; that after a most resolute and eminent confession of the Faith, after having undergone several of the severest kinds of torment, he gave the last and great testimony to it, by laying down his life. This was done, as is most probable, under the Reign of *Domitian*, as is confessed (betray'd into it by a secret instinct of truth) by Abbot *Hilduin*, *Methodius*, and their followers: while others extend it to the times of *Trajan*, others to the Reign of *Adrian*, who entered upon the Empire *Ann.* CXVII. partly that they might leave room enough for the account which they give of him, partly to preserve the Authority of his Writings, wherein a passage is cited out of *Ignatius* his Epistles, written just before his Martyrdom, *Ann.* CVII. The Reader I hope will not expect from me an account of the miracles said to be done by him either before or since his death, or of the fierce contests that are between several places in the *Roman* Church concerning his Reliques. One passage however I shall not omit. In a Village in *Luxemburg* not far from *Treves* is a Church dedicated to S. *Denys*, wherein is kept his Scull, at least a piece of it, on the Crown whereof there is a white Cross while the other parts of the Scull are black. This, common Tradition, and some † Authors to avouch it, will have to be made, when S. *Paul* laid his hands upon him at his consecration. Which if so, I have no more to observe, but that *Orders* (which the Church of *Rome* make a Sacrament) did here even in a literal sense confer an *indeleble character* and mark upon him.

\* *Apud Ulpian. & Adon. Mart. V. Nov. Octobr.*

† *Vid. Author. citat. ap. P. Mal-leix. not. ad vit. Dionys. p. 241.*

XI. **HIS** *σωματικὸς*, the shape and figure of his Body is by the \* *Greek Menæon* thus described: he was of a middle stature, slender, fair, but inclining to paleness, his nose gracefully bending, hollow-eyed with short eye-brows, his ear large, his hair thick and white, his beard moderately long, but very thin. For the image of his mind expressed in his discourses, and the excellent conduct of his life, the *Greeks* according to their magnifying humour as well as language, bestow most hyperbolical eulogies and commendations on him. They stile him, *ἱεροφάντορα*, & *τῶν ἀπορρήτων θεωρῶν*, the Sacred Interpreter and contemplator of hidden and unspeakable mysteries, and an unsearchable depth of heavenly knowledge; *τριαδικὸν θεολόγον*, τῶν ὑπὲρ ἐννοιαζ ζωστικοῦν χαρισμάτων στοφῶρον ὄργανον, the *Trinity-Divine*, the divine instrument of those enlivening graces that are above all comprehension. They say of him that his life was wonderful, his discourse more wonderful; his tongue full of light, his mouth breathing an holy fire; but his mind *ἀκριβῶς θεοειδέτατος*, most exactly like to God; with a great deal more of the like nature up and down their Offices. And certainly were the notions which he has given us of the Cœlestial Hierarchy and Orders of Angels, and the things of that supramundane State, as clear and certain, as some would persuade us, he might deserve that title which

(a) others

*Ibid.*



(a) others give him πτερόγιον ἢ πτερόν τῷ ἕραν, the Wing, or the Bird of Heaven.

XII. THE great and evident demonstration of his Wisdom and Eloquence, we are told (b), are the works which he left behind him, the Notions and Language wherewith they are cloathed, being so lofty and sublime, as are scarcely capable to be the issue of a meer mortal Creature. Books infinitely intricate and perplex (as our Countryman (c) *Johannes Scotus*, who first translated them into *Latine*, tells us) far beyond the reach of Modern apprehension, and which few are able to pierce into, both for their Antiquity, and sublimeness of those Heavenly Mysteries, whereof they treat. A work so grateful to all speculative Enquirers, into the natures of things, and the more abstruse and recondite parts of Learning, that (if *Suidas* say true) some of the Heathen Philosophers, and particularly *Proclus*, often borrows not only his notions, but his very words and Phrases from him; whence he suspects, that some of the Philosophers at *Athens* stole those Books of his mentioned in the Epistle Dedicatory to *S. Timothy*, and which now are wanting, and published them under their own names. But had I been to make the conjecture, I should rather have suspected that this *Pseudo-Dionysius* fetched his speculations, and good parts of his expressions from *Plotinus*, *Jamblicus*, and the rest of the later *Platonists*. For certainly one egg is not more like another, than this mans Divinity is like the Theology of that School, especially as explained by the Philosophers who lived in the first Ages of Christianity. That our *Dionysius* was not the Author of the Books at this day extant under his name, I shall not concern my self to shew. For however it be contended for by many with all imaginable zeal and stiffness, yet want there not those, and men of note, even in the *Roman* Communion, who clearly disown and deny it; as among the Reformed it has been largely disproved by many, and by none with greater learning and industry than *Monsieur Daillé*, who has said whatever is necessary, if not more than enough upon this Argument: though as to the date of their birth and first appearance, when he thrusts them down to the sixth Century, he takes somewhat off from the Antiquity, which may with probability be allowed them.

XIII. WHO was the particular Author of these Books, is not easie to determine. Among the several conjectures about this matter, none methinks deserves a fairer regard, than what (d) *Laurentius Valla* tells us some learned *Greeks* of his time conceived, that it was *Apollinaris*, but whether Father or Son, it matters not, both being Men of parts, and of the same strain and humour, ἀπόπειρε ἑλληνικῶν λόγων διδασκαλοὶ (e), both of them Masters in all the learning of the *Greeks*, though of the two the Son was most likely to be the Man. Certain it is, that *Apollinaris* was πρὸς πανδοκίῳ εἶδεν, καὶ λόγων ἰδίαν παρεσκευασμένη, as (f) *Sozomen* describes him, trained up to all sorts of Learning, and skilled in the artifices and frames of Words and Speeches, and (g) *S. Basil* says of him, that being indued with a facility of writing upon any Argument, joyned with a great readiness and volubility of Language, he filled the World with his Books: though even in his Theologic Tracts he sought not to establish them by Scripture-proofs, but from humane arguments and ways of reasoning: διαχυρίζετο ὃ τὸ δόγμα αὐτοῦ, ἐκ ἀπὸ ῥητῶ πινόμεν, ἀλλ' ἀπὸ ψευδοίας, as (h) another also says of him. He was born and bred at *Alexan-*

(a) *Vid. Anast. Biblioth. Epist. ap. Sur. loc. cit. p. 132. Chrysost. de Pseudo-Porph. p. 401. Tom. 6.*

(b) *Suid. in voce Διονύσιος, p. 745. Niceph. H. Eccl. l. 2. c. 20. p. 167.*

(c) *Epist. ad Carol. Cal. Franc. Reg. ap. Usser. Epist. Hibern. p. 55.*

(d) *Annot. in Act. Apost. c. 17.*

(e) *Socrat. H. Eccl. l. 2. c. 46. p. 160.*

(f) *H. Eccl. l. 9. c. 18. p. 623. Socr. loc. citat. (g) Ep. LXXIV. p. 125. Tom. 2.*

(h) *Leont. de Sect. Act. IV. b. 446.*

dria ( than which no place more famous for Schools of Humane Learning, especially the profession of the *Platonic Philosophy* ) and afterwards lived at *Loadicea*, where he was so intimately familiar with the *Gentile-Philosophers*, that *Theodotus* Bishop of the place forbid him ( though in vain ) any longer to keep company with them, fearing lest he might be perverted to *Paganism* ; as afterwards *George* his Successor excommunicated him for his insolent contempt in doing it. This is said to have given the first occasion to his starting aside from the Orthodox Doctrines of the Church For resenting it as an high affront, and being

(a) *Socrat. ib.*  
p. 161.

(b) *Socrat. loc.*  
citat.

(c) *Sozom. l. 6. c.*  
27. p. 676. ex  
*Ep. Nazian. de*  
*Nestor.*

(d) *Theodor.*  
l. 5. c. 3. p.  
200.

(e) *Basil. ubi.*  
supr.

(f) *Ep. Hares.*  
77. p. 421.

(g) *Ibid. vid.*  
*Leont. loc. citat.*

(h) *Pr. Stil.*  
*ling. Becc's An-*  
*swer to Cress.*

*Apol. c. 2.*  
*Secl. 17. p.*

133.

(i) *De Secl.*  
*Art. VIII. p.*

527.

(k) *Vi. l. Collat.*  
*Cathol. cum. Se-*  
*verian. Conc.*

*Tom. 4. col.*  
1767.

(l) *Theod. H.*  
*Ec. l. 5. c. 9,*  
*10. p. 212.*

(m) *Socrat. l. 3.*  
*c. 16. p. 187.*

(n) *Sozom. l. 6.*  
*c. 25. p. 672.*

*Sozom. l. 5. c.*  
*18. p. 623.*

τῇ ἐνδοξῇ τῇ σφιστικῇ λόγῳ διαρρῶν (a), prompted with a bold conceit of his Sophistical Wit, and subtil ways of reasoning, he began to innovote in matters of Doctrine, and set up a Sect after his own name. And certainly whoever throughly considers *Apollinaris* his principles, as they are represented by (b) *Socrates*, (c) *Sozomon*, (d) *Theodore*, (e) *Basil* and (f) *Epiphanius*, will find many of them to have a great affinity with the *Platonic* notions, and some of them not un-akin to those in *Dionysius* his Books, and that as to the Doctrine of the *Trinity* they were right in the main, which (g) *Socrates* particularly tells us the *Apollinarians* confessed to be consubstantial. To which I add, what a learned (b) Man of our own has observed upon this argument, that *Apollinaris* and his followers were guilty of forging Ecclesiastical Writings, which they fastned upon *Gregory Thaumaturgus*, *Athanasius*, and *Pope Julius*, as (i) *Leontius* particularly proves at large. So that they might be probably enough forged in the School of *Apollinaris*, either by himself, or some of his Disciples.

XIV. IT makes the conjecture look yet more favourable, that there was one (k) *Dionysius*, a friend probably of *Apollinaris*, to whom he is said to have written that famous Epistle that went under the name of *Pope Julius* : and then among his own Scholars he had a *Timotheus* (condemned together with his Master by (l) *Damasus*, and the Synod at *Rome*) so that they might easily enough take occasion from their own to vent their conceptions under the more venerable names of those ancient and Apostolic persons. Or, which is more probable, *Apollinaris* himself so well versed in the arts of counterfeiting, might from them take the hint to compose and publish them under the name of the ancient *Dionysius*. Nor indeed could he likely pitch upon a name more favourable and agreeable to his purpose, a Man born in the very Center of Learning and Eloquence, and who might easily be supposed to be bred up in all the Institutions of Philosophy, and in a peculiar manner acquainted with the Writings and Theorems of *Plato* and his followers, so famous, so generally entertained in that place. And there will be the more reason to believe it still, when we consider that, (m) *Apollinaris* reduced the Gospels and the Writings of the Apostles into the form of *Dialogues* in imitation of *Plato* among the *Greeks*. And then for the stile, which is very lofty and affected, we noted before how peculiarly qualified *Apollinaris* was with a quick invention of words, and a Sophistical way of Speech, and the (n) *Historian* observes that the great instrument by which he set on foot his Heresie, and wherein he had a singular talent, was τῶν λόγων, artificial Schemes of Words, and subtle ways to express himself. Besides, he was an incomparable Poet (not only the Father but the Son) to the study whereof he peculiarly addicted himself, and wrote Poems to the imitation, and the envy of the best among the

the Heathens. In imitation of *Homer* he writ *Heroic* Poems of the History of the old Testament till the Reign of *Saul*, *Comedies* after the manner of *Menander*, *Tragedies* in imitation of *Euripides*, and *Odes* in imitation of *Pindar* : he composed Divine Hymns, that were publicly sung in the Churches of his Separation, and Songs which Men sung both in their Feasts and at their Trades, and even Women at their Distaff. By this means he was admirably prepared for lofty and Poetic strains, and might be easily tempted, especially the matter admitting it, to give way to wanton and luxuriant fancy in the choice, composition, and use of words. And certainly never was there a stranger heap (*λέξεων πολλῶν*, *Maximus* himself calls it) of sublime, affected, bombast, and Poetic phrases, than is to be met with in these Books attributed to Saint *Denys*.

*Id. l. 6. c. 25. p. 671.*

XV. IF it shall be enquired, why a Man should after so much pains chuse to publish his Labours rather under another mans name than his own; there needs no other answer, than that this has been an old Trade, which some men have taken up, either because 'twas their humour to lay their own Children at others Mens doors, or to decline the censure which the notions they published were likely to expose them to, or principally to conciliate the greater esteem and value for them, by thrusting them forth under the name of those, for whom the World has a just regard and veneration. As for *Monsieur Daillé's* conjecture, that the reason why several learned Volumes were written and fastned upon the Fathers of the ancient Church, was to vindicate them from that common imputation of the *Gentiles*, who were wont to charge the Christians for being a rude and illiterate generation, whose Books are stuffed with nothing but plain simple Doctrines, and who were strangers to all kind of Learning and Eloquence; that to obviate this objection, several took upon them to compose Books full of Learning and Philosophy which they published under the names of the first Preachers and Propagators of the Christian Faith, and that this particularly was the case of the *Recognitions* ascribed to *Clemens*, and the Writings attributed to *Dionysius* : The first I grant very likely and rational, the *Recognitions* being probably written about the second Century, when (as appears from *Celsus* his Book against the Christians) this objection was most rife, and when few learned discourses had been published by them : But can by no means allow it as the second, *Dionysius* his Works being written long after the Learning and Eloquence of the Christians had sufficiently approved it self to the World, to the shame and conviction, the envy and admiration of its greatest Enemies. And there was far less need of them for this purpose, if it be true what *Daillé* himself so confidently asserts, and so earnestly contends for, that they were not written till the beginning of the sixth Century, about the Year DXX. when there were few learned *Gentiles* left to make this objection, Heathenism being almost wholly banished out of the civilized World.

*De Script. Dionys. c. 39. p. 221.*

XVI. BUT whoever was their genuine Parent, or upon what account soever he wrote them, it is plain, that he laid the foundation of a mystical and unintelligible Divinity among Christians, and that hence proceeded all those wild *Rosicrucian* notions, which some Men are so fond of, and the life and practice whereof they cry up as the very Soul and perfection of the Christian State. And that this Author does immediately minister to this design, let the Reader judge by one instance, and I assure



him 'tis none of the most obscure and intricate passages in these Books. I have set it down in its own Language as well as ours, not being confident of my own version ( though expressed word for word ; ) for I pretend to no great faculty in translating what I do not understand. Thus

then he discourses concerning the knowledge of God. God ( saith he ) is known in all things, and without all things : he is known by knowledge, and by ignorance : there is both a cogitation of him, and a word, and a science, and a touch, and a sense, and an opinion, and an imagination, and a name, and all other things ; and yet he is neither thought, nor spoken, nor named. He is not any thing of those things that are, nor is he known in any of the things that are ; he is both all things in all, and nothing in nothing ; out of all things he is known to all, and out of nothing to nothing. These are the things which we rightly discourse concerning God. And this again is the most divine knowledge of God, that which is known by ignorance, according to the union that

Διὸ καὶ ἐν παντί ὁ Θεὸς γινώσκει, καὶ ὡς πάντων καὶ διὰ γνώσεως ὁ Θεὸς γινώσκει, καὶ διὰ ἀγνοίας. Καὶ ὅτι αὐτὸς καὶ νόσις, καὶ λόγος, καὶ ὁπσιμὸς, καὶ ἐπαφή, καὶ αἰσθησις, καὶ δόξα, καὶ φαντασία, καὶ ὄνομα, καὶ τὰ ἄλλα πάντα, καὶ ὅτε νοεῖ, ὅτε λέγει, ὅτε ὀνομάζει. Καὶ ἔκ ὅτι πᾶσι ὄντων, ἔστι ἐν παντί ὄντων γινώσκει. Καὶ ἐν παντί πάντα ὅτι, καὶ ἐν ἐδνὶ ἔδνῳ, καὶ ἐν πάντων πᾶσι γινώσκει, καὶ ὅτι ἐδνὸς ἐδνί. Καὶ ὅτι πάντα ὁρῶντες ὡς Θεὸς λέγουμεν. Καὶ ὅτι αὐτὸς ἡ θεοτάτη τῶ Θεῷ γνώσις, ἡ δὲ ἀγνοίας γινώσκουμένη, καὶ ἡ ἑστὴ νῦν ἔνωσις ἔστι ὁ νῦν ὅτι ὄντων πάντων ὁποῖός, ἔπειτα καὶ ἑαυτὸν ἀρεῖς, ἐνωθῇ τῷ ἑαυτοῦ ἀκρίαν, ἐκείδαν καὶ ἐκεῖ τῷ ἀνεξερδνήτω βᾶθαι τὴ σοφίαν καὶ λαμπρότητα. Dionys. de Divin. Nomin. cap. 7. p. 238.

is above understanding ; when the mind getting at a distance from all things that are, and having dismissed it self, is united to those super-illustrious Beams, from whence and where it is enlightened in the unfathomable depth of wisdom. More of this and the like stuff is plentifully scattered up and down these Books. And if this be not mystical and profound enough, I know not what is ; and which certainly any Man but one well versed in this sort of Theology, would look upon as a strange Jargon of nonsense, and contradiction. And yet this is the height of devotion and piety, which some Men earnestly press after, and wherein they glory. As if a Man could not truly understand the mysteries of Religion, till he had resigned his reason ; nor be a Christian, without first becoming an Enthusiast ; nor be able to speak sense, unless in a Language which none can understand.

Writings falsely attributed to him.

<i>De Cælesti Hierarchia.</i>	Lib. I.	<i>Ad Sosipatrum.</i>	Epistola I.
<i>De Divinis Nominibus.</i>	I.	<i>Ad Polycarpum.</i>	I.
<i>De Ecclesia Hierarchia.</i>	I.	<i>Ad Demophilum.</i>	I.
<i>De Mystica Theologia.</i>	I.	<i>Ad Titum.</i>	I.
<i>Epistola ad Caium.</i>	IV.	<i>Ad Joannem Evangelistam.</i>	I.
<i>Ad Dorotheum.</i>	I.	<i>Ad Apollonem.</i>	I.

The End of S. DIONYSIUS's Life.

THE

THE LIFE OF  
**S. CLEMENS,**  
 BISHOP of ROME.



*Michael Burghers*

*delineavit et sculpsit.*

**S. CLEMENS ROMANUS.**

*His birth-place, his Parents, Kindred, Education, and Conversion to Christianity noted out of the Books extant under his name. His relation to the Imperial Family shewed to be a mistake. His being made Bishop of Rome.*

Rome. The great confusion about the first Bishops of that See. A probable account endeavoured concerning the Order of S. Clemens his Succession, and the reconciling it with the times of the other Bishops. What account given of him in the ancient Epistle to St. James. Clemens his appointing Notaries to write the Acts of the Martyrs, and dispatching Messengers to propagate the Gospel. The Schism in the Church of Corinth; and Clemens his Epistle to that Church. An enquiry into the time when that Epistle was written. The Persecution under Trajan. His proceeding against the Heterizæ. A short relation of St. Clemens his troubles out of Simeon Metaphrastes. His Banishment to Cherson. Damnatio ad Metalla, what. The great success of his Ministry in the place of his exile. St. Clemens his Martyrdom, and the kind of it. The anniversary Miracle reported on the day of his solemnity. The time of his Martyrdom. His genuine Writings. His Epistle to the Corinthians: the commendations given of it by the Ancients. Its Style and Character. The great modesty and humility that appears in it. The fragment of his second Epistle. Supposititious Writings. The Recognitions; their several titles, and different editions. Their Antiquity, what. A conjecture concerning the Author of them. The censures of the Ancients concerning the corrupting of them, considered. The Epistle to St. James.

I.



T makes not a little for the honour of this Venerable Apostolical Man, (for of him all antiquity understands it) that he was Fellow-labourer with St. Paul, and one of those, whose names were written in the Book of Life. He was born at Rome, upon Mount Cælius, as, besides others, the (a) Pontifical under the name of Damasus, informs us. His Fathers name was

(a) Vit. Clement. Concil.  
Tom. 1. col. 74.

*Faustinus*, but who he was, and what his Profession and course of life is not recorded. Indeed in the Book of the *Recognitions* and the *πρὸς Κληρύςιν* (mentioned by the Ancients, and lately published) we have more particular accounts concerning him: Books which however falsely attributed to S. Clemens, and liable in some cases to just exception, yet being of great Antiquity in the Church, written not long after the Apostolic Age (as we shall shew hereafter) we shall thence derive some few notices to our purpose, though we cannot absolutely engage for the certainty of them. There we find St. Clemens brought in, giving this account of himself.

(b) *Recogn. l. 7.*  
*n. 3. p. 476.*  
*Clem. Homil.*  
*12 n. 3. p. 678.*  
*Epitom. n. 76. p.*  
*781. Edit. Paris.*

II. HE (b) was descended of a noble race, sprung from the family of the *Cæsars*, his Father *Faustinianus*, or *Faustus*, being near a kin to the Emperor (I suppose *Tiberius*) and educated together with him, and by his procurement matched with *Mattidia*, a Woman of a prime Family in Rome. He was the youngest of three Sons, his two elder Brothers being *Faustinus* and *Faustus*, who after changed their Names for *Nicetas* and *Aquila*. His Mother, a Woman it seems of exquisite Beauty, was by her husbands own Brother strongly solicited to unchast embraces. To avoid whose troublesome importunities, and yet loth to reveal it to her husband, lest it should break out to the disturbance and dishonour of their Family, she found out this expedient: she pretended to her husband that she was warned in a dream together with her two eldest Sons to depart for some time from Rome. He accordingly sent them to reside at

*Athens*



*Athens*, for the greater conveniency of their Education. But hearing nothing of them, though he sent Messengers on purpose every year, he resolved at last to go himself in pursuit of them; which he did, leaving his youngest Son, then twelve years of age, at home, under the care of Tutors and Guardians. (a) St. *Clemens* grew up in all manly Studies, and vertuous actions, till falling under some great dissatisfactions of mind concerning the immortality of the Soul, and the state of the other Life, he applied himself to search more narrowly into the nature and the truth of things. After having baffled all his own Notions, he betook himself to the Schools of the Philosophers, where he met with nothing but fierce contentions, endless disputes, sophistical and uncertain arts of reasoning; thence he resolved to consult the *Egyptian Hierophanta*, and to see if he could meet with any who by arts of *Magic* was able to fetch back one of those who were departed to the invisible World, the very sight of whom might satisfy his curious enquiries about this matter. While he was under this suspense, he heard of the Son of God his appearing in the World, and the excellent Doctrine he had published in *Judea*, wherein he was further instructed by the Ministry of St. *Barnabas*, who came to *Rome*. Him he followed first to *Alexandria*, and thence after a little time to *Judea*. Arriving at *Casaria* he met St. *Peter*, by whom he was instructed and Baptized, whose Companion and Disciple he continued for a great part of his life.

(a) *Recogn. l. i. n. i. p. 392. Cl. Hom. i. p. 545. Epist. p. 749.*

III. THIS is the sum of what I thought good to borrow from those ancient Writings. As for his Relations, what various misadventures his Father and Mother, and his two Brothers severally met with, by what strange accidents they all afterwards met together, were converted and Baptized into the Christian Faith, I omit, partly as less proper to my purpose, partly because it looks more like a dramatic Scene of Fancy, than a true and real History. As to that part of the Account of his being related to the Imperial Family, though it be more than once and again confidently asserted by (b) *Nicephorus* (who transcribes a good part of the Story) and by (c) others before him, yet I cannot but behold it as an evident mistake, arising from no other Fountain than the Story of *Flavius Clemens* the Consul, who was Cousin-german to the Emperour *Domitian*, and his Wife *Flavia Domitilla* near a kin also to the Emperour; concerning whose Conversion to, and Martyrdom for the Faith of Christ, we have (d) elsewhere given an account from the Writers of those Times. Probable it is, that St. *Clemens* for the main attended St. *Peter*'s motions, and came with him to *Rome*, where he had at last the Government of that Church committed to him. (e) *Dorotheus* tells us, that he was the first of the *Gentiles* that embraced the Christian Faith, and that he was first made Bishop of *Sardica*, a City in *Thrace*, afterwards called *Triaditza*, and then of *Rome*. But herein I think he stands alone, I am sure has none of the Ancients to joyn with him; unless he understands it of another *Clemens*, whom the (f) *Chronicon Alexandrinum* also makes one of the LXX Disciples, but withal seems to confound with ours. That he was Bishop of *Rome*, there is an unanimous and unquestionable agreement of all ancient Writers, though they strangely vary about the place and order of his coming to it. The Writers of the *Roman Church*, how great words soever they speak of the constant and uninterrupted succession of St. *Peter*'s Chair, are yet involved in an inextricable labyrinth about the Succession of the four first Bishops of that See, scarce

(b) *H. Eccl. l. 2. c. 35. p. 191. l. 3. c. 2. & 18. p. 247.*  
(c) *Euseb. Lug. ad Valerian. de contemptu. Mund. Anonym. de vit. Petr. & Paul. ap. P. Jun. not in Clem. ad Corinth.*  
(d) *Primit. Chr. p. 1. ch. 3.*  
(e) *Synop. de vit. App. in Bibl. PP. Tom. 3. p. 150. col. 1.*  
(f) *Chron. Alex. p. 508.*

scarce two of them of any note bringing in the same account. I shall not attempt to accommodate the difference between the several Schemes that are given in, but only propose what I conceive most likely and probable.

(a) Adv. Hæres.  
l. 3. c. 3. p. 232.  
(b) Epiph. Hæ-  
res. XXVII. p.  
51. vid. Ham.  
Dissert. V. c. 1.  
p. 256.  
(c) Cai. adv.  
Procul. &  
(d) Dionys. Ep.  
ad. Rom. apud  
Euseb. l. 2. c. 25.  
p. 68.

IV. EVIDENT it is both from (a) *Irenæus* and (b) *Epiphanius*, as also before them from (c) *Caius* an ancient Writer, and from (d) *Dionysius* Bishop of *Corinth*, that *Peter* and *Paul* jointly laid the foundations of the Church of *Rome*, and are therefore equally stiled Bishops of it, the one as *Apostle of the Gentiles*, (as we may probably suppose) taking care of the *Gentile* Christians, while the other as *the Apostle of the Circumcision*, applied himself to the *Jewish* Converts at *Rome*. For we cannot imagine, that there being such chronical and inveterate prejudices between the *Jews* and *Gentiles*, especially in matters of Religion, they should be suddenly laid aside, and both enter-common in one public Society. We know that in the Church of *Jerusalem* till the destruction of the Temple, none were admitted but *Jewish* Converts: and so it might be at first at *Rome*, where infinite numbers of *Jews* then resided, they might keep themselves for some time in distinct assemblies, the one under *St. Paul*, the other under *Peter*. And some foundation for such a conjecture there seems to be even in the *Apostolic* History, where *St. Luke* tells us, that *St. Paul* at his first coming to *Rome* being rejected by the *Jews* turned to the *Gentiles*, declaring to them *the salvation of God*, who gladly heard and entertained it, and that he continued thus *Preaching the Kingdom of God, and receiving all that came in unto him for two years together*. This I look upon as the first settled foundation of a *Gentile* Church at *Rome*, the further care and presidency whereof *St. Paul* might devolve upon *Linus* (whom the interpolated *Ignatius* makes his Deacon or Minister) as *St. Peter* having established a Church of *Jewish* Converts might turn it over to *St. Clemens*, of whom (e) *Tertullian* expressly says, that *Peter* Ordained him Bishop of *Rome*. Accordingly the Compiler of the (f) *Apostolic Constitutions* makes *Linus* to be Ordained Bishop of *Rome* by *St. Paul*, and *Clemens* by *St. Peter*. He says indeed that *Linus* was the first, and so he might very well be, seeing *St. Paul* (whatever the Modern Writers of that Church say to the contrary) was some considerable time at *Rome*, before *St. Peter* came hither. *Linus* dying, was probably succeeded by *Cletus* or *Anacle- tus* (for the *Greeks*, and doubtless most truly, generally make him the same person) in his distinct capacity. At which time *Clemens*, whom *St. Peter* had Ordained to be his Successor, continued to act as President over the Church of *Jewish* Converts: and thus things remained till the death of *Cletus*, when the difference between *Jew* and *Gentile* being quite worn off, the entire Presidency and Government of the whole Church of *Rome* might devolve upon *St. Clemens* as the survivor; and from this period of time, the years of his Episcopacy, according to the common computation, are to begin their date. By this account, not only that of (g) *Optatus* and the (h) *Bucherian* Catalogue may be true, who make *Clemens* to follow *Linus*, but also that of *Baronius* and many of the Ancients, who make both *Linus* and *Cletus* to go before him, as we can allow they did as Bishops and Pastors of the *Gentile* Church. As for a more distinct and particular account of the Times, I thus compute them: *Peter* and *Paul* suffered Martyrdom in the *Neronian* Persecution (as we have elsewhere probably shewed) *Ann. LXV*. After which *Linus* sat twelve years, four months, and twelve days: *Cletus* twelve years, one (but as *Baronius*, fe- ven )

(e) De Præ-  
script. Hæret.  
c. 32. p. 213.  
(f) Lib. 7. c. 47.  
col. 451.

(g) De Schism.  
Donat. lib. 2.  
p. 38.  
(h) A. Bucher.  
edit. comment. j  
in Viñ. Can.  
Pasch. c. 19. p.  
269.

ven ) months, and eleven days, which between them make XXV years, and extend to *Ann. Chr. XC.* after which if we add the nine years, eleven months, and twelve days, wherein *Clemens* sat sole Bishop over that whole Church, they fall in exactly with the third year of *Trajan*; the time assigned for his Martyrdom, by *Eusebius*, *Hierom*, *Damasus*, and many others. Or if with *Petavius*, *Ricciolus*, and some others, we assign the Martyrdom of *Peter* and *Paul*, *Ann. LXVII.* two years later, the computation will still run more smooth and easie, and there will be time enough to be allowed for the odd months and days assigned by the different accounts, and to make the years of their Pontificat compleat and full. Nor can I think of any way, considering the great intricacy and perplexity of the thing, that can bid fairer for an easie solution of this matter. For granting *Clemens* to have been ordained by *S. Peter* for his Successor, (as several of the Ancients expressly affirm) and yet withal (what is evident enough) that he died not till *Ann. Chr. C. Traj. III.* it will be very difficult to find any way so proper to reconcile it. As for that fancy of \* *Epiphanius*, that *Clemens* might receive imposition of hands from *Peter*, but refused the actual exercise of the Episcopal Office, so long as *Linus* and *Cletus* lived: he only proposes it as a conjecture, founded meerly upon a mistaken passage of *Clemens* in his Epistle to the *Corinthians*, and confesses 'tis a thing wherein he dare not be positive, not being confident whether it were so or no.

\* *Contr. Carpocrat. Hæres. XXXVII. p. 51. vid. Clem. Epist. ad Corinth. p. 69.*

V. MIGHT the ancient † Epistle written to *S. James* the Brother of our Lord, under the name of our St *Clemens*, be admitted as a competent evidence, there we find not only that *Clemens* was constituted Bishop by *S. Peter*, but with what formality the whole affair was transacted. It tells us that the Apostle sensible of his approaching dissolution, presented *Clemens* before the Church as a fit person to be his Successor; the good Man with all imaginable modesty declined the honour, which *S. Peter* in a long discourse urged upon him, and set out at large the particular duties both of Ministers in their respective Orders and Capacities, as also of the People; which done, he laid his hands upon him, and compelled him to take his seat. How he administered this great but difficult Province, the Ecclesiastical Records give us very little account. The Author of the \* *Pontifical* that fathers himself upon *Pope Damasus*, tells us, that he divided *Rome* into seven *Regions*, in each of which he appointed a *Notary*, who should diligently enquire after all the Martyrs that suffered within his division, and faithfully record the Acts of their Martyrdom. I confess the credit of this Author is not good enough absolutely to rely upon his single testimony in matters so remote and distant: though we are otherwise sufficiently assured, that the custom of *Notaries* taking the Speeches, Acts, and Sufferings of the Martyrs did obtain in the early ages of the Church. Besides this, we are told by others that he dispatched away several persons to preach and propagate the Christian Religion in those Countries, whither the sound of the Gospel had not yet arrived. Nor did he only concern himself to propagate Christianity, where it wanted; but to preserve the peace of those Churches where it was already planted. For an unhappy Schism having broken out in the Church of *Corinth*, they sent to *Rome* to enquire his advice and assistance in it, who in the name of the Church, whereof he was Governour, wrote back an incomparable Epistle to them, to compose and quell, *μαχεῖν τὴν ἀνόμιον πόλιν*, as † he calls it, *that impious and abominable*

† *Extat Græcæ & Lat. inter PP. Apost. à Coteler. edit.*

\* *Lib. Pontif. in vit. Clem. Conc. T. 1. col. 74.*

*Hegesipp. ap. Euseb. L. 3. c. 15. p. 88.*

† *Epist. ad Corinth. p. 2.*



*minable Sedition* that was arisen among them. And indeed there seems to have been a more intimate and friendly intercourse between these two Churches in those times, than between any other mentioned in the Writings of the Church. The exact time of writing this Epistle is not known, the date of it not being certainly determinable by any notices of Antiquity, or any intimations in the Epistle it self. The conjecture that has obtained with some of most note and learning is, that it was written before the destruction of *Jerusalem*, while the Temple and the *Levitical* ministrations were yet standing. Which they collect, I suppose, from a \* passage, where he speaks of them in the present tense. But whoever impartially considers the place, will find no necessary foundation for such an inference, and that *S. Clemens* his design was only to illustrate his Argument, and to shew the reasonableness of observing those particular Stations and Ministries which God has appointed us, by alluding to the Ordinances of the *Mosaic* Institution. To me it seems most probable to have been written a little after the Persecution under *Domitian*, and probably not long before *Clemens* his exile. For excusing the no sooner answering the Letters of the Church of *Corinth*, he † tells them it was διὰ περιστάσεως ἡμῶν συμφορᾶς καὶ ἀπειρώσεως, by reason of those calamities and sad accidents that had happened to them. Now plain it is, that no Persecution had been raised against the Christians, especially at *Rome*, from the time of *Nero* till *Domitian*. As for Mr. *Young*'s conjecture from this place, that it was written in the time of his banishment; he forgot to consider that the Epistle was written not in *Clemens* his own name, but in the person of the Church of *Rome*. A circumstance that renders the place incapable of being particularly applied to him.

VI. B Y a firm patience and prudent care he weathered out the stormy and troublesome times of *Domitian*, and the short but peaceable Reign of *Nerva*. When alas the Clouds returned after rain, and began to thicken into a blacker storm in the time of *Trajan*, an excellent Prince indeed, of so sweet and plausible a disposition, of so mild and inoffensive a conversation, that it was ever after a part of their solemn acclamation at the choice of a new elected Emperour, MELIOR TRAJANO\*, better than *Trajan*. But withal he was zealous for his Religion, and upon that account a severe Enemy to Christians. Among several Laws enacted in the beginning of his Reign, he published one (if † *Baronius*, which I much question, conjecture the time aright, for \* *Pliny*'s Epistle, upon which he seems to ground it, was probably written at least nine or ten years after) whereby he forbade the *Heteria*, the Societies or Colleges erected up and down the *Roman* Empire, whereat Men were wont to meet, and liberally feast under a pretence of more convenient dispatch of business, and the maintainance of mutual love and friendship; which yet the *Roman* State beheld with a jealous eye, as fit Nurseries for Treason and Sedition. Under the notion of these unlawful combinations, the Christian Assemblies were looked upon by their Enemies; for finding them confederated under one common President, and constantly meeting at their solemn Love-feasts, and especially being of a way of Worship different from the Religion of the Empire, they thought they might securely proceed against them as illegal Societies, and contemners of the Imperial constitution, wherein *S. Clemens* as head of the Society at *Rome*, was sure to bear the deepest share. And indeed it was no more than what himself had long expected, as appears from

\* *Ibid.* pag. 53.

† *Id.* pag. 1.

\* *Entrop. H. Rom. l. 8. non longe ab initio.*

† *Ad. Ann. 100. n. VIII. Tom. 2. \* Epist. 97. l. 10.*

from his Letter to the *Corinthians*; where having spoken of the torments and sufferings which the Holy Apostles had undergone, he tells them \*, that he looked upon himself and his people as ἐν αὐτοῖς τοῖς σιγήματι, fet to run the same race, καὶ ὁ αὐτὸς ἡμῶν ἀγὼν ἐπὶ κεῖται, and that the same fight and conflict was laid up for them.

(\*) *Ubi supr.*  
l. 9.

VII. *SIMEON* the *Metaphrast* in the account of his † Martyrdom, (much what the same with that Life of St. *Clemens*, said to be written by an uncertain Author, published long since by *Lazius* at the end of *Abdias Babylonius*) sets down the beginning of his troubles to this effect. *S. Clemens* having converted *Theodora* a noble Lady, and afterwards her Husband *Sisinnius*, a Kinsman and Favourite of the late Emperour *Nerva*, the gaining so great a Man quickly drew on others of chief note and quality to embrace the Faith. So prevalent is the example of religious Greatness to sway Men to Piety and Vertue. But Envy naturally maligns the good of others, and hates the Instrument that procures it. This good success derived upon him the particular odium of *Torcutianus*, a man of great power and authority at that time in *Rome*, who by the inferior Magistrates of the City, excited the People to a mutiny against the Holy Man, charging him with Magic and Sorcery, and for being an enemy and blasphemer of the gods, crying out, either that he should do sacrifice to them, or expiate his impiety with his blood. *Mamertinus Prefect* of the City, a moderate and prudent Man, being willing to appease the uproar, sent for *S. Clemens*, and mildly persuaded him to comply. But finding his resolution inflexible, he sent to acquaint the Emperour with the case, who returned this short *Rescript*, that he should either sacrifice to the gods, or be banished to *Cherson*, a disconsolate City beyond the *Pontic* Sea. *Mamertinus* having received the Imperial Mandat, unwillingly complied with it, and gave order that all things should be made ready for the Voyage, and accordingly he was transported thither, to dig in the Marble Quarries, and labour in the Mines. *Damatio ad Metalla* is a punishment frequently mentioned in the *Roman* Laws, where it is said to be *proxima morti pena*, (a) the next very to capital punishments. Indeed the usage under it was very extream and rigorous: for besides the severest labour and most intolerable hardship, the condemned person was treated with all the instances of inhumanity, whipped and beaten, chained and fettered, deprived of his estate, (b) which was forfeited to the Exchequer, and the person himself perpetually degraded into the condition of a Slave, and consequently rendred incapable to make a Will. And not this only, but they were further exposed to the most public marks of Infamy and Dishonour, (c) their heads half shaved, their right eye bored out, their left leg disabled, their foreheads branded with an infamous mark, a piece of disgrace first used in this case by (d) *Caligula* (and the Historian notes it as an instance of his cruel temper) and from him continued till the times of *Constantine*, who abolished it by a (e) Law *Ann. Ch. CCCXV*, not to mention the hunger and thirst, the cold and nakedness, the filth and nastiness, which they were forced to conflict with in those miserable places.

(†) *Habetur*  
*Grec. & Lat.*  
*integrum ap.*  
*Coteler. loc. cit.*  
p. 826.

*Id. ibid.* p. 832.

(a) *L. 28 ff. de*  
*pen. lib. 48.*  
*Tit. 19.*

(b) *L. 35. ubi*  
*supr. l. 12. ff. de*  
*jur. fsc. l. 49.*  
*Tit. 14. l. 1: de*  
*bon. damnat.*  
*l. 8. Qui test. fac.*  
*pos. Sect. 4.*  
(c) *Cypr. Epist.*  
*77. ad Nemef.*  
*p. 155. Enseb.*  
*l. 8. c. 12. p.*  
*307.*

(d) *Sueton. in*  
*vit. Calig. c. 27.*  
*p. 428.*  
(e) *L. 2. Cod.*  
*Th. de pen. l. 9:*  
*Tit. 40.*

VIII. *ARRIVING* at the place of his uncomfortable exile, he found vast numbers of Christians condemned to the same miserable fate, whose minds were not a little erected under all their pressures at the sight of so good a Man, by whose constant preaching, and the frequent miracles that he wrought, their Enemies were converted into a better opi-

nion of them and their Religion, the Inhabitants of those Countries daily flocking over to the Faith, so that in a little time Christianity had beaten Paganism out of the Field, and all Monuments of Idolatry thereabouts were defaced and overturned. The same whereof was quickly carried to the Emperour, who dispatched *Aufidianus* the President to put a stop to this growing Sect, which by methods of terrour and cruelty he set upon, putting great numbers of them to death. But finding how readily and resolutely they pressed up to execution, and that this days Martyrs did but prepare others for to morrows Torments, he gave over contending with the multitude, and resolved to single out one of note above the rest, whose exemplary punishment might strike dread and terrour into the rest. To this purpose S. *Clemens* is pitched on, and all temptations being in vain tried upon him, the Executioners are commanded to carry him aboard, and throw him into the bottom of the Sea, where the Christians might despair to find him. This kind of death was called *καταποσίσις*, and was in use not only among the *Greeks*, as appears by the instance mentioned by \* *Diodorus Siculus*, but the *Romans*, as we find in several Malefactors condemned to be thrown into the Sea, both by † *Tiberius* and *Avidius Cassius*. To this our Lord has respect, when in the case of wilful scandal, he pronounces it better for the Man that a Millstone were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the bottom of the Sea. Where though \* S. *Hierom* tells us that this punishment was usual among the ancient *Jews* in case of more enormous crimes, yet do I not remember that any such capital punishment ever prevailed among them. I shall not here relate what I find concerning the strange and miraculous discovery of S. *Clemens* his Body, nor the particular miracle of a little Child preserved in the Church erected to him in the middle of the Sea for a whole year together (though solemnly averred by † *Ephram* Bishop of the place) as despairing they would ever find a belief wide enough to swallow them, nor those infinite other miracles said to be done there; it shall only suffice to mention one; that upon the Anniversary solemnity of his Martyrdom the Sea retreats on each side into heaps, and leaves a fair and dry passage for three Miles together to the Martyrs Tomb, erected within a Church, built (as it must be supposed by Angels) within the Sea, and the Peoples devotions being ended, the Sea returns to its own place, *τιμῶνται τὸ θεῖον καὶ λαῶντα ἡ μέγας*, says (a) one of my Authors, God by this means doing honour to the Martyr. I only add, that these Traditions were current before the time of *Gregory* Bishop of *Tours*, (b) who speaks of them with great reverence and devotion. S. *Clemens* died (as both (c) *Eusebius* and (d) S. *Hierom* witness, for I heed not the account of the (e) *Alexandrin Chronicon*, which places it four years after *Trajan VII.* though the Consuls which he there assigns properly belong to the IV. of that Emperour) in the third year of *Trajan*, a little more than two years after his banishment, after he had been sole Bishop of *Rome* nine years six months and so many days, say *Baronius* and others, though *Bucherius* his Catalogue, more to be trusted (as being composed before the death of *Pope Liberius*, Ann. CCCLIV) nine years eleven months and twelve days. His martyrdom happened on the XXIV of *November*, according to *Baronius* and the ordinary *Roman* computation, but on the ninth of that Month, says the little Martyrology published by (f) *Bucherius*, and which unquestionably was one of the true and genuine Calendars of the ancient

\* *Biblioth. l. 16.*  
† *Sueton. in vit.*  
*Tib. c. 62. g.*  
*336. Vul. Gall.*  
*lic. in Avid.*  
*Cass. c. 4. p. 247.*  
*Mark 9. 42.*  
\* *Com. in Matt.*  
*18. p. 53. Tom.*  
*9.*

† *Serm. de mirac. in puer. d.*  
*S. Clem. fact. ap.*  
*Sur. Novemb.*  
*23. & Gr. &*  
*Lat. ap. Coteler.*  
*p. 837.*

(a) *Ibid. p. 841.*  
(b) *De mirac.*  
*l. 1. c. 35, 36.*  
*p. 46.*  
(c) *Lib. 3. c.*  
*34. p. 106.*  
(d) *De Scrip.*  
*Eccl. in Clem.*  
(e) *Ann. 4.*  
*Olymp. CCXX.*  
*Iud. 1. p. 594.*

*Ubi supra.*

(f) *Loc. supr.*  
*cl. p. 269.*



cient Church. He was honoured at Rome by a Church erected to his memory, yet standing in † S. Hierom's time.

† De script.  
in Clement.

IX. THE Writings which at this day bear the name of this Apostolic Man, are of two sorts, Genuine or Supposititious. In the first Class is that famous Epistle to the *Corinthians*, so much magnified by the Ancients, ἡ γνωστὴ γραφή (as \* *Irenæus* calls it) the most excellent and absolute writing, μεγάλη τε καὶ θαυμασία, says (a) *Eusebius*, a truly great and admirable Epistle, and very useful as (b) S. *Hierom* adds, ἀξιόλογος. as (c) *Photius* files it, worthy of all esteem and veneration, ἀνωμολογούμενη πᾶσι, as (d) *Eusebius* assures us, received by all, and indeed revered by them next to the Holy Scriptures, and therefore publicly read in their Churches for some Ages, even till his time, and it may be a long time after. The stile of it (as (e) *Photius* truly observes) is very plain and simple, imitating an Ecclesiastical and unaffected way of Writing, and which breathes the true genius and spirit of the Apostolic Age. It was written upon occasion of a great Schism and Sedition in the Church of *Corinth*, begun by two or three factious persons against the Governours of the Church, who envying either the gifts, or the Authority and esteem of their Guides and Teachers, had attempted to depose them, and had drawn the greatest part of the Church into the Conspiracy: whom therefore he endeavours by soft words and hard Arguments to reduce back to Peace and Unity. His modesty and humility in it are peculiarly discernable, not only that he wholly writes it in the name of the Church of *Rome*, without so much as ever mentioning his own, but in that he treats them with such gentle and mild persuasives. Nothing of sowness, or an imperious lording it over Gods heritage to be seen in the whole Epistle. Had he known himself to be the infallible Judge of Controversies, to whose sentence the whole Christian World was bound to stand, invested with a supreme unaccountable Power, from which there lay no Appeal, we might have expected to have heard him argue at another rate. But these were the Encroachments and Usurpations of later Ages, when a spirit of Covetousness and secular ambition had stifled the modesty and simplicity of those first and best Ages of Religion. There is so great an affinity in many things both as to Words and Matter between this and the Epistle to the *Hebrews*, as tempted *Eusebius* and S. *Hierom* of old, and some others before them, to conclude S. *Clemens* at least the Translator of that Epistle. This Epistle to the *Corinthians*, after it had been generally bewailed as lost for many Ages, was not more to the benefit of the Church in general, than the honour of our own in particular, some forty years since published here in *England*, a treasure not sufficiently to be valued. Besides this first, there is the fragment of a second Epistle, or rather *Homily*, containing a serious exhortation and direction to a pious life: ancient indeed, and which many will persuade us to be his, and to have been written many years before the former, as that which betrays no footsteps of troublesome and unquiet times: but *Eusebius*, S. *Hierom*, and *Photius* assure us that it was rejected, and never obtained among the Ancients equal approbation with the first. And therefore though we do not peremptorily determine against its being his, yet we think it safer to acquiesce in the judgment of the Ancients, than of some few late Writers in this matter.

\* Adv. Hæres.  
3. ap. Euseb. l. 5.  
c. 6. p. 170.  
(a) Lib. 3. c. 16.  
p. 88.  
(b) De script.  
Eccl. in Clem.  
(c) Cod. CXII.  
col. 28 c.  
(d) Ibid. c. 38.  
p. 110.  
(e) Cod.  
CXXVI. col.  
305.

Ibid.

Locis sup. cit.

X. AS for those Writings that are undoubtedly spurious and supposititious,

\* Ibid. pag.  
110.

Præf. to Pri-  
ncip. Christi-  
anity.

(a) Cod. CXII.  
col. 289.

(b) Præfat. ad  
Gaudent. p.

397.  
(c) H. Eccl. l. 3.  
c. 18. p. 248.

fititious, disown'd ( as \* *Eusebius* says ) because they did not *καταλείπειν* τὴν ἀποστολικὴν ὀρθοδόξιας ἀποσώζειν τὴν καραχάτην, retain the true stamp and character of Orthodox Apostolic Doctrine, though the truth is, he speaks it only of the *Dialogues of Peter and Appion*, not mentioning the *Decretal Epistles*, as not worth taking notice of ; there are four extant at this day that are entitled to him, the *Apostolical Canons* and the *Constitutions* ( said to be penned by him, though dictated by the Apostles ) the *Recognitions*, and the *Epistle to S. James*. For the two first, the *Apostolical Canons* and *Constitutions*, I have declared my sense of them in another place, to which I shall add nothing here. The *Recognitions* succeed, conveyed to us under different titles by the Ancients, sometimes stiled *S. Clemens his Acts, History, Chronicle*, sometimes *S. Peter's Acts, Itinerary, Periods, Dialogues with Appion*, all which are unquestionably but different inscriptions ( or it may be parcels ) of the same book. True it is what (a) *Photinus* suspected, and (b) *Rufinus* ( who translated it ) expressly tells us, that there were two several editions of this Book, differing in some things, but the same in most. And it deserves to be considered, whether the τὰ Κλημύνηα mentioned by (c) *Nicephorus*, and which he says the Church received, and denies to be those meant by *Eusebius*, and those *Clementine Homilies* lately published under that very name, be not that other Edition of the *Recognitions*, seeing they exactly answer *Rufinus* his Character, differing in some things, but in most agreeing with them. There is yet a third Edition, or rather Abstract out of all, stiled *Κλημύνης ὡς τῶν πράξεων*, &c. *Clemens his Epitome of the Acts, Travels, and Preachings of S. Peter*, agreeing with the former, though keeping more close to the *Homilies* than the other. This I guess to have been compiled by *Simeon the Metaphrast*, as for other reasons, so especially because the appendage added to it by the same hand concerning *Clemens* his martyrdom is word for word the same with that of *Metaphrastes*, the close of it only excepted, which is taken out of *S. Ephram's* Homily of the miracle done at his Tomb.

(d) Pseudo-  
Ibid. p. 28.

(e) Philocal. c.  
23. p. 81, 82.

(f) Recognit.  
l. 10.

(g) Extat ap.  
Euseb. Præf.

Evan. l. 6. c. 10.  
p. 273. & seq.

vid. Recogn.  
lib. 9. p. 503.  
&c.

(h) Euseb. H.  
Eccl. l. 4. c. 30.

p. 151. Epiph.  
Hæres. LVI.

p. 207.

(i) Euseb.  
Præf. Evang. l.

6. c. 9. p. 273.

XI. THE *Recognitions* themselves are undoubtedly of very great antiquity, written about the same time, and by the same hand ( as (d) *Blondel* probably conjectures ) with the *Constitutions* about the Year *CLXXX*, or not long after. Sure I am, they are cited by (e) *Origen* as the Work of *Clemens* in his *Periods*, and his large quotation is in so many words (f) extant in them at this day. Nay before him we meet with a very long fragment of *Bardeanes the* (g) *Syrian* ( who flourished *Ann. CLXXX.* ) concerning *Fate*, word for word the same with what we find in the *Recognitions*, and it seems equally reasonable to suppose that *Bardeanes* had it thence, as that the other borrowed it from him. Nay what if *Bardeanes* himself was the Author of these Books ? 'Tis certain that he was a Man of great parts and learning, a Man prompt and eloquent, *καὶ ἀγαθὸν λόγον ἔχων*, (h) an acute and subtle Disputant, heretically enclined, for he came out of the School of *Valentinus*, whose uncouth notions he had so deeply imbibed, that even after his recantation, he could never get clear from the dregs of them, as *Eusebius* informs us : though *Epiphanius* tells us he was first Orthodox, and afterwards fell into the errors of that Sect, like a well freighted Ship that having duly performed its Voyage, is cast away in the very sight of the Harbour. He was a great Mathematician and Astrologer, ἐπ' ἄλλων Χαλδαίων τῶν βιβλίων ἐγγράφων (i), accurately versed in *Chaldaean* learning, and wrote incomparable *Dialogues* concerning *Fate*

*Fate*, which he dedicated to the Emperour *Antoninus*. And surely none can have looked into the *Recognitions*, but he must see what a considerable part the Doctrines concerning *Fate*, the *Genesis*, the Influence of the Stars and heavenly Constellations, and such like notions make there of *S. Peter's* and *S. Clemens* his Dialogues and Discourses. To which we may add what *Photius* has observed, and is abundantly evident from the thing it self, that these Books are considerable for their clearness and perspicuity, their eloquent stile, and grave Discourses, and that great variety of Learning that is in them, plainly shewing their Composer to have been a Master in all Human Learning, and the Study of Philosophy. I might further remark, that *Bardefanes* seems to have had a peculiar genius for Books of this nature, it being particularly (a) noted of him, that besides the Scriptures, he traded in certain Apocryphal Writings. He wrote *ἡλικὰ συγγράμματα*. (b) which *S. Hierom* renders *infinite Volumes*, written indeed for the most part in *Syriac*, but which his Scholars translated into *Greek*, though he himself was sufficiently skilful in that Language, as *Epiphanius* notes. In the number of these Books might be the *Recognitions*, plausibly fathered upon *S. Clemens*, who was notoriously known to be *St. Peter's* Companion and Disciple: and were but some of his many Books now extant, I doubt not but a much greater affinity both in stile and notions would appear between them. But this I propose only as a probable conjecture, and leave it at the Readers pleasure either to reject or entertain it. I am not ignorant that both \* *S. Hierome* and † *Photius* charge these Books with hæretical Opinions, especially some derogatory of the honour of the Son of God, which it may be *Rufinus* ( who \* confesses the same thing, and supposes them to have been inserted by some hæretical hand ) concealed in his Translation: nay † *Epiphanius* tells us, that the *Ebionites* did so extremely corrupt them, that they scarce left any thing of *St. Clemens* sound and true in them, which he observes from their repugnancy to his other Writings, those *Encyclical* Epistles of his ( as he calls them ) which were read in the Churches. But then it's plain, he means it only of those Copies which were in the possession of those heretics, probably not now extant, nor do any of those particular adulterations which he says they made in them, appear in our Books, nor in those large and to be sure uncorrupt fragments of *Bardefanes* and *Origen* is there the least considerable variation from those Books which we have at this day. But of this enough.

XII. THE Epistle to *St. James* the Brother of our Lord is, no doubt, of equal date with the rest, in the close whereof the Author pretends that he was commanded by *S. Peter* to give him an account of his Travels, Discourses, and the success of his Ministry, under the title of *Clemens* his Epitome of *Peters* popular preachings, to which he tells him he would next proceed. So that this Epistle originally was nothing but a Preface to *S. Peters* Acts or Periods ( the same in effect with the *Recognitions* ) and accordingly in the late Edition of the *Clementine* Homilies ( which have the very Title mentioned in that Epistle ) it is found prefixed before them. This Epistle ( as *Photius* tells us ) varied according to different Editions, sometimes pretending that it, and the account of *S. Peter's* Acts annexed to it, were written by *S. Peter* himself, and by him sent to *S. James*; sometimes that they were written by *Clemens* at *S. Peter's* instance and command. Whence he conjectures that there was a twofold Edition

*Ubi supra.*

(a) *Epiph. loc. cit.*

(b) *Euseb. H. Ec. ubi supr. de Script. Eccl. in Bardes.*

\* *Apol. adv. Ru- fin. p. 219.*

† *Phot. Cod.*

*CXII. col. 289.*

\* *Apolog. pro*

*Orig. ap. Hieron. Tom. 4. p.*

*195.*

† *Hieron. XXX.*

*p. 65.*



Edition of *S. Peter's Acts*, one said to be written by himself, the other by *Clemens*, and that when in time the first was lost, that pretending to *S. Clemens* did remain: For so he assures us he constantly found it in those many Copies that he met with, notwithstanding that the Epistle and Inscription were sometimes different and various. By the Original whereof now published appears the fraud of the Factors of the *Romish Church*, who in all *Latin* Editions have added an *Appendix* almost twice as large as the Epistle it self. And well had it been, had this been the only instance, wherein some Men to shore up a tottering Cause, have made bold with the Writers of the ancient Church.

## His Writings.

Genuine.  
*Epistola ad Corinthios.*

Doubtful.  
*Epistola ad Corinth. secunda.*

Supposititious.  
*Epistola ad Jacobum*  
*Fratrem Domini.*

*Recognitionum lib. 10.*

Τὰ Κληρώπια,  
feu,  
*Homilia Clementina.*

*Constitutionum App. lib. 8.*

*Canones Apostolici.*

*The End of S. CLEMENS's Life.*

T H E

THE LIFE OF  
**S. SIMEON**  
 BISHOP of JERUSALEM.



*Alcha. bugh. deli, et sculp.*

**S. SYMEON HIEROSOLYMITANUS.**

*The heedless confounding him with others of the like name. His Parents  
 and near Relation to our Saviour. The time of His Birth. His strict  
 Education and way of Life. The Order and Institution of the Rechabites,*

N

bites, what. His conversion to Christianity. The great care about a Successor to S. James Bishop of Jerusalem. Simeon chosen to that place when and why. The causes of the destruction of the Jewish state. The original and progress of those Wars briefly related. The miserable state of Jerusalem by Siege, Pestilence, and Famine. Jerusalem stormed. The burning of the Temple, and the rage of the Fire. The number of the Slain and Captives. The just accomplishment of our Lord's predictions. The many Prodigies pretending this destruction. The Christians forewarned to depart before Jerusalem was shut up. Their withdrawment to Pella. The admirable care of the Divine Providence over them. Their return back to Jerusalem, when. The flourishing condition of the Christian Church there. The occasion of S. Simeon's Martyrdom. The infinite jealousy of the Roman Emperours concerning the line of David. Simeon's apprehension and crucifixion. His singular torments and patience. His great age, and the time of his death.

I.



T cannot be unobserved by any that have but looked into the Antiquities of the Church, what confusion the identity or similitude of names has bred among Ecclesiastic Writers, especially in the more early Ages, where the Records are but short and few. An instance whereof, were there no other, we have in the person of whom we write: Whom some will

have to be the same with S. Simon the Cananite, one of the twelve Apostles; others confound him with Simon, one of the four brethren of our Lord, while a third sort make all three to be but one and the same person: the sound and similitude of names giving birth to the several mistakes. For that Simeon of Jerusalem was a person altogether distinct from Simon the Apostle, is undeniably evident from the most ancient Martyrologies both of the Greek and the Latine Church, where vastly different accounts are given concerning their persons, employments, and the time and places of their death; Simon the Apostle being martyred in Britain, or as others in Persia, while Simeon the Bishop is notoriously known to have suffered in Palestine or in Syria. Nor are the testimonies of Dorotheus, Sophronius, or Isidore, considerable enough to be weighed against the Authorities of Hegesippus, Eusebius, Epiphanius, and others. But of this enough.

II. S. Simeon was the Son of (a) Cleophas, brother

to Joseph, husband to the Blessed Virgin, and so his Father had the honour to be the Uncle to our Saviour, in the same sense that Joseph was his Father. His Mother (say (b) some) was Mary the Wife of Cleophas, mentioned in the History of the Gospel, Sister or Cousin-german to the Mother

of our Lord: And if so, he was by both sides nearly related to our Saviour. He was born (as appears from his Age, and the date of his Martyrdom assigned by Eusebius) Ann. Mundi 3936. thirteen years according to the Vulgar computation before our Saviour's Incarnation. His Education was according to the severest rules of Religion professed in the Jewish Church, being entered into the Order of the Rechabites, as may be probably collected from the Ancients. For (c) Hegesippus informs us, that when

Vid. Chron. Alexandr. Olymp. CCXX. Ind. I. Traj. VII. & Ann. sequent. p. 594.

(a) Hegesip. ap. Euseb. l. 3. c. 11. p. 87. Epiph. Heres. LXVI. p. 274. & omnia antiqua Martyrologia, Adonis, Bedæ, Notkeri, Usuardi apud Bolland. de Vit SS. ad diem XVIII. Febr. pag. 53. 54.

(b) Hegesip. ib. c. 32. p. 104. Niceph. l. 3. c. 16. p. 245.

(c) Ibid. l. 2. c. 23. p. 65.



when the *Jews* were busily engaged in the Martyrdom of S. *James the Just*, a *Rechabite Priest*, one of the Generation of the Sons of *Rechab* mentioned by the Prophet *Jeremy* slept in, and interceded with the People to spare so just and good a Man, and one that was then praying to Heaven for them. This Person \* *Epiphanus* expressly tells us was S. *Simeon* the Son of *Cleophas*, and Cousin-german to the holy Martyr: The *Rechabites* were an ancient Institution, founded by *Jonadab the Son of Rechab*, who flourished in the reign of *Jehu*, and obliged his posterity to these following Rules, to drink no Wine, sow no Fields, plant no Vineyards, build no Houses, but to dwell only in Tents and Tabernacles. All which precepts (the last only excepted, which Wars and Foreign Invasions would not suffer them to observe) they kept with the most religious reverence, and are therefore highly commended by God for their exact conformity to the Laws of their Institution, and brought in to upbraid the degeneracy of the House of *Israel*, in violating the Commands he had laid upon them. They continued it seems (and so God had promised them, that *they should not want a Man to stand before him for ever*) till the very last times of the *Jewish Church*, though little notice be taken of them, as indeed they are but once mentioned throughout the whole History of the Bible, and that only accidentally, and then too no less than three hundred years after their first Institution. Probable it is, that in after-times all *Rechabites* were not *Jonadab's* immediate descendants, but that all were accounted such, who took upon them the observance of the same Rules and Orders which *Jonadab* had prescribed to his immediate posterity. It further seems probable to me, that from these *Rechabites*, the *Essenes*, that famous Sect among the *Jews*, borrowed their Original; that part of them especially that dwelt in Towns and Cities, and in many things conformed themselves to the Rules of the civil and sociable life. For as for the *Θεωρητικοί* described (a) by *Philo*, they gave up themselves mainly to solitude and contemplation, lived in Forests and among Groves of *Palm-trees*, and shunned all intercourse and converse with other Men. While the *Prætic* part of them (more particularly taken notice of by (b) *Josephus*) though abstaining from marriage, and despising the riches and pleasures of this World, did yet reside in Cities, and places of Public Concurrence, labour in their several Trades and Callings, maintain Hospitality, and were united in a common College and Society, where they were kept to a solemn observance of the great duties of Religion, and devoted to the Orders of a very strict pious life. And among these, I doubt not, the *Rechabites* were incorporated and swallowed up, though it may be together with the general name of *Essenes*, they might still retain their particular and proper name. But to return.

III. HIS first Institution in Christianity was probably laid under the Discipline of our Lord himself, whose Auditor and Follower (c) *Hegeſippus* supposes him to have been; and in all likelihood he was one of the LXX Disciples, in which capacity he continued many years, when he was advanced to a place of great honour and eminency in the Church. About the Year LXII. S. *James the Just* Bishop of *Jerusalem* by the artifices of *Ananus* the High-Priest, had been cruelly martyred by the *Jews*. The providing for whose place was so far thought to be the concernment of the whole Christian Church, that the Apostles and Disciples of our Lord are said (d) to have come from all parts to advise and consult with those

\* *Heref.*  
LXXXVIII. p.  
441.

*Jer.* 35. 2. 3.  
&c.

(a) *Lib. Πεδ.*  
*βίη Θεωρητι-*  
*κῶν, ἡ ἰκνῶσι*  
*ἀσκητῶν*, p. 891.  
& seq.

(b) *De Bell.*  
*Jud.* l. 2.  
*Κεφ.* 16.  
p. 785. & *An-*  
*tiqu. Jud.* l. 18. c.  
2. p. 617.

(c) *Ap. Euseb.*  
l. 3. c. 32. p.  
140.

(d) *Ibid.*  
11 p. 86. *vid.*  
*lib.* 4. c. 22. p.  
142.

of our Saviours Kindred and Relations, about a fit Successor in his room. None was thought meet to be a Candidate for the place, but one of our Lords own Relations; and accordingly with one consent they devolved the honour upon *Simeon*, our Lords next Kinsman, whom they all judged most worthy of the place. I know *Eusebius* seems to intimate that this Election was made not onely after *S. James* his death, but after the destruction of *Jerusalem*, between which there was the distance of no less than eight or nine years. But (besides that *Eusebius* makes the destruction of *Jerusalem* immediately to succeed upon *S. James* his Martyrdom, when yet there was so great a space) it's very unreasonable to suppose that so famous and eminent a Church, a Church newly constituted, and planted in the midst of the most bitter and inveterate Enemies, should for so long a time be destitute of a Guide and Pastor, especially seeing the Apostles were all long since dispersed into several remote quarters of the World: Not to say that most of the Apostles were dead before that time; or if they had not, could not very conveniently have returned and met together about this affair in so dismal and distracted a state of things as the *Roman Wars*, and the utter ruine and overthrow of the *Jewish Nation* had then put those parts into. Besides that (a) *Eusebius* himself elsewhere places *Simeon's* succession immediately after *S. James* his Martyrdom. Nor is the least vacancy in that See mentioned by any other Writer. The (b) *Chronicle* of *Alexandria* places his succession *Ann. LXIX.* for it tells us, that this year *S. James* the Apostle and Patriarch of *Jerusalem* (whom *S. Peter* at the time of his going to *Rome*, as his proper See, had ordained to that place; this passage, it's plain the Publisher for want of rightly distinguishing, did not understand) dying, *Simeon* or *Simon* was made Patriarch in his room. But this account is against the Faith of all the Ancients, who make *S. James* to have suffered Martyrdom several years before; nor do any of them say that he was ordained by *S. Peter*, many of them expressly affirming, that he immediately received his Consecration from the hands of our Lord himself.

(a) Chron. ad  
Ann. Chr.  
LXII.  
(b) Ann. 1.  
Olympi. ad.  
CCXII. Indi. Et.  
XI. Vespas. 1. p.  
580.

IV. HOW he managed the affairs of that Church, is not distinctly known, few particular accounts of things being transmitted to us. Confident we may be that his presidency was attended with sufficient trouble and difficulty, not onely from the malicious and turbulent temper of that People, whom he was continually exposed to, but because it fell in with the most black and fatal period of the *Jewish Church*. For the sins of that Nation being now ripe for Vengeance, and having filled up the measure of their iniquities by their cruel usage of the Apostles and Messengers of our Saviour, their barbarous treatment of *S. Stephen*, and afterwards of *S. James the great*, and their last bloody Murder of *S. James the less*, but above all, by their insolent and merciless carriage towards the Son of God, and the Saviour of the World, *the wrath of God came upon them to the uttermost*, and the *Romans* broke in upon them, and took away both their Place and Nation. The sum whereof, because containing such remarkable passages of Providence, such instances of severe displeasure towards a People, that for so many Ages had enjoyed the peculiar influences of the Divine Favour, and whose destruction at last so evidently justified the predictions of our Saviour, and made such immediate way for the honour and advancement of Christianity, we shall here relate.

V. THE *Jews*, a stubborn and unquiet People, impatiently repented the

the Tyranny of the *Roman Yoke*, which seemed heavier to their necks than it did to the other Nations, because they looked upon themselves as a more free-born People, and were elated with those great Charters and Immunities which Heaven had immediately conferred upon them. This made them willing to catch at any opportunity to re-assert themselves into their ancient liberty. A thing which they more unanimously attempted under the Government of (a) *Cestius Florus*, whom *Nero* had sent to be *Procurator* of that Province: by whose intolerable oppressions and insolent cruelties for two Years together, nothing abated by prayers and importunities, and the solicitations of potent Intercessors, their patience was tired out, and they broke but into Rebellion. The fatal assault began first at (b) *Casarea*, which instantly like lightning spread it self over the whole Nation, till all places were full of Blood and Violence. *Florus* unable himself to deal with them, called in to his assistance *Cestius Gallus* the President of *Syria*, who came from *Antioch* with an Army, took *Joppa* and some other places, and sat down before *Jerusalem*, but after all was forced to depart, and indeed to fly with his whole Army, leaving all his Warlike Instruments and Provisions behind him. The news of this ill success was soon carried to (c) *Nero*, then residing in *Achaia*, who presently dispatched *Vespasian* (a man of prudent Conduct experienced Valour, the best Commander of his time) to be General of the Army. He coming into *Syria*, united the *Roman Forces*, fell into *Galilee*, burnt *Gadara*, and destroyed *Jotapata*, where (d) *Josephus* himself was taken Prisoner. He pursued his Conquests with an unwearied diligence, Victory every where attending upon his Sword, and was preparing to besiege *Jerusalem* (e), when hearing of the distractions of *Italy* by the death of *Nero*, and the Usurpations of *Galba*, *Otho*, and *Vitellius*, he resolved for *Rome*, to free it from those unhappy incumbrances that were upon it; whose resolutions herein were so far applauded by the Army, that they presently proclaimed him Emperour. Who thereupon hastened into *Egypt* to secure that Country, a place of so considerable importance to the Empire.

VI. FROM *Alexandria* (f) *Vespasian* remanded his Son *Titus* back into *Judea* to carry on the War, who thought no way quicker to bring it to a period, than to attempt the Capital City, to strike at *Jerusalem* it self, and accordingly put all things in readiness to besiege it. The state of (g) *Jerusalem* at this time was very sad. That place, whose honour and security once it was to be a City at unity within it self, was now torn in pieces with intestine Factions; and how unlikely is that Kingdom long to stand, that is once divided against it self? *Simon* the Son of *Giora*, a bold and ambitious Man, had possessed himself of the upper City; *John* who headed the *Zealots*, an insolent and ungovernable Generation, commanded the lower parts, and the out-skirts of the Temple; the inner parts whereof were secured by *Eleazar* the Son of *Simon*, who had drawn over a considerable number of the Souldiers to his Party; and all those mutually quarrelling with, and opposing one another. *Titus* with his Army approaching, a little before the *Paschal* solemnity begirt the City, drawing it by degrees into a closer Siege, he straitly block'd up all avenues and passages of escape, building a Wall of thirty nine (h) Furlongs, which he strengthened with thirteen Forts; whereby he prevented all possibility either of coming into, or going out of the City. And now was exactly accomplished, what our Lord had some time since told them would

(a) Joseph. de Bell. Judaic. l. 2. c. 4. p. 798. Egesipp. de excid. Hierosol. 2. c. 14. p. 272, &c.  
(b) Ibid. x. l. p. 809.

(c) Ibid. l. 3. c. 1. p. 830.

(d) Ib. Kesp. xiv. p. 850. Egesipp. l. 3. c. 18. p. 351.  
(e) Ibid. l. 5. Kesp. xiv. p. 892.

(f) Ibid. Kesp. xiv. p. 903.

(g) Ibid. l. 6. c. 1. p. 904. Kesp. l. 2. p. 910.

(h) Ibid. l. 6. Kesp. xiv. p. 935.



Luk 19. 41,  
42. 43. 44.

would come to pass, when he beheld the City and wept over it, saying, if thou hadst known, even thou at least in this thy day, the things that belong unto thy peace! but now they are hidden from thine eyes. For the day shall come upon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side, and shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy Children within thee, because thou knowest not the time of thy visitation. The truth is who

Συγγεῖνας ὁ πρὸς τὰς Σατῆρας ἡμῶν λέγει  
τὴν λοιπὴν τὴν συγγεγεννημένην ἰσοειάσας τὴν  
παλιν πόλιν, πῶς ἐκ αὐτῆς ἐποδαυμάσεν, δείων  
ὡς ἀληθῶς καὶ ἡμεῖς ἀποδοξάζοντες τὴν ἀποστολὴν  
τῆς καὶ ἀποστολῆς τῆς σωτῆρος ἡμῶν ἐμολογίσας.  
Euseb. H. Eccl. l. 3. c. 7. p. 81.

ever would be at the pains to compare what our Lord has said concerning this War and the sackage of Jerusalem, with the accounts given of them by Josephus, would find so just a correspondence between the prophecy and the success, as would tempt him to think that the Historian had taken

(a) Ib. Kap.  
λβ. p. 937.  
ὁ 1. 7. Kap. κ.  
p. 954.

(b) Kap. κα.  
ubi supr.

his measures as much from our Lords predictions, as from the event of things. But to proceed; Terms of mercy were offered upon surrender, but scornfully rejected, which exasperated the Roman Army to fall on with greater fierceness and severity. And now God and Man, Heaven and Earth seemed to fight against them. Besides the Roman Army without, and the irreconcilable Factions and Disorders within, a (a) Famine (hastened by those vast multitudes that had flocked to the Passovers) raged so horribly within the City, that they took more care to prey upon one another, and to plunder their Provisions, than how to defend themselves against the common Enemy: thousands were starved for want of Food, who died so fast, that they were not capable of performing to them the last Offices of Humanity, but were forced to throw them upon common heaps; nay were reduced to that extremity, that some offered violence to all the Laws of Nature, among which was (b) Mary the daughter of Eleazar, who being undone by the Souldiers, and no longer able to bear the force and rage of Hunger, boiled her sucking child and eat him. So plainly had our Lord foretold the daughters of Jerusalem, that the days were coming, in the which they should say, blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never gave suck.

(c) Ib. Kap.  
κβ. κγ. & δ.  
p. 956.

VII. TITUS went on with the Siege, and finding that no methods either of kindness or cruelty would work upon this obstinate generation of Men, gave order that all things should be made ready for a storm. Having gained the Tower of Antonia, the Jews fled to the Temple which was hard by, the (c) Out-gates and Porches whereof were immediately set on fire, the Jews like persons stupified and amazed, never endeavouring to quench it. Titus, the sweetness of whose nature ever inclined him to pity and compassion, was greatly desirous to have spared the People, and saved the Temple. But all in vain; an obscure Souldier threw a Firebrand into the Chambers that were about the Temple, which presently took fire, and though the General ran and stormed, and commanded to put it out, yet so great was the clamour and confusion, that his Orders could not be heard; and when they were, it was too late, the conquering and triumphant Flames prevailing in spite of all opposition, and making their way with so fierce a (d) rage, as if they threatened to burn up Mount Sion to the very roots. So effectually did our Saviour's Commination take place, who told his Disciples, when they admired the stately and magnificent buildings of the Temple, Verily I say unto you, there shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down. And that nothing might be wanting to verifie our Lords prediction, Turnus Rufus was commanded to plow up the very foundations

(d) Ibid. Kap.  
κν. p. 959.

of

of it. How sad a sight must it needs be to behold all things hurled into a mixture of Blood, Smoke and Flames! the *Jews* were slain like Sheep or Dogs, and many to prevent the Enemies Sword, voluntarily leapt into the fire; the (a) number of them that perished in this Siege amounting to no less than eleven hundred thousand, besides ninety seven thousand that were made Slaves; the infinite multitudes that from all parts had flocked to the Feast of the *Passover*, and were by the *Roman Army* crowded up within the City, rendring the account not improbable.

(a) *Ibid.* Kεφ. με p. 968.

VIII. SUCH was the period of the *Jewish Church* and State; thus fell *Jerusalem*, (by far the most eminent City not of *Judea* only, but of the whole *East*, as (b) *Pliny* himself confesses) notwithstanding its antiquity, wealth, and strength, after it had stood from the time of *David* MCLXXIX. years. And memorable it is, that this fatal Siege began a little before the *Passover*, about that very time when they had so barbarously treated and put to death the Son of God. So exact a proportion does the Divine Justice sometimes observe in the retributions of its Vengeance. A fate not only predicted by our Lord and his Apostles, but lately presignified by immediate (c) *Prodigies* and *Signs from Heaven*. A blazing Comet in the fashion of a Sword, hung directly over the City for a whole year together. In the Feast of Unleavened Bread, a little before the breaking out of the War, at nine of the Clock of the night, a light suddenly shined out between the Altar and the Temple, as bright as if it had been Noon-day. About the same time a Heifer as she was led to sacrifice, brought forth a Lamb in the very midst of the Temple. The East Gate of the inner part of the Temple, all of massy Brass, and which twenty Men could hardly shut, after it had been fast locked and barred, was at night seen to open of its own accord. Chariots and Armies were beheld in the Air, all in their Martial Postures, and preparing to surround the City. At *Pentecost* when the Priests entered into the inner Temple, they first perceived a noise and motion, and immediately heard a voice that said, *Μεταβαίνοντες ἐνταῦθιν, Let us depart hence*. And four years before ever the War began, while all things were peaceable and secure, one *Jesus*, a plain Country Fellow pronounced many dreadful woes against the Temple, the City, and the People, wherein he continued, especially at festival times, notwithstanding all the cruelties used towards him for seven years together, when some made a shift to dispatch him by a violent death. But alas, an Angel it self cannot stop Men that are riding Post towards their own destruction. So little will warnings or threatnings, or miracles signifie with them, whom Heaven hath once given up to an incurable infatuation.

(b) *Nat. Hist.* l. 5. c. 14. p. 80.

(c) *Joseph. ult. sup. l. 7. Kεφ. λδ. p. 960.*

Ταῦτα τις ἐνοῶν ἐυρίσκει, ὅτι μὲν θεὸν ἀνθρώπων κινδύμον καὶ παντοίας περικομίας νοῦσα τὴν σφετέρῃ ᾧς τὰ σωτήρια, καὶ ἡ ἰσὺς ἀνάσας καὶ κακῶν ἀνταρτέων ἀπολυμένους. *Joseph. loc. citat.*

IX. BUT it's high time to return and enquire, in the midst of this sad and calamitous state of things what became of *S. Simeon* and the Christians of that place. And of them we find, that being timely warned by the caution which our Lord had given them, that *when they should see Jerusalem compassed with Armies, and the abomination of desolation* (that is the *Roman Army*) *standing in the holy place, they should then flee into the Mountains*, betake themselves to some obscure place of refuge; and having been lately commanded by a particular (d) revelation communicated to some pious and good Men among them, (which says *Epiphanius* was done by the ministry of an Angel,) to leave *Jerusalem*, and go to *Pella*, they

(d) *Euseb. l. 3. c. 5. p. 75. Epiph. Heret. XXIX. p. 58. Heret. XXX. p. 59. de Pond. c. mens. p. 537.*

uni-

(a) Joseph. Antiq. Jud. l. 13. c. 23. p. 462.

(b) Epiph. de Pond. & Mens. libid.

universally withdrew themselves, and seasonably retreated thither, as to a little *Zoar* from the flames of *Sodom*, and so not one perished in the common ruine. This *Pella* was a little Town in *Cælo-Syria* Beyond *Jordan*, deriving its name probably from *Pella* a City of *Macedonia*, as being founded and peopled by the *Macedonians* of *Alexander's* Army, who fate down in *Asia*. That its inhabitants were *Gentiles*, it's plain, in that the (a) *Jews* under *Alexander Jannæus* their King sacked it, because they would not receive the Rites of their Religion. And God 'tis like on purpose directed the Christians hither, that they might be out of the reach of the *Besom of Destruction* that was to sweep away the *Jews* where-ever it came. Nor was it a less remarkable instance of the care and tenderness of the Divine Providence over them, that when *Cestius Gallus* had besieged *Jerusalem*, on a sudden he should unexpectedly break up the Siege, at once giving them warning of their danger, and an opportunity to escape. How long *Simeon* and the Church continued in this little Sanctuary, and when they returned to *Jerusalem*, appears not. If I might conjecture, I should place their return about the beginning of *Trajan's* Reign, when the fright being sufficiently over, and the hatred and severity of the *Romans* allswaged, they might come back with more safety. Certain it is, that they returned before (b) *Adrian's* time, who forty seven years after the devastation coming to *Jerusalem* in order to its reparation, found there a few houses, and a little Church of Christians built upon *Mount Sion*, in that very place where that *Upper Room* was, into which the Disciples went up when they returned from our Lord's Ascension. Here the Christians who were returned from *Pella*, kept their solemn Assemblies, and were so renowned for the flourishing state of their Religion, and the eminency of their Miracles, that *Aquila* the Emperours Kinsman, and whom he had made Governour and Overseer of the rebuilding of the City, being convinced, embraced Christianity. But still pursuing his old Magic and Astrological studies notwithstanding the frequent admonitions that were given him, he was cast out of the Church. Which he resented as so great an affront, that he apostatized to *Judaism*, and afterwards translated the Bible into *Greek*. But to return back to *Simeon*; confident we may be that he administered his Province with all diligence and fidelity, in the discharge whereof God was pleased to preserve him as a person highly useful to his Church, to a very great Age, till the middle of *Trajan's* reign, when he was brought to give his last testimony to his Religion, and that upon a very slight pretence.

X. THE Roman Emperours were infinitely jealous of their new established Sovereignty, and of any that might seem to be Corrivals with them, especially in *Palestine* and the *Eastern* parts. For an Ancient and constant tradition (as appears besides *Josephus*, both from *Suetonius* and *Tacitus*) had been entertained throughout the *East*, that out of *Judea* should arise a Prince, that should be the great Monarch of the World. Which though *Josephus* to ingratiate himself with the *Romans*, flatteringly applied to *Vespasian*, yet did not this quiet their minds, but that still they beheld all that were of the line of *David* with a jealous eye. This made *Domitian*, *Vespasian's* Son resolve to destroy all that were of

Οὐδ' αὖτε σπασθεὶς  
μὲν τὸ ἴδιον ἱε-  
ροσολύμων  
ἐλθόντων πέν-  
τα καὶ ἀπὸ

ἡμῶν βασιδ' ἀναζητεῖν καὶ ἀποκτείνειν, ὡς καὶ περιφθύνει πᾶσι τοῖς Ἰουδαίοις καὶ ἀπὸ τῆς βασιλικῆς φυλῆς, καὶ ὡς ἐκ τούτου μέγιστον Ἰουδαίοις συμβῆναι διωγμὸν πάλιν. Chron. Alexandr. ad Ann. 1. Olympad. CCXIII. Indi. XV. Vespas. V. p. 586. eadem habet de Domitian ad Ann. 1. Olymp. CCXVIII. Ind. V. Domit. XIII. p. 590.

the



the Blood Royal of the house of *Judah*; upon which account two Nephews of S. *Jude*, one of the Brothers of our Lord were brought before him, and despised by him for their poverty and meanness, as persons very unlikely to stand competitors for a Crown: The very same Indictment was brought against our aged Bishop; for some of the Sects of the \* *Jews* not able to bear his activity and zeal in the cause of his Religion, and finding nothing else to charge upon him, accused him to *Atticus*; at that time *Consular Legat* of *Syria*, for being of the Posterity of the Kings of *Judah*, and withal a Christian. Hereupon he was apprehended and brought before the *Proconsul*, who commanded him for several days together to be racked with the most exquisite torments. All which he underwent with so composed a mind, so unconquerable a patience, that the *Proconsul* and all that were present were amazed to see a person of so great Age able to endure such and so many tortures: at last he was commanded to be Crucified. He suffered in CXX. year of his age, and in the X year of *Trajan's* Reign, *Ann. Chr. CVII*, (the *Alexandrin Chronicon* † places it *Traj. VII Ann. Chr.* as appears by the *Consuls, CIV*, though as doubtful of that, he places it again in the following Year) after he had late Bishop of *Jerusalem* (computing his Succession from S. *James* his Martyrdom) XLIII, or XLIV years; \* *Petavius* makes it no less than XLVII, though *Nicephorus* Patriarch of *Constantinople* (probably by a mistake of the figure) assign him but XXIII. A longer proportion of time than a dozen of his immediate Successors were able to make up, God probably lengthening out his life, that as a skilful and faithful Pilot he might steer and conduct the Affairs of that Church in those dismal and stormy days.

\* *Euseb. l. 3. c. 32. p. 103, 104.*

† *An. 4. Olymp. CCXX. Ind. I. p. 594.*

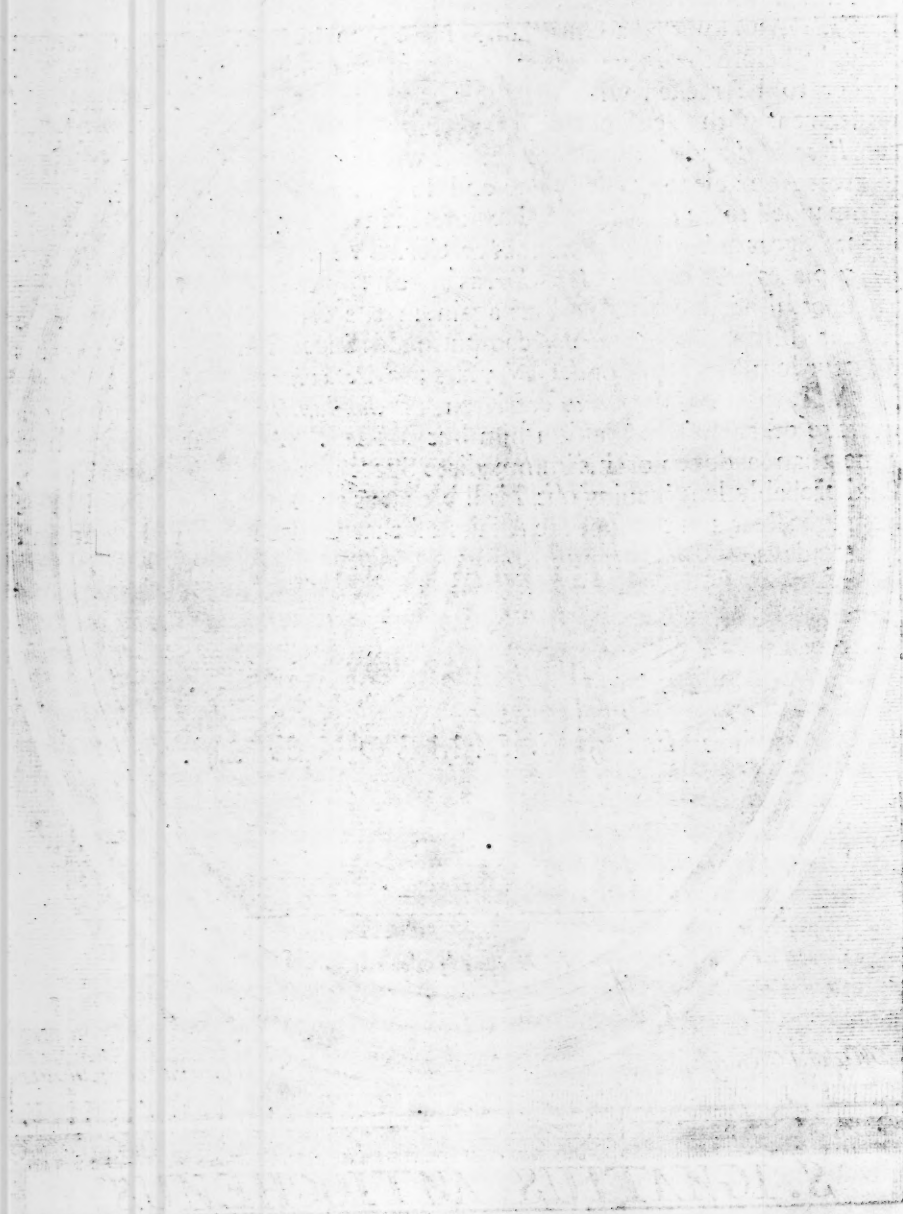
\* *Animadv. ad Epiph. Hæres. LXVI. p. 266.*

The End of S. SIMEON'S Life.

O

T H E

810 N. 1st St.  
St. Louis, Mo.



AMERICAN MEDICAL ASSOCIATION  
535 N. Dearborn St., Chicago, Ill.

THE LIFE OF  
**S. IGNATIUS**  
 BISHOP of *ANTIOCH.*



*Michael Burghers*

*Delincent et sculpit.*

**S. IGNATIUS ANTIOCHENUS.**

*His Originals unknown. Called Theophorus, and why. The Story of his being taken up into our Saviours arms, refuted. His Apostolic education. S. John's Disciple. His being made Bishop of Antioch. The eminency of*



of that See. The order of his succession stated. His prudent Government of that Church. The tradition of his appointing Antiphonal hymns by revelation. Trajan's persecuting the Church at Antioch. His discourse with Ignatius. Ignatius his cruel usage. His sentence passed. His being transmitted to Rome: and why sent so far to his execution. His arrival at Smyrna, and meeting with S. Polycarp. His Epistles to several Churches. His coming to Troas, and Epistles thence. His arrival at Porto Romano. Met on the way by the Christians at Rome. His earnest desire of Martyrdom. His praying for the prosperity of the Church. The time of his Passion. His being thrown to wild Beasts. What kind of punishment that among the Romans. The collection of his Remains, and their transportation to Antioch; and the great honours done to them. The great plenty of them in the Church of Rome. Trajan's surceasing the Persecution against the Christians. The dreadful Earthquakes happening at Antioch. Ignatius his admirable Piety. His general solicitude for the preservation and propagation of the Christian Doctrine, as an Apostle. His care, diligence, and fidelity, as a Bishop. His patience and fortitude, as a Martyr. His Epistles. Polycarp's commendation of them.

I.



FINDING nothing recorded concerning the Country or Parentage of this Holy Man, I shall not build upon meer fanſie and conjecture. He is ordinarily ſtiled both by himſelf and others *Theophorus*, which though like *juſtus* it be oft no more than a common Epithet, yet is it ſometimes uſed as a proper name. It is written according to the different accents, either Θεοφόρος, and then it denotes a divine perſon, a

Man whoſe Soul is full of God, and all holy and divine qualities, ο ὁ Θεός ἐν τῇ ψυχῇ περιέτωρ, as *Ignatius* himſelf is ſaid to explain it; or Θεόφορος, and ſo in a paſſive ſignification it implies one that is born or carried by God. And in this latter ſenſe he is ſaid to have derived the title from our Lord's taking him up into his Arms. For thus we are told, that he was that very *Child* whom our Saviour took into his arms, and ſet in the miſt of his Diſciples, as the moſt lively inſtance of Innocency and Humility. And this affirmed (if number might carry it) not only by the (a) *Greeks* in their public Rituals, by (b) *Metaphraſtes*, (c) *Nicephorus*, and others, but (as the Primate of *Armagh* (d) obſerves from the Manuſcripts in his own poſſeſſion) by two *Syriac* Writers, more ancient than they. But how confidently or generally ſoever it be reported, the Story at beſt is precarious and uncertain, not to ſay abſolutely falſe and groundleſs. Sure I am (e) *S. Chryſoſtom* (who had far better opportunities of knowing than they) expreſſly affirms of *Ignatius*, that he never ſaw our Saviour, or enjoyed any familiarity or converſe with him.

Mark 9. 36.

Matt. 18. 2,

3. 4.

(a) *Meneos*

Græcor. Τῆ

αἰχνοῦ τῶ

δεκαμῆ.

(b) *Metaphraſtes*

Decembr. 20.

Græc. &amp; Lat.

apud Coteler.

p. 991.

(c) *Niceph. H.*

Ecl. l. 2. c. 35.

p. 192.

(d) *Annot. in**Ignat. Aſſ. p. 37.*

Ὁντως περιούμιος κληροῦς Θεοφόρος, πάτερ. Νήπιος δ' ἐπ' κοιλίῃ ὑπαρχων εἰς

χρῆστος τὸ Κυεῖν περιέμῳς, ἵσασι ἀναπαύοντος πρὸς ἡμᾶς, γενεθί μοι, ὡς τὸ παιδίον τῶτο. Men. Græc. loc. citat.

(e) *Homil. in S. Ignat. p. 506. Tom. 1.*(f) *Ibid. p. 499.*

II. IN his younger years he was brought up under Apoſtolic Inſtitution: ſo (f) *Chryſoſtom* tells us, that he was intimately converſant with the Apoſtles, educated and nurſed up by them, every where at hand, and made] partaker ἐν τῷ καὶ ἀπὸ πάντων, both of their familiar diſcourſes, and more

more secret and uncommon Mysteries. Which though 'tis probable he means of his particular conversation with S. Peter and Paul, yet some of the forementioned Authors, and not they only, but the \* *Acts* of his Martyrdom, written as is supposed by some present at it, further assure us, that he was S. John's Disciple. Being fully instructed in the Doctrines of Christianity, he was for his eminent parts, and the great Piety of his life, chosen to be Bishop of *Antioch* the Metropolis of *Syria*, and the most famous and renowned City of the *East*; not more remarkable among Foreign Writers for being the *Oriental* Seat of the *Roman* Emperours, and their Vice-Roys and Governours; than it is in Ecclesiastics for its eminent entertainment of the Christian Faith, its giving the venerable title of *Christians* to the Disciples of the Holy *Jesus*, and S. Peter's first and peculiar residence in this place. Whence the Synod of † *Constantinople* assembled under *Nectarius*, in their *Synodical* Epistle to the *Western* Bishops, deservedly call it, the most ancient and truly *Apostolic* Church of *Antioch*, in which the honourable name of Christians did first commence. In all which respects it is frequently in the Writings of the Church by a proud kind of title stiled *Θεόπολις*, or the *City of God*. That *Ignatius* was constituted Bishop of this Church, is allowed on all hands, though as to the time and order of his coming to it, almost the same difficulties occur, which before did in *Clemens* his succession to the See of *Rome*, possibly not readily to be removed but by the same method of solution, easily granted in this case by \* *Baronius* himself, and some other Writers of note in that Church. I shall not need to prove what is evident enough in it self, and plainly acknowledged by the Ancients, that *Peter* and *Paul* planted Christianity in this City, and both concurred to the foundation of this Church; the one applying himself to the *Jews*, the other to the *Gentiles*. And large enough was the Vineyard to admit the joint-endavours of these two great Planters of the Gospel, it being a vast populous City, containing at that time according to S. *Chrysostom*'s computation, no less than two hundred thousand Souls. But the Apostles (who could not stay always in one place) being called off to the Ministry of other Churches, saw it necessary to substitute others in their room, the one resigning his trust to *Euodius*; the other to *Ignatius*. Hence in the *Apostolic Constitutions* † *Euodius* is said to be ordained Bishop of *Antioch*, by S. *Peter*; and *Ignatius* by S. *Paul*; till *Euodius* dying, and the *Jewish* Converts being better reconciled to the *Gentiles*, *Ignatius* succeeded in the sole care and Presidency, over that Church, wherein he might possibly be afterwards confirmed by *Peter* himself. In which respect probably the Author of the (a) *Alexandrine Chronicon* meant it, when he affirms that *Ignatius* was constituted Bishop of *Antioch* by the Apostles. By this means he may be said both immediately to succeed the Apostle, as (b) *Origen*, (c) *Eusebius*, (d) *Athanasius*, and (e) *Chrysostom* affirm, and withal to be the next after *Euodius*, as (f) S. *Hierom*, (g) *Socrates*, (h) *Metaphrastes* and others place him. However *Euodius* dying, and he being settled in it by the Apostles hands, might be justly said to succeed S. *Peter*; in which sense it is that some of the Ancients expressly affirm him to have received his Consecration from S. *Peter*, διὰ τὸ τῷ μεγάλῳ Πέτρῳ δεξιὰς τὸ ἀρχιεπισκοπῆς ἔχειν ἐδεδότα, says (i) *Theodoret*; and so their own (k) *Historian* relates it, that *Peter* coming to *Antioch* in his passage to *Rome*, and finding *Euodius*

\* *Act. Ignat. p. 1. & 5. Edit. Usser.*

† *Ap. Theodor. H. Eccl. l. 5. c. 9. p. 211.*

\* *Ad Ann. 45. n. 14. vid. Ad Martyr. Rom. Feb. 1. p. 88.*

† *Lib. 7. c. 47. p. 451.*

(a) *Ad An. Tib. XIX. p. 526.*  
(b) *Orig. Hom. 6. in Luc. p. 214.*  
(c) *Euseb. H. Ec. l. 3. c. 26. p. 106.*  
(d) *Athanas. de Synod. A. im. & Seleu. p. 922.*  
(e) *Chrysost. loc. cit. p. 500.*  
(f) *Hier. de scr. in Ignat. l. 6. c. 8. p. 313.*  
(g) *Socr. H. Eccl. l. 6. c. 8. p. 313.*  
(h) *Metaph. ubi supr.*  
(i) *Theodoret.*  
(k) *Jo. Nisib. Chron. l. 10. ap. Usser.*

(h) *Metaph. ubi supr.*  
(i) *De Immut. ab. Dialog. 1. p. 33. Tom. 4.*  
(k) *Jo. Nisib. Chron. l. 10. ap. Usser.*

lately

lately dead, committed the Government of it to *Ignatius*, whom he made Bishop of that place: though it will be a little difficult to reconcile the Times to an agreement with that account.

III. **SOMEWHAT** above forty Years *S. Ignatius* continued in his charge at *Antioch*, (*Nicephorus* Patriarch of *Constantinople* assigns him but four years, the figure  $\mu$  for forty, being probably through the carelessness of Transcribers slipped out of the account) in the midst of very stormy and tempestuous times. But \* he like a wise and prudent Pilot sat at the Stern, and declined the dangers that threatened them by his prayers and tears, his fastings and the constancy of his preaching, and those indefatigable pains he took among them, fearing lest any of the more weak and unsettled Christians might be overborn with the storms of Persecution. Never did a little calm and quiet interval happen, but he rejoiced in the prosperity of the Church: though as to himself he somewhat impatiently expected and longed for Martyrdom, without which he accounted he could never perfectly attain to the love of Christ, nor fill up the duty and measures of a true Disciple, which accordingly afterwards became his portion. Indeed as to the particular acts of his Government, nothing memorable is recorded of him in the Antiquities of the Church, more than what † *Socrates* relates (by what Authority, I confess, I know not) that he saw a Vision, wherein he heard the Angels with alternate hymns celebrating the honour of the holy Trinity, in imitation whereof he instituted the way of *Antiphonal* hymns in the Church of *Antioch*, which thence spread it self over the whole Christian Church. Whether this Story was made on purpose to out-vie the *Arrians* who were wont on the *Sabbaths* and *Lord's-days* to sing alternate hymns in their Congregations, with some tart reflections upon the Orthodox, insomuch that *Chrysostom* was forced to introduce the same way of singing into the Orthodox Assemblies; or whether it was really instituted by *Ignatius*, but afterwards grown into dis-use, I will not say. Certain it is, that *Flavianus* afterwards Bishop of *Antioch* in the Reign of *Constantinus* is \* said to have been the first that thus established the Quire, and appointed *David's* Psalms to be sung by turns, which thence propagated it self to other Churches. *S. Ambrose* was the first that brought it into the *Western* Church, reviving (says the † Historian) the ancient institution of *Ignatius*, long disused among the *Greeks*. But to return.

IV. **IT** was about the Year of Christ CVII. When *Trajan* the Emperour swelled with his late Victory over the *Scythians* and the *Daci*, about the ninth year of his Reign came to *Antioch*, to make preparation for the War which he was resolved to make upon the *Parthians* and *Armenians*. He entered the City with the Pumps and Solemnities of a triumph, and as his first care usually was about the concerns of Religion, he began presently to enquire into that affair. Indeed he \* looked upon it as an affront to his other Victories to be conquered by Christians; and therefore to make his Religion stoop, had already commenced a Persecution against them in other parts of the Empire, which he resolved to carry on here. *S. Ignatius* (whose sollicitude for the good of his Flock made him continually stand upon his guard thinking it more prudent to go himself, than stay to be sent for, of his own \* accord presented himself to the Emperour, between whom there is said to have passed a large and particular discourse, the Emperour wondering that he dared to transgress his Laws, while the good Man asserted his own inno-

cency,

\* *Act. Ignat.*  
p. 1, 2.

† *H. Eccl. loc.*  
*citat.*

\* *Theodoret. H.*  
*Eccl. l. 2. c. 24.*  
p. 107.

† *Sigebert.*  
*Chr. ad Ann.*  
*Chr. 387.*

\* *Act. ib. p. 2.*

\* *Act. Ign. p.*  
3.



ency, and the power which God hath given them over evil Spirits, and that the gods of the *Gentiles* were no better than *Demons*, there being but one supreme Deity, who made the World, and his only begotten Son *Jesus Christ*, who though crucified under *Pilate*, had yet destroyed him that had the power of sin, that is, the Devil, and would ruine the whole Power and Empire of the *Demons*, and tread it under the feet of those, who carried God in their hearts. The issue was, that he was cast into prison, where (if what the \* *Greek* Rituals and some others report, be true) he was for the constancy and resolution of his Profession, subjected to the most severe and merciless torments, whipped with *Plumbata*, Scourges with leaden Bullets at the end of them, forced to hold fire in his hands, while his sides were burnt with Papers dipt in Oil, his feet stood upon live coals, and his flesh was torn off with burning Pincers. Having by an invincible patience overcome the malice and cruelty of his Tormenters, the Emperour pronounced the † final sentence upon him, that being incurably over-run with Superstition, he should be carried bound by Souldiers to *Rome*, and there thrown as a prey to wild Beasts. The good man heartily rejoiced at the fatal decree, *I thank thee, O Lord* (said he) *that thou hast condescended thus perfectly to honour me with thy love, and hast thought me worthy with thy Apostle Paul to be bound with iron chains.* With that he chearfully embraced his chains, and having fervently prayed for his Church, and with tears recommended it to the divine care and providence, he delivered up himself into the hands of his Keepers, that were appointed to transport him to the place of execution.

V. I T. may justly seem strange, and 'twas that which puzzled the great \* *Scaliger*, why he should be sent so vast a way from *Antioch* in *Syria* to be martyred at *Rome*. Whereof these probable accounts may be rendered. First, It was usual with the Governours of Provinces, where the malefactors were more than ordinarily eminent, either for the quality of their persons, or the nature of their crimes, to send them to *Rome*, that their punishment might be made exemplary in the eye of the World. Secondly, his enemies were not willing he should suffer at home, where he was too much honoured and esteemed already, and where his death would but raise him into a higher Veneration with the People, and settle their minds in a firmer belief of that Faith, which he had taught them, and which they then saw him sealing with his Blood. Thirdly, by so long a journey, they hoped that in all places where he came, Men would be more effectually terrified from the embracing that Religion, which they saw so much distasted and resented by the Emperour, and the profession whereof could not be purchased but at so dear a rate; besides the probability, that by this usage the constancy of *Ignatius* himself might be broken, and he forced to yield. Fourthly, they designed to make the good man's punishment as severe and heavy as they could, and therefore so contrived it, that there might be a concurrence of circumstances to render it bitter and griveous to him. His great Age, being then probably above fourscore Years old, the vast length and tediousness of the journey, (which was not a little encreased by the μακρότεροι διαύλοι τῷ δρόμῳ, as † *S. Chrysostom* observes, their going the farthest way about, for they went not the direct passage to *Rome*, but by infinite windings, diverted from place to place) the trouble and difficulty of the passage, bad at all times, but much worse

\* Τῇ ἡμέρᾳ.  
μὴν τῷ Δε-  
κεμβριῷ.

† Act. Martyr.  
p. 4.

\* Animado. ad  
Euseb. Chron.  
p. 207.

† Homil. cit.  
p. 304.

worse now in Winter, the want of all necessary conveniencies and accommodations for so aged and infirm a person, the rude and merciless usage of his Keepers, who treated him with all ruggedness and inhumanity: *From Syria even to Rome both by Sea and Land I fight with Beasts, night and day I am chained to ten Leopards, (which is my military guard) who, the kinder I am to them, are the more cruel and fierce to me,* as \* himself complains. Besides what was dearer to him than all this, his credit and reputation might be in danger to suffer with him, seeing at so great a distance the Romans were generally more likely to understand him to suffer as a Malefactor for some notorious crime, than as a Martyr for Religion, and this † *Metaphrastes* assures us, was one particular end of his sending thither. Not to say that beyond all this, the Divine Providence (which knows how to bring good out of evil, and to over-rule the designs of bad Men to wise and excellent purposes) might the rather permit it to be so, that the leading so great a Man so far in triumph, might make the Faith more remarkable and illustrious, that he might have the better opportunity to establish and confirm the Christians, who flocked to him from all parts as he came along; and by giving them the example of a generous Vertue, arm them with the stronger resolution to die for their Religion, and especially that he might seal the truth of his Religion at Rome, where his death might be διδασκαλίῳ ἡ δόσι-  
λέας, (as *Chrysostom* speaks) a Tutor of Piety, and teach κακείνῳ φιλοσο-  
φείν the City that was so famous for Arts and Wisdom, a new and better Philosophy than they had learned before. To all which may be added, that this was done not by the Provincial Governour, who had indeed power of executing capital punishments within his own Province (which seems to have been the main ground of *Scaliger's* scruple) but immediately by the Emperour himself, whose pleasure and command it was that he should be sent to Rome; whither we must now follow him to his Martyrdom: in the account whereof we shall for the main keep to the *Acts* of it, written in all probability by *Philo* and *Agathopus*, the Companions of his Journey, and present at his Passion; two ancient Versions whereof the incomparable Bishop *Usher* first recovered and published to the World.

\* *Epist. ad Rom. p. 23. & ap. Euseb. l. 3. c. 36. p. 107.*

† *Martyr. ubi supr. 993.*

*Vid. Chrysost. Homil. cit. pag. 505.*

*Ibid.*

\* *Act. Ignat. pag. 5.*

VI. B E I N G \* *consigned to a guard of ten Souldiers, he took his leave of his beloved Antioch (and a sad parting no doubt there was between him and his People; who were to see his face no more) and was conducted on foot to Seleucia, a Port-town of Syria, about sixteen Miles distant thence, the very place whence Paul and Barnabas set Sail for Cyprus. Here going aboard, after a tedious and difficult Voyage they arrived at Smyrna, a famous City of Ionia, where they were no sooner set on shore, but he went to salute S. Polycarp Bishop of the place, his old Fellow-Pupil under S. John the Apostle. Joyful was the meeting of these two Holy Men, S. Polycarp being so far from being discouraged that he rejoiced in the others chains, and earnestly pressed him to a firm and final perseverance. Hither came in the Countrey round about, especially the Bishops, Presbyters and Deacons of the Asian Churches, to behold so venerable a sight, to partake of the holy Martyrs prayers and blessing, and to encourage him to hold on to his consummation. To requite whose kindness, and for their further instruction and establishment in the Faith, he wrote † Letters from hence to several Churches, one to the Ephesians, wherein he commends Onesimus their Bishop for his sin-*

† *Euseb. H. Eccl. l. 3. c. 36. p. 107.*

gular

gular Charity; another to the *Magnesiens*, a City seated upon the River *Meander*, which he sent by *Damas* their Bishop, *Bassus* and *Apollonius* Presbyters, and *Sotio* Deacon of that Church; a third to the *Trallians* by *Polybius* their Bishop, wherein he particularly presses them to subjection to their Spiritual Guides, and to avoid those pestilent Hæretical Doctrines that were then risen in the Church. A fourth he wrote to the Christians at *Rome*, to acquaint them with his present state, and passionate desire not to be hindered in that course of Martyrdom, which he was now hastning to accomplish.

VII. HIS Keepers a little impatient of their stay at *Smyrna*, set Sail for *Troas*, a noted City of the lesser *Phrygia*, not far from the ruins of the ancient *Troy*: where at his arrival he was not a little refreshed with the news that he received of the Persecution ceasing in the Church of *Antioch*. Hither several Churches sent their Messengers to visit and salute him, and hence he dispatched two Epistles, one to the Church at *Philadelphia*, to press them to Love and Unity, and to stand fast in the truth and simplicity of the Gospel, the other to the Church of *Smyrna*, from whence he lately departed, which he sent, as also the former, by *Burrhus* the Deacon, whom they and the *Ephesians* had sent to wait upon him; and together with that (as (a) *Ensebius* informs us) he wrote privately to St. *Polycarp*; particularly recommending to him the care and oversight of the Church of *Antioch*, for which as a vigilant Pastor he could not but have a tender and very dear regard; though very learned Men (but certainly without any just reason) think this not to have been a distinct Epistle from the former, but joyned and intended to St. *Polycarp* and his Church of *Smyrna*. Which however it be, they conclude it as certain that the Epistle to St. *Polycarp* now extant, is none of it, as in which nothing of the true temper and Spirit of *Ignatius* does appear; while others of great note not improbably contend for it as genuine and sincere. From *Troas* they sailed to *Neapolis*, a Maritime Town of *Macedonia*, thence to *Philippi*, a Roman Colony (the very same journey which St. *Paul* had gone before him,) where (as (b) St. *Polycarp* intimates in his Epistle to that Church) they were entertained with all imaginable kindness and courtesie, and conducted forwards in their Journey. Hence they passed on foot through *Macedonia* and *Epirus*, till they came to *Epidamnium* a City of *Dalmatia*, where again taking Ship they sailed through the *Adriatic*, and arrived at *Rhegium*, a Port Town in *Italy*, whence they directed their course through the *Tyrrhenian* Sea to *Puteoli*, *Ignatius* desiring (if it might have been granted) thence to have gone by Land, that he might have traced the same way, by which St. *Paul* went to *Rome*. After a day and a nights stay at *Puteoli*, a prosperous wind quickly carried them to the *Roman Port*, the great Harbour and Station for their Navy, built near *Ostia* at the mouth of *Tyber*, about sixteen miles from *Rome*, whither the holy Martyr longed to come, as much desirous to be at the end of his Race, as his Keepers, weary of their voyage, were to be at the end of their Journey.

VIII. THE Christians at *Rome* daily expecting his arrival, were come out to meet and entertain him, and accordingly received him with an equal resentment of joy and sorrow. Glad they were of the presence and company of so great and good a Man, but quickly found their joy allayed with the remembrance, how soon, and by how severe a death he was to be taken from them: and when some of them did but intimate,

P

that

(a) Loc. cit. p.  
107.

AG. 16. 11, 12.  
(b) Epist. Polycarp. ad Philip.  
p. 13. non longe  
ab init.



that possibly the People might be taken off from desiring his death, he expressed a pious indignation, intreating them to cast no rubs in his way, nor do any thing that might hinder him, now he was hastning to his Crown. Being conducted to *Rome*, he was presented to the *Præfekt* of the City, and as 'tis probable, the Emperors Letters concerning him were delivered. In the mean time while things were preparing for his Martyrdom, he and the Brethren that resorted to him improved their time to pious purposes; he prayed with them, and for them, heartily recommended the state of the Church to the care and protection of our blessed Saviour, and earnestly solicited Heaven, that it would stop the Persecution that was begun, and bless Christians with a true love and charity towards one another. That his punishment might be the more pompous and public, one of their solemn Festivals, the time of their *Saturnalia*, and that part of it when they celebrated their *Sigillaria*, was pitched on for his Execution: at which time they were wont to entertain the People with the bloody conflicts of *Gladiators*, and the hunting of, and fighting with wild Beasts. Accordingly on the XIII. of the *Kalends* of *January*, that is, *December XX.* he was brought out into the *Amphitheatre*, and according to his own fervent desire, that he might have no other Grave but the bellies of wild Beasts, the Lions were let loose upon him, whose roaring alarm he entertained with no other concernment, than that now as God's own Corn he should be ground between the teeth of these wild Beasts, and become white bread for his heavenly Master. The Lions were not long doing their work, but quickly dispatched their Meal, and left nothing but what they could not well devour, a few hard and solid bones. This throwing of persons to wild Beasts was accounted among the *Romans*, (*a*) *inter summa supplicia*, and was never used but for very capital offences, and towards the vilest and most despicable Malefactors, under which rank they beheld the Christians, who were so familiarly destined to this kind of death, (that as \* *Tertullian* tells us) upon any trifling and frivolous pretence, if a Famine or an Earthquake did but happen, the common out-cry was, *Christianos ad Leones*, away with the Christians to the Lions.

IX. AMONG other Christians that were mournful spectators of this Tragic Scene, were the Deacons I mentioned, who had been the Companions of his Journey, who bore not the least part in the sorrows of that day. And that they might not return home with nothing but the account of so sad a Story, they gathered up the bones (*b*) which the wild Beasts had spared, and transported them to *Antioch*, where they were joyfully received, and honourably entombed in the *Cemetery* without the Gate that leads to *Daphne*. A passage which *Chrysostom* according to his Rhetorical Vein elegantly amplifies as the great honour and treasure of that place. From hence in the reign of (*c*) *Theodosius* they were by his command, with mighty pomp and solemnity removed to the *Tycheon* within the City, a Temple heretofore dedicated to the public *Genius* of the City, but now consecrated to the memory of the Martyr. And for their translation afterwards to *Rome*, and the Miracles said to be done by them, they that are further curious may enquire. For indeed I am not now at leisure for these things. But I can direct the Reader to one that will give him very punctual and particular accounts of them, and in what places the several parcels of his Reliques are bestowed, no less than five Churches in *Rome* enriched with them.

(a) Paul. JC.  
Sent. lib. 5. Tit.  
23. L. 3. Sect. 5.  
ff. ad leg. Cornel.  
de Sicar. & Ve-  
nez.  
\* Apolog. c. 40.  
p. 32.

(b) *Att. Ignat. p. 8. Metaphr. loc cit. Men. Græc. Τῆς αὐτῆς ἱερῆς. Hieron. de Script. in Ignat. (c) Euagr. H. Eccl. l. c. 16. p. 274.*

*Bolland. ad di-*  
*em 1. Febr. p.*  
*35. &c.*

them, besides others in *Naples*, *Sicily*, *France*, *Flanders*, *Germany*, and indeed where not? And verily but that some Men have a very happy faculty at doing wonders by multiplication, a Man would be apt to wonder how a few bones (and they were not many which the Lions spared) could be able to serve so many several Churches. I could likewise tell him a long story of the various travels and donations of St. Ignatius his head, and by what good fortune it came at last to the *Jesuites* College at *Rome*, where it is richly enshrined, solemnly and religiously worshipped, but that I am afraid my Reader will give me no thanks for my pains.

X. ABOUT this time, or a little before, while *Trajan* was yet at *Antioch*, he stopped, or at least mitigated the Persecution against Christians: For having had an account from (a) *Pliny* the Proconsul of *Bithynia* (whom he had employed to that purpose) concerning the innocency and simplicity of the Christians, that they were a harmless and inoffensive Generation; and lately received a Letter from (b) *Tiberianus* Governour of *Palestina Prima*, wherein he told him that he was wearied out in executing the Laws against the *Galilaans*, who crowded themselves in such multitudes to Execution, that he could neither by persuation nor threatenings keep them from owning themselves to be Christians, further praying his Majesties advice in that affair: hereupon he gave command, that no inquisition should be made after the Christians, though if any of them offered themselves, Execution should be done upon them. So that the fire which had hitherto flamed and burnt out, began now to be extinguished, and only crept up and down in private corners. There are that (c) tell us that *Trajan* having heard a full account of *Ignatius* and his sufferings, and how undauntedly he had undergone that bitter death, repented of what he had done, and was particularly moved to mitigate and relax the Persecution: whereby, (as *Metaphrastes* observes) not only *Ignatius* his Life, but his very death became πολλῶν περὶ εὐδαιμονίας, the Procurer of great Peace and Prosperity, and the glory and establishment of the Christian Faith. Some not improbably conceive, that the severe judgements which hapned not long after, might have a peculiar influence to dispose the Emperors mind to more tenderness and pity for the remainder of his life. For during his abode at *Antioch*, there were dreadful and unusual (d) Earthquakes, fatal to other places, but which fell most heavy upon *Antioch*, at that time fell more than ordinary with a vast Army and confluence of people from all parts of the World. Among thousands that died, and far greater numbers that were maimed and wounded, *Pedo* the Consul lost his life, and *Trajan* himself had he not escaped out at a window, had undergone the same fate. Accidents which I doubt not prepared his mind to a more serious consideration and regard of things. Though these calamities hapned not till some years after *Ignatius* his death.

XI. WHETHER these judgments were immediate instances of the divine displeasure for the severity used against the Christians, and particularly for their cruelty to *Ignatius*, I will not say. Certain it is, that the Christian Church had a mighty loss in so useful and excellent a person. For he was a good Man, one in whose breast the true spirit of Religion did eminently dwell, a Man of very moderate and mortified affections, in which sense he doubtless intended that famous saying; so much celebrated by the Ancients, Ο ΕΜΟΣ ΕΡΩΣ ΕΣΤΑΥΡΩΤΑΙ,

(a) Ep. 97. l. 10. Euseb. l. 2. c. 34. p. 105. f. Mal. Chron. l. 11. ap. Usser. not. in Ignat. Epist. p. 43. (b) Extat ap. Jo. Mal. loc. cit. ap. Usser. App. p. 9. vid. Excerpt. ex Jo. Antioch. d. Valadit. p. 818.

(c) Sim. Mt. Martyr. Ignat. apud. Coteler. p. 1002.

(d) Dio. Cass. Hist. Rom. l. 68. & Xiphil. in vit. Traj. p. 249, 250, 251. Jo. Mal. Chron. l. 10. ubi. sup.

- my Love is Crucified, that is, (for to that purpose he explains it in the very words that follow) his appetites and desires were crucified to the World, and all the Lusts and pleasures of it. We may with (a) S. Chrysostom consider him in a threefold capacity, as an *Apostle*, a *Bishop*, and a *Martyr*. As an *Apostle* (in the larger acception of the word, he being *ἑρῶν διαδέχῃ τῶν Ἀποστόλων*, as the (b) Greek Offices stile him, the immediate Successor of the Apostles in their See) he was careful to diffuse and propagate the genuine Doctrine which he had received of the Apostles, and took a kind of Oecumenical care of all Churches; even in his passage to Rome he surveyed *πᾶς καὶ πόλιν παροικίας*, as (c) Eusebius tells us, the Diocesses, or Churches, that belonged to all the Cities whither he came, confirming them by his Sermons and Exhortations, and directing Epistles to several of the principals for their further order and establishment in the Faith. As a *Bishop*, he was a diligent, faithful and industrious Pastor, infinitely careful of his charge; which though so exceedingly vast and numerous, he prudently instructed, governed, and superintended, and that in the midst of ticklish and troublesome times, above forty years together. He had a true and unchangeable love for his People, and when ravished from them in order to his Martyrdom, there was not any Church to whom he (d) wrote, but he particularly begged their Prayers to God for his Church at *Antioch*, and of some of them desired that they would send *διοπροσθέντι*, a divine Embassador thither on purpose to comfort them, and to congratulate their happy deliverance from the Persecution. And because he knew that the prosperity of the Church and the good of Souls were no less undermined by Heresie from within, than assaulted by Violence and Persecution from without, he had a peculiar eye to that, and took all occasions of warning the Church to beware of Hereticks and Seducers, *τὰ θεία τὰ αἰθρῶν πύργα*, as he stiles (e) them, those Beasts in the shape of Men, whose wild notions and brutish manners began even then to embase Religion, and corrupt the simplicity of the Faith. Indeed he duly filled up all the measures of a wise Governor, and an excellent Guide of Souls, and St. Chrysostom (f) runs through the particular characters of the Bishop delineated by St. Paul, and finds them all accomplished and made good in him; with so generous a care (says he) (g) so exact a diligence did he preside over the flock of Christ, even to the making good what our Lord describes, *ὡς μέγιστον ὄρν και κρόνα τὸ ὁπσκοπῆς*, as the utmost pitch and line of Episcopal Fidelity, to lay down his Life for the Sheep; and this he did with all courage and fortitude; which is the last consideration we shall remarque concerning him.

- XII. AS a *Martyr* he gave the higher testimony to his fidelity, and to the truth of that Religion which he both preached and practised. He gloried in his sufferings as his honour and his privilege, and looked upon chains, *τὰς πνυμωτικὰς μαργαρίτας*, he calls (h) them, as his Jewels and his Ornaments: he was raised above either the love or fear of the present state, and could with as much ease and freedom (says (i) Chrysostom) lay down his life, as another Man could put off his cloaths. The truth is, his Soul was strangely inflamed with a desire of Martyrdom, he wished every step of his Journey to meet with the wild Beasts that were prepared for him, and tells the (k) Romans, he desired nothing more than they might presently do his work, that he would invite and court them speedily to devour him, and if he found them backward, as they had

been



been towards others, he would provoke and force them. And though the death he was to undergo was most savage and barbarous, and dressed up in the most horrid and frightful shapes, enough to startle the firmest resolution, yet could they make no impression ἐν τῇ σέψῃ αἰ ἀδαμαντίνῳ ψυχῇ, (as the (a) Greeks say of him) upon his impregnable adamantine mind, any more than the dashes of a Wave upon a Rock of Marble, *Let the fire (said he \*) and the Cross, and the assaults of wild Beasts, the breaking of bones, cutting of limbs, battering the whole body in pieces, yea and all the torments which the Devil can invent come upon me, so I may but attain to be with Jesus Christ; professing he thought it much better to die for Christ, than to live and reign the sole Monarch of the World. Expressions certainly of a mighty Zeal, and a divine Passion wound up to its highest note. And yet after all, this excellent person was humble to the lowest step of abasement: he oft (b) professes that he looked upon himself as an Abortive, and the very least of the Faithful in the whole Church of Antioch, and though it was his utmost ambition, yet he did not know whether he was worthy to suffer for Religion. I might in the last place enter into a discourse concerning his Epistles (the true Indices of the piety and divine temper of his mind, ) those seven I mean, enumerated and quoted by Eusebius; and collected by St. Polycarp, as (c) himself expressly testifies; but shall forbear; despairing to offer any thing considerable after so much as has been said by learned Men about them: only observing, that in the exceptions to the argument from St. Polycarp's testimony, little more is said even by those who have managed it to the best advantage, than what might be urged against the most genuine writing in the World. I add St. Polycarp's character of these Epistles, whereby he recommends them as highly useful and advantageous; that they contain in them Instructions and Exhortations to Faith and Patience, and whatever is necessary to build us up in the Religion of our Lord and Saviour.*

(a) Men. Grec. ubi sup.

\* Epist. ad Rom. p. 24. & ap. Euseb. ubi sup.

(b) Epist. ad Eph. p. 9. ad Rom. p. 25. Epist. ad Trall. p. 17.

(c) Epist. Pol. p. 23. edit. Usser. & ap. 1 Euseb. loc. cit. p. 108.

His Writings.

Genuine		Spurious.
<i>Ad Ephesios Epistola.</i>	I.	<i>Ad Mariam Cassobolitam.</i> I.
<i>Ad Magnesianos.</i>	I.	<i>Ad Tarsenses.</i> I.
<i>Ad Trallianos.</i>	I.	<i>Ad Antiochenos.</i> I.
<i>Ad Romanos.</i>	I.	<i>Ad Philippenses.</i> I.
<i>Ad Philadelphenos.</i>	I.	<i>Ad Heronem.</i> I.
<i>Ad Smyrnaeos.</i>	I.	<i>Ad B. Virg. Mariam.</i> I.
		<i>Ad Joannem Apostolum.</i> II.
<i>Epistola ad Polycarpum.</i>		

The End of S. IGNATIUS's Life.

THE

THE  
JOURNAL  
OF  
THE  
AMERICAN  
MEDICAL  
ASSOCIATION  
PUBLISHED WEEKLY  
CHICAGO, ILL.  
1914

Subscription price, \$5.00 per annum in advance.  
Single copies, 15 cents.  
Entered as Second-Class Matter, May 2, 1912.  
Postpaid.  
Acceptance for mailing at special rate of postage provided for in Act of October 3, 1917.  
Postage paid at Chicago, Ill.  
Postmaster: Send address changes to JOURNAL OF THE AMERICAN MEDICAL ASSOCIATION, 535 N. Dearborn St., Chicago, Ill.

Published by the JOURNAL OF THE AMERICAN MEDICAL ASSOCIATION, 535 N. Dearborn St., Chicago, Ill.  
Copyright, 1914, by JOURNAL OF THE AMERICAN MEDICAL ASSOCIATION

THE LIFE OF  
**S. POLYCARP**  
 BISHOP of SMYRNA.



*Michael Bughers delinavit et fecit*

**S. POLYCARPUS.**

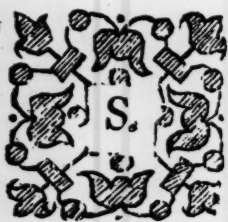
*The Place of his Nativity. The honour and eminency of Smyrna. His education under S. John. By him constituted Bishop of Smyrna. Whether the same with the Bishop to whom S. John committed the young man.*

*S. Po*



S. Polycarp the Angel of the Church of Smyrna mentioned in the Apocalypse. Ignatius his arrival at Smyrna. His Letters to that Church, and to S. Polycarp. His Journey to Rome about the Quartodeciman Controversie. The time of it enquired into. Anicetus his succession to the See of Rome. His reception there by Anicetus. Their mutual kindness notwithstanding the difference. His stout opposing Heretics at Rome. His sharp treatment of Marcion, and mighty zeal against those early corrupters of the Christian Doctrine. Irenæus his particular remarques of S. Polycarp's Actions. The Persecution under M. Antoninus. The time of Polycarp's Martyrdom noted. The acts of it written by the Church of Smyrna: their great esteem and value. S. Polycarp sought for. His Martyrdom foretold by a Dream. His apprehension, and being conducted to Smyrna. Irenarchæ, who. Polycarp's rude treatment by Herodes. His being brought before the Proconsul. Christians refused to swear by the Emperor's genius, and why. His pious and resolute answers. His slighting the Proconsul's threatnings. His sentence proclaimed. Asiarchæ, who. Preparation for his burning. His Prayer before his death. Miraculously preserved in the fire. Dispatched with a Sword. The care of the Christians about his remains: this far from a Superstitious veneration. Their annual meeting at the place of his Martyrdom. His great Age at his death. The day of his Passion. His Tomb how honoured at this day. The Judgements hapning to Smyrna after his death. The Faith and Patience of the Primitive Christians noted out of the Preface to the Acts of his Martyrdom. His Epistle to the Philippians. Its usefulness. Highly valued and publicly read in the ancient Church. The Epistle it self.

I.



POLYCARP was born towards the latter end of Nero's Reign, or it may be a little sooner, his great Age at the time of his death, with some other circumstances rendring it highly probable, if not certain. Uncertain it is where he was born, and I see no sufficient reason to the contrary, why we may not fix his Nativity at Smyrna, an eminent City of Ionia in the lesser Asia, the first of the seven that entred their claim of being the birth-place of the famous (a) Homer, in memory whereof they had a Library, and a four-square Portico, called *Homereum*, with a Temple and the Statue of Homer adjoyning to it, and used a sort of brass Coin, which they called *Ὅμηρειον*, after his name, and probably with his Image stampd upon it. A place it was of great honour and renown, and has not only very magnificent titles heaped upon it by the Writers of those Times, but in several ancient Inscriptions, set up by the public Order of the Senate, not long after the time of Adrian, it is stiled, *the chief City of Asia, both for beauty and greatness, the most splendid, the Metropolis of Asia, and the Ornament of Ionia*. But it had a far greater and a more honourable Privilege to glory in, if it was (as we suppose) the place of St. Polycarp's Nativity, however of his Education, the seat of his Episcopal care and charge, and the Scene of his Tragedy and Martyrdom. The (b) Greeks

(a) Strab. Geograph. l. 14. p. 646.

Η ΚΡΑΤΙΣΤΗ ΒΟΤΑΗ  
ΤΗΣ ΠΡΩΤΗΣ ΤΗΣ ΑΣΙΑΣ  
ΚΑΛΛΕΙ ΚΑΙ ΜΕΓΕΘΕΙ ΚΑΙ  
ΑΛΜΠΡΟΤΑΤΗΣ ΚΑΙ ΜΗΤΡΟ  
ΠΟΛΕΩΣ ΤΗΣ ΑΣΙΑΣ  
ΚΑΙ ΚΟΣΜΟΤ  
ΤΗΣ ΙΟΝΙΑΣ ΣΜΥΡΝΑΙ  
ΟΝ ΠΟΛΕΩΣ.

Marmor. Oxon. II. p. 47. Eadem habet  
Marm. LXXVIII. p. 129. CXLIII. p. 277.  
Append. XV. p. 296.

(b) Τῇ κγ'.  
τῆ μην. τῆ δε-  
εργα.

in

in their *Menaon*, report that he was educated at the charge of a certain noble Matron ( whose name we are told was *Callisto* ) a Woman of great Piety and Charity, who when she had exhausted all her Granaries in relieving the Poor, had them suddenly filled again by S. *Polycarp*'s prayers. The circumstances whereof are more particularly related by *Pionius* ( who suffered, if, which I must question, it was the same, under the *Decian* Persecution ) to this (a) effect. *Callisto* warned by an Angel in a dream sent and redeemed *Polycarp* ( then but a Child ) of some who sold him, brought him home, took care of his education, and finding him a Youth of ripe and pregnant parts, as he grew up made him the *Major-domo* and Steward of her house; whose charity it seems he dispensed with a very liberal hand, insomuch that during her absence, he had emptied all her Barns and Store-houses to the uses of the Poor. For which being charged by his Fellow-Servants at her return, she not knowing then to what purpose he had employed them, called for the Keys, and commanded him to resign his trust, which was no sooner done, but at her entrance in, she found all places full, and in as good condition as she had left them, which his prayers and intercession with Heaven had again replenished. As indeed Heaven can be sometimes content rather to work a Miracle, than Charity shall suffer and fare the worse for its kindness and bounty. In his younger years he is said to have been instructed in the Christian Faith by *Bucolus*, whom the same (b) *Menaon* elsewhere informs us St. *John* had consecrated Bishop of *Smyrna*; however (c) Authors of more unquestionable credit and ancient date tell us, that he was S. *John*'s Disciple, and not his only, but as (d) *Irenaeus*, who was his Scholar ( followed herein by S. *Hierom* ) assures us, he was taught by the Apostles, and familiarly conversed with many who had seen our Lord in the Flesh.

II. *BUCOLUS* the vigilant and industrious Bishop of *Smyrna* being dead, ( by whom S. *Polycarp* was, as we are (e) told, made *Deacon* and *Catechist* of that Church, an Office which he discharged with great diligence and success, ) *Polycarp* was ordained in his room, according to *Bucolus* his own prediction, who as the (f) *Greeks* report, had in his life time foretold that he should be his Successor. He was constituted by S. *John*, say the (g) *Ancients* generally; though (h) *Irenaeus* followed herein by the (i) *Chronicle* of *Alexandria*, affirms it to have been done by the Apostles, whether any of the Apostles besides S. *John* were then alive, or whether he means *Apostolic* persons ( commonly stiled Apostles in the Writings of the Church ) who joined with S. *John* in the consecration. (k) *Eusebius* says, that *Polycarp* was familiarly conversant with the Apostles, and received the Government of the Church of *Smyrna* from those who had been *Eye-witnesses* and *Ministers* of our Lord. It makes not a little for the honour of S. *Polycarp*, and argues his mighty diligence and sollicitude for the good of Souls, that ( as we shall note more anon ) *Ignatius* passing to his Martyrdom, wrote to him, and particularly recommended to him the inspection and oversight of his Church at *Antioch*, knowing him ( says (l) *Eusebius* ) to be truly an *Apostolical* Man, and being assured that he would use his utmost care and fidelity in that matter. The (m) Author of the *Alexandrian Chronicle* tells us, that it was the Bishop of *Smyrna* ( who could not well be any other than S. *Polycarp* ) to whom S. *John* committed the tutorage and education of the young Man, whom he took up in his Visitation, who ran away, and became Captain of a Company of loose and debauched High-way Men, and was afterwards reduced

(a) *Pion. vit.*  
S. *Polycarp. ex*  
MS. *Græc. apud*  
Bolland. *Janu-*  
*uarii. XXVI.*

(b) Τὸ αὐτὸ  
ἐκ τῆς ἱστορίας.

(c) *Act. Ignat.*  
p. 5. *Hieron. de*  
*Script. in Poly-*  
*carp. Euseb.*

*Xen. Anst.*  
p. 81.

(d) *Adv. Hæres.*

l. 3. c. 3. p. 233.

*Er. ap. Euseb. l.*

4. c. 14. p. 127.

(e) *In. c. 3. n.*

12. ubi *inpr.*

(f) *Men. 23.*

*Febr. ubi *inpr.**

(g) *Tertull. de*

*prescript. Hæ-*

*retic. c. 32. p.*

213. *Hieron.*

*ubi. *inpr.* vid.*

*Suid. in voc.*

Πολυκαρπ.

*Niceph. H. Ecol.*

l. 3. c. 2. p. 252.

*Martyr. Rom.*

ad 26. *Jan. p.*

71.

(h) *Loc. *inpr.**

*citat.*

(i) *Olymp.*

CCXXIV. r.

*Anton. XXI. p.*

602

(k) *H. Ecol. l. 3.*

c. 36. p. 106.

(l) *ib. p. 107.*

(m) *Ad. Ant.*

1. *Olympiad.*

CCXX *In.*

*dist. XIII. an.*

*Traj. 4. p. 994.*

(a) *Ap. Ensb.*  
*l. 3. c. 23. p. 92.*

(b) *Usser.*  
*Prolegom. ad*  
*Ignat. Epist. c.*  
*3. p. 9.*

and reclaimed by that Apostle. But seeing *Clemens Alexandrinus*, who relates the Story, sets down neither the name of the Bishop, nor the City, though he (a) confesses there were some that made mention of it, nor is this circumstance taken notice of by any other ancient Writer, nor that Bishops neglecting of his charge well consistent with *S. Polycarp's* care and industry, I shall leave the Story as I find it. Though it cannot be denied but that *Smyrna* was near to *Ephesus*, as *S. Clemens* says that City also was, and that *S. John* seems to have had a more than ordinary regard to that Church, it being next *Ephesus*, the first of those seven famous *Asian* Churches, to whom he directed his Epistles, and *S. Polycarp* at this time Bishop of it: for that he was that *Angel of the Church at Smyrna*, to whom that Apocalyptical Epistle was sent, is not only highly probable, but by a (a) learned man put past all question. I must confess that the character and circumstances ascribed by *S. John* to the Angel of that Church seem very exactly to agree with *Polycarp*, and with no other Bishop of that Church (about those times especially) that we read of in the History of the Church. And whoever compares the account of *S. Polycarp's* Martyrdom, with the notices and intimations which the *Apocalypse* there gives of that persons sufferings and death, will find the prophecy and the event suit together. That which may seem to make most against it, is, the long time of his presidency over that See: seeing by this account he must sit at least LXXIV years Bishop of that Church, from the latter end of *Domitian's* reign (when the *Apocalypse* was written) to the Persecution under *M. Aurelius*, when he suffered. To which no other solution needs to be given, than that his great, nay extreme Age at the time of his death renders it not at all improbable; especially when we find several Ages after, that *Remigius* Bishop of *Rhemes*, sat LXXIV years Bishop of that place.

III. IT was not many years after *S. John's* death, when the Persecution under *Trajan* began to be reinforced, wherein the *Eastern* parts had a very large share, *Ann. Chr. CVII. Ignatius* was condemned by the Emperor at *Antioch*, and sentenced to be transported to *Rome* in order to his execution. In his voyage thither he put in at *Smyrna*, to salute and converse with *Polycarp*, these holy Men mutually comforting and encouraging each other, and conferring together about the affairs of the Church. From *Smyrna*, *Ignatius* and his company sailed to *Troas*, whence he sent back an Epistle to the Church of *Smyrna*, wherein he endeavours to fortify them against the errors of the Times which had crept in amongst them, especially against those who undermined our Lords humanity, and denied his coming in the Flesh, affirming him to have suffered only in an imaginary and phantastic body. An opinion, (which as it deserved) he severely censures, and strongly refutes. He further presses them to a due observance and regard of their Bishop, and those spiritual Guides and Ministers which under him were set over them; and that they would dispatch a messenger on purpose to the Church of *Antioch*, to congratulate that peace and tranquillity which then began to be restored to them. Besides this he wrote particularly to *S. Polycarp* whom he knew to be a Man of an Apostolic temper, a person of singular faithfulness and integrity, recommending to him the care and superintendency of his disconsolate Church of *Antioch*. In the Epistle it self, as extant at this day, there are many short and useful rules and precepts of life, especially such as concern the Pastoral and Episcopal Office.

And



And here again he renews his request concerning *Antioch*, that a messenger might be sent from *Smyrna* to that Church, and that *S. Polycarp* would write to other Churches to do the like: a thing which he would have done himself, had not his hasty departure from *Troas* prevented him. And more than this, we find not concerning *Polycarp* for many Years after, till some unhappy differences in the Church brought him upon the public Stage.

IV. IT happened that the *Quartodeciman* controversie about the observation of *Easter* began to grow very high between the *Eastern* and *Western* Churches, each standing very stiffly upon their own way, and justifying themselves by Apostolical practice and tradition. That this fire might not break out into a greater flame, *S. Polycarp* (a) undertakes a journey to *Rome* to interpose with those who were the main supports and Champions of the opposite Party, and gave life and spirit to the controversie. Though the exact time of his coming hither cannot precisely be defined, yet will it in a great measure depend upon *Anicetus* his succession to that See, in whose time he came thither. Now evident it is that almost all the ancient Catalogues place him before *Soter*, and next to *Pius*, whom he succeeded. This succession (b) *Eusebius* places *Ann. Chr. CLIV.* a computation certainly much truer than that of *Baronius*, who places it in the year *CLXVII.* and consonantly to this the *Chronicle* of *Alexandria* (c) places *S. Polycarp's* coming to *Rome*, *Ann. Chr. CLVIII. Anton. Imp. XXI.* 'Tis true indeed that in two ancient Catalogues of the Bishops of *Rome*, set down by (d) *Optatus* and (e) *S. Augustine*, *Anicetus* is set before *Pius*, and made immediately to succeed *Hyginus*; by which account he must be removed fifteen years higher, for so long *Eusebius* positively says *Pius* fate. And methinks it seems to look a little this way, that *Eusebius* having given an account of the Emperour *Antoninus Pius* his Rescript in behalf of the Christians (granted by him in his third Consulship, *Ann. Chr. CXL.* or thereabouts) immediately adds that (f) about the time of the things spoken of, *Anicetus* governed the Church of *Rome*, and *Polycarp* came thither upon this errand; the late peace and indulgence granted to the Christians probably administering both opportunity and encouragement to his journey. But seeing this Scheme of Times contradicts *Eusebius* his plain and positive account in other places, and that most ancient Catalogues, especially that of (g) *Irenaeus* and (h) *Hege-sippus* (who both lived and were at *Rome* in the time of *Anicetus* himself) constantly place *Anicetus* next to *Pius*: I dare not disturb this ancient and almost uncontrolled account of things, till I can meet with better evidence for this matter. But when ever it was, over he came to *Anicetus* to confer with him about this affair. Which makes me the more wonder at the learned *Monsieur* (i) *Valois*, who with so peremptory a confidence denies that *Polycarp* came to *Rome* upon this errand, and that it was not the difference about the *Paschal* solemnity, but some other controversies that brought him thither, when as (k) *Irenaeus* his express words are, (if *Eusebius* rightly represent them) that he came to *Rome* to confer and discourse with *Anicetus*, διὰ τὴν ἑνὴν αἰτίαν ἣν καὶ ἡμεῖς ἀνέκαθεν ἡγουμένους, by reason of a certain controversie concerning the day whereon *Easter* was to be celebrated. 'Tis true he (l) says, that they differed a little αὐτῶν περὶ τῆς ἡμέρας καὶ τῆς ἡμέρας, about some other things, but this hindred not, but that the other was the main errand and inducement of his Voyage thither: though even about that (as he adds) there was no great contention between them. For those

(a) *Iren. apud Euseb. H. Eccl. l. 4. c. 14. p. 127.*

(b) *Chron. ad An. CLIV.*

(c) *Loc. infra cit.*

(d) *De Schism. Donatist l. 2. p. 38.*

(e) *Ep. CLXV. ad Genes. col. 751.*

(f) *H. Eccl. l. 4. c. 14. p. 127.*

(g) *Lib. 3. c. 3. Or ap. Euseb. l. 4. c. 13. p. 126.*

(h) *Ap. Euseb. ib. c. 22. p. 142.*

(i) *Annot. in Euseb. p. 190.*

(k) *Ap. Euseb. loc. cit. vid. etiam Chron. Alex. ad An. 2. Olym. 124. Ind. X. p. 802 ubi habet, διὰ τῆς ἡμέρας καὶ τῆς ἡμέρας ἡμεῖς ἀνέκαθεν ἡγουμένους (l) *ib. l. 5. c. 24. pag. 193.**

those holy and blessed Souls knowing the main and vital parts of Religion, not to be concerned in Rituals and external Observances, mutually saluted and embraced each other. They could not indeed so satisfy one another, as that either would quit the customs which they had observed, but were content still to retain their own sentiments, without violating that charity, which was the great and common Law of their Religion. In token whereof they communicated together at the Holy Sacrament; and *Anicetus* to put the greater honour upon St. *Polycarp*, gave him leave to consecrate the Eucharist in his own Church: after which they parted peaceably, each side though retaining their ancient Rites, yet maintaining the peace and communion of the Church. The ancient (a) *Synodicon* tells us that a Provincial Synod was held at *Rome* about this matter by *Anicetus*, *Polycarp*, and ten other Bishops, where it was decreed that *Easter* should not be kept at the time, nor after the Rites and manner of the *Jews*, but be celebrated ἀπὸ τῆς ᾠδῆς καὶ μετὰ λακωνικῇ, on the eminent and great Lord's day that followed after it. But improbable it is that S. *Polycarp* should give his Vote to any such determination, when we know that he could not agree with *Anicetus* in this controversy, and that he left *Rome* with the same judgment and practice herein, wherewith he came thither.

(a) *Syn. a Papp.*  
edit. gr. l. p.  
3. & *Concil.*  
*Tom. 1. col. 583.*  
edit. noviss.

(b) *lit. adv. he-*  
*ref. l. 3. c. 3. p.*  
*233. & ap. Eu-*  
*seb. l. 4. c. 14.*

V. DURING his stay at (b) *Rome* he mainly set himself to convince gain-sayers, testifying the truth of those Doctrines which he had received from the Apostles, whereby he reclaimed many to the Communion of the Church, who had been infected and over-run with errors, especially the pernicious heresies of *Marcion* and *Valentinus*. And when *Marcion* meeting him one day accidentally in the street, and ill resenting

Εὐχαριστῶντες ἑδίδαν, μακάριε, πικρον φαι-  
νεις τε καὶ εἰρῶνις δεικνύμενος, ὃ δὲ νυκτὸς  
πρωτότοκον καὶ παλῆμιον ἔγνωσεν Μαρκίωνα.  
Νεδιτέμενοι, πατέρες, τοῖς λόγοις σου, πᾶ-  
σαν ἐκπεποιμένους βίβλητον ἀρετήν, καὶ πορν-  
εῖαν σωθεῖναι διὰ τῆς ἀποστολῆς ἀρχαῖς  
δουλοῦν. Men. Græcor. ubi supr.

Tit. 3. 9, 10.

it that he did not salute him, called out to him, *Polycarp, own us*; the good Man replied in a just indignation, *I own thee to be the first-born of Satan*. So religiously cautious (says *Irenæus*) were the Apostles, and their followers, not so much as by discourse to communicate with any that did adulterate and corrupt the truth; observing S. *Paul's*

rule, *A man that is an Heretic after the first and second admonition reject; knowing that he that is such is perverted, and sinneth, being condemned of himself*. Indeed S. *Polycarp's* pious and devout mind was fermented with a mighty zeal, and abhorrency of the poisonous and pestilent principles, which in those times corrupted the simplicity of the Christian Faith, inasmuch that when at any time he heard any thing of that nature, he was wont (c) presently to stop his ears, and cry out, *Good God, into what times hast thou reserved me, that I should hear such things!* immediately avoiding the place where he had heard any such discourse. And the same dislike he manifested in all the Epistles, which he wrote either to neighbour-Churches, or particular persons, warning them of errors, and exhorting them to continue steadfast in the truth. This zeal against Hereticks, and especially his carriage towards *Marcion*, we may suppose he learnt in a great measure from S. *John*, of whom he was wont to (d) tell, that going into a Bath at *Ephesus*, and espying *Cerintus* the Heresiarch there, he presently started back, *Let us be gone* (said he to his Companions) *lest the Bath wherein there is Cerintus the enemy of the truth, fall upon our heads*. This passage (says *Irenæus*) some yet alive heard from S. *Polycarp's* own mouth, and himself no doubt among the rest; for so

he

(c) *Iren. Epist.*  
*ad Florin. ap.*  
*Euseb. l. 5. c. 20.*  
*p. 188.*

(d) *Iren. l. 3. c.*  
*3. p. 233. &*  
*ap. Euseb. l. 4.*  
*c. 14.*

he tells us (a) elsewhere, that in his youth when he was with S. Polycarp in the lesser Asia, he took such particular notice of things, that he perfectly remembered the very place where he used to sit while he discoursed, his goings out and coming in, the shape of his Body, and the manner of his life, his discourses to the People, and the account he was wont to give of his familiar converse with S. John, and others who had seen our Lord, whose sayings he rehearsed, and whatever they had told him concerning our Saviour, concerning his Miracles and his Doctrine, which themselves had either seen or heard, agreeing exactly with the relations of the Sacred History. All which Irenæus tells us he particularly took notice of, and faithfully treasured them up in his mind, and made them part of his constant meditation. These are all the material remarks which I find among the Ancients concerning Polycarp during the time of his Government of the Church at Smyrna. Indeed there are several Miracles and particular passages of his life related by the above-mentioned Pionius, which tend infinitely to exalt the honour of this holy Man. But seeing the Author is obscure, and that we can have no reasonable satisfaction who he was, and whence he borrowed his notices and accounts of things, I chuse rather to suspend my belief, than to entertain the Reader with those (at best uncertain) relations which he has given us.

VI. IN the Reign of M. Antoninus and L. Verus, began a severe Persecution, (whether fourth or fifth, let others enquire) against the Christians, Melito Bishop of Sardis, who lived at that time, and dedicated his Apology to the Emperours making mention of κατὰ τὴν Ἀσίαν δόγματα καὶ ἀπαγορεύματα (b) new Edicts and Decrees which the Emperours had issued out through Asia, by vertue whereof impudent and greedy Informers spoiled and vexed the innocent Christians. But the storm increased into a more violent tempest about the seventh Year of their Reign, Ann. Chr. CLXVII when the Emperour Marcus Antoninus designing an expedition against the (c) Marcomani, the terror of whom had sufficiently awakened them at Rome summoned the Priests together, and began more solemnly to celebrate their Religious Rites, and no doubt but he was told that there was no better way to propitiate and atone the Gods, than to bear hard upon the Christians, generally looked upon as the most open and hateful enemies to their Gods. And now it was that S. Polycarp after a long and diligent discharge of his duty in his Episcopal station received his Crown. So vastly wide of the mark are the later (d) Greeks, making him in their public Offices to suffer Martyrdom under the Decian Persecution. Nor much nearer is that of (e) Socrates (however he fell into the error) who tells us that he was Martyred under Gordianus; Mistakes so extravagant, that there needs no more to confute them, than to mention them. Concerning his Sufferings and Martyrdom we have a full and particular relation in a Letter of the Church of Smyrna, written not long after his death to the Church of Philomelum (or more truly Philadelphia) and in the nature of an Encyclical Epistle, to all the Dioceses (παροικίας) of the Holy Catholick Church; the far greatest part whereof Eusebius has inserted into his History, leaving out only the beginning and the end, though the entire Epistle, together with its ancient Version, or rather Paraphrase, is since published by Bishop Usher. It was penned by Evaristus, and afterwards (as appears by their several subscriptions at the end of it) transcribed out of Irenæus his Copy by

(a) Epist. ad Florin. ubi supr.

(b) Apud Euseb. l. 4. c. 26. p. 147.

(c) Jul. C. in vit. M. Anton. c. 13. p. 181.

(d) Men. Græc. τῇ κγ'. τοῦ Φεβρουαρίου.  
(e) H. Eccl. l. 5. c. 22. p. 284.

Caius,



*Caius*, contemporary and familiar with *Irenæus*, out of his by one *Socrates* at *Corinth*, and from his by *Pionius*, who had with great diligence found it out. A piece it is that challenges a singular esteem and reverence both for the subject matter and the Antiquity of it, with which (a) *Scaliger* thinks every serious and devout mind must needs be so affected, as never to think it has enough on't: professing for his own part that he never met with any thing in all the History of the Church, with the reading whereof he was more transported, so that he seemed no longer to be himself. Which effect that it may have upon the pious well-disposed Reader, we shall present him with this following account.

(a) *Animadv.*  
*ad Euseb.*  
*MMCLXXXIII.*  
*p. 222.*

(b) *Epist. Ec-*  
*cles. Smyrn. de*  
*Mart. Polycarp.*  
*Edit. Usser. p.*  
*16. & apud*  
*Euseb. l. 4. c. 15.*  
*p. 129.*

VII. THE Persecution growing hot at (b) *Smyrna*, and many having already sealed their confession with their Blood, the general out-cry was, *Away with the impious*, (or the *Atheists*, such they generally called and accounted the Christians) *let Polycarp be sought for*. The good man was not disturbed at the news, but resolved to endure the brunt: till his friends, knowing his singular usefulness, and that our Lord had given leave to his Disciples, when persecuted in one City to flee to another, prevailed with him to withdraw into a neighbouring Village, where with a few Companions he continued day and night in Prayer, earnestly interceding with Heaven (as afore-time it had ever been his custom) for the peace and tranquillity of all the Churches in the World. Three days before his apprehension falling at night as he was at Prayer, into a trance, he dreamt that his Pillow was on fire, and burned to ashes; which when he awakened, he told his friends was a prophetic preface that he should be burnt alive for the cause of Christ. In the mean time he was every where narrowly sought for, upon notice whereof his friends perswaded him to retire into another Village, whither he was no sooner come but his enemies were at hand, who seizing upon a couple of Youths (one of whom by stripes they forced to a confession,) were by them conducted to his lodging. Entering the house at Evening, they perceived him to be in Bed in an upper Room; and though upon notice before hand of their coming he might easily have saved himself by slipping into another house, yet he refused, saying, *The will of the Lord be done*. Understanding his Persecutors were there, he came down and saluted them with a very chearful and gentle countenance; in so much that they who had not hitherto known him, wondered to behold so venerable a person, of so great age, and so grave and composed a presence, and what needed all this stir to hunt and take this poor old Man? He nothing concerned, ordered a Table to be spread, and Provisions to be set upon it, inviting them to partake of them, and only requesting for himself, that in the mean while he might have one hour for Prayer. Leave being granted, he rose up, and betook himself to his devotions, wherein he had such mighty assistances of divine grace, that he continued praying near two hours together, heartily recommending to God the case of all his friends and acquaintance, whether great or little, honourable or ignoble, and the state of the Catholic Church throughout the World, all that heard him being astonished at it, and of them now repenting that so divine and venerable an old Man should be put to death.

VIII. HIS Prayer being ended, and they ready to depart, he was set upon an Ass, and (it being then the great Sabbath, though what that

Great

Great Sabbath was, learned Men, I believe, will hardly agree till the coming of *Elias* ) conducted into the City. As they were upon the Road, they were met by *Herod* and his Father *Nicetes*, who indeed were the main Springs of the Persecution, and had put the tumult into motion. This *Herod* was an *Irenarcha* one of those, *ad quos tuenda publica Pacis vigilantia pertinebat*, as (a) *S. Augustin* describes them; their Office was most what the same with that of our modern *Justices of the Peace*, they being set to guard the Provinces, and to secure the public peace and quietness within their several Jurisdictions, to prevent and suppress Riots and Tumults, Robberies and Rapines, and to enquire into the Companions and Receivers of all such persons, and to transmit to the Magistrates the examinations and notices which they had received of such matters. They were appointed either by the Emperour himself, or the *Præfetti Prætorio*, or the *Decurio's*; and at this time the custom in the Provinces of the lesser *Asia* was, that every City did yearly send ten of the names of their principal persons to the Governour of the Province, who chose out one to be the *Irenarcha*, the Keeper, or Justice of the Peace. Being afterwards found grievous and troublesome to the People, they were taken away by a Law of the younger (c) *Theodosius*, though the Office remained under another name. This Office at *Smyrna* was at this time managed by this *Herod*, whom (d) *Baronius* conjectures to be (e) *Herodes Atticus*, a Man of Consular dignity, and of great learning and eloquence, and who had been Tutor to the present Emperour. Certain it is that that *Herod* governed in the free Cities of (f) *Asia*, and resided sometimes at *Smyrna*: though it cramps the conjecture, that the name of that *Herod's* Father was *Atticus*, of this *Nicetes*, unless we will suppose him to have had two names. But whoever he be, a great enemy he was to *Polycarp*, whom meeting upon the way, he took him up into his Chariot, where both he and his Father by plausible insinuations sought to undermine his constancy, asking him what great harm there was in saying *My Lord the Emperour*, and in sacrificing, by which means he might escape. This was an usual way of attempting the Christians; not that they made any scruple to acknowledge the Emperour to be their Lord, (none were so forward, so earnest to pay all due subjection and reverence to Princes) but because they knew that the *Romans*, too apt to flatter the ambition of their Emperours into a fondly usurpt Divinity, by that title usually understood God, as (g) *Tertullian* tells them; in any other notion of the word they could as freely as any call him Lord, though, as he adds, even (h) *Augustus* himself modestly forbade that title to be ascribed to him.

IX. *S. POLYCARP* returned no answer to their demand, till importunately urging him, he replied, that he would not at any rate comply with their persuasions. Frustrated of the ends which they had upon him, they now lay aside the *Vizor* of their dissembled friendship, and turn their kindness into scorn and reproaches, thrusting him out of the Chariot with so much violence, that he bruised his thigh with the fall. Whereat nothing daunted, as if he had received no hurt, he cheerfully hastened on to the place of his execution under the conduct of his Guard; whither when they were come, and a confused noise and tumult was arisen, a voice came from Heaven (heard by many, but none seen who spake it,) saying, *Polycarp be strong, and quit thy self like a Man*. Immediately he was brought before the public Tribunal, where a great shout

(a) *Epist.*  
CLIX. col. 720.  
CLX. c. 722.  
vid. l. 18. Sect.  
4. ff. de muner.  
& honor. Tit. 4.  
& l. 6. Sect. 2  
ff. de custod. &  
exhib. reor.  
Tit. 3.

(c) *C. Th. l.*  
unic. Tit. 14.  
de *Irenarch.*  
(d) *Ad Ann.*  
CLXIX. n. 7.  
(e) *A. Gell. noff.*  
Att. l. 1. c. 2. p. 2.  
J. *Cupit. in vit.*  
*M. Anton. c. 3.*  
p. 151.  
(f) *Philastr. de*  
*vit. Sophist. l. 2.*  
*in Herod. p. m.*  
646. & l. 1. in  
*Polemon. p.*  
642.

(g) *Apolog.*  
c. 34. p. 28.

(h) *Vit. Sueton.*  
*in vit. Aug. c.*  
53. p. 192.

\* Orat. Sacr. 4.

shout was made, all rejoicing that he was apprehended. The *Proconsul* ( whose name was *L. Statius Quadratus*, ) this very year, as \* *Aristides* the Orator who lived at this time at *Smyrna* informs us, the *Proconsul* of *Asia*, ( as not long before he had been *Consul* at *Rome*, ) asked him whether he was *Polycarp*? which being confessed, he began to persuade him to recant; *Regard*, said he, *thy great Age*, swear by the *genius* of *Cæsar*, repent, and say with us, *Take away the impious*. These were ἀ σὺν δὲς αὐτοῖς, as my Authors truly observe, their usual terms and proposals to Christians, who stoutly refused to swear by the Emperours *genius*; upon which account the Heathens generally traduced them as Traitors and Enemies to the State, though to wipe off that charge, they openly professed (a) that though they could not swear by the fortune of the Emperour, ( their *genii* being accounted deities, whom the Christians knew to be but *Demons*, and cast out at every turn ) yet they scrupled not to swear by the Emperours *safety*, a thing more august and sacred, than all the *genii* in the World.

(a) *Tert. Apol.*  
c. 32. p. 28.  
*Orig. contr.*  
*Cels. l. 8. p. 421.*

(b) *Epist. ad*  
*Trajan. Imp.*  
*Ep. 97. l. 10.*

X. THE Holy Martyr looking about the *Stadium*, and with a severe and angry countenance, beholding the croud, beckned to them with his hand, sighed and looked up to Heaven, saying, ( though quite in another sense than they intended ) *Take away the impious*. The *Proconsul* still persuaded him to swear, with promise to release him, withal urging him to blaspheme Christ; for with that temptation they were wont to assault Christians, and thereby to try the sincerity of their *Renegado's*, a course which (b) *Pliny* tells us he observed towards Apostate Christians, though he withal confesses, that none of them that were really Christians could ever be brought to it. The motion was resented with a noble scorn, and drew from *Polycarp* this generous confession, *Fourscore and six Years I have served him, and he never did me any harm, how then shall I now blaspheme my King and my Saviour?* But nothing will satisfy a malicious misguided Zeal: the *Proconsul* still importuned him to swear by *Cæsar's genius*; to whom he replied, *Since you are so vainly ambitious that I should swear by the Emperours genius, as you call it, as if you knew not who I am, hear my free confession, I am a Christian. If you have a mind to learn the Christian Religion, appoint me a time, and I'll instruct you in it.* The *Proconsul* advised him to persuade the People; he answered, *To you I rather chuse to address my discourse; for we are commanded by the Laws of our Religion to give to Princes and the Powers ordained of God, all that due honour and reverence, that is not prejudicial and contrary to the precepts of Religion. As for them (meaning the common Herd) I think them not competent Judges, to whom I should apologize, or give an account of my Faith.*

XI. THE *Proconsul* now saw 'twas in vain to use any further persuasives and intreaties, and therefore betook himself to severer Arguments: *I have wild Beasts at hand ( said he ) to which I'll cast thee, unless thou recant. Call for them ( cried the Martyr ) for we are immutably resolved not to change the better for the worse, accounting it fit and comely only to turn from Vice to Virtue.* Since thou makest so light of wild Beasts ( added the *Proconsul* ) I have a Fire that shall tame thee, unless thou repent. *Thou threatnest me with a Fire ( answered Polycarp ) that burns for an hour, and is presently extinct, but art ignorant alas of the Fire of eternal damnation and the Judgment to come, reserved for the wicked in the other World. But why delayest thou? bring forth what ever thou hast a mind to.* This and



and much more he spake with a pleasant and chearful confidence, and a divine grace was conspicuous in his very looks, so far was he from cowardly sinking under the great threatnings made against him. Yea the *Proconsul* himself was astonished at it, though finding no good could be done upon him, he commanded the *Crier* in the middle of the *Stadium* thrice to make open Proclamation (as was the manner of the *Romans* in all Capital Trials) *Polycarp has confessed himself a Christian*. Whereat the whole multitude both of *Jews* and *Gentiles* that were present (and probable it is that the *τὸ Κοινὸν τῆς Ἀσίας*, the *Common-Council*, or *Assembly of Asia*, might about this time be held at *Smyrna* for the celebration of their common Shews and Sports; for that it was sometimes held here is evident from an ancient \* Inscription making mention of it, ) gave a mighty shout, crying out aloud, *This is the great Doctor of Asia, and the Father of the Christians; this is the destroyer of our gods, that teaches Men not to do Sacrifice, or Worship the Deities.*

\* --ΣΜΥΡ-  
ΝΑΝ ΚΟΙ-  
ΝΟΝ ΑΣΙ-  
ΑΣ, ΜΥΡΝΗ,  
ΟΧΘ.ΙΙΙ.Ρ.79.

XII. THE cry being a little over, they immediately addressed themselves to *Philip the Asiarch*: these (a) *Asiarchs* were *Gentile* Priests belonging to the *Commonalty of Asia*, yearly chosen at the *Common-Council* or *Assembly of Asia*, to the number of about ten, (whereof one was Principal) out of the names returned by the several Cities. It was an Office of great honour and credit, but withal of great expence and charge, they being obliged to entertain the People with Sights and Sports upon the festival Solemnities, and therefore it was not conferred but upon the more wealthy and substantial Citizens. In this place was *Philip* at this time, whom the People clamorously requested, to let a Lion upon the Malefactor. Which he told them he could not do, having already exhibited the *τὴν Κυνήγοριαν*, the hunting of wild Beasts with Men, one of the famous shews of the *Amphitheatre*. Then they unanimously demanded, that he might be burnt alive; a fate, which he himself from the Vision in his Dream had Prophetically foretold should be his portion. The thing was no sooner said than done, each one striving to bear a part in this fatal Tragedy, with incredible speed fetching Wood and Faggots from several places, but especially the *Jews* were peculiarly active in the service, malice to Christians being almost as natural to them, as 'tis for the fire to burn. The fire being prepared, St. *Polycarp* untied his Girdle, laid aside his Garments, and began to put off his Shoes; Ministeries which he before was not wont to be put to; the Christians ambitiously striving to be admitted to do them for him, and happy he that could first touch his Body. So great a reverence even in his younger years had he from all for the admirable strictness and regularity of his holy life.

(a) Vid. l. 6.  
Sect. 14. ff. de  
excusat. Tit. 1.  
c. 1. 3. Sect. 1. de  
Vacat. Tit. 5.  
ibid. vid. etiam  
Aristid. Orat.  
Sacr. IV.

XIII. THE Officers that were employed in his Execution having disposed all other things, came according to custom to nail him to the Stake, which he desired them to omit, assuring them, that he who gave him strength to endure the fire, would enable him without nailing to stand immoveable in the hottest flames. So they only tied him, who standing like a Sheep ready for the slaughter, designed as a grateful sacrifice to the Almighty, clasping his hands which were bound behind him, he poured out his Soul to Heaven in this following Prayer. O Lord God Almighty, the Father of thy well-beloved and ever-blessed Son Jesus Christ, by whom we have received the knowledge of thee; the God of Angels, Powers, and of every creature, and of the whole race of the righteous who

R

hrru

live before thee; I bleſs thee that thou haſt graciouſly condeſcended to bring me to this day and hour, that I may receive a portion in the number of thy holy Martyrs, and drink of Chriſts Cup, for the reſurrection to eternal life both of Soul and Body in the incorruptibility of the holy Spirit. Into which number grant I may be received this day, being found in thy ſight as a fair and acceptable Sacrifice, ſuch a one as thou thy ſelf haſt prepared, that ſo thou mayeſt accompliſh what thou, O true and faithful God, haſt foreſhewn. Wherefore I praife thee for all thy mercies, I bleſs thee, I glorify thee, through the eternal High-Prieſt, thy beloved Son Jeſus Chriſt; with whom to thy ſelf and the Holy Ghoſt, be glory both now and for ever. Amen. Which laſt words he pronounced with a more clear audible voice, and having done his Prayer, the Miniſters of Execution blew up the Fire, which increaſing to a mighty flame, behold a wonder (ſeen, ſay my Authors, by us, who were purpoſely reſerved, that we might declare it to others) the flames diſpoſing themſelves into the reſemblance of an Arch, like the Sails of a Ship

*Phœnicem ſi quis medio miretur in igne  
Emori, & extructo ſe reparaverago. (flammas,  
Obſtupeat, POLYCARPE, avidas tibi parcere  
Non auſas Sacra te violare face.  
Mille nitent tedæ, rutilantq; hinc inde favillæ,  
Atque in te Dominum, quem colis ipſe, colunt.  
Præmia nunc majora tibi ſed reddit Olympus,  
Igne qui pedibus ſubjicit aſtra ſue.*

*Inſcript. Rome in Eccleſia S. Stephani in  
Cælio, ſupra ſcripta hæc Siracide ſententia :*

*Eccleſiaſtic. li. 6.  
IN MEDIO IGNIS SUM AESTUATUS.*

*Vid. Uſſer not 74. in Aët. Polycarp. p. 67.*

ſwelled with the wind, gently encircled the body of the Martyr, who ſtood all the while in the miſt, not like roaſted fleſh, but like Gold or Silver purified in the Furnace, his Body ſending forth a delightful fragrancy, which like frankincenſe, or ſome other coſtly ſpices, preſented it ſelf to our ſenſes.

XIV. HOW blind and incorrigibly obſtinate is unbelief! The Infidels were ſo far from being convinced, that they were rather exaſperated by the miracle, commanding a Spearman, one of thoſe who were wont to diſpatch wild Beaſts when they became outrageous, to go near and run him through with a Sword; which he had no ſooner done, but ſuch a vaſt quantity of blood flowed from the wound, as extinguished and put out the fire; together with which a Dove was ſeen to fly from the wounds of his body, which ſome ſuppoſe to have been his Soul, cloathed in a viſible ſhape at the time of its departure; though true it is, that this circumſtance is not mentioned in *Enſebius* his account, and probably never was in the Original. Nor did the malice of *Satan* end here, he knew by the innocent and unblameable courſe of his life, and the glorious conſtancy of his Martyrdom, that he had certainly attained the Crown of Immortality, and nothing now was left for his ſpight to work on, but to deprive them even of the honour of his bones. For many were deſirous to have given his body decent and honourable burial, and to have aſſembled there for the celebration of his memory; but were prevented by ſome who prompted *Nicetes* the Father of *Herod*, and Brother to *Alce*, to adviſe the *Proconſul* not to beſtow his body upon the Chriſtians, leſt leaving their Crucified Maſter, they ſhould henceforth worſhip *Polycarpus*. A ſuggeſtion however managed by the Heathens, yet firſt contrived and prompted by the *Jews*, who narrowly watched the Chriſtians when they would have taken away his body from the place of Execution: "Little conſidering (they are the very words of my Authors) how impoſſible it is, that either we ſhould forſake Chriſt, who died for the ſalvation of the whole World, or that we ſhould worſhip any other. Him we adore as the Son of God; but Martyrs as the Diſciples and followers of our Lord, we deſervedly love for their eminent kindneſs towards their own

"own Prince and Master, whole Companions and fellow-Disciples we  
"also by all means desire to be. So far were those Primitive and better  
Ages from that undue and superstitious veneration of the Reliques of Prim. Christ.  
Part 1. chap. 5. Martyrs and departed Saints, which after-ages introduced into the Church  
as elsewhere we have shewed more at large.

XV. THE *Centurion* beholding the perverseness and obstinacy of the  
*Jews*, commanded the body to be placed in the midst, and in the usual  
manner to be burnt to ashes; whose bones the Christians gathered up  
as a choice and inestimable treasure, and decently interred them. In  
which place they resolved, if possible (and they prayed God nothing  
might hinder it) to meet and celebrate the birth-day of his Martyrdom,  
both to do honour to the memory of the departed, and to prepare and  
encourage others hereafter to give the like testimony to the Faith. Both  
which considerations gave birth and original to the *Memoria Martyrum*,  
those solemn Anniversary Commemorations of the Martyrs which we  
have in another place more fully shewed, were generally kept in the  
Primitive Church. Thus died this Apostolical Man *Ann. Chr. CLXVII.* Ibid. chap. 7.  
about the hundredth year of his Age; for those *eighty six years*, which  
himself speaks of, wherein he had served Christ, cannot be said to com-  
mence from his birth, but from his Baptism or new-birth, at which time  
we cannot well suppose him to have been less than sixteen or twenty  
years old: besides his converse with the Apostles, and consecration by  
St. *John*, reasonably suppose him of some competent years, for we cannot  
think he would ordain a Youth, or a very young Man Bishop, especially  
of so great and populous a City. The incomparable (a) *Primate* from a (a) An. in Ep.  
S. Polycarp.  
p. 2. passage in his Epistle conjectures him to have lived (though not then  
converted to Christianity) at the time when St. *Paul* wrote his Epistles;  
which if so, must argue him to have been of a greater Age: nor is this  
any more improbable than what (b) *Quadratus*, the Christian Apologist, (b) Ap. Euseb. l.  
4. c. 3. p. 116. who lived under *Hadrian*, and dedicated his *Apologetic* to that Emperor,  
reports; that there were some of those whom our Lord had healed, and  
raised from the dead alive even in his time: and of *Simeon* Successor to  
St. *James* in the Bishoprick of *Jerusalem*, (c) *Hegesippus* expressly relates (c) Ibid. l. 3.  
c. 32. p. 104. that he was an CXX years old, at the time of his Martyrdom. Sure I  
am, (d) *Irenæus* particularly notes of our St. *Polycarp*, that he lived a (d) Adv. Hæres.  
l. 3. c. 3. Or ap.  
Euseb. l. 4. c. 14.  
p. 127. very long time, and was arrived to an exceeding great age, when he under-  
went a most glorious and illustrious Martyrdom for the Faith.

XVI. HE suffered on the second of the Month *Xanthicus*, the VII.  
of the Kalends of *May*, though whether mistaken for the VII. of the  
Kalends of *April*, and so to be referred to *March XXVI.* as some will  
have it, or for the VII. of the Kalends of *March*, and so to be adjudged  
to *February XXIII.* as others, is difficult to determine. It shall suffice  
to note, that his memory is celebrated by the *Greek Church*, *February*  
the XXIII. by the *Latine*, *January* the XXVI. The *Amphitheatre* where  
he suffered is in a great measure yet remaining (as a late (e) Eye-witness and  
diligent searcher into Antiquity informs us) in the two opposite sides (e) Th. Smith  
Epist. de VII.  
Ass. Eccles. p.  
164. whereof are the Dens where the Lions were wont to be kept. His  
Tomb is in a little Chappel in the side of a Mountain on the *South-east*  
part of the City, solemnly visited by the *Greeks* upon his Festival-day;  
and for the maintenance and reparation whereof, Travellers were wont  
to throw in a few *Aspers* into an Earthen Pot that stands there for that  
purpose. How miserable the state of this City is under the *Turkish* yoke



(a) Xiphil.  
Epit. Dion. in  
M. Anton. p.  
281.  
(b) In Orat.  
Monodia dist.  
vid. Philastr. de  
vit. Sophist. l.  
2. in Aristid. p.  
m. 659.

at this day, is without the limits of my business to enquire. To look a little higher to the Times we write of, though I love not to make severe and ill-natured interpretations of the actions of Divine Providence, yet I cannot but observe, how heavy the Divine Displeasure not long after *Polycarp's* death fell, as upon other places, so more particularly upon this City, by Plague, Fire, and Earthquakes, mentioned by (a) others, but more fully described by (b) *Aristides* their own Orator, who was contemporary with St. *Polycarp*. By which means their City, before one of the Glories and Ornaments of *Asia*, was turned into Rubbish and Ashes, their stately Houses overturned, their Temples ruined; one especially, which as it advanced *Asia* above other Countries, so gave *Smyrna* the honour and precedence above other Cities of *Asia*; their Traffick spoiled, their Marts and Ports laid waste, besides the great numbers of People that lost their lives. Indeed the fate so sad, that the Orator was forced to give over, professing himself unable to describe it.

Edit. Usser. p.  
14. confer En-  
seb. l. 4. c. 15.  
p. 129.

XVII. I cannot better close the story of *Polycarp's* Martyrdom, than with the Preface which the Church of *Smyrna* has in the beginning of it, as what eminently represents the illustrious Faith and Patience of those Primitive Christians. "Evident it is (say they) that all those Martyrdoms are great and blessed, which happen by the will of God; for it becomes us Christians, who have a more Divine Religion than others, to ascribe to God the sovereign disposal of all events. Who would not stand and admire the generous greatness of their mind, their singular patience, and admirable love to God? Who when their flesh was with scourges so torn off their backs, that the whole frame and con- texture of their bodies, even to their inmost Veins and Arteries, might be seen, yet patiently endured it. Inasmuch that those who were present, pitied and grieved at the sight of it, while they themselves were endued with so invincible a resolution, that none of them gave one sigh or groan: the holy Martyrs of Christ letting us see, that at that time when they were thus tormented, they were strangers to their own bodies: or rather that our Lord stood by them to assist and comfort them. Animated by the grace of Christ, they despised the torments of Men, by one short hour delivering themselves from eternal miseries: The fire which their Tormentors put to them seemed cool and little, while they had it in their eye, to avoid the everlasting and unextinguishable flames of another world; their thoughts being fixed upon those rewards which are prepared for them that endure to the end, such as *neither ear hath heard, nor eye hath seen, nor hath it entered into the heart of man*; but which were shewn to them by our Lord, as being now no longer Mortals, but entering upon the state of Angels. In like manner those who were condemned to be devoured by wild Beasts, for a long time endured the most grievous tortures; shells of Fishes were strewed under their naked bodies, and they forced to lie upon sharp pointed stakes driven into the ground, and several such like Engines of Torture devised for them, that (if possible) by the constancy of their torments, the Enemy might drive them to renounce the Faith of Christ. Various were the methods of punishments which the Devil did invent, though blessed be God, there were not many, whom they were able to prevail upon. ----- And at the end of the Epistle they particularly remark concerning *Polycarp*, that he was not only a famous Doctor, but an eminent Martyr, whose Martyrdom all strove

Ubi supr. p. 28.

to imitate, as one who by his patience conquered an unrighteous Judge; and by that means having attained an immortal Crown was triumphing with the Apostles, and all the Souls of the righteous, glorifying God the Father, and praising of our Lord, the disposer of our Bodies, and the Bishop and Pastor of the Catholic Church throughout the World. Nor were the Christians the only Persons that revered his memory, but the very *Gentiles* (as (a) *Eusebius* tells us) every where spoke honourably of him.

XVIII. AS for his Writings, besides that (b) *St. Hierom* mentions the Volumes of *Papias* and *Polycarp*, and the above-mentioned (c) *Pionius* his *Epistles* and *Homilies*, (d) *Irenaeus* evidently intimates that he wrote several *Epistles*, of all which none are extant at this day; but the *Epistle* to the *Philippians*, an *Epistle* peculiarly celebrated by the Ancients, very useful, says (e) *St. Hierom* πῖνυ δαυμῶν (as (f) *Suidas* and (g) *Sophronius* stile it) a most admirable *Epistle*. (h) *Irenaeus* gives it this *Elogium* that it is a most perfect and absolute *Epistle*, whence they that are careful of their salvation may learn the character of his Faith, and the truth which he preached. To which *Eusebius* adds, that in this *Epistle* he makes use of some Quotations out of the first *Epistle* of *St. Peter*. An observation that holds good with the *Epistle*, as we have it at this day, there being many places in it cited out of the first, not one out of the second *Epistle*. *Photius* passes this just and true judgement of it, that it is full of many admonitions, delivered with clearness and simplicity, according to the Ecclesiastic way and manner of interpretation. It seems to hold a great affinity both in stile and substance with *Clemens* his *Epistle* to the *Corinthians*, often suggesting the same rules, and making use of the same words and phrases, so that it is not to be doubted, but he had that excellent *Epistle* particularly in his eye at the writing of it. Indeed it is a pious and truly Christian *Epistle*, furnished with short and useful Precepts and Rules of Life, and penned with the modesty and simplicity of the Apostolic Times, valued by the Ancients next to the Writings of the Holy Canon; and *St. Hierom* tells us that even in his time it was read in *Asia conventu*, in the public Assemblies of the *Asian Church*. It was first published in *Greek* by *P. Halloix* the *Jesuit*, *Ann.* MDCXXXIII. and not many years after by *Bishop Usher*: and I presume the pious Reader will think it no unuseful digression, if I here subjoin so venerable a Monument of the ancient Church.

(a) Loc. supr. cit. p. 135.

(b) *Epist.* ad *Leuin.* p. 194. Tom. 1.

(c) *Vit. Polycarp* c. 3. n. 12. p. 697. ubi supr.

(d) *Epist.* ad *Florin.* ap. *Euseb.* ubi supr.

(e) *De Script.* in *Polycarp.*

(f) *Suid.* in voc. 11. ολυμπεα.

(g) *Sophron.* ap. *Hieron.* ib.


(h) *Adv. Hæres.* l. 3. c. 3. & ap. *Euseb.* l. 4. c. 15. p. 128.

Ubi supr.

THE  
E P I S T L E  
O F  
S. POLYCARP,

Bishop of *Smyrna* and Martyr, to the *Philippians*.

*Polycarp* and the Presbyters that are with him, to the Church of God which is at *Philippi* : Mercy unto you, and Peace from God Almighty, and *Jesus Christ* our Saviour, be multiplied.

I.  REJOYCED with you greatly in our Lord *Jesus Christ*, that ye entertained the patterns of true love, and (as became you) conducted onwards those who were bound with chains, which are the Ornaments of Saints, and the Crowns of those that are the true elect of God, and of our Lord: and that the firm root of your Faith, formerly published, does yet remain, and bring forth fruit in our Lord *Jesus*

*Christ*, who was pleased to offer up himself even unto death for our sins: whom God raised up, having loosed the pains of death: in whom, though you see him not, ye believe, and believing ye rejoyce with joy unspeakable and full of glory; whereinto many desire to enter, knowing that by Grace ye are saved, not by Works, but by the Will of God through *Jesus Christ*.

II. WHEREFORE girding up your loins serve God in fear and truth, forsaking empty and vain talking, and the error wherein so many are involved, believing in him who raised up our Lord *Jesus Christ* from the dead, and gave him glory, and a throne at his right hand; to whom all things both in Heaven and in Earth are put in subjection, whom every thing that has breath worships, who comes to judge the quick and the dead, whose Blood God will require of them that believe not in him. But he who raised him up from the dead, will raise up us also, if we do his will, and walk in his commandments, and love what he loved, abstaining from all unrighteousness inordinate desire, covetousness, detraction, false witness; not rendring evil for evil, or railing for railing, or striking for striking, or cursing for cursing, but remembering what the Lord said, when he taught thus, Judge not, that ye be not Judged, forgive and ye shall be forgiven, be merciful, that ye may obtain mercy: with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you

Act. 2. 24.  
1 Pet. 1. 8.

Eph. 2. 8.

1 Pet. 1. 13.

1 Pet. 1. 21.

1 Pet. 3. 9.

Matth. 7. 1.  
Luke. 6. 35,  
37.



you again: and that blessed are the poor, and they which are persecuted for righteousness sake, for theirs is the Kingdom of God. Mat 5. 3, 10.

III. THESE things, Brethren, I write to you concerning righteousness, not of my own humour, but because your selves did provoke me to it. For neither I, nor any other such as I am, can attain to the wisdom of blessed and glorious St. Paul, who being among you, and conversing personally with those who were then alive, firmly and accurately taught the word of truth; and when absent, wrote Epistles to you, by which, if you look into them, ye may be built in the Faith, delivered unto you, which is the Mother of us all, being followed by Hope, and led on by Love, both towards God and Christ, and to our Neighbour. For whoever is inwardly replenished with these things, has fulfilled the law of righteousness; and he that is furnished with love, stands at a distance from all sin. 1 Tim. 6. 7. But love of Money is the beginning of all evil. Knowing therefore that we brought nothing into the World, and that we shall carry nothing out, let us arm our selves with the armour of righteousness, and in the first place be instructed our selves to walk in the commands of the Lord, and next teach your Wives to live in the Faith delivered to them, in love and chastity, that they embrace their own Husbands with all integrity, and others also with all temperance and continency, and that they educate and discipline their Children in the fear of God. The Widows, that they be sober and modest concerning the Faith of the Lord, that they incessantly interceed for all, and keep themselves from all slandering detraction, false witness, covetousness, and every evil work: as knowing that they are the Altars of God, and that he accurately surveys the sacrifice, and that nothing can be concealed from him, neither of our reasonings, nor thoughts, nor the secrets of the heart. Accordingly knowing that God is not mocked, we ought to walk worthy of his command, and of his Glory.

IV. LIKEWISE let the Deacons be unblameable before his righteous presence, as the Ministers of God in Christ, and not of Men; not accusers, not double-tongued, not covetous, but temperate in all things, compassionate, diligent, walking according to the truth of the Lord, who became the Deacon or servant of all: of whom, if we be careful to please him in this World, we shall receive the reward of the other life according as he has promised to raise us from the dead: and if we walk worthy of him, we believe that we shall also reign with him. Let the young Men also be unblameable in all things, studying in the first place to be chaste, and to restrain themselves from all that is evil. For it is a good thing to get above the lusts of the World, seeing every Lust wars against the Spirit; and that neither Fornicators, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind shall inherit the Kingdom of God, nor whoever commits base things. 1 Cor. 6. 9, 10.

V. WHEREFORE it's necessary that ye abstain from all these things, being subject to the Presbyters and Deacons, as to God and Christ: that the Virgins also walk with a chaste and undefiled conscience. Let the Presbyters be tender and merciful, compassionate towards all, reducing those that are in error, visiting all that are weak, not negligent of the Widow and the Orphan, and him that is poor, but ever providing what is honest in the sight of God and men; abstaining from all wrath, respect of persons, and unrighteous judgement, being far from covetousness, not hastily believing a report against any Man, nor rigid in judgement, knowing that we are all faulty, and obnoxious to punishment. If therefore we stand in need to pray the Lord that he would forgive us, we our selves ought also to forgive. For we are before the eyes of him, who is Lord and God, and all must stand before the judgment Rom. 14. 9, 10.

1 John 4. 3.  
2 Epist. v. 7.

Matth. 26. 41.

1 Pet. 2. 22, 24.

ment seat of Christ, and every one give an account of himself. Wherefore let us serve him with all fear and reverence, as he himself has commanded us, and as the Apostles have preached and taught us, and the Prophets who foretold the coming of our Lord. Be zealous of that which is good, abstaining from offences and false Brethren, and those who bear the name of the Lord in hypocrisie, who seduce and deceive vain Men. For every one, that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is Antichrist; and he who doth not acknowledge the martyrdom of the Cross, is of the Devil, and whoever shall pervert the Oracles of the Lord to his private lusts, and shall say, that there is neither resurrection nor judgment to come, that man is the first-born of Satan. Leaving therefore the vanity of many, and their false Doctrines, let us return to that Doctrine, that from the beginning was delivered to us: let us be watchful in prayers, persevering in Fasting, and Supplications, beseeching the All-seeing God that he would not lead us into temptation; as the Lord has said, the Spirit indeed is willing but the Flesh is weak. Let us unweariedly and constantly adhere to Jesus Christ, who is our hope and the pledge of our righteousness, who bare our sins in his own body on the Tree, who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth, but endured all things for our sakes, that we might live through him. Let us then imitate his patience, and if we suffer for his name, we glorify him; for such a pattern he set us in himself, and thus we have believed and entertained.

VI. I exhort you therefore all, that ye be obedient to the word of righteousness, and that you exercise all manner of patience, as you have seen it set forth before your eyes, not only in the blessed Ignatius, and Zosimus, and Rufus, but in others also among you, and in Paul himself, and the rest of the Apostles; being assured that all these have not run in vain, but in Faith and Righteousness, and are arrived at the place, due and promised to them by the Lord, of whose sufferings they were made partakers. For they loved not this present World, but him who both died, and was raised up again by God for us. Stand fast therefore in these things, and follow the example of the Lord, being firm and immutable in the Faith, lovers of the Brethren, and kindly affectionate one towards another, united in the truth, carrying your selves meekly to each other, despising no Man. When it is in your power to do good, defer it not, for Alms delivereth from death. Be all of you subject one to another, having your Conversation honest among the Gentiles; that both you your selves may receive praise by your good works, and that God be not blasphemed, through you. For wo unto him, by whom the name of the Lord is blasphemed. Wherefore teach all men sobriety, and be your selves conversant in it.

1 Cor. 6. 2.

VII. I am exceedingly troubled for Valens, who was sometimes ordained a Presbyter among you, that he so little understands the place wherein he was set. I therefore warn you, that you abstain from Covetousness, and that ye be chaste and true. Keep your selves from every evil work. But he that in these things cannot govern himself, how shall he preach it to another; If a Man refrain not from covetousness, he will be defiled with Idolatry, and shall be judged among the Heathen. Who is ignorant of the judgment of the Lord? Know ye not that the Saints shall judge the World? as Paul teaches. But I have neither found any such thing in you, nor heard any such thing of you, among whom the blessed Paul laboured, and who are in the beginning of his Epistle. For of you he boasts in all those Churches, which only knew God at that time, whom as yet we had not known. I am therefore, Brethren, greatly troubled for him, and for his Wife, the Lord give them true repentance.

tance. Be ye also sober as to this matter, and account not such as enemies, but restore them as weak and erring Members, that the whole body of you may be saved; for in so doing, ye build up your selves.

VIII. I trust that ye are well exercised in the holy Scriptures, and that nothing is hid from you; a thing as yet not granted to me. As it is said in these places, be angry and not sin: and let not the Sun go down upon your wrath. Blessed is he that is mindful of these things, which I believe you are. The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, and Christ Jesus the eternal High-Priest, and Son of God, build you up in Faith and Truth, and in all meekness that you may be without anger, in patience, forbearance, long-suffering, and chastity, and give you a portion and inheritance amongst his Saints: and to us together with you, and to all under Heaven, who shall believe in our Lord Jesus Christ, and in his Father, who raised him from the dead. Pray for all Saints. Pray also for Kings, Magistrates, and Princes, and even for them that hate and persecute you, and for the Enemies of the Cross, that your fruit may be manifest in all, that you may be compleat in him.

IX. T<sup>E</sup> wrote unto me, both ye and Ignatius, that if any one go into Syria, he might carry your Letters along with him: which I will do so soon as I shall have a convenient opportunity, either my self, or by some other, whom I will send upon your errand. According to your request we have sent you those Epistles of Ignatius, which he wrote to us, and as many others of his as we had by us, which are annexed to this Epistle, by which ye may be greatly profited. For they contain in them faith, and patience, and whatever else is necessary to build you up in our Lord: Send us word what you certainly know both concerning Ignatius himself, and his Companions. These things have I written unto you by Crescens, whom I have hitherto commended to you, and do still recommend. For he has unblameably conversed among us, as also I believe amongst you. His Sister also ye shall have recommended, when she shall come unto you. Be ye safe in the Lord Jesus Christ. Grace be with you all. Amen.

The End of S. POLYCARP's Life.

---



12

LIBRARY

THE LIFE OF  
**S. QUADRATUS**  
 BISHOP of *ATHENS*.



*Michael Burghers.*

*Delineavit et sculpsit.*

**S. QUADRATUS.**

*His Birth-place enquired into. His Learning. His Education under the Apostles. Publius Bishop of Athens. Quadratus his succession in that See. The degenerate state of that Church at his coming to it. His indefatigable*

defatigable zeal and industry in its reformation. Its purity and flourishing condition noted by Origen. Quadratus his being endowed with a Spirit of Prophecy, and a power of Miracles. This person proved to be the same with our Athenian Bishop. The troubles raised against the Christians under the reign of Adrian. Adrian's Character. His disposition towards Religion, and base thoughts of the Christians. His fondness for the Learning and Religion of Greece. His coming to Athens, and kindness to that City. His being initiated into the Eleusinian mysteries. These mysteries what, and the degrees of initiation. Several addresses made to the Emperour in behalf of the Christians. Quadratus his Apologetic. Ser. Granianus his Letter to Adrian concerning the Christians. The Emperours Rescript. His good opinion afterwards of Christ and his Religion. Quadratus driven from his charge. His Martyrdom and place of Burial.

I.



**H E T H E R** St. Quadratus was born at Athens, no notices of Church-Antiquity enable us to determine : though the thing it self be not improbable, his Education and Residence there, and the Government of that Church seeming to give some colour to it. And as Nature had furnished him with incomparable parts ( *excellens ingenium*, (a) St. Hierom says of him ) so the place gave him mighty advantages in his education, to be thoroughly trained up in the choicest parts of Learning, and most excellent instructions of Philosophy, upon which account the (b) Greeks truly stile him, *ἀνδρα πολυτρόφα*, a Man of great Learning and Knowledge. He became acquainted with the Doctrines and Principles of Christianity, by being brought up under Apostolical instruction, for so (c) Eusebius and (d) St. Hierom more than once tells us, that he was an Auditor and a Disciple of the Apostles; which must be understood of the longer-lived Apostles, and particularly of St. John, whose Scholar in all probability he was, as were also Ignatius, Polycarp, Papias, and others: and therefore, (e) Eusebius places him among those that had *πρώτης τάξεως*, that were of the very first rank and order among the Apostles Successors. There are that make him, and that too constituted by St. John (though I confess I know not by what Authority, the Ancients being wholly silent in this matter ) Bishop of Philadelphia, one of the seven famous Churches of Asia, and at that time, when St. John sent his Epistle to that Church : which I pass by as a groundless and precarious assertion, seeing they might with equal warrant have made him Bishop of any other place.

**II. UNDER** the Reign of Trajan, as is probable, though Baronius places it under Hadrian, Ann. Imp. VI. (f) Publius Bishop of Athens suffered Martyrdom, who is thought by some to have been that very Publius whom S. Paul converted in the Island of Melita in his Voyage to Rome, and who afterwards succeeded Dionysius the Areopagite in the See of Athens. To him succeeded our Quadratus, ( as (g) Dionysius Bishop of Corinth, who lived not long after that time, informs us ) who found the state of that Church in a bad condition at his coming to it. For upon Publius his Martyrdom,

(a) De Script. in Quadrat.

(b) Men. Græc.

τῷ καὶ τῷ

Σ: πρὸς μ.ε.

(c) Κωνσταντίνου ἐπιστολὴς πρὸς τὸν

Ἀποστόλων

ἀκούσας.

Ench. XCV.

Καν. Αδ. Ann.

PKZ. 211.

(d) Hier. de Scr.

in Quadr. &

Epist. ad Magn.

Orat. Tom. 2. p.

327.

(e) H. Eccl. 3.

4. 37. p. 109.

(f) Euseb. l. 4.

c. 23. p. 143.

(g) Epist. ad A-

then. apud Eu-

seb. loc. citat.



Martyrdom, and the Persecution that attended it, the People were generally dispersed and fled, as what wonder, if when *the Shepherd is smitten, the Sheep be scattered*, and go astray? their public and solemn Assemblies were deserted, their Zeal grown cold and languid, their lives and manners corrupted, and there wanted but little of a total Apostasie from the Christian Faith. This good Man therefore set himself with a mighty zeal to revive the ancient Spirit of Religion, he re-setled Order and Discipline, brought back the People to the public Assemblies, kindled and blew up their Faith into an holy Flame. Nor did he content himself with a bare Reformation of what was amiss, but with infinite diligence preached the Faith, and by daily Converts enlarged the bounds of his Church, so that (as the (a) *Greek Rituals* express it) the *Sages* and *Wise Men* of *Greece* being convinced by his Doctrines and wise discourses, embraced the Gospel, and acknowledged Christ to be the Creator of the World, and the great Wisdom and Power of God. And in a short time reduced it to such an excellent temper, that (b) *Origen* (who lived some years after) demonstrating the admirable efficacy of the Christian Faith over the minds of Men, and its triumph over all other Religions in the World, instances in this very Church of *Athens*, for its good Order and Constitution, its meekness, quietness, and constancy, and its care to approve it self to God, infinitely beyond the common Assembly at *Athens*, which was Factious and Tumultuary, and no way to be compared with the Christian Church in that City; that the Churches of Christ when examined by the Heathen Convocations, shone like Lights in the World; and that every one must confess that the worst parts of the Christian Church were better, than the best of their popular Assemblies; that the Senators of the Church (as he calls them) were fit to govern in any part of the Church of God, while the Vulgar Senate had nothing worthy of that honourable dignity, nor were raised above the manners of the common People.

(a) *Men. Græc.*  
*ubi supr.*

(b) *Contr. Cels.*  
*l. 3. p. 128.*

III. THUS excellently constituted was the *Athenian* Church; for which it was chiefly beholden to the indefatigable industry, and the prudent care and conduct of its present Bishop, whose success herein was not a little advantaged by those extraordinary supernatural Powers which God had conferred upon him. That he was indued with a Spirit of Prophecy, of speaking suddenly upon great and emergent occasions, in interpreting obscure and difficult Scriptures, but especially of foretelling future events, we have the express testimonies of (c) *Eusebius*, affirming him to have lived at the same time with *Philip's* Virgin-Daughters, and to have had *προφητικὴν χάρισμα*, the gift of Prophecy; and of another (d) Author much ancients than he, who confuting the error of the *Cataphryges*, reckons him among the Prophets who flourished under the Oeconomy of the Gospel. I know a learned (e) man would fain persuade us, that the *Quadratus* who had the Prophetic gifts, was a person distinct from our *Athenian* Bishop. But the grounds he proceeds upon seem to me very weak and inconcluding. For whereas he says, that that *Quadratus* is not by *Eusebius* stiled a Bishop, who knows not that persons are not in every place mentioned under all their capacities? and less need was there for it here, *Quadratus* when first spoken of by *Eusebius*, not being then Bishop of *Athens*, and so not proper to be taken notice of in that capacity. Nor is his other exception of greater weight,

(c) *H. E. l. 3. c.*  
*37. p. 109.*

(d) *Ap. Euseb. l.*  
*5 c. 17. p. 183.*

(e) *Vald. Annot.*  
*ad Euseb. l. 4. c.*  
*23. p. 81.*

weight, that the Prophetic *Quadratus* did not survive the times of *Adrian*, whereas ours was in the same time with *Dionysius* Bishop of *Corinth*, who lived under *M. Antoninus*, and speaks of him as his contemporary, and lately ordained Bishop of *Athens*. But whoever looks into that passage of \* *Dionysius*, will find no foundation for such an assertion, but rather the quite contrary, that he speaks of him as if dead before his time, as I believe any one that impartially considers the place, must needs confess. Not to say, that St. *Hierom* and all after him without any scruple make them to be the same. So that we may still leave him his gift of Prophecy, which procured him so much reverence while he lived, and so much honour to his memory since his death. To which may

\* *Ap. Euseb. l. 4. c. 23. p. 143.*

Τὸ αὐτὸ ποιεῖται, Κοδράτε, θαύματα ἀπί-  
στους ἐκείνῳ δέειν ἐνῆκε, ὡς Ἀπόστολος διό-  
λυνται, ὡς συνέως ἐπαγγέλλεται, ἐπαύτατε. Men.  
Græc. loc. sup. cit.

be added what the *Greeks* in their *Menaon* not improbably say of him, that he was furnished with a power of working Miracles, and that by his Prayers he ruined the Idolatrous Temples of the Heathens, whereby he mightily confounded

the Infidels, and brought in great numbers to the Faith.

IV. BUT the fair weather and prosperity of the Church was not wont to last long in those days. They had enjoyed a short Tranquillity about the later end of *Trajan's* reign, but now alas under *Adrian* his Successor the weather changed, and there arose (as (a) St. *Hierom* calls it) a most grievous and heavy Persecution, and which \* *Sulpitius Severus* expressly says was the fourth Persecution. And indeed, how grievous it was, sufficiently appears from those many thousands of Martyrs that then suffered, mentioned in the Ancient Martyrologies of the Church: Yea, even at (b) *Rome* it self *Eustachius* and his Wife *Theopistis* with their two Sons, are said by the Emperor's command to have been thrown to the Lions, and when the mercy of the Savage Beasts had spared them, they were ordered to be burnt to death in the Belly of a Brazen Bull. 'Tis true (c) *Tertullian* says that *Adrian* published no Laws or Edicts against the Christians; but the Laws enacted by *Trajan* being yet unrepealed, or not laid aside, there would not want those who would put them in Execution. We find (d) that though *Trajan* commanded a stop to be put to the Persecution against the Christians, yet even then both People and Governors of Provinces went on with their accustomed cruelties, and though there was not a general, there were particular and Provincial Persecutions. And no doubt it was much more so after his death when *Adrian* came to the Empire, whom they knew too well, to think he would be an enemy to such proceedings. For whatever some have said concerning the clemency and good nature of that Prince, there are (e) that plainly affirm, that it was but personated and put on, that he really was in his nature cruel, and that (according to the true genius of superstition) whatever works of piety he did, it was for fear lest the same evil fate should happen to him, that fell upon *Domitian*; and of his cruelty instances enough may be met with in the Writers of his Life. In short, there was in him a strange mixture and contemperation of Vice and Virtue, it being a true character which the (f) Historian gives of him, that he was severe and chearful, grave and affable, deliberate and yet eagerly wanton, covetous and liberal, cruel and merciful, a great dissembler, and perpetually inconstant in all his Actions.

V. FOR Religion he was a diligent and superstitious observer (g) of their own Rites of Worship, but hated and despised all strange and foreign

(a) *Epist. ad  
Mag. ubi sup.  
\* Hist. sacr. l. 2.  
p. 142.*

(b) *Vid. Rom.  
Martyr. ad  
Septemb. XX.  
p. 583.*

(c) *Apol. c. 6.  
p. 6.*

(d) *Euseb. l.  
3. c. 33. p. 105.*

(e) *Mar. Max.  
-p. Æl. Spart.  
in vit.  
Adrian. c. 20.  
p. 88. vid. Dion.  
l. 69. non long.  
ab init.*

(f) *Spartian.  
ib. c. 14. p. 69.*

(g) *Id. ib. c. 22.  
p. 96.*

reign Religions, and especially the Christian. Indeed how well he thought of the Christians, appears sufficiently from his (a) Letter to *Servianus* the *Consul*, written a little after his return out of *Egypt*, wherein he gives the Christians there so lewd and base a character; not sticking to affirm that the People, yea their Priests, their Bishops and their very Patriarch himself would worship both *Christ* and *Serapis*, and that they were a most turbulent, vain and injurious generation. From which Epistle it seems plain to me, that at his being there, he had severely persecuted the Christians, and compelled some light or false professors to worship the Deities of the Country, which probably gave ground to his censure, and to charge the imputation upon all. And since he looked upon the Christians as such a vile sort of men, it is the less to be wondered, that he should connive at, or encourage their being Persecuted in other parts of the Empire. He principally applied himself to the Studies of (b) *Greece* whereof he was so strangely fond, that he was commonly stiled *Græculus*, the *Little Greek*: this made him delight much in those parts, and to converse with the Learning and Philosophy of those Countries. About the sixth or seventh Year of his Reign he came to *Athens*, where he took upon him the place and honour of an *Archon*, celebrated their solemn sports, and gave many particular Laws and Privileges to that City, but especially was entered into their *Eleusinian Mysteries*, accounted the most sacred and venerable of the whole *Gentile World*, and which particularly carried the Title of *The Mysteries*. They were Solemn and Religious Rites performed to *Ceres* in memory of great benefits received from her, the Candidates whereof were stiled *μύσται*, and to the full participation whereof they were many times not admitted till after a five Years preparatory tryal, which had many several steps, and each its peculiar rites: first there were *πύρνησι καὶ δαίρσει*, the common purgations, then *αἱ ἀπὸρρητόμεσι*, those that were more secret, next the *οὐσίσεις*, or stations, then the *μύσεις*, the initiations, and lastly, (which was the top of all) the *ἐπιτελείαι*, or the Inspections. Others reckon them thus; that first there were the *καὶ καὶ δαίρσει*, the Purifications and expiations; then followed the *καὶ μικρὰ μύσθηα*, the Lesser Mysteries, when they were solemnly initiated and taken in; and lastly, after some time they arrived at the greater Mysteries, the *καὶ ἐποπτεία*, which were the most hidden solemnities of all, when they were admitted to a full sight of the whole Mystic Scene, and thenceforth called *Ἐποπταί* or *Inspectors*, and were obliged under a solemn Oath, not to discover these mysterious rites to any. We cannot well suppose that the Emperor *Adrian* was put to observe these tedious methods of initiation, their Mystic Laws were no doubt dispensed with for so extraordinary a person, and he at once became both a Candidate and an *Ἐπόπτης*, a thing which they sometimes granted in some extraordinary cases. And not content to do thus at *Athens*, (c) *St. Hierom* tells us, he was initiated into almost all the sacred Rites of *Greece*, whence (d) *Tertullian* justly stiles him, *The searcher into all curious and hidden Mysteries*, and (e) *Dion* himself tells us of him, that he was infinitely curious, and strangely addicted to all sorts of Divination and Magic Arts.

(a) Extat. ap. Fl. Vopisc. in vit. Saturn. p. 959.

(b) Spart. c. 11. p. 4.

(c) De Script. in Quadrat. (d) Loc. supr. cit. (e) Excerpt. ex Dion. a Vales. edit. 714.

VI. A T *Athens* *Adrian* staid the whole Winter, where his busy and superstitious Zeal being taken notice of; was warrant enough without further order for active Zealots to pursue and oppress the Christians, the Persecution growing so fierce and hot, that the Christians were forced



\* *Euseb. l. 4. c. 3.*  
*p. 116. Hieron.*  
*ubi supr. & in*  
*Epist. ad Magn.*  
*Orator.*

(a) *Cent. II.*  
*cap. 15. col.*  
*152.*

(b) *Rebel. An-*  
*tig. Eccles. Se-*  
*cul. 2. Artic. 1.*  
*p. 183.*

(c) *J. Mart. Ap.*  
*II. p. 99. & ap.*  
*Euseb. l. 4. c. 8.*  
*p. 122.*

(d) *Justin. ib.*  
*Euseb. c. 9. p.*  
*123.*

to remonstrate and declare their case to the Emperor; among whom besides \* *Aristides* a Christian Philosopher at this time at *Athens*, who in an *Apology* addressed himself to *Adrian*, our *Quadratus* presented an *Apologetic* to the Emperor, defending the Christian Religion from the calumnies and exceptions of its Enemies, and vindicating it from those pretences, upon which ill-minded Men sought to ruin and undoe the innocent Christians, wherein also he particularly took notice of our Saviour's Miracles, his curing Diseases, and raising the dead, some instances whereof, he says, were alive in his time. Besides this *Apology* (wherein, as *Eusebius* says, he gave large evidences both of his excellent parts, and true Apostolic Doctrine) 'tis probable he left no other Writings behind him, none being mentioned by any of the Ancients: where I cannot but note the strange heedlessness of the *Compilers* of the (a) *Centuries*, where they tell us out of *Eusebius*, that besides the *Apology*, he composed another excellent Book called *Syngramma*, when nothing can be more plain, than that by that *Writing* *Eusebius* means not a distinct Book, but that very *Apologetic* Oration, which he there speaks of: and yet a modern *German* (b) Professor (who frequently transcribes their errors as well as their labours) securely swallows it, purely (I suppose) upon their Authority; though strange it is, that he could read that passage in *Eusebius* himself, which he seems to have done, and not palpably feel the mistake.

VII. IT happened about this time that *Serenius Gracianus* the *Procon-*  
*sul* of *Asia* wrote (c) Letters to the Emperor, representing to him the injustice of the common proceedings against Christians, how unfit it was that without any legal Trial or Crime laid to their charge, they should be put to death merely to gratifie the unreasonable and tumultuary clamours of the People. With this Letter and the Apologies that had been offered him by the Christians, the keenness of the Emperors fury was taken off, and care was taken that greater moderation should be used towards them. To which purpose he dispatched away to (d) *Fundanus*, *Gracianus* his Successor in the Proconsulship of *Asia*, this following Rescript.

ADRIAN Emperor, to MINUCIUS FUNDANUS.

I Received the Letters which were sent me by the most excellent *Serenius Gracianus*, your Predecessor. Nor do I look upon it as a matter fit to be passed over without due enquiry, that the men may not be needlessly disquieted, nor Informers have occasion and encouragement of fraudulent accusations ministered unto them. Wherefore if the Subjects of our Provinces be able openly to appear to their Indictments against the Christians, so as to answer to them before the public Tribunal, let them take that course, and not deal by Petition and meer noise and clamour: it being much fitter, if any accusation be brought, that you should have the cognizance of it. If any one shall prefer an Indictment, and prove that they have transgressed the Laws, then give you sentence against them according to the quality of the crime. But if it shall appear, that he brought it only out of spight and malice, take care to punish that man according to the hainousness of so mischievous a design.

(e) *Ap. Euseb. l.*  
*4. c. 26. p. 148.*

The same Rescripts (as (e) *Melito* Bishop of *Sardis*, who presented an *Apology* to *M. Antoninus* informs us) *Adrian* sent to several other

other Governors of Provinces. Nay was so far wrought into a good mood, that if it be true what their own (a) Historian reports of him, he designed to build a Temple to Christ, and to receive him into the number of their gods, and that he commanded Temples to be built in all Cities without Images, which were for a long time after called *Adriani*; but was prohibited to go on by some, who having consulted the Oracle, had been told, that if this succeeded according to some Mens desires, the Temples would be deserted, and all Men become Christians.

(a) Lamprid.  
in vit. Alex.  
Sever. c. 43.  
p. 568.

VIII. WHAT became of S. *Quadratus* after *Adrian's* departure from *Athens*, we find not more than what the † *Greeks* in their *Menaon* relate, that by the violence of Persecuters he was driven from his charge at *Athens*, and being first set upon by Stones, then tormented by Fire, and several other punishments, he at last under *Adrian*

† Loc. Supra.  
cit.

(probably about the latter end of his Reign) received the Crown of Martyrdom. To what place he fled when he left *Athens*, and where he

Λίδους νέμειν θέλοντα μηδαμῶς σέβει  
\* Κορδατον βάλλουσιν ἄφρονες Λίδους.  
Men. ibid.

suffered Martyrdom is uncertain, unless it were at *Magnesia*, a City of *Ionia* in *Asia Minor*, where the same *Menaon* tells us, he preached the Gospel, as he did at *Athens*, and that his Body was there entombed, and his remains famous for Miracles done there. A place memorable for the death of *Themistocles*, that great Commander and Citizen of *Athens*, banished also by his own Fellow-Citizens, who after his brave and honourable Achievements, did here by a fatal draught put a period to his own life; where (as \* *Plutarch* tells us) his Posterity had certain honours and privileges conferred upon them by the *Magnesiens*, and which his Friend *Themistocles* the *Athenian* enjoyed in his time.

\* In vit. The-  
mist. p. 128.

The End of S. QUADRATUS's Life.

T

THE





THE LIFE OF  
**S. JUSTIN**  
 THE  
**MARTYR.**



*Michx. Burgh. del. et sculp.*

**S. IUSTINUS MARTYR.**

*His vicinity to the Apostolic times. His Birth-place and Kindred. His Studies. His Travels into Egypt. To what Sect of Philosophy he applied himself. The occasion and manner of his strange conversion to Christianity*

Christianity related by himself. Christianity the only safe and satisfactory Philosophy. The great influence which the patience and fortitude of the Christians had upon his conversion. The force of that argument to persuade Men. His vindication of himself from the charges of the Gentiles. His continuance in his Philosophic habit. The Φιλόσοφος Σχῆμα what, and by whom worn. Ὁ γράμμος ἐπιδείκνυται. His coming to Rome, and opposing Heretics. Marcion who, and what his Principles. Justin's first Apology to the Emperors, and the design of it. Antoninus his Letter to the Common-Council of Asia in favour of the Christians. This shewed not to be the Edict of Marcus Antoninus. Justin's journey into the East, and conference with Trypho the Jew. Trypho who. The malice of the Jews against the Christians. Justin's return to Rome. His contests with Crescens the Philosopher. Crescens his temper and principles. Justin's second Apology. To whom presented. The occasion of it. M. Antoninus his temper. Justin fore-tells his own fate. The Acts of his Martyrdom. His arraignment before Rusticus Prefect of Rome. Rusticus who: the great honours done him by the Emperor. Justin's discourse with the Prefect. His freedom and courage. His sentence and execution. The time of his death. His great Piety, Charity, Impartiality, &c. His natural parts, and excellent learning. His unskilfulness in the Hebrew Language noted. A late Author censured. His Writings. The Epistle to Diognetus. Diognetus who. His stile and character. The unwarrantable opinions he is charged with. His indulgence to Heathens. Κατὰ λόγον βίβιν, what: λόγος in what sense used by the ancient Fathers. How applied to Christ, how to Reason. His opinion concerning Chiliafin. The concurrence of the Ancients with him herein. This by whom first started; by whom corrupted. Concerning the state of the Soul after this life. The doctrine of the Ancients in this matter. His assertion concerning Angels, maintained by most of the first Fathers. The Original of it. Their opinion concerning Free-will shewed not to be opposed by them to the Grace of God. What influence Justin's Philosophic education had upon his opinions. His Writings enumerated.

I.



JUSTIN the Martyr was one, as of the most learned, so of the most early Writers of the Eastern Church, not long after the Apostles, as (a) Eusebius says of him, near to them χρόνῳ καὶ ἀρετῇ, says Methodius (b) Bishop of Tyre, both in time and virtue. And near indeed, if we strictly understand what he \* says of himself, that he was a Disciple of the Apostles; which surely is meant either of the Apostles at large, as comprehending their immediate successors, or probably not of the Persons, but Doctrine and Writings of the Apostles, by which he was instructed in the knowledge of Christianity. He was (d) born at Neapolis; a noted City of Palestine within the Province of Samaria, anciently called Sichem, afterwards as (e) Josephus tells us, by the inhabitants of Mabarcha, (corruptly by (f) Pliny Mamortha) by the Romans Neapolis, and from a Colony sent thither by Flavius Vespasian, stiled Flavia Caesarea. His Father was Priscus the Son of Bacchius (for so the Περίσβυτος Βακχίου, ΤῶΝ ἀπὸ Φλαυίας, as Sylburgius and Valesius observe, must necessarily be understood, implying the one to have been his Father, the other his Grandfather,) a Gentile, and (as (g) Scaliger probably thinks) one of those

(a) H. Eccl. 2.  
c. 12. p. 30.

(b) Ap. Phot.  
Cod.

CCXXXIV.  
col. 921.

\* Ἀποστόλων

μυθολογία

μαρτυρίας. ἡ

νομομαθία

καὶ τῶν

Epist. ad Di-

ognet. p. 301.

(d) Apol. II.

p. 53.

(e) De Bell.

Jud. l. 3. c. 4.

p. 890.

(f) H. Nat. l. 3.

c. 13. p. 79.

(g) Animadv.

ad Euf. Chron. 2.

MMCLVII.

219.



those *Greeks* which were in that Colony transplanted thither, who took care together with Religion to have him educated in all the Learning and Philosophy of the *Gentile* World. And indeed how great and exact a Master he was in all their Arts and Learning, how thoroughly he had digested the best and most useful notions, which their Institutions of Philosophy could afford, his Writings at this day are an abundant evidence.

II. IN his younger years, and, as is probable, before his conversion to Christianity, he travelled into Foreign parts for the accomplishment of his Studies, and particularly into *Egypt*, the Staple-place of all the more mysterious and recondite parts of Learning and Religion, and therefore constantly visited by all the more grave and sage Philosophers among the Heathens. That he was at \* *Alexandria* himself assures us, where he tells us what account he received from the inhabitants of the *Seventy Translators*, and was shewed the Cells wherein they performed that famous and elaborate work, which probably his inquisitive curiosity as a Philosopher, and the reports he had heard of it by living among the *Jews* had more particularly induced him to enquire after. Among the several Sects of Philosophers, after he had run through and surveyed all the Forms, he pitched his Tent among the *Platonists*, whose † notions were most agreeable to the natural sentiments of his mind, and which no doubt particularly disposed him for the entertainment of Christianity, \* himself telling us, that the principles of that Philosophy, though not in all things alike, were yet not alien or contrary to the Doctrines of the Christian Faith. But alas, he found no satisfaction to his mind either in this, or any other, till he arrived at a full persuasion of the truth and divinity of that Religion which was so much despised by the Wise and the Learned, so much opposed and trampled on by the Grandees and Powers of the World. Whereof, and of the manner of his conversion to the Christian Religion, he has given us a very large and punctual account in his Discourse with *Trypho*. I know this account is suspected by some to be only a *Prosopopœia*, to represent the grounds of his becoming a Christian after the *Platonic* mode by way of *Dialogue*, a way familiar with the Philosophers of that Sect. But however it may be granted that some few circumstances might be added to make up the *decorum* of the Conference, yet I see no reason (nor is any thing offered to the contrary besides a bare conjecture) to question the foundation of the Story, whereof the summ is briefly this.

III. BEING from his Youth acted by an inquisitive Philosophic genius, to make re-searches and enquiries after truth, he first betook himself to the *Stoics*, but not satisfied with his Master, he left him, and went to a *Peripatetic* Tutor, whose sordid covetousness soon made him conclude that truth could not dwell with him, accordingly he turned himself over to a *Pythagorean*, who requiring the preparatory knowledge of *Music*, *Astronomy*, and *Geometry*, him he quickly deserted, and last of all delivered himself over to the Institution of an eminent *Platonist*, lately come to reside at *Neapolis*; with whose intellectual notions he was greatly taken, and resolved for some time to give up himself to solitude and contemplation. Walking out therefore into a solitary place by the Sea-side, there met him a grave ancient Man, of a venerable aspect, who fell into discourse with him. The dispute between them was concerning the excellency of Philosophy in general, and of *Plato-*

\* *Parentes. ad*  
*Græc. p. 14.*

† *Apol. I. (rei*  
*vera II.) pag.*  
*50.*

\* *Ibid. pag. 51*

*Dialog. cum*  
*Tryph. p. 218,*  
*&c.*

*nism*



nism in particular; which *Justin* asserted to be the only true way to happiness, and of knowing and seeing God. This the grave person refuses at large and at last comes to shew him, who were the most likely persons to set him in the right way. He tells him that there were long before his reputed Philosophers, certain blessed and holy Men, lovers of God, and divinely inspired, called *Prophets*, who fore-told things which have since come to pass; who alone understood the truth, and undesignedly declared it to the World, whose Books yet extant would instruct a Man in what most became a Philosopher to know; the accomplishment of whose Predictions did sufficiently attest their faithfulness and integrity, and the mighty miracles which they wrought, set the truth of what they said beyond all exception; that they magnified God the great Creator of the World, and published his Son Christ to the World: Concluding his discourse with this advice, *But as for thy self, above all things pray that the Gates of Light may set open to thee; for these are not things discerned and understood by all, unless God and Christ grant to a Man the knowledge of them.* Which discourse being ended, he immediately departed from him.

*Ibid.* pag. 225.

IV. THE wise discourse of this venerable Man made a deep impression upon the Martyr's mind, kindled in his Soul a divine flame, and begot in him a sincere love of the Prophets, and those excellent Men that were friends to Christ: And now he began seriously to enquire into, and examine the Christian Religion, which he confesses he found *μὴν ἐν σοφίᾳ ἀσφαλὴν καὶ τῇ σύμφωνον*, the only certain and probable Philosophy, and which he could not but commend as containing a certain majesty and dread in it, and admirably adapted to terrifie and persuade those who were out of the right way, and to beget the sweetest serenity and peace in the minds of those who are conversant in it. Nor was it the least inducement to turn the Scale with him, when he beheld the innocence of the Christians lives, and the constancy of their death, with what fearless and undaunted resolutions they courted torments, and encountered Death in its blackest Shape. This very account he gives of it to the Roman Emperour. "For my own part (says \* he) being yet detained under the Platonic Institutions, when I heard the Christians traduced and reproached, and yet saw them fearlessly rushing upon Death, and venturing upon all those things that are accounted most dreadful and amazing to humane nature, I concluded with my self, 'twas impossible that those Men should wallow in Vice, and be carried away with the love of Lust and Pleasure. For what Man that is a Slave to Pleasure and Intemperance, that looks upon the eating human Flesh as a delicacy, can cheerfully bid Death welcom, which he knows must put a period to all his pleasures and delights; and would not rather by all means endeavour to prolong his life as much as is possible, and to delude his adversaries, and conceal himself from the notice of the Magistrate, rather than voluntarily betray and offer himself to a present execution? And certainly the Martyr's reasonings were unanswerable; seeing there could not be a more effectual proof of their innocence, than their laying down their lives to attest it. *Zeno* was wont to say, he had rather see one *Indian* burnt alive, than hear a hundred arguments about enduring labour and suffering. Whence † *Clement Alexandrinus* infers the great advantages of Christianity, wherein there were daily Fountains of Martyrs springing up, who before their

\* *Apol. I.* p. 50.

† *Stromat. l. 2.*  
p. 414.

their eyes were roasted, tormented, and beheaded, every day, whom regard to the Law of their Master had taught and obliged, τὸ εὐλαβέει δι' αἱματῶν ἐνδείκνυσθαι, to demonstrate the truth and excellency of their Religion, by sealing it with their Blood.

V. WE cannot exactly fix the date of his conversion, yet may we, I think, make a very near conjecture. \* *Eusebius* tells us, that at the time when *Hadrian* consecrated *Antinous*, *Justin* did yet adhere to the Studies and Religion of the *Greeks*: Now for this we are to know that *Hadrian* coming into *Egypt*, lost there his beloved Catamit *Antinous*, whose death he so relented, that he advanced him into the reputation of a Deity; whence in an ancient inscription at † *Rome*, he is stiled ΚΤΝΘΡΟΝΟΣ ΤΩΝ ΕΝ ΑΙΓΥΠΤΩ ΘΕΩΝ, the *Assessor of the Gods in Egypt*. He built a City to him in the place where he died called *Antinoe*, erected a Temple, and appointed Priests and Prophets to attend it, instituted annual solemnities, and every five years Sacred Games, called Αρτινόεια, held not in *Egypt* only, but in other parts; whence an \* Inscription not long after those times, set up by the Senate of *Smyrna*, mentions *Lerenius Septimius Heliodorus ANTINOEA*, who overcame in the Sports at *Smyrna*. But to return. 'Tis very evident that *Hadrian* had not been in *Egypt*, till about the time of *Servianus* or *Severianus* his being Consul (as appears from that Emperors Letters † to him) whose Consulship fell in with *Ann. Chr.* CXXXII. *Traj.* XVI. So that this of *Antinous* must be done either, that, or at most, the foregoing year; and accordingly about this time (as *Eusebius* intimates) *Justin* deserted the *Greeks*, and came over to the Christians. Whence in his first Apology presented not many years after to *Antoninus Pius*, *Adrian's* Successor, he speaks \* of *Antinous* τὸ νῦν γερουσιεύον, who very lately lived and was consecrated, and of the Jewish War, headed by *Barchochab*, as but lately past, which we know was concurrent with the death and apotheosis of *Antinous*. For that *Justin's* ὁ νῦν γερουσιεύων in both passages, cannot be precisely confined to the time of presenting that Apology, is evident to all, and therefore (as the Phrase is sometimes used) must be extended to what was lately done.

VI. THE wiser and more considerate part of the *Gentiles* were not a little troubled at the loss of so useful and eminent a Person, and wondered what should cause so sudden a change. For whose satisfaction and conversion, as well as his own vindication, he thought good particularly to write a Discourse to them, in the very first words whereof he thus bespeaks them. † "Think not, O ye *Greeks*, that I have rashly, and without any judgment or deliberation departed from the Rites of your Religion. For I could find nothing in it really Sacred, and worthy of the Divine acceptance. The matters among you, as your Poets have ordered them, are Monuments of nothing but madness and intemperance: and a Man can no sooner apply himself even to the most learned among you for instruction, but he shall be intangled in a thousand difficulties, and become the most confused Man in the World. And then proceeds with a great deal of wit and eloquence to expose the folly and absurdness of the main foundations of the Pagan Creed, concluding his address with these exhortations; "Come hither, O ye *Greeks*, "and partake of a most incomparable wisdom, and be instructed in a "Divine Religion, and acquaint your selves with an Immortal King.---- "Become as I am, for I sometimes was as you are. These are the Arguments

\* H. Eccl. l. 4. c. 8. p. 122.

† Ap. Casau. not. in El. Spart. vit. Adv. p. 65.

\* Marm. Oxon. CXLIII. p. 277

† Ext. ap. Vopisc. in vit. Saturn. p. 959.

\* Apol. II. (vera l.) p. 72.

† Orat. ad Græc. p. 37.

Ibid. p. 40.

"ments that prevailed with me, this the efficacy and divinity of the doctrine, which like a skilful charm expels all corrupt and poisonous affections out of the Soul, and banishes that Lust that is the Fountain of all evil, whence Enmities, Strifes, Envy, Æmulations, Anger, and such like mischievous passions do proceed: which being once driven out, the Soul presently enjoys a pleasant calmness and tranquillity. And being delivered from that yoke of evils, that before lay upon its neck, it aspires and mounts up to its Creator; it being but suitable that it should return to that place, from whence it borrowed its Original.

VI. BUT though he laid aside his former Profession, he still retained his ancient Garb, ἐν φιλοσόφῳ σχήματι πρεσβύτων ἢ θεῶν λόγον, as † *Eusebius*, and after him \* *S. Hierom* reports, preaching and defending the Christian Religion under his old *Philosophic* habit, which was the *Pallium* or *Cloak*, the usual Badge of the *Greek* Philosophers, (different from that which was worn by the ordinary *Greeks*,) and which those Christians still kept to, who before their conversion had been professed Philosophers. So \* *S. Hierom* tells us of *Aristides* the *Athenian* Philosopher, contemporary with *Quadratus*, that under his former habit he became Christ's Disciple; and † *Origen* of *Heraclas*, afterwards Bishop of *Alexandria*, that giving up himself to the more strict study of Philosophy he put on φιλόσοφον σχῆμα the *Philosophic Habit*, which he constantly wore even after he became Presbyter of that Church. This custom continued long in the Christian Church, that those who did ἀκριβῶς χειριανίζεν, (as \* *Socrates* speaks) enter upon an *Ascetic* course of life, and a more severe profession of Religion, always wore the Philosophers Cloak, and he tells us of *Sylvanus* the *Rhetorician*, that when he became Christian, and professed this *Ascetic* life, he was the first that laid aside the Cloak, and contrary to custom put on the common Garb. Indeed it was so common, that ὁ γράμμος ἐπιθετός became proverbial among the Heathens when

any Christian Ἀσκητής passed by, there goes a *Greek Impostor*, because of their being clad after the same manner, and professing a severer life than ordinary, like the Philosophers among the *Grecians*, many of whom notwithstanding were meer cheats and hypocrites: and † *Hierom* notes of his time, that if such a Christian were not so fine and spruce in his Garb as others, presently the common saying was clapt upon him, he is an *Impostor* and a *Greek*. This habit it seems was generally black, and fordid enough. Whence the Monks who succeeded in this strict and regular course of life, are severely noted by the *Gentile*

Writers of those Times under this character. \* *Libanius* calls them μελανειμονέντας, *black-coat Monks*, and says (a) of them, that the greatest demonstration of their vertue was τὸ ζῆν ἐν ἱματίοις πενθέντων, to walk about in mourning Garments. Much at the same rate (b) *Eunapius* describes the Monks of *Egypt*, that they were clad in black, and were ambitious δημοσίᾳ ἀσχημονεῖν, to go abroad in the most slovenly and fordid Garb. But it is time to return to our *S. Justin*, who (as (c) *Photius* and (d) *Ephiphanius* note) shewed himself in his words and actions, as well as in his habit to be a true Philosopher.

VII. HE came to *Rome* (upon what occasion is uncertain) probably about

† Lib. 4. c. 11. p. 125.  
\* De Script. in Justin.

\* De Script. in Aristid.

† Ap. Euseb. l. 6. c. 19. p. 221.

\* H. Eccl. l. 7. c. 37.

Λιανὴ ποτε οἱ ἄνθρωποι, ὅταν μὲν πᾶσι ἴδωσιν ἄνθρωπον μόνον χιτῶνα ἔχοντα, ὅτε περὶ σέχου, ὅτε διαγλώσσι, λογιζόμενοι πυλόν, ναυπηγὸν ὅτιν ὁ ἄνθρωπος, καὶ ὅτι ἐδὲν δὲ κατέλαβεν τότε ἔνεκα. — ἐπειδὴ δὲ πᾶσι ἴδωσιν ἀχίτωναν ἐν ἱματίῳ, κομῶντα ἢ κεφαλῇ καὶ τὰ ὄμματα, ἐκ οἷοι τί εἰσι περὶ τούτοις ἢ πονηρὰν ἀρετήν, ἢ δὲ σὺν ἡπαρξέσθαι. ἀλλ' ἐξέτασται καὶ ἐρεθίζεται, καὶ ἡτοὶ κατεγέλασται, ἢ ἐλοιδορήσεται καὶ ταῦτα εἰδότες, ὅτι τοῖς καλεσμένοις φιλοσόφοις ξυμμόντες ὅτιν ἡ σολὴ αὐτῶν, καὶ ἔσπον πᾶσι ἀποδεικνύμενον. Dion. Chrys. Orat. LXXI. πρὸς τὸν γῆμ. p. 627.

† Epist. ad Marcel. p. 115. Tom. I.

\* Orat. de Templ. p. 10.  
(a) Ibid. p. 28.

(b) In vit. Ædes. p. 65.

(c) Φιλοσοφῶν καὶ τοῖς λόγοις, καὶ τῷ βίῳ, καὶ τῷ γῆματι. Cod. 125. col. 304.

(d) Hæres. 46. p. 171.



about the beginning of *Antoninus Pius* his Reign, where he fixed his habitation, dwelling, as appears from the acts of his Martyrdom, about the *Timothine Baths*, which were upon the *Viminal Mount*. Here he strenuously employed himself to defend and promote the cause of Christianity, and particularly to confute and beat down the Heresies that then mainly infested and disturbed the Church, writing a Book \* against all sorts of Heresies, but more especially opposed himself to *Marcion*, who was the Son of a Bishop, born in *Pontus*, and for his despoiling a Virgin had been cast out of the Church, whereupon he fled to *Rome*, where he broached many damnable Errors, and among the rest, that there were two Gods, one the Creator of the World, whom he made, to be the God of the *Old Testament*, and the Author of evil; the other a more Sovereign and Supreme Being, Creator of more excellent things, the Father of Christ, whom he sent into the World to dissolve the Law and the Prophets, and to destroy the works of the other Deity, whom he stiled the God of the *Jews*. Others, and among them especially † *Epiphanius*, and a more Ancient Author \* of the *Dialogues against the Marcionites* under the name of *Origen* ( for that it was *Origen* himself, I much question ) make him to have established three differing Principles or Beings; an ἀρχὴ ἀγαθὴ, or good Principle, the Father of Christ, and this was the God of the *Christians*; an ἀρχὴ δημιουργικὴ, or Creating Principle, that made the visible frame of things, which presided over the *Jews*, and an ἀρχὴ πονηρὰ, or evil Principle, which was the Devil, and ruled over the *Gentiles*. With him *Justin* encountered both by Word and Writing, particularly publishing a Book which he had composed against him and his pernicious Principles.

\* *Apo. II. p. 70.*

† *Heret. XLII. p. 135.*  
\* *Dial. contr. Marcion. p. 34.*  
4. *Basil. edit. 1674. 4.*

VIII. ABOUT the Year of our Lord CLX. the Christians seem to have been more severely dwelt with; for though *Antoninus* the Emperor was a mild and excellent Prince, and who put out no Edicts, that we know of, to the prejudice of Christianity, yet the Christians being generally traduced and defamed as a wicked and barbarous generation, had a hard hand born upon them in all places, and were persecuted by virtue of the particular Edicts of former Emperors, and the general standing Laws of the *Roman Empire*. To vindicate them from the aspersions cast upon them, and to mitigate the severities used towards them, *Justin* about this time published his first Apology ( for though in all Editions it be set in the second place, it was unquestionably the first,) presenting it (as appears from the Inscription) to *Antoninus Pius* the Emperor, and to his two Sons *Vernus* and *Lucius* to the *Senate*, and by them to the whole People of *Rome*, wherein with great strength and evidence of reason he defends the Christians from the common objections of their Enemies, proves the Divinity of the Christian Faith, and shews how unjust and unreasonable it was to proceed against them without due conviction and form of Law, acquaints them with the innocent Rites and Usages of the Christian Assemblies, and lastly puts the Emperor in mind of the course which *Adrian* his Predecessor had taken in this matter; who had commanded that Christians should not be needlessly and unjustly vexed, but that their cause should be traversed and determined in open Judicatures; annexing to his Apology a Copy of the *Rescript* which *Adrian* had sent to *Minucius Fundanus* to that purpose.

*Vid. Esch. l. 4. c. 18. p. 139.*

XI. HIS Address wanted not it seems its desired Success †.

For the Empe-

† *Oros. Hist. l. 7. c. 14. fol. 305.*

Emperor in his own nature of a merciful and generous disposition, being moved partly by this Apology, partly by the notices he had received from other parts of the Empire, gave order that Christians henceforward should be treated in more gentle and regular ways, as appears among others by his \* Letter to the Commonalty of Asia, yet extant, which I shall here insert.

\* Ad. J. Mart.  
ad Calc. Apol.  
II. p. 100. & ap.  
Euseb. l. 4. c. 13.  
p. 126. &  
Chron. Alex.  
Ann. 2. Olymp.  
CCXXXVII.  
Ind. VII. p. 608

**E**MPE ROU R Caesar Titus, Aelius Adrian Antoninus, Augustus, Pius, High-Priest, the XV. time Tribune, thrice Consul, Father of the Country, to the Common Assembly of Asia, Greeting. I am very well assured, that the Gods themselves will take care, that this kind of men shall not escape, it being much more their concern, than it can be yours, to punish those that refuse to worship them; whom you do but the stronglier confirm in their own sentiments and opinions, while you vex and oppress them, accuse them for Atheists, and charge other things upon them, which you are not able to make good: nor can a more acceptable kindness be done them, than that being accused they may seem to chuse to die rather than live, for the sake of that God whom they worship. By which means they get the better, being ready to lay down their Lives, rather than be perswaded to comply with your commands. As for the Earth-quakes that have been, or that do yet happen, it may not be amiss to advertise you, whose minds are ready to despond under any such accidents, to compare your case with theirs. They at such a time are much more secure and confident in their God, whereas you seeming to disown God all the while, neglect both the Rites of other Gods, and the Religion of that Immortal Deity, nay Banish and Persecute to Death the Christians that Worship Him. Concerning these Men several Governors of Provinces have heretofore written to my Father of Sacred Memory: to whom he returned this answer, That they should be no way molested, unless it appeared that they attempted something against the State of the Roman Empire. Tea, and I my self have received many notices of this nature, to which I answered according to the tenour of my Fathers constitution. After all which if any shall still go on to create them trouble meerly because they are Christians, let him that is indicted be discharged, although it appear that he be a Christian, and let the Informer himself undergo the punishment.

Published at Ephesus in the place of the Common Assembly of Asia.

**X. THIS** Letter was sent (as appears from the year of his Consulship) Ann. Chr. CXL. Antonini III. If it be objected, that this seems not consistent with the year of his being Tribune, said here to be the XV. I answer that the *δυναρχικὴ ἐξουσία*, or Tribunitian Power did not always commence with the beginning of their Reign, but was sometimes granted, and that more than once, to persons in a private capacity, especially those who were Candidates for the Empire. Thus (as appears from the *Fasti Consulares* †) M. Agrippa had the *Tribunitia potestas* seven, as after his death Tiberius had it fifteen times during the life of Augustus. So that Antoninus his fifteenth Tribuneship might well enough consist with the third year of his Empire. Though I confess I am apt to suspect an Error in the number, and the rather because \* Sylburgius tells us, that these XV. years were not in the Edict, as it is in Justin Martyr, but were supplied out of Eusebius his Copy, which I have some reason

† Vide *Fasti Consulares* a Sigon. Edit. ad Ann. V. C. DCCXLVI. & DCCLXVI.  
\* Annot. in *Justin. Mart.* p. 10. c. 2.

reason to think to be corrupted in other parts of this Epistle. I am not ignorant that some learned Men would have this Imperial Edict to be the Decree of *Marcus Aurelius*, Son of *Antoninus*. Indeed in the inscription of it, as it is extant in *Eusebius*, it is *Marcus Aurelius Antoninus*: but then nothing can be more evident, than that that part of it is corrupted, as is plain, both because *Eusebius* himself a few lines before expressly ascribes it to *Antoninus Pius*, and because in the original inscription in *Justin's* own Apology (from whence *Eusebius* transcribed his) it is *Titus Aelius Antoninus Pius*. And besides that nothing else of moment is offered to make good the conjecture; the whole consent of Antiquity, and the tenor of the Epistle it self clearly adjudging it to the elder *Antoninus*; and \* *Melito* Bishop of *Sardis*, who presented an Apology to his Son and Successor, tells him of the Letters which his Father at the time when he was his Partner in the Empire, wrote to the Cities that they should not raise any new troubles against the Christians.

\* *Ap. Euseb. l. 4. c. 26. p. 148. vid. c. 13. p. 127.*

XI. NOT long after his first Apology, *Justin* seems to have re-visited the *Eastern* parts: for besides what he says in the *Acts* of his Martyrdom, that he was twice at *Rome*, † *Eusebius* expressly affirms, that he was at *Ephesus*, where he had his discourse with *Tryphon*, which 'tis \* plain was after the presenting his first Apology to the Emperor. And 'tis no ways improbable but that he went to *Ephesus* in company with those who carried the Emperor's Edict to the Common-Council of *Asia*, then assembled in that City, where he fell into acquaintance with *Tryphon* the Jew. This *Tryphon* was probably that Rabbi *Tarphon*, הכיזן העשיר as they commonly call him, the wealthy Priest, the Master or Associate of *R. Aquiba*, of whom mention is often made in the Jewish Writings. A Man of great note and eminency, who had fled his Country † in the late War, wherein *Barchochab* had excited and headed the Jews to a Rebellion against the Romans, since which time he had lived in *Greece*, and especially at *Corinth*, and had mightily improved himself by converse with the Philosophers of those Countries. With him *Justin* enters the lists in a two-days dispute, the account whereof he has given us in his Dialogue with that subtil Man, wherein he so admirably defends and makes good the truth of the Christian Religion, cuts the very sinews of the Jewish cause, dissolves all their plea and pretences against Christianity, and discovers their implacable spight and malice, who not barely content to reject Christianity, sent peculiar persons \* up and down the World to spread abroad, that *Jesus* the Galilean was a Deceiver and Seducer, and his whole Religion nothing but a Cheat and an Imposture, that in their public † Synagogues they solemnly anathematized all that turned Christians, hated them, as elsewhere \* he tells us, with a mortal enmity, oppressed and murdered them when ever they got them in their power; *Barchochab* their late General making them the only object of his greatest severity and revenge, unless they would renounce and blaspheme Christ. The issue of the conference was, that the Jew acknowledged himself highly pleased with his discourse, professing he found more in it, than he thought could have been expected from it, wishing he might enjoy it oftner, as what would greatly conduce to the true understanding of the Scripture, and begging his friendship in what part of the World soever he was.

† *Lib. 4. c. 17. p. 140.*  
\* *Vid. Dialog. cum Tryph. p. 349.*

† *Dialog. cum Tryph. p. 217.*

\* *Ibid. pag. 335. & ap. Euseb. l. 4. c. 18. p. 140.*  
† *Pag. 223.*  
\* *Apolog. II. pag. 72.*

XII. IN the conclusion of this discourse with *Tryphon*, he tells us, he was ready to set sail, and depart from *Ephesus*, but whether in order



\* Vid. Hieron.  
de Script. in  
Justin.

† Orat. contr.  
Græc. p. 160.

\* Ibid. p. 157.

† Apol. I. c. vi-  
rius II. ) p. 46.

to his return to *Rome*, or some other place, is not known. That he returned thither at last, is unquestionable, the thing being evident, though the time uncertain, whether it was while *Antoninus* was yet alive, or in the beginning of his Successors Reign, I will not venture to determine. At his coming he had among others, frequent contests with *Crescens* the Philosopher, a Man of some note at that time in *Rome*. He was a \* *Cynic*, and according to the *genius* of that Sect, proud and conceited, furly and ill-natured, a Philosopher in appearance, but a notorious Slave to all Vice and Wickedness. † *Tatian*, *Justin's* Scholar ( who saw the Man at *Rome*, admired and despised him for his childish and trifling, his wanton and effeminate manners ) gives him this character, that he was the traducer of all their gods, the Epitome of Superstition, the accuser of generous and heroic actions, the subtil contriver of Murders, the prompter of Adultery, a pursuer of Wealth, even to rage and madness, a Tutor of the vilest sort of Lust, and the great Engine and instigator of Mens being condemned to execution: he tells us \* of him, that when at *Rome*, he was above all others miserably enslaved to *Sodomy* and Covetousness; and though he pretended to despise death, yet did he himself abhor it, and to which as the greatest evil he sought to betray *Justin* and *Tatian*, for their free reproving the vicious and degenerate lives of those Philosophical Impostors. This was his adversary, φιλόσοφος ἢ φιλόπονος, as he calls him †, a lover of Popular Applause, not of true Wisdom and Philosophy, and who by all the base Arts of insinuation endeavoured to traduce the Christians, and to represent their Religion under the most infamous character. But in all his disputes the Martyr found him wretchedly ignorant of the affairs of Christians, and strongly biased by malice and envy, which he offered to make good ( if it might be admitted ) in a public disputation with him before the Emperor and the Senate: assuring them, that either he had never considered the Christian Doctrines, and then he was worse than the meanest Idiots, who are not wont to bear witness and pronounce sentence in matters whereof they have no knowledge; or if he had taken notice of them, it was plain that either he did not understand them, or if he did, out of a base compliance with his Auditors, dissembled his knowledge and approbation, for fear of being accounted a Christian, and lest freely speaking his mind, he should fall under the Sentence and the fate of *Socrates*; so far was he from the excellent principle of that wise Man, that *no Man was to be regarded before the truth*. Which free and impartial censure did but more exasperate the Man, the sooner to hasten and promote his ruine.

XIII. IN the mean time *Justin* presented his second Apology to *M. Antoninus* ( his Colleague *L. Verus* being then, probably, absent from the City ) and the Senate; for that it was not addressed to the Senate alone, is evident from several passages in the Apology itself. There are, that will have this as well as the former to have been presented to *Antoninus Pius*, but certainly without any just ground of evidence, besides that *Eusebius* and the Ancients expressly ascribe it to *Marcus Aurelius*, his Son and Successor. And were the Inscription and beginning of it, which are now wanting, extant, they would quickly determine and resolve the doubt. The occasion of it was this. \* A Woman at *Rome* had together with her husband lived in all manner of wantonness and debauchery, but being converted to Christianity, she sought by all Arguments and persuasions to reclaim him from his loose and vicious course.

But

\* Apol. I. p. 41.

But the Man was obstinate, and deaf to all reason and importunity; however by the advice of her friends, she still continued with him, hoping in time she might reduce him; till finding him to grow intolerable, she procured a Bill of Divorce from him. The Man was so far from being cured, that he was more enraged by his Wives departure, and accused her to the Emperor for being a Christian; she also put in her Petition, to obtain leave to answer for her self. Whereupon he deferred the prosecution of his Wife, and fell upon one *Prothymus*, by whom she had been converted to the Christian Faith, whom he procured to be cast into Prison, and there a long time tortured merely upon his confessing himself a Christian. At last being brought before *Urbicius* Præfect of the City, he was condemned to death. Whereat *Lucius*, a Christian that stood by, could not forbear to tell the Judge, it was very hard that an innocent and vertuous Man, charged with no Crime, should be adjudged to die merely for bearing the name of a Christian, a thing no way creditable to the Government of such Emperors as they had, and of the August Senate of *Rome*. Which he had no sooner said, but he was together with a third person sentenced to the same fate. The severity of these proceedings awakened *Justin's* solicitude and care for the rest of his Brethren, who immediately drew up an Apology for them, wherein he lays down a true and naked relation of the case, complains of the injustice and cruelty of such proceedings, to punish men merely for the name of Christians, without ever accusing them of any material crimes, answers the objections usually urged against them, and desires no more favour, than that what determination soever they should make of it, his Apology might be put before it, that so the whole World might judge of them, when they had been once truly acquainted with their case.

XIV. THE *Martyrs* activity and zeal in the cause of Christianity did but set the keener edge upon *Crescens* his malice and rage against him. The Philosopher could not confute him by force of Argument, and therefore resolved to attack him with clancular and ignoble Arts; and could think of no surer way to oppress him, than by engaging the secular Powers against him. *Marcus Antoninus* the Emperor was a great Philosopher, but withal zealous of Pagan Rites to the highest degree of Superstition; he had from his youth been educated in the \* *Salian* College, all the Offices whereof he had gone through in his own Person, affecting an imitation of *Numa Pompilius*, the first Master of Religious Ceremonies among the *Romans*, from whom he pretended to derive his Pedigree and Original: nay so very strict in his way of Religion (says † *Dion*) that even upon the *Dies Nefasti*, the unlucky and inauspicious days, when all public Sacrifices were prohibited, he would privately offer Sacrifices at home. What apprehensions he had of the Christians is evident from hence, that he ascribes\* their ready and resolute undergoing death, not to a judicious and deliberate consideration, but to a ψαλὴ παρὰ τὰ ἔτις, a meer stubbornness and obstinacy; which he being so eminent and professed a Stoic, had of all Men in the World the least reason to charge them with. With him it was no hard matter for *Crescens* to insinuate himself, and to procure his particular dis-favour towards *Justin*, a Man so able, and so active to promote the interest of the Christian Religion. Indeed † *Justin* himself had publicly told the Emperor what he expected should be his own fate, that he looked that *Crescens* or some

\* *J. Capitolin. vit. M. Anton. c. 4. p. 156.*

† *Excerpt. Dion. p. 721.*

\* *Τὸν ἄνθρωπον ἐκείνον ἰ. 11. Stob. 3. p. 106.*

† *Apolog. I. p. 46.*

\* *Mth. Græc.*  
77. d. 78. l. v.

† *Apud. Sur. ad*  
*XII. Jun. p.*  
*382. & Baron.*  
*ad Ann. 165.*  
*n. 2. & seq.*

\* *Sur. loc.*  
*citat.*

† *J. Capit. ubi*  
*supr. c. 9. p.*  
*154.*

\* *Tav. eis*  
*éau]. l. 1. Sect.*  
*7. p. 1.*

of their titular Philosophers, should lay snares to undermine, torment, or crucifie him. Nor was he at all mistaken, the envious Man procuring him to be cast in Prison, where if the \* *Greeks* say true, he was exercised with many preparatory tortures in order to his Martyrdom. I confess *Eusebius* gives us no particular account of his death, but the *Acts* of his Martyrdom are still † extant, and (as there is reason to believe) genuine and uncorrupt, the shortness of them being not the least Argument that they are the sincere Transcripts of the Primitive Records, and that they have for the main escaped the interpolations of later Ages, which most others have been obnoxious to. I know 'tis doubted by \* one, whether these *Acts* contain the Martyrdom of ours, or another *Justin*: but whoever considers the particulars of them, most agreeable to our *Justin*, and especially their fixing his death under the *Prefecture* of *Rusticus*, which *Epiphanius* expressly affirms of our St. *Justin*, will see little reason to question, whether they belong to him. In them we have this following account.

XV. *JUSTIN* and six of his companions having been apprehended, were brought before *Rusticus*, Prefect of the City. This *Rusticus* was † *Q. Junius Rusticus*, a Man famous both for Court and Camp, a wise Statesman, and great Philosopher, peculiarly addicted to the Sect of the *Stoics*. He was Tutor to the present Emperor *M. Aurelius*, and what remarkable Rules and Instructions he had given him, *Antoninus* \* himself sets down at large. Above all his Masters he had a particular reverence and regard to him, communicated to him all his public and private Counsels, shewed him respect before all the great Officers of the Empire, and after his death required of the Senate that he might be honoured with a public Statue. He had been *Consul* in the second year of *Hadrian*, and again in the second of the present Emperors, and was now *Prefect* of *Rome*: before whom these good Men being brought, he persuaded *Justin* to obey the gods, and comply with the Emperors Edicts. The *Martyr* told him, that no Man could be justly found fault with, or condemned, that obeyed the commands of our Saviour *Jesus Christ*. Then the Governor enquired in what kind of learning and discipline he had been brought up: he told him, that he had endeavoured to understand all kinds of Discipline, and tried all methods of Learning, but had finally taken up his rest in the Christian Discipline, how little soever it was esteemed by those who were led by error and false opinions. Wretch that thou art (said the Governor) art thou then taken with that Discipline? I am, reply'd the *Martyr*, for with right Doctrine do I follow the Christians. And when asked what that Doctrine was; he answered, the right Doctrine which we Christians piously profess, is this, we believe the one only God to be the Creator of all things visible and invisible, and confess our Lord *Jesus Christ* to be the Son of God, foretold by the Prophets of old, and who shall hereafter come to be the Judge of Mankind, a Saviour, Preacher, and Master to all those, who are duly instructed by him: that as for himself, he thought himself too mean to be able to say any thing becoming his infinite Deity; that this was the business of the Prophets, who had many Ages before foretold the coming of this Son of God into the World.

XVI. THE *Prefect* next enquired where the Christians were wont to assemble, and being told, that the God of the Christians was not confined to a particular place, he asked in what place *Justin* was wont to instruct



instruct his Disciples, who gave him an account of the place where he dwelt, and told him that there he Preached the Christian Doctrine to all that resorted to him. Then having severally examined his Companions, he again addressed himself to *Justin* in this manner. Hear thou that art noted for thy Eloquence, and thinkest thou art in the truth; if I cause thee to be scourged from Head to Foot, thinkest thou thou shalt go to Heaven? He answered, that although he should suffer what the other had threatned, yet he hoped he should enjoy the portion of all true Christians, well knowing that the Divine Grace and Favour was laid up for all such, and should be as long as the World endured. And when again asked, whether he thought he should go to Heaven, and receive a reward; he replied, that he did not think it only, but knew, and was so certain of it, that there was no cause to doubt it. The Governor seeing it was to no purpose to argue, came closer to the matter in hand, and bad them go together, and unanimously sacrifice to the gods. No Man (replied the *Martyr*) that is in his right mind, will desert true Religion to fall into error and impiety. And when threatned that unless they complied, they should be tormented without mercy; there is nothing (saith *Justin*) which we more earnestly desire, than to endure torments for the sake of our Lord *Jesus Christ*, and be saved. For this is that which will promote our happiness, and procure us confidence before that dreadful Tribunal of our Lord and Saviour, before which by the divine appointment, the whole World must appear. To which the rest assented, adding, Dispatch quickly what thou hast a mind to, for we are Christians, and cannot sacrifice to Idols. Whereupon the Governor pronounced this sentence; *They who refuse to do Sacrifice to the gods, and to obey the Imperial Edicts, let them be first scourged, and then beheaded according to the Laws.* The Holy Martyrs rejoiced and blessed God for the Sentence passed upon them, and being led back to Prison, were accordingly whipped, and afterwards beheaded. The (a) *Greeks* in their *Rituals*, though very briefly, give the same account, only they differ in the manner of the *Martyrs* death, which they tell us was by a draught of Poison, while the rest of his Companions lost their heads. Though there are that by that fatal potion understand no more than the poisonous malice and envy of *Crescens* the Philosopher, by which *Justin's* death was procured. And indeed if literally taken, the account of the *Greeks* in that place will not be very consistent with it self. Their dead Bodies the Christians took up and decently interred. This was done, as *Baronius* conjectures, *Ann. Chr. CLXV.* with whom seems to concur the † *Alexandrine Chronicle*, which says, that *Justin* having presented his second Apology to the Emperor; was not long after crowned with Martyrdom. This is all the certainty that can be recovered concerning the time of his death, the date of it not being consigned by any other ancient Writer. 'Tis a vast mistake (or rather error of Transcribers) of \* *Epiphanius*, who makes him suffer under *Adrian*; when yet he could not be ignorant that he dedicated his first Apology to *Antoninus Pius* his Successor, in the close whereof he makes mention of *Adrian*, his illustrious Parent and Predecessor, and annexes the Letter which he had written to *Minucius Fundanus* in favour of the Christians; and no less his mistake (if it was not an error in the number) concerning his Age, making him but thirty years

(a) Ἰουστίνον καὶ τοὺς ἄλλους ἑπτὰ ἐκ βίης.  
ὅς ἐστιν ὁ παῖς τοῦ καὶ τοῦ δευτέρου  
Πρωτῶν Ἰουλιῶν Ἰουστίνου ἐκ τῆς ἑκτοῦ.

Men. Græcor. T. 2. c. 2. l. 1.

† Ad An. 2.  
Olymp. 236. M.  
Anri. & L. Ver.  
Imp. 6. Indict.  
3. p. 606.

\* Hæres. XLVI.  
p. 171.

years

years old at the time of his death, a thing no ways consistent with the course of his Life: and for what he adds of ἐν κατὰ φύσιν ἡλικίᾳ, that he died in a firm and consistent age, it may be very well applied to many years after that period of his life.

XVII. THUS have we traced the *Martyr* through the several stages of his life, and brought him to his last fatal period. And now let us view him a little nearer. He was a Man of a pious mind, and a very virtuous life; tenderly sensible of the honour of God, and the great interests of Religion. He was not elated, nor valued himself upon the account of his great abilities, but upon every occasion intirely resolved the glory of all into the divine grace and goodness. He had a true love to all Men, and a mighty concern for the good of Souls, whose happiness he continually prayed for and promoted, yea, that of their fiercest Enemies. From none did he and his Religion receive more bitter affronts and oppositions than from the *Jews*, yet he tells \* *Tryphon* that they heartily prayed for them, and all other Persecutors, that they might repent, and ceasing to blaspheme Christ, might believe in him, and be saved from eternal vengeance at his glorious appearing: † that though they were wont solemnly to curse them in their *Synagogues*, and to joyn with any that would persecute them to death, yet they returned no other answer than that, You are our Brethren, we beseech you own and embrace the truth of God. And in his \* *Apology* to the Emperor and the Senate, he thus concludes, I have no more to say, but that we shall endeavour what in us lies, and heartily pray, that all Men in the World may be blessed with the knowledge and entertainment of the truth. In the pursuit of this noble and generous design he feared no dangers, but delivered himself with the greatest freedom and impartiality; he acquaints the † Emperors, how much 'twas their duty to honour and esteem the truth, that he came not to smooth and flatter them, but to desire them to pass sentence according to the exactest rules of Justice; \* that it was their place and infinitely reasonable when they had heard the cause, to discharge the duty of righteous Judges, which if they did not, they would at length be found inexcusable before God; † nay that if they went on to punish and persecute such innocent persons, he tells them before-hand, 'twas impossible they should escape the future Judgement of God, while they persisted in this evil and unrighteous course. In this case he regarded not the persons of Men, nor was scared with the dangers that attended it, and therefore in his conference with the *Jew*, tells \* him, that he regarded nothing but to speak the truth, not caring whom in this matter he disobliged, yea, though they should presently tear him all in pieces: neither fearing nor favouring his own Country-men the *Samaritans*, whom he had accused in his *Apology* to the Emperor, for being so much bewitched and seduced with the Impostures of *Simon Magus*, whom they cried up as a supreme Deity, above all principality and power.

XVIII. FOR his natural endowments, he was a man of acute parts, a smart and pleasant wit, a judgement able to weigh the differences of things, and to adapt and accommodate them to the most useful purposes; all which were mightily improved and accomplished by the advantages of Foreign Studies, being both in the Christian and Ethnic Philosophy, εἰς ἀκρόν ἀννῆκεν τὴν φιλοσοφίαν καὶ ἰστορίαν περὶ τοῦ θεοῦ καὶ τοῦ κόσμου, says † *Photius*, arrived at the very height, flowing with abundance of History,

\* *Dial. cum Tryph.* p. 354.

† *Ibid.* p. 323.

\* *Apol. I.* p. 52.

† *Apol. II.* p. 53.

\* *Ibid.* p. 54.

† *Ibid.* p. 99.

\* *Dial. cum Tryph.* p. 349.

† *Cod. CXXV.* fol. 304.

story, and all sorts of Learning. In one thing indeed he seems to have come short, and wherein the first Fathers were generally defective, skill in the *Hebrew*, and other *Eastern* Languages, as appears (to omit others) by one instance, his derivation of the word *Satanas*; *Sata* (as he tells\* us) in the *Hebrew* and the *Syriac* signifying an *Apostate*, and *Nas* the same with the *Hebrew Sata*, out of the composition of both which arises this one word *Satanas*. A trifling conceit, and the less to be pardoned in one that was born and lived among the *Samaritans* and the *Jews*; every one that has but conversed with those Languages at a distance, knowing it to spring from *to be an adversary*, which being formed according to the mode of the *Greeks*; (as (a) *Origen* long since observed in this very instance) who were wont to add *as* to the termination of words borrowed from a Foreign Language, becomes *Satanas*, an *adversary*. And therefore a late (b) Author (who has weeded the Writings of the Ancients, and whose quotations favour of infinitely greater ostentation, than either judgment or fidelity) sufficiently betrays his ignorance in those very Fathers, with which he pretends so much acquaintance, when to prove the *Quest. & Resp. ad Orthodoxos*, not to be the genuin work of our *Justin*, he urges the odd and ridiculous interpretation of the word *Osanna*, there rendred (c) by *μεγαλοσύνη ὑπερκειμένη*, *super-excellent magnificence*: of the true signification whereof (says he) *Justin* himself being a *Samaritan* could not be ignorant. When as his unquestionable Tracts afford such evident footsteps of his lamentable unskillfulness in that Language. But the Man must be excused, seeing in this (as in many other things) he traded purely upon trust, securely stealing the whole passage word for word out of another Author: so little skill had he to distinguish between true and false, and to know when to follow his Guides, and where to leave them. As for *Justin* himself his ignorance herein is the less to be wondered at, if we consider that his Religion, as a *Gentile* born, his early and almost sole converse with the *Greeks*, his constant study of the Writings of the *Gentile* Philosophers, might well make him a stranger to that Language, which had not much in it to tempt a meer Philosopher to learn it. In all other parts of Learning how great his abilities were, may be seen in his Writings yet extant, (to say nothing of them that are lost) *παραδεδωμένης διανοίας ἡ περὶ τὰ θεῖα ἐσπινδαχῆαι ὑπομνήματα πλείους ὠφελείας ἔμπληρα*, as (d) *Eusebius* says of them, the Monuments of his singular Parts, and of a mind studiously conversant about divine things, richly fraught with excellent and useful knowledge. They are all designed either in defence of the Christian Religion, both against *Jews* and *Gentiles*, or in beating down that common Religion, and those prophane and ridiculous Rites of Worship which then governed the World, or in prescribing Rules for the ordinary conduct of the Christian Life, all which he has managed with an admirable acuteness and dexterity. Some Books indeed have obtruded themselves under his name, as the *Expositio Fidei*, *Quaestiones & Responsa ad Orthodoxos*, *Quaestiones Graecicae ad Christianos*, *Quaestiones V. ad Graecos*, &c. all which are undoubtedly of a latter Age, composed after Christianity was fully settled in the World, and the *Arrian* controversies had begun to disturb the Christian Church. Or if any of them were originally his, they have been so miserably interpolated and defaced by after-ages, that it is almost impossible to discern true from false.

XIX. AS for the Epistle to *Diognetus*, though excepted against by some,

\* *Dialog. cum Tryph.* p. 331.

(a) *Contr. Cel.* l. 6. p. 306.

(b) *Sand. Tract. de Vit. Script. Eccl. Hist. Eccles. Tom. 1. praefix.* p. 44.

(c) *Vid. Quest. L. p. 421.*

*Vid. Rivet. Crit. Sac. l. 2. c. 5. p. 198.*

(d) *H. Eccl. l. 2. c. 18. p. 139.*



(a) *M. Aurel.*  
*lib. vi. c. 1.*  
*l. Stiff. 6. p. 7.*

(b) *H. Eccl. l. 4.*  
*c. 18. p. 140.*

(c) *Loc. supr.*  
*citat.*

some, yet is it fairly able to maintain its title, without any just cause alleged against it. Nor is it improbable but that this might be that very *Diognetus* who was Tutor to the Emperour *M. Aurelius*, who (as himself confesses) (a) persuaded him to the study of Philosophy, and gave him wise counsels and directions to that purpose, and being a person of note and eminency, is accordingly saluted by the Martyr with a *κεράτῃ Διόγνῃτι*, most excellent *Diognetus*. His temper and course of life had made him infinitely curious (as is evident from the first part of that Epistle) to know particularly what was the Religion, what the Manners and Rites of Christians; what it was that inspired them with so brave and generous a courage; as to contempt the World, and to despise death; upon what grounds they rejected the Religion; and disowned the deities of the *Gentiles*, and yet separated themselves from the *Jewish* Discipline and way of Worship; what was that admirable Love and friendship by which they were so fast knit together, and why this novel Institution came so late into the World. To all which inquiries (sutable enough to a Man of a philosophic genius) *Justin* (to whom probably he had addressed himself as the most noted Champion of the Christian cause) returns a very particular and rational satisfaction in this Epistle, though what effect it had upon the Philosopher is unknown. That this Epistle is not mentioned by *Eusebius*, is no just exception, seeing he confesses (b) there were many other Books of *Justin's* besides those which he there reckons up: that it is a little more than ordinary polite and Philosophical, is yet less; for who can wonder if so great a Scholar as *Justin* writing to a person so eminent for Learning and Philosophy, endeavoured to give it all the advantages of florid and eloquent discourse. It must be confessed that his ordinary stile does not reach this; for which let us take *Photius* (c) his censure, a man able to pass a judgment in this case: *he studied not (says he) to set off the native beauty of Philosophy with the paint and varnish of Rhetorical Arts. For which cause his Discourses, though otherwise very weighty and powerful, and observing a composure agreeable enough to Art and Science, have not yet those sweet and luscious insinuations, those attractives and allurements that are wont to prevail upon vulgar Auditors, and to draw them after them.*

XX. THAT which may seem most to impair the credit of this ancient and venerable Man, is that he is commonly said to be guilty of some unorthodox sentiments and opinions, disagreeing with the received Doctrines of the Church. True it is, that he has some notions not warranted by general entertainment or the sense of the Church, especially in later Ages, but yet scarce any but what were held by most of the Fathers in those early times, and which for the main are speculative and have no ill influence upon a good life; the most considerable whereof we shall here remark. First he is charged with too much kindness and indulgence to the more eminent sort of Heathens, and particularly to-

Τὸν Χριστὸν ἀποτίττοντον ὡς Θεῷ ᾧ ἐδ-  
 ῶχθη, καὶ ἀποκαταστήσαντον λόγον ὄντα,  
 ὃ πᾶν ᾧ ἀνθρώπων μίσθῳ. Καὶ οἱ μὲν  
 λόγον βιάσαντες, Χριστιανοὶ εἰσι, καὶ ἄλλοι  
 ἐνομιζόμενοι ὅτι ἐν Ἑλλήσιν μὲν Σωκράτης καὶ  
 Ἡράκλειτος, καὶ οἱ ὅμοιοι αὐτοῖς. *Apol. II.*  
*pag. 83.*

(d) *Apol. I. p. 48.*

ward *Socrates*, *Heraclitus*, and such like: such indeed he seems to allow to have been in some sense *Christians*, and of *Socrates* particularly (d) affirms, that *Christ* was ἀπὸ μέρους, in part known to him, and the like elsewhere more than once. The ground of all which was this, that such persons did μὲν λόγον βίον, live according to the λόγος, the word, or reason, and that this naturally is in every Man, and manifest to him



from him, who is the Word and Wisdom of the Father, and may so far be said to partake of Christ, the primitive and original Word, and that more or less according to their improvement of them; so that whatever wise and excellent things either Philosophers or Poets have spoken, says *Justin the Martyr* (a), it was διὰ τὸ ἐμφυτον παντὶ γίνεαι ἀνθρώπων ὁ σπέρμα τῆ γε, from that seed of the λόγος, the Word, or Reason that is implanted in all mankind: thus he says that *Socrates* (b) exhorted the *Greeks* to the knowledge of the *Unknown God* by the inquisition of the *Word*. To

(a) *Apolog.* l. p. 46. vid. p. 48. C.

(b) *Ibid.* p. 48.

Ὁ μόνον Ἕλλησι διὰ Σωκράτους καὶ ἀλλο-  
γε ἡλέγχθη ταῦτα, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἐν βαρβάρους  
καὶ αὐτῶν τῶ λόγῳ μορφωθῆναι καὶ ἀνθρώ-  
που γινώσκουσιν, καὶ Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ κληθῆναι.  
*Just. Apol.* II. p. 56.

(c) *Dialog.* cum *Tryph.* p. 306, 307. vid. p. 369.

conclude this, he no where affirms, that *Gentiles* might be saved without the entertainment of Christianity, nor that their knowledge was of it self sufficient to that end (no man more strongly proves Reason and Natural Philosophy to be of themselves insufficient to salvation) but that so far as they improved their Reason and internal Word to the great and excellent purposes of Religion, so far they were Christians, and

akin to the eternal and original Word, and that

whatever was rightly dictated or reformed by this inward Word, either by *Socrates* among the *Greeks*, or by others among the *Barbarians*, was in effect done by Christ himself, *the Word made Flesh*.

XXII. ANOTHER opinion with which he was charged is *Chiliasm*, or

the reign of a thousand years. This indeed he expressly asserts (c), that after the Resurrection of the dead is over, *Jerusalem* should be rebuilt, beautified and enlarged, where our Saviour with all the holy Patriarchs and Prophets, the Saints and Martyrs should visibly reign a thousand years. He confesses indeed that there are many sincere and devout Christians that would not subscribe to this opinion; but withall affirms that there were abundance of the same mind with him. As indeed there

(d) *Apud. Iren.* l. 5. c. 33. p. 498. vid. *Euseb.* l. 3. c. ult. p. 112. (e) *Loc. cit.* & ap. *Euseb.* ubi sup. (f) *Ap. Euseb.* l. 7. c. 24. p. 270. (g) *Ap. Hieron. Comment.* in *Ezech.* c. 36. Tom. 5. p. 507. (h) *Adv. Marcion* l. 3. c. 23. p. 411. de *Resur.* Carn. c. 25. p. 340. (i) *Apud Hieron.* loc. sup. cit. (k) *De vit. beat.* l. 7. c. 24. p. 722. c. 26. (h) 727. & seq. (l) *Ap. Hieron.* ubi sup. vid. etiam de *Scrip. Eccl.* in *Papia.* (m) *Lib.* 3. c. 39. p. 112.

were, (d) *Papias* Bishop of *Hierapolis* (e) *Irenaeus* Bishop of *Lyons*, (f) *Nepos* (g) *Apollinaris*, (h) *Tertullian*, (i) *Victorinus*, (k) *Lactantius*, (l) *Severus Gallus*, and many more. The first that started this notion among the Orthodox Christians of those early Times seems to have been the fore-mentioned *Papias*, who (as (m) *Eusebius* tells us) pretended it to be an *Apostolical* Tradition, misunderstanding the Apostles discourses, and too lightly running away with what they meant in a mystical and hidden sense. For he was, though a good Man, yet of no great depth of understanding, and so easily mistaken; and yet as he observes, his mistake, imposed upon several Ecclesiastical persons, the venerable antiquity of the Man recommending the error to them with great advantage. Among which especially were our *S. Justin* and *Irenaeus*, who held it in an innocent and harmless sense. 'Tis true (n) *Cerinthus* and his followers, mixing it with the Jewish Dreams and Fables, and pretending divine Revelations to patronize and countenance it, improved it to brutish and sensual purposes, placing it in a state of eating and drinking, and all manner of bodily pleasures and delights. And what use Heretics of latter times have made of it, and how much they have improved and enlarged it, is not my present business to enquire.

(n) *Cajus ap. Euseb.* l. 3. c. 28. p. 100. *Dionys. Corinth.* ibid. & l. 7. c. 24. p. 273.

(o) *Dial. cum Tryph.* p. 333.

XXIII. CONCERNING the state of the Soul after this life, he affirms (o) that the Souls even of the Prophets and righteous Men fell under the power of *Demons*, though how far that power should extend, he tells us not, grounding his assertion upon no other basis than the single instan-



instance of *Samuel's* being summoned up by the enchantments of the *Pythoneses*. Nor does he assert it to be necessarily so, seeing he grants that by our hearty endeavours and Prayers to God, our Souls at the hour of their departure may escape the seizure of those evil powers. To this we may add, what he seems (a) to maintain, That the Souls of good Men are not received into Heaven till the Resurrection; that when they depart the Body, they remain *ἐν χρεῖστον πνεύματι*, (b) in a better state, where being gathered within it self, the Soul perpetually enjoys what it loved; but that the Souls of the unrighteous and the wicked are thrust into a worse condition, where they expect the judgement of the great day: and he reckons (c) it among the errors of some pretended Christians, who denied the Resurrection, and affirmed that their Souls immediately after death were taken into Heaven. Nor herein did he stand alone, but had the almost unanimous suffrage of primitive Writers voting with him,

(d) *Irenæus*, (e) *Tertullian*, (f) *Origen*, (g) *Hilary*, (h) *Prudentius*, (i) *Ambrose*, (k) *Augustin*, (l) *Anastasijs Sinaita*, and indeed who not, there being a general concurrence in this matter, that the Souls of the righteous were not upon the dissolution presently translated into Heaven, that is, not admitted to a full and perfect fruition of the divine presence, but determined to certain secret and unknown Repositories, where they enjoyed a state of imperfect blessedness, waiting for the accomplishment of it at the general Resurrection, which intermediate state they will have described under the notion of *Paradise* and *Abraham's Bosom*, and which some of them make to be a subterranean Region within the bowels of the Earth.

XXIV. THE like concurrence, though not altogether so uncontrollably entertained of the Ancients with our *Justin*, we may observe in his opinion concerning the (a) *Angels*, that God having committed to them the care and superintendency of this sublunary World, they abused the power intrusted with them, mixing themselves with Women in wanton and sensual embraces, of whom they begat a race and posterity of *Demons*.

An assertion not only intimated by (b) *Philo* and (c) *Josephus*, but expressly owned by (d) *Papias* (e) *Athenagoras*, (f) *Clemens Alexandrinus* (g) *Tertullian*, (h) *Cyprian* (i) *Lactantius*, (k) *Sulpitius Severus*, (l) *S. Ambrose*, and many more. That which first gave birth to this opinion (easily embraced by those who held Angels to be corporeal)

was a misunderstanding that place, *the Sons of God saw the Daughters of Men that they were fair, and they took them to wife, and they bare Children to them, the same became mighty Men, Men of renown.* And it more particularly furthered the mistake, that many ancient Copies of the *Septuagint* (as is evident from *Philo* and *S. Augustin*, and the Kings ancient *Alexandrian Manuscript* at this day) instead of *the Sons* read the *Angels of God*, which the Fathers who generally understood no *Hebrew*, were not able to correct. And I doubt not what gave farther patronage to this error, was the Authority of the *Book of Enosh* (highly valued by many in those days) wherein this Story was related, as appears from the fragments of it still extant.

XXV. I might here also insist upon what some find so much fault with

(d) Adv. Hæres. l. 5. c. 31. p. 491. (e) Apol. c. 47. p. 37. (f) Resp. ad Gr. l. 2. c. 12. fol. 136. l. 4. c. 2. fol. 154. confer Philoc. c. 1. p. 18. & Homil. 7. in Levit. fol. 71. (g) Enarrat. in Psal. CXX. p. 532. (h) Cathemer. Hymn. X. p. 485. (i) Ambros. de Cain & Ab. lib. 2. pag. 131. T. 4. de don. Mort. c. 10. p. 240. (k) Enchirid. c. 102. col. 190. Tom. 3. in Psal. 36. Conc. ii col. 281. T. 8. (l) Quest. XCI.

(a) Apol. l. p. 44.

(b) De Gigant. l. 1. p. 221. (c) Antiq. l. 2. q. p. 8. (d) Apud Andr. Cesar. Comment. in Apoc. Sermon. 12. (e) Legat. pro Christ. p. 17. (f) Stromat. l. 5. p. 550. (g) De Hab. mul. seu de Cult. famin. l. 1. c. 2. p. 150. (h) De Discipl. & hab. Virg. p. 166. (i) De Orig. error. l. 2. c. 14. p. 16. (k) Scar. Hist. lib. 1. pag. 1. (l) De Not & Arc. c. 4. p. 144. T. 4.

with in our *Martyr*, his magnifying the power of Mans will, which is notoriously known to have been the current doctrine of the Fathers through all the first Ages till the rise of the *Pelagian* Controversies, though still they generally own *χάριν ἐξαίρετον*, a mighty assistance of divine Grace to raise up and enable the Soul for divine and spiritual things.

(a) Dialog.  
cum Tryph. p.  
319.

(b) Adv. Hæres.  
l. 3. c. 19. p.  
280.

(a) *Justin* tells his adversary that it's in vain for a Man to think rightly to understand the mind of the ancient Prophets, unless he be assisted *μὲν μεγάλης Χάριτος τῷ ὡς Θεοῦ*, by a mighty grace derived from God. As well may the dry ground (says (b) *Irenæus*) produce fruit without rain to moisten it, as we who at first are like dried sticks, be fruitful unto a good life, without voluntary showres from above, that is, (as he adds)

Τὸ ἐν ἡμῖν ἀντιθέσιον εἰς γνώσιν ἀρικόμενον παράθεον, σκιρτᾷ τὸ καὶ πᾶσι ἄλλοις ἰσχυρὰ. ἢ φάσιν οἱ γυναικῶν, πλὴν ἐκ Χάριτος τοῦ Θεοῦ τὸ εὐαγέλιον περὶ ταῦτα καὶ ἀνίσταται, καὶ εἰς αὐτὸ ἡμετέριον αἶρεται ἡ ψυχή, πᾶν τὸ βεβηθὸν ἀποτίθεται καὶ ἀποδιδύσκει τῷ (ὡς) ἡμεῖς. Clem. Alexand. Stromat. l. 5. p. 588. Οὕτως δὲ ἀνὰ παραφύσεως ἡγεῖται οἷον τὸ ἐκ μὲν ἐκ τῶν πᾶν ἐπὶ τῇ γνώμῃ τῇ ἡμετέρᾳ καὶ τῷ πνεύματι ἀποθεωσάμενον. Χάρις δὲ σωζόμενα, ἐκ ἀνὰ μὲν τοῦ Θεοῦ καὶ ἐκ τῶν ἑαυτῶν. δὲ τὸ καὶ τὸ γνώμῃ καὶ κατὰ τὸν Θεόν, τὸ αἰσίου νόον πρὸς τὸ θεῖον τὸ κατὰ τὸν Θεόν. πρὸς τὸ θεῖον μάλα καὶ τὸ θεῖον καὶ τὸ κατὰ τὸν Θεόν, διδασκαλίας τὸ ὁρθῆς, καὶ εὐπαθείας ἀγνῆς, καὶ τὸ πᾶν πρὸς τὸν Θεόν ὁλοκλήρως. Id. Ibid. p. 547.

(c) Lib. 4. p. 181. vid. etiam ib. p. 227.

*Man save the Spirit of a Man that is in him, so no Man knows the things of God, but the Spirit of God*: it being all to no purpose (as he elsewhere observes) unless God by his grace does φωτίζειν τὸ ἡγεμονικόν,

Hæc erit vis divine gratiæ, potentior utique natura, habens in nobis subjacentem sibi liberam arbitrii potestatem, quod ἀντιθέσιον dicitur. Tertul. de Anim. c. 21. p. 279.

enlighten the understanding. I add no more but that of *Tertullian*, who asserts, that there is a power of divine grace, stronger than nature, which has in subjection the power of our Free Will. So evident it is, that when the Fathers

talk highest of the ἀντιθέσιον, and the powers of nature, they never intended to exclude and banish the grace of God. Some other disputable or disallowed opinions may be probably met with in this good Mans Writings, but which are mostly nice and Philosophical. And indeed having been brought up under so many several Institutions of Philosophy, and coming (as most of the first Fathers did) fresh out of the School of *Plato*, 'tis the less to be wondred at, if the notions which he had there imbibed stuck to him, and he endeavoured, as much as might be, to reconcile the *Platonic* principles with the dictates of Christianity.

His Writings.

Genuine.

*Paranesis ad Græcos.*  
*Elenchus, seu Oratio ad Græcos.*  
*Apologia pro Christianis prima.*  
*Apologia pro Christianis secunda.*  
*Liber de Monarchia Dei, forsan in*  
*fine mutilus.*  
*Dialogus cum Tryphone Judæo.*  
*Epistola ad Diognetum.*

Not extant.

*Liber de Anima.*  
*Liber Psalter dictus.*  
*Contra omnes Hæreses.*  
*Contra Marcionem.*  
*Commentarius in Hexameron (cujus*  
*meminit Anastasius Sinaita.)*  
*De Resurrectione Carnis, teste Dama-*  
*sceno.*

Doubtful.

*Aristotelicorum quorundam Dogma-*  
*tum everfio.*

*Epistola ad Zenam & Serenum.*

Supposititious.

*Quæstiones & Respons. ad Græcos.*  
*Quæstiones Græcicæ, de incorpo-*  
*reo, &c. & ad easdem Christianæ*  
*Responsiones.*

*Quæstionum CXLVI. Responsio ad*  
*Orthodoxos.*

*Vid. an hic liber sit idem ( sed in-*  
*terpolatus ) de quo Photius hoc*  
*titulo.*

*Dubitationum adversus Religionem*  
*summariæ solutiones.*

*Expositio Fidei de S. Trinitate.*

*The End of S. JUSTIN Martyr's Life.*

---

THE

---



1. The first part of the document is a list of names and addresses, which are arranged in a columnar fashion. The names are written in a cursive script, and the addresses are written in a more formal, printed style. The list includes names such as "John Smith", "Mary Jones", and "Robert Brown", along with their respective addresses in various cities and states.

1944 27207

THE LIFE OF  
**S. IRENÆUS**  
 BISHOP of LYONS.



**S. IRENÆUS.**

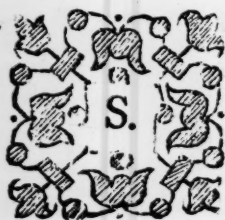
*His Country enquired into. His Philosophical Studies. His institution by Papias. Papias who. His education under S. Polycarp. His coming into France, and being made Presbyter of Lyons. Pothinus who; how and*

and by whom sent into France. The grievous Persecution there under M. Aurelius. The Letters of the Martyrs to the Bishop of Rome. Pope Eleutherius guilty of Montanism. Irenæus sent to Rome. His writing against Florinus and Blastus. The martyrdom of Pothinus Bishop of Lyons, and the cruelty exercised towards him. Irenæus succeeds. His great diligence in his charge. His opposition of Hereticks. The Synods said to have been held under him to that purpose. The Gnostic Heresies spread in France. Their monstrous Villanies. His confutation of them by word and writing. Variety of Sects and Divisions objected by the Heathens against Christianity. This largely answered by Clemens of Alexandria. Pope Victor's reviving the controversy about Easter. The contests between him and the Asiatics. Several Synods to determine this matter. Irenæus his moderate interposal. His Synodical Epistle to Victor. The Persecution under Severus. Its rage about Lyons. Irenæus his Martyrdom, and place of Burial. His Vertues. His industrious and elaborate confutation of the Gnostics. His stile and phrase. Photius his censure of his Works. His error concerning Christ's Age. Miraculous gifts and powers common in his time. His Writings.

I. IRENÆUS may justly challenge to go next the Martyr ὁ ἐργὸς τῶν ἀποστόλων γινόμενος, as (a) S. Basil styles him, one near to the Apostles, which (b) S. Hierom expresses by being a Man of the Apostolic times. His Originals are so obscure that some dispute has been to what part of the World he belonged, whether East or West, though that he was a Greek, there can be no just cause to doubt.

The Ancients having not particularly fixed the place of his Nativity, he is generally supposed to have been born at Smyrna, or thereabouts. In his youth he wanted not an ingenuous education in the Studies of Philosophy and Humane Learning, whereby he was prepared to be afterwards an useful Instrument in the Church. His first institution in the Doctrine of Christianity was laid under some of the most eminent persons that then were in the Christian Church. S. Hierom (c) makes him Scholar to Papias Bishop of Hierapolis, who had himself conversed with the Apostles and their Followers. This Papias (as (d) Irenæus and others inform us) was one of S. John's Disciples; by whom though Eusebius understands not the Apostle, but one surnamed the Elder, which he seems to collect from a passage of (e) Papias himself, yet evident it is, that though Papias in that place affirms, that he diligently picked up what Memoires he could meet with concerning the Apostles from those that had attended and followed them, yet he no where denies that he himself conversed with them. He was (as (f) Eusebius characters him) a Man very learned and eloquent, and knowing in the Scriptures; though as (g) elsewhere he adds, σφόδρα σμικρὸς ὢν τὸν νῦν, of a very weak and undiscerning judgment, especially in the more abstruse and mysterious parts of the Christian Doctrine, which easily betrayed him, and others that followed him into great errors and mistakes. He wrote five Books entitled, Λογίων Κυριακῶν Ἑξήγησις, the explanation of our Lord's Discourses, and, as he in (h) Photius intimates, and the (i) Alexandrian Chronicon expressly affirms, died a Martyr, being put to death at Pergamus in the Persecution under M. Aurelius. He is said to have trained up many Scholars in the

(a) De Spirit. S. c. 29. p. 358. Tom. 2.  
(b) Epist. ad Theodor. p. 196. T. 1.



(c) Loc. citat.

(d) Adv. Hæres. l. 5. c. 33. p. 498. & ap. Euseb. l. 3. c. 39. p. 110.  
(e) Euseb. l. cit.

(f) Ibid. c. 36. p. 106.  
(g) Ibid. c. 39. p. 113.

(h) Steph. Gob. ap. Phot. Cod. CCXXXII. col. 901.  
(i) An. III. Olymp. 235. Ind. I. M. Aurel. 4.



the Christian Institution, and among the rest our *Irenæus*. Which though not improbable, yet we are sure not only from the testimonies of (a) *Eusebius* and (b) *Theodoret*, but what is more, from his (c) own, that he was trained up under the tutorage and instruction of S. *Polycarp* Bishop of *Smyrna*, and S. *John's* Disciple, from whom he received the seeds of the true Apostolic Doctrine, and for whom he had so great a reverence and regard, that he took a most exact and particular notice of whatever was memorable in him even to the minutest circumstances of his conversation, the memory whereof he preserved fresh and lively to his dying day.

(a) *H. Eccl. l. 5. c. 5. p. 170.*  
(b) *Adv. Hæres. dial. 1.*  
(c) *Epist. ad Flor. apud Euseb. ib. c. 20. p. 188. & Hieron. de Script. in Græc.*

II. BY whose hands he was consecrated to the Ministeries of Religion, as also when, and upon what occasion he came into *France* is not known. Probable it is that he accompanied S. *Polycarp* in his journey to *Rome* about the *Paschal* controversy, where by his and *Anicetus* his persuasions he might be prevailed with to go for *France*, (in some parts whereof, and especially about *Marseilles*, great numbers of *Greeks* did reside) then beginning to be over-run with those pernicious Heresies which at that time invaded and disturbed the Church, that so he might be helpful and assisting to *Pothinus* the aged Bishop of *Lyons* in quelling and subduing of them. This *Pothinus* (if we may believe, *Gregory* Bishop of *Tours*, who resided some time in this City with his Uncle *Nicetus* Bishop of it) came out of the *East*, and had been dispatched hither also by S. *Polycarp* to govern and superintend this Church. If it seem strange to any how S. *Polycarp's* care came to extend so far, as to send a Bishop into so remote and distant parts of the World; it seems not improbable to suppose, that *Lyons* being a City famous for Commerce and Traffique, some of its Merchants might trade to *Smyrna*, where being converted by *Polycarp*, they might desire of him to send some grave and able person along with them to plant and propagate the Christian Faith in their own Country, which accordingly fell to *Pothinus* his share. But then that this must needs be done by the Authority, and ratified by the Decree of the Bishop of *Rome*, a learned Man will never be able to convince us, though he offers at three Arguments to make it good: weak I must needs say, and inconcluding, and which rather shew that he designed thereby to reconcile himself to the Court of *Rome* (whose favour at the time of his writing that Tract, he stood in need of, in order to his admission to the Bishoprick of S. *Leiger de Conserans*, to which he was nominated, and wherein he was delayed by that Court, offended with his late Book *De Concordia Sacerdotii & Imperii*) than argue the truth of what he asserts; so unsuitable are they to the learning and judgment of that great Man. But I return to *Irenæus*. He came to *Lyons*, the Metropolis of *Gallia Celtica*, situated upon the confluence of the two famous Rivers the *Roan* and *La Saona*, or the ancient *Arar*, famous among other things for its Temple and Altars, erected to the honour of *Augustus* at the common charge of all *France*, where they held an annual solemnity from all parts of the Country upon the first of *August*: and upon (d) this day it was that most of the Martyrs suffered in the following Persecution. These Festival solemnities were usually celebrated not only with great contentions for Learning and Eloquence, but with Sports and Shows, and especially with the bloody conflicts of *Gladiators*, with barbarous usages, and throwing Malefactors to wild Beasts in the *Amphitheater*; wherein the Martyrs mentioned by *Eusebius* bore a

*Hist. Franc. lib. 1. c. 25.*

*P. de Marc. disert. de Primat. n. 111. p. 227.*

(d) *Euseb. H. Eccl. l. 5. c. 1. p. 162.*

sad and miserable part. *Irenaeus* being arrived at *Lyons*, continued several years in the station of a *Presbyter*, under the care and Government of *Pothinus*, till a heavy storm arose upon them. For in the Reign of *M. Aurelius Antoninus*, *Ann. Chr. CLXXVII.* began a violent Persecution (*a*) against the Christians, which broke out in all places, but more peculiarly raged in *France*, whereof the Churches of *Lyons* and *Vien* in a (*b*) Letter to them of *Asia* and *Phrygia*, give them an account; where they tell them 'twas impossible for them exactly to describe the brutish fierceness and cruelty of their Enemies, and the severity of those torments which the Martyrs suffered; banished from their Houses, and forbid so much as to shew their heads, reproached, beaten, hurried from place to place, plundered, stoned, imprisoned, and there treated with all the expressions of an ungovernable rage and fury, as they particularly relate at large. The occasion (*c*) of writing this account was a controversy lately raised in the *Asian Churches* by *Montanus* and his followers, concerning the Prophetic Spirit, to which they pretended: for the composing whereof these Churches thought good to send their judgment and opinion in the case, adjoining the Epistles which several of the Martyrs (while in Prison) had written to those Churches about that very matter, all which they annexed to their Commentary about the Martyrs sufferings, penned, no doubt, by the hand of *Irenaeus*.

III. NOR did the Martyrs write only to the *Asian Churches*, but to *Eleutherius* Bishop of *Rome* about these controversies. And just occasion there was for it, if (which is most probable) this very *Eleutherius* was infected with the errors of *Montanus*: for (*d*) *Tertullian* tells us, that the Bishop of *Rome* did then own and embrace the Prophecies of *Montanus* and his two Prophetesses, and upon that account had given Letters of Peace to the Churches of *Asia* and *Phrygia*, though by the persuasions of one *Praxeas* he was afterwards prevailed with to revoke them. Where by the way may be observed, that the infallibility of the Pope was then from home, or so fast asleep, that the envious Man could sow Tares in the very Pontifical Chair it self. This Bishop (*e*) *Baronius* will have to be *Anicetus*, but in all likelihood was our *Eleutherius*, who in his after-condemnation of the *Montanists* followed the example of his (*f*) Predecessors, (no doubt *Soter* and *Anicetus*) who had disowned and rejected *Montanus* his Prophecy; nor can it well be otherwise conceived why the Martyrs should so particularly write to him about it. And whereas (*g*) *Baronius* would have Pope *Eleutherius* dead long before *Tertullian* became a *Montanist*, because in his Book against Heresies he styles (*h*) him the Blessed *Eleutherius*, as if it were tantamount with *cujus memoria est in benedictione*, nothing was more common than to give that Title to eminent persons while alive, as *Alexander* of *Jerusalem* calls (*i*) *Clemens Alexandrinus* who carried the Letter, the blessed *Clemens*, in his Epistle to the Church of *Antioch*, and the Clergy of the Church of *Rome* styles (*k*) *S. Cyprian* (then in his retirement) the Blessed Pope *Cyprian*, in their Letter to them of *Carthage*. To this *Eleutherius* then these Martyrs directed their Epistle: For the Martyrs in those times had a mighty honour and reverence paid to them, and their sentence in any weighty case was always entertained with a just esteem and veneration. These Letters they sent to *Rome* by (*l*) *Irenaeus*, whom they persuaded to undertake the journey, and whom they particularly recommended to *Eleutherius* by a very honourable testimony, desiring him to receive him not only as their

(a) *Enf. l. 5.*  
*Præf. p. 153.*

(b) *Apud. En-*  
*feb. ibid p. 154,*  
*155, &c.*

(c) *Enf. ibid.*  
*c. 3. p. 168.*

(d) *Adv. Præx.*  
*c. 1. p. 501.*

(e) *Ad Ann.*  
*173. n. IV.*

(f) *Tertull. ib.*

(g) *Ad. Ann.*  
*201. n. IX.*

(h) *De Præ-*  
*script. Heret.*  
*c. 30. p. 212.*

(i) *Enf. l. 6.*  
*c. 11. p. 113.*

(k) *Ad Cler.*  
*Carthag. Epist.*  
*II. p. 8.*

(l) *Enf. ib.*  
*c. 4.*

their Brother and Companion, but as a zealous professor and defender of that Religion which Christ had ratified with his blood. I know (a) *Monf. Valois* will not allow that *Irenæus* actually went this journey, that the Martyrs indeed had desired him, and he had promised to undertake it, but that the heat of the Persecution coming on, and he being fixed in the Government and Presidency over that Church, could not be spared personally to undergo it. But since *Eusebius* clearly intimates and (b) *S. Hierom* expressly affirms, that the Martyrs sent him upon this errand, 'tis safest to grant his journey thither, though it must be while he was yet Presbyter, for so they particularly say he was in their Epistle to the Bishop of *Rome*. And there probably it was that he took more particular notice of *Florinus* and *Blasius* (c), who being Presbyters of the Church of *Rome*, were about this time fallen into the *Valentinian* Heresie, the first of whom he had formerly known (d) with *S. Polycarp* in *Asia*, and noted him for his soft and delicate manners, and to whom after his return home, as also to *Blasius* he wrote Epistles to convince them of those novel and dangerous sentiments which they had espoused.

IV. AND now the Persecution at *Lyons* was daily carried on with a fiercer violence. Vast numbers had already gone to Heaven through infinite and inexpressible racks and torments; and to crown all, (e) *Pothinus* their reverend and aged Bishop, above ninety years old, was seized in order to his being sent the same way. Age and sickness had rendered him so infirm and weak, that he was hardly able to crawl to his execution. But he had a vigorous and sprightly soul in a decayed and ruinous body, and his great desire to give the highest testimony to his Religion, and that Christ might triumph in his Martyrdom, added new life and spirit to him. Being apprehended by the Officers, he was brought before the Public Tribunal, the Magistrates of the City following after, and the common People giving such loud and joyful acclamations, as if our Lord himself had been leading to execution. The Governour presently asked him, Who the God of the Christians was? Which he knowing to be a captious and sarcastic question, returned no other answer than *Wert thou worthy, thou shouldst know*. Instruction takes hold only of the humble and obedient ear. Truth is usually lost by being exposed to the vicious and scornful: 'tis in vain to hold a Candle either to the Blind that cannot, or to them that shut their Eyes, and will not see: there is a reverence due to the Principles of Religion that obliges us not to cast Pearls before Swine lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend us. Here-

upon without any reverence to his age, or so much as respect to humanity it self, he was rudely dragged away, and unmercifully beaten, they that were near, kicking him with their feet, and striking him with their fists; they that were farther off, throwing at him what they could meet with, making whatsoever came next to hand the instruments of their fury: every Man looking upon it as impious and piacular, not to do something that might testify his petulant scorn and rage against him. For by this means they thought to revenge the quarrel of their Gods. But their savage cruelty thought it too much kindness to dispatch him at once, it is like they intended him a second Tragedy; which if so, Heaven disappointed their designs. For being taken up with scarce so much breath as would entitle him to live, he was thrown

into

(a) Annot. in  
Euseb. p. 91.  
& 92.

(b) De Script.  
in Iren.

(c) Euseb. ibid.  
c. 15. p. 178.

(d) Id. ibid.  
c. 20.

(e) Epist. Eccl.  
Lugd. & Vien.  
ap. Euseb. ubi  
supr. c. 1. p. 159.

Καὶ ἡ ψυχὴ τοῦ ἀσθενὸς λόγους καὶ φωνὰς, ἐπὶ τῶν βασανιστικῶν καὶ τῶν χειρῶν αὐτοῦ ἐπαγόρευεν. Origen. de Mart. p. 169.



into the Prison, where two days after he resigned up his Soul to God.

V. THE Church of *Lyons* being thus deprived of its venerable Guide, none could stand fairer for the Chair then *Irenæus*, a person honoured and admired by all, who succeeded accordingly about the year CLXXIX. in a troublesom and tempestuous time. But he was a wise and skilful Pilot, and steered the Ship with a prudent Conduct. And need enough there was both of his courage and his conduct; for the Church at this time was not only assaulted by Enemies from without, but undermined and betrayed by Heresies within. The attempts of the one he endured with meekness and patience, while he endeavoured to prevent the infection and poison of the other by a diligent and vigilant circumspection, discovering their persons, laying open their designs, confuting and condemning their errors, so that *their folly was made manifest unto all*. The Author of the ancient (a) *Synodicon* published by

(a) Edit. Ar.  
et. 1601. 4.  
pag. 2.

*Pappas*, tells us of a Provincial Synod held at *Lyons* by *Irenæus*; where with the assistance and suffrage of twelve other Bishops he condemned the Heresies of *Valentinus*, *Marcion*, *Basilides*, and the rest of that Anti-christian crew. Whence he derived this intelligence, I know not, it not being mentioned by any other of the Ancients. However the thing it self is not improbable, *Irenæus* his zeal against that sort of Men engaging him to oppose them both by word and writing, and especially when 'tis remembred what he himself informs us of, that they had invaded his own Province, and were come home to his very door. For having given us an account of *Marcus*, one of those *Gnostic* Heresiarchs, and his followers, their beastly and licentious practices, and by what ludicrous and senseless Arts, what Magic and hellish Rites they were wont to ensnare and initiate their seduced Profelytes, he tells us (b), they were come into the Countries round him, all along the *Roan*, where they generally prevailed (which seems to have been observed as a Maxim and first principle by all Authors of Sects) upon the weaker Sex, corrupting their minds, and debauching their bodies, whose cauterized consciences being afterwards awakened, some of them made public confession of their crimes, others though deserting their Party, were ashamed to return to the Church, while others made a desperate and total Apostasie from any pretences to the Faith. With some of these Ring-leaders (c) *Irenæus* had personally encountred, and read the Books of others, which gave him occasion (what the desires of many had importuned him to undertake) to set upon that elaborate Work *against Heresies*, wherein he has fully displayed their wild and phantastic principles, their brutish and abominable practices, and with such infinite pains endeavoured to refute them: though indeed so prodigiously extravagant, so utterly irreconcilable were they to any principles of sober reason, that as he himself (d) observes, it was Victory enough over them, only to discover and detect them. This Work he composed in the time of *Eleutherius* Bishop of *Rome*, as is evident from his Catalogue (e) of the Bishops of that See, ending in *Eleutherius*, the twelfth successive Bishop, who did then possess the place.

(b) Adv. Ha-  
res. l. 1. c. 9. p.  
72. vid. Hi-  
ron Epist. ad  
Theodor. p.  
196.

(c) Pref. ad  
lib. 1. p. 2.

(d) Lib. 1. c.  
ult. p. 139.

(e) Lib. 3. c. 3.  
p. 223. & ap-  
Eus. l. 5. c. 6.  
p. 171.

VI. AND indeed it was but time for *Irenæus* and the rest of the wise and holy Bishops of those days to bestir themselves, *grievous Wolves having entered in, and made havock of the flock*. The field of the Church was miserably over-run with tares, which did not only endanger the

choaking

choaking of Religion within the Church, but obstruct the planting and propagating the Faith among them that were without. Nothing being more commonly objected against the truth and divinity of the Christian Religion, than that they were rent and torn into so many Schisms and Heresies. (a) S. Clemens of Alexandria particularly encounters this exception, some of whose excellent reasonings are to this effect. (a) Stromat.  
l. 7. p. 753.

The first thing (says he) they charge upon us, and pretend why they cannot embrace the Faith, is the diversity of Sects that are among us, truth being delayed and neglected, while some assert one thing and some another. To which he answers, that there were various Sects and Parties both among the *Jews*, and the Philosophers of the *Gentiles*, and yet no Man thought this a sufficient reason why they should cease to study Philosophy; or adhere to the *Jewish* Rites and Discipline: that our Lord had foretold, that Errors would spring up with Truth, like Tares growing up with the Wheat, and that therefore 'twas no wonder if it accordingly came to pass, and that we ought not to be wanting to our duty, because others cast off theirs, but rather stick closer to them who continue constant in the profession of the Truth: that a mind diseased and disordered with Error and Idolatry, ought no more to be discouraged from complying with an Institution that will cure it, by reason of some differences and divisions that are in it, than a sick Man would refuse to take any Medicines, because of the different opinions that are among Physicians, and that they do not all use the same Prescriptions: that the Apostle hath told us, that *there must be heresies, that they that are approved may be made manifest*, that they heartily entertain the Christian Doctrine, improve and persevere in Faith and a holy Life: that if Truth be difficult to be discerned, yet the finding it out will abundantly recompence the trouble and the labour: that a wise Man would not refuse to eat of Fruit, because he must take a little pains to discover what is ripe and real, from that which is only painted and counterfeit: Shall the Traveller resolve not to go his journey because there are a great many ways that cross and thwart the common Road, and not rather enquire which is the plain and Kings High-way? or the Husbandman refuse to till his Ground, because Weeds grow up together with the Plants? We ought rather to make these differences an argument and incentive the more accurately to examine Truth from Falshood, and Realities from Pretences, that escaping the snares that are plausibly laid, we may attain *εἰς ἐπιγνώσιν τῆς ὀντως ἕως ἀληθείας*, to the knowledge of that which is really truth indeed, and which is not hard to find, of them that sincerely seek it. But to return back to *Ireneus*.

VII. HAVING passed over the times of the Emperor *Commodus* (the only honour of whose Reign was, that he created no great disturbance to the Christians, being otherwise a most debauched and dissolute Prince, in whom the Vices of all his Predecessors seemed to meet as in one Common Sewer) *Eleutherius* died, and *Victor* succeeded in the See of *Rome*. A Man furious and intemperate, impatient of contradiction, and who let loose the Reins to an imperious and ungovernable Passion. He revived the Controversie about the celebration of *Easter*, and endeavoured imperiously to impose the *Roman* Custom, of keeping it on the next Lords day after the *Jewish* Pasover, upon the Churches of the *Lesser Asia*, and those who observed the contrary usage; and because they would not yield, rashly thundred out an Excommunication against them,

(a) Lib. 5. c. 24. p. 192.

(b) Euseb. ibid. c. 23. p. 190.

(c) Ibid. c. 24. p. 192.

(d) Ibid. c. 23. p. 191.

(e) Ubi supr. p. 7.

(f) Ibid. c. 24. p. 192.

them, not only endeavouring, but as (a) *Eusebius* explains it in the following words, actually proscribing and pronouncing them cut off from the Communion of the Church. The *Asiatics* little regarding the fierce threatnings from *Rome*, under the conduct of *Polycrates* Bishop of *Ephesus* stood their ground, justifying their observing it upon the fourteenth day after the appearance of the Moon, let it fall upon what day of the Week it would, after the rule of the Jewish Passover, and this by constant Tradition, and uninterrupted usage derived from *S. John* and *S. Philip* the Apostles, *S. Polycarp* and several others to that very day. All which he told Pope *Victor*, but prevailed nothing (as what will satisfy a wilful and passionate mind?) to prevent his rending the Church in sunder. For the Composure of this unhappy Schism (b) Synods were called in several places, as besides one at *Rome*, one in *Palestine* under *Theophilus* Bishop of *Cæsarea Palestina*, and *Narcissus* Bishop of *Jerusalem*, another in *Pontus* under *Palmas*, and many more in other places, who were willing to lend their hands toward the quenching of the common Flame, (c) who all wrote to *Victor*, sharply reproving him, and advising him rather to mind what concerned the Peace of the Church, and the love and unity of Christians among one another. And among the rest our *Irenæus* (who as *Eusebius* observes, truly answered his name in his peaceable and peace-making temper) convened a (d) Synod of the Churches of *France* under his jurisdiction, where with thirteen Bishops besides himself (says the fore-mentioned (e) *Synodicon*) he considered and determined of this matter. In whose name he wrote a Synodical Epistle to Pope (f) *Victor*, wherein he told him that they agreed with him in the main of the Controversie, but withall duly and gravely advised him to take heed how he excommunicated whole Churches for observing the ancient Customs derived down to them from their Ancestors: that there was as little agreement in the manner of the Preparatory Fast before *Easter*, as in the day it self, some thinking that they were to fast but one day, (probably he means of the great or solemn week) others two, others more, and some measuring the time by a continued Fast of forty hours (whether in memory of *Christ's* lying so long in the Grave, or in imitation of his forty days Fast in the Wilderness, I know not) and that this variety was of long standing, and had crept into several places, while the Governors of the Church took less care about these different Customs, who yet maintained a sincere and mutual love and peace towards one another, a thing practised by all his own pious Predecessors, putting him in mind of *Anicetus* and *Polycarp*, who though they could not so far convince each other as to lay aside their different usages, did yet mutually embrace, orderly receive the Communion together, and peaceably part from one another. And Letters to the same effect he wrote to several other Bishops for allaying the difference thus unhappily started in the Church.

VIII. THE calm and quiet days which the Church had for some years of late enjoyed, now expired, and the wind changed into a more stormy quarter, *Severus* the Emperour hitherto favourable, began a bitter and bloody Persecution against the Christians, prosecuted with great severity in all parts of the Empire. Himself had heretofore governed (g) this very Province of *Lyons*, and probably had taken peculiar notice of *Irenæus*, and the flourishing state of the Church in that City, and might therefore give more particular Orders for the proceeding against

(g) *Æl. Spar-tian. in vit. Sever. c. 3. p. 335.*



against them in this place. The Persecution, that in other parts picked out some few to make them exemplary here served all alike, and went through with the Work. For so (a) *Gregory of Tours*, and the ancient (b) *Martyrologies* inform us, that *Irenæus* having been prepared by several torments, was at length put to death (beheaded say the *Greeks*, (c) likely enough) and together with him almost all the Christians of that vast populous City, whose numbers could not be reckoned up, so that the Streets of the City flowed with the blood of Christians. His Body was taken up by *Zacharias* his Presbyter, and buried in a Vault, laid between *Epipodias* and *Alexander*, who had suffered in the Persecution under *Antoninus*. It is not easie to assign the certain date of his Martyrdom, which may with almost equal probability be referred to a double period, either to the time of that bloody Edict which *Severus* published against the Christians about the tenth year of his reign, *Ann. Chr. CCII.* or to his expedition into *Britain*, *Ann. Chr. CCVIII.* when he took *Lyons* in his way, and might see execution done with his own eyes. And indeed the vast numbers that are there said to have suffered, agree well enough with the temper of that fierce and cruel Prince, who had conceived before a particular displeasure against the Citizens of *Lyons*, and a worse against the Christians.

(a) *Hist. Franc. l. i. c. 29.*

(b) *Martyr. Rom. ad Jun. XXVIII. A. don. Martyr. IV. Kalend. Jul.*

(c) *Men. Græc. T. 2. p. 68. Adv. s.*

IX. HE was a true lover of God, and of the Souls of Men, for the promoting whose happiness he thought no dangers or difficulties to be great; he scrupled not to leave his own Country, to take so troublesome and tedious a journey, and in stead of the smooth and polite manners of the *Eastern Nations* to fix his dwelling among a People of a wild and savage temper, and whom he must convert to civility, before he gained them to Religion. Nor was it the least part of his trouble (as himself plainly intimates) that he was forced to learn the Language of the Country, a rugged and (as he calls it) barbarous Dialect before he could do any good upon them. All which and a great deal more, he cheerfully underwent, that he might be serviceable to the great interests of Men. And because he knew that nothing usually more hinders the progress of Piety, than to have mens minds vitiated and depraved with false and corrupt Notions and Principles, and that nothing could more expose the Christian Religion to the scorn and contempt of wise and discerning Men, than the wild Schemes of those absurd and ridiculous opinions that were then set on foot, therefore he set himself with all imaginable industry to oppose them, reading over all their Writings, considering and unraveling all their principles with incomparable patience as well as diligence, whence he is deservedly stiled by (f) *Tertullian*, *Omnium doctrinarum curiosissimus explorator*, the most curious searcher into all kinds of Doctrines. In the successful managery whereof he was greatly advantaged by the natural acumen and subtlety of his parts, and those Studies of Philosophy and Human Literature, of which he had made himself Master in his younger days, sufficient foot-steps whereof appear in the Writings which he left behind him. For besides his Epistles, he wrote many Volumes, (though he \* that tells us that he composed an Ecclesiastical History, which *Eusebius* made use of reckons up one more than ever he wrote, and doubtless mistook it for his Work *Adversus Hæreses*) which are all lost, except his five Books against *Hæreses*, intituled anciently Περὶ ἐρέσεων καὶ ἀναπορίων τῶν ἑσθλῶν γινώσκων, *The confutation and subversion of Knowledge falsely so called, i. e. of Gnosti-*

(f) *Adv. Val. l. i. c. 5. p. 252.*

\* *Volaterr. Comment. Urban. l. 16. col. 550.*

cism, those abstruse and mystical Hereticks pretending that all sublime and excellent knowledge dwelt with them. What his proper stile and phrase was in these Books is not easily guessed, the far greatest part of the Original *Greek* being wanting (the conjectures of those who will have them originally penned in *Latine* is not worth the mentioning) probably it was simple and unaffected, vulgar and ordinary, embased, it is like, and he seems to confess as much, with the natural Language of the country where he lived, nor had he studied the Arts of Rhetoric, the ornaments of Speech, or had any skill in the elaborate methods and artifices of persuasion, as he modestly \* apologizes for himself. However his Discourses are grave and well digested, and (as far as the Argument he manages would admit) clear and perspicuous, in all which he betrays a mighty zeal, and a spirit prepared for Martyrdom. For the Martyrs (as † *Erasmus* truly notes) have a certain serious, strenuous, and masculine way of writing beyond other Men.

X. AS for his Works themselves \* *Photius* thus censures them, that in some of them the accuracy of truth in Ecclesiastic Doctrines is sophisticated νόθοις λογισμοῖς, with false and spurious reasonings, which ought to be taken notice of. In the Books yet extant there are some assertions, that will not bear a strict rigorous examination, the principal whereof are such as we have already remarked in the life of *Justin Martyr*, the rest are of an inferiour and more inconsiderable notice. As for his affirming that our Lord was near † *fifty years* of age at the time of his public Ministry, it was an error into which he was betrayed partly from a false supposition, that our Lord must be of a more mature and elderly Age, that so he might deliver his doctrine with the greater authority; partly from a mistaken report (which he had somewhere picked up, and it may be from his Master *Papias*) that *S. John* and the rest of the Apostles had so affirmed and taught it; and partly out of opposition to his adversaries, who maintained that our Saviour staid no longer upon earth than till the thirty first year of his age; against whom the eagerness of disputation tempted him to make good his assertion from any plausible pretence, and to take the hint (though his *impetus*, and the desire of prosecuting his Argument would not give his thoughts leave to cool, and take the place into sober consideration) from that question of the *Jews* to Christ, *thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham?* whence *in transitu* he took it for granted that the *Jews* had some ground for what they said, and that he must be near that age.

XI. HIS care to have his Writings derived pure and uncorrupted to posterity was great and admirable, adding to his Book Περὶ ὀγδοῦς, this solemn and religious obtestation; \* *I adjure thee, whoever thou art that shalt transcribe this Book, by our Lord Jesus Christ, and by his glorious coming, wherein he shall judge the quick and the dead, that thou compare what thou transcribest, and diligently correct it by the Copy from whence thou transcribest it, and that thou likewise transcribe this adjuration, and annex it to thy Copy.* And well had it been with the ancient Writers of the Church, had their Books been treated with this care and reverence: more of them had been conveyed down to us, at least those few that are, had arrived more sound and unpolluted. I note no more (and it is what *Eusebius* long since thought worth taking notice of) than that in his time miraculous gifts and powers were very common in the Church. For so he † tells us, that some expelled and cast out Devils,

the

Loc. citat.

\* Prefat. ut  
supr.

† Prefat. Iren.

\* Cod CXX.  
col. 301.

† Adv. Heres.  
l. 2. c. 39. p.  
92. & 40.  
ibid.

\* Ap. Euseb. H.  
Ecc. l. 5. c. 20.  
p. 187.

† Adv. Heres.  
l. 2. c. 57. p.  
218. & ap.  
Euseb. l. 5. c. 7.  
p. 171.

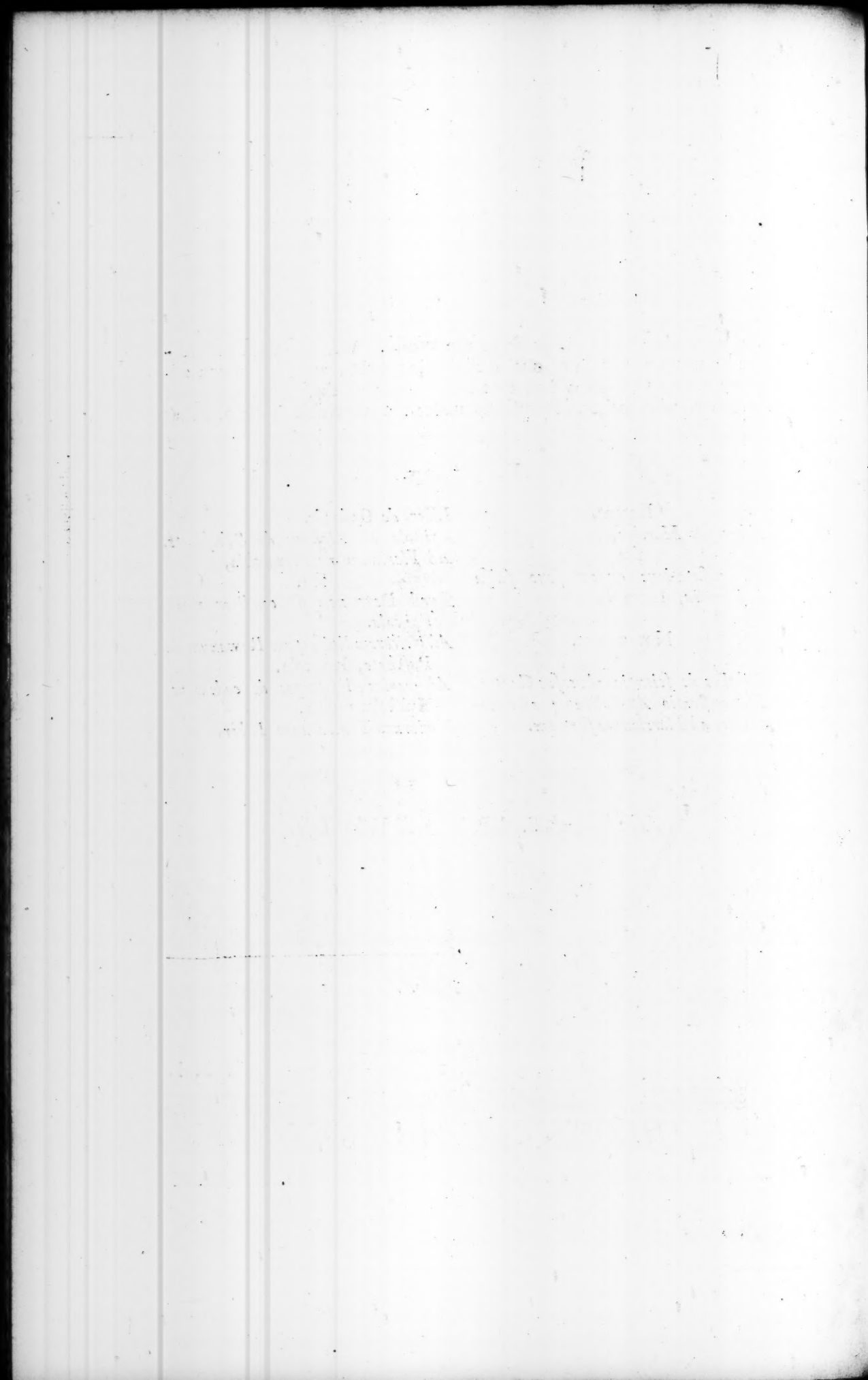
the persons often embracing Christianity upon it; others had Visions and Revelations, and foretold things to come; some spake all manner of Languages, and as occasion was, discovered mens thoughts and secret purposes, and expounded the mysteries and deep things of God; others miraculously healed the sick, and by laying their hands upon them restored their health, and many who raised the dead, the persons so raised living among them many Years after. The Gifts (as he speaks) which God in the name of our crucified Lord then bestowed upon the Church being innumerable, all which they sincerely and freely improved to the great advantage and benefit of the World. Whence with just reason he urges the truth of our Religion in general, and how much advantage true Christians had to triumph over all those Impostors and Seducers, who sheltered themselves under the venerable Title of being Christians.

His Writings.

Extant.	<i>Liber de Ogdoad.</i>
<i>Adversus Hæreses,</i>	<i>Epistola ad Blastum de Schismate.</i>
seu	<i>Ad Florinum de Monarchia,</i>
<i>De refutatione &amp; everfione falsa</i>	seu,
<i>scientia, Libri V.</i>	<i>Quod Deus non fit conditor mali,</i>
	<i>Epistola.</i>
Not extant.	<i>Ad Victorem Episcopum Romanum de</i>
	<i>Paschate, Epistola.</i>
<i>Libellus de scientia adversus Gentes:</i>	<i>Ad varios Episcopos de eadem re,</i>
<i>Demonstratio Apostolica prædicationis,</i>	<i>Epistolæ plures.</i>
<i>ad Marcianum fratrem.</i>	<i>Variorum Tractatum Liber.</i>

The End of S. IRENÆUS's Life.





---


THE LIFE OF  
**S. THEOPHILUS**  
BISHOP of *ANTIOCH.*



**S. THEOPHILUS ANTIOCHENUS.**

*The great obscurity of his Originals. His learned and ingenuous Education, and natural parts. An account of his Conversion to Christianity, and the reasons inducing him thereunto, collected out of his own Writings. His scrupling*

*scrupling the Doctrine of the Resurrection. The great difficulty of entertaining that Principle: Synesius his case. Theophilus his conquering this objection. His great satisfaction in the Christian Religion. His election to the Bishopric of Antioch. His desire to convert Autolycus: Autolycus who. His mighty prejudice against Christianity. Theophilus his undertaking him, and his free and impartial debating the case with him. His excellent manage of the controversy. His vigorous opposing the Heresies of those times. His Books against Marcion and Hermogenes. His death, and the time of it. S. Hierom's Character of his Works. His Writings.*

I. HOUGH the Ancients furnish us with very few notices concerning this venerable Bishop, yet perhaps it may not be unacceptable to the Reader to pick up that little which may be found. The mistake is not worth confuting and scarce deserves mentioning, that makes him the same with that *Theophilus* of *Antioch*, to whom *S. Luke* dedicates his Evangelical Writings, so great the distance of time (if there were nothing more) between them. Whether he was born at *Antioch* is uncertain: but where-ever he was born, his Parents were *Gentiles*, by whom he was brought up in the common Rites of that Religion that then governed the World. They gave him all the accomplishments of a learned and liberal Education, and vast improvements he made in the progress of his Studies, so that he was thoroughly versed in Writings of all the great Masters of Learning and Philosophy in the Heathen World: which being set off with a quick and a pleasant wit (as appears from his Disputes against the *Gentiles*) rendred him a Man of no inconsiderable note and account among them.

II. WHEN or by what means converted to Christianity, is impossible particularly to determine: thus much only may be gathered from the Discourses which he left behind him. Being a man of an inquisitive temper, and doubtless of a very honest mind, he gave up himself to a more free and impartial search into the nature and state of things. He found that the account of things which that Religion gave, wherein he was then engaged, was altogether unsatisfactory, that the Stories of their gods were absurd and frivolous, and some of them prophane and impious; that their Rites of Worship were trifling and ridiculous; he considered the several parts of the Creation, and that excellent providence that governed the World, wherein he easily discerned the plain notices of a wise and omnipotent Being, and that God had purposely disposed things thus, that his *Grandeur* and Majesty might appear to all. Accordingly he directs his Friend to this method of conviction, as that which doubtless he had found most successful and satisfactory to himself. He bids \*him survey and consider the Works of God, the vicissitude and alteration of times according to their proper seasons, the revolutions of the heavenly Bodies, the wisely established course of the Elements, the beautiful order and disposition of Nights and Days, and Months and Years, the pleasant and admirable variety of Seeds, Plants, and Fruits, the manifold generations of Beasts, Birds, Creeping things, Fishes, and the Inhabitants of the Watery Regions; the prudent instinct

by

\* *Ad Autolyc.*  
l. i. p. 72.



by which all these Creatures are excited to preserve their kind, and nourish their young, and that not for their own advantage, but for the necessity and pleasure of mankind, God by a wise and secret Providence having so ordained, that all things should be in subjection unto Man. And indeed so strangely was he ravished with the consideration of this Argument, that he professes \*, that no man is able duly to describe the singular Order and Oeconomy of the Creation, no though he had a thousand mouths, and as many tongues, and were to live in the World a thousand years, *ἀλλὰ τὸ ὑπεράλλον μέγεθος, καὶ τὸ πλεον τῆ σοφίας τῆ Θεῶς*, so incomprehensibly great and unfathomable is that Divine Wisdom that shines in the Works of the Creation. Thus prepared he seems to have betaken himself ( and to this also he advises *Autolycus* † ) to the consideration of other Volumes, the Books that contained the Religion of the Christians, especially the writings of the Prophets, and to have weighed the importance of their Revelations, the variety of the persons, the meanness and obscurity of their education, their exact harmony and agreement, the certainty of their predictions, and how accurately the prophecy and the event met together ; so that ( as he adds \* ) whoever would but seriously apply himself to the study of them, had a way ready open to come to the exact knowledge of the truth.

\* *Ibid.* l. 2. p. 91.

† *Ibid.* p. 110, 111.

\* *Ibid.* p. 112.

III. ONE thing there was, which he himself † seems to intimate, did more especially obstruct his full compliance with the Christian Doctrine, the belief of the Resurrection. He had been brought up in the Schools of Philosophy, where he had been taught that from a privation of life there can be no return to the possession of it: it is like he could not conceive how mens scattered dust after so many Ages could be recollected, and built up again into the same bodies. Indeed there is scarce any Principle of the Christian Faith, that generally met with more opposition from the wise and the learned, and which was more difficultly admitted into their Creed. When *S. Paul* preached to the Philosophers at *Athens*, while he told them of a judgment to come, they made no scruple to give it entertainment, it being a principle evident by natural light, till he discoursed of a future Resurrection : and this they rejected with contempt and scorn, *and when they heard of the Resurrection of the dead, some mocked ; and the most grave and sober took time to consider of it ; others said, we will hear thee again of this matter.* And *Synesius* himself that great Philosopher, after his being baptized into the Christian Religion, when courted by *Theophilus* of *Alexandria*, to take upon him the Bishopric of *Ptolemais*, would not yield \* till he had publicly entered his dissent to the doctrine of the Resurrection, at least as to the common explication of the Article : he looked upon it as *ἱερὸν τι καὶ ἀπορρητον*, as containing a kind of sacred and ineffable mystery in it, but could not comply with the vulgar and received opinions ; being willing probably to admit it, if he might explain it according to the principles of Philosophy, and after the *Platonic* mode. Though why the credibility of this Article should stick with any, that own a Being of Infinite Power, I see not : it being equally easie to Omnipotence ( as † *Athenagoras* and others discourse upon this Argument ) to restore our scattered parts, and combine them again into the same Mass, as it was at first to create them out of nothing. But to return to our *Theophilus*. By a frequent reflection \* upon those many shadows of a Resurrection which God had impressed upon the course of Nature, and the standing

† *Ibid.* l. p. 78.

*Acts* 17. 32.

\* *Synes. Epist. CV. p. 249. vid. Enag. H. Eccl. l. 1. c. 15. p. 273.*

† *De Resur. mort. p. 43.*

\* *Loc. sup. cit.*

standing *Phænomena* of Divine Providence, he conquered this objection, especially after he had conversed with, and embraced the holy Volumes, wherein these things were so positively declared and published. And thus he became a Christian, being baffled and disappointed in all other refuges, he took sanctuary in the Church, which (as himself expresses it \*) God has set in the World, like an Island in the midst of the Sea, into whose safe and convenient Harbours the lovers of truth might fly, and all those who desired to be saved, and to escape the judgment and the wrath to come. And glad he was that he † was got thither, rejoicing that he bore the name of a Christian, το Θεοφιλὲς ὄνομα, that name that was so dear to God, how much sœver otherwise despised and scorned by an ignorant and evil Age.

IV. ABOUT the year \* CLXIX. († *Eutychius* refers it to the sixteenth year of *Antoninus* his Reign) or rather the year before, his Predecessor *Eros* being dead, he was made Bishop of *Antioch*, accounted by some the sixth, by others the seventh Bishop of that See. And neither of them mistaken, both being true according to different computations, some reckoning *S. Peter* the first, while others beholding him as an Apostle, and as acting in a larger and more Oecumenical Sphere than a private Bishop, begin the account from *Euodius* as the first Bishop of it. *S. Theophilus* thus fixed in his charge, set himself to promote the true interest and happiness of Men, and as goodness always delights to communicate and diffuse it self, he studied to bring over others to that Faith, which he had entertained himself. Among the rest he attempted a person of note, his great Friend *Autolycus*. Who this *Autolycus* was we have no account, more than what is given us by *Theophilus* himself †. He was a person learned and eloquent, curious in all Arts and Sciences, the acquit whereof he pursued with so indefatigable a diligence, that he would bury himself among Books, and steal hours for study from his necessary rest, spending whole nights in Libraries, and in conversing with the Monuments of the Dead. But withal a *Gentile* \*, infinitely zealous for his Religion, and unreasonably prejudiced against Christianity, which he cried out of as the highest folly and madness, and loaded with all the common charges and calumnies which either the wit or malice of those times had invented to make it odious, and for the defence and vindication whereof he had bitterly quarrelled with *Theophilus*. This notwithstanding, he is not affrighted from undertaking him, but treats him with all the freedom and ingenuity that became a Friend and a Philosopher, tells † him that the cause was in himself, why he did not discern and embrace the truth, that his wickedness and impieties had depraved his mind, and darkened his understanding, and that men were not to blame the Sun for want of light, when themselves were blind and wanted eyes to see it; that the rust and soil must be wiped off from the Glass before 'twould make a true and clear representation of the object; and that God would not discover himself, but to purged and prepared minds, and such who by innocency and a divine life were become fit and disposed to receive and entertain him. Then he explains to him the nature of God, and gives him an account of the Origin of the World according to the Christian Doctrine, disproves and derides the ridiculous deities of the Heathens, and particularly answers those black imputations usually laid upon the Christians; and because *Autolycus* had mainly urged the lateness and novelty of the Christian Faith, he shews

at

\* *Lib. 2. p. 93.*  
94.

† *Vid. l. 1. p.*  
69.

\* *Eccl. Chron.*  
*ed. anno.*  
† *Annal. p. 359.*

† *Theoph. l. 3.*  
*p. 119.*

\* *Ibid. l. 2. p.*  
80.

† *Ibid. l. 1. p. 70.*

shews at large how much superiour it was in many parts of it in point of Seniority, and that by many Ages, to any thing which the Heathen Religion could pretend to : pressing him at every turn to comply with so excellent a Religion, and assuring him the \* People whom he invited him to, were so far from being such as he represented them, that they lived under the Conduct and Modesty of Sobriety, Temperance and Chastity, banished Injustice, and rooted up all Vice and Wickedness, loved Righteousness, lived under Law and Rule, exercised a Divine Religion, acknowledged God, served the Truth, were under the preservation of Grace and Peace, directed by a Sacred Word, taught by Wisdom, rewarded by a life Immortal, and governed by God himself. What the issue of his Discourse was, we cannot tell, but may probably hope they had a desired success, especially since we find † *Autolytus* after the first conference a little more favourable to the cause, abating of his conceived displeasure against *Theophilus*, and desiring of him a further account of his Religion. And certainly if Wisdom and Eloquence, if strength of Reason, and a prudent managing the Controversie were able to do it, he could not well fail of reclaiming the Man from his Error and Idolatry.

\* Lib. 3. p. 127.

† Lib. 2. p. 80.

V. NOR was he more solicitous to gain others to the Faith, than he was to keep those who already had embraced it from being infected and depraved with Error. For which cause he continually stood upon his guard, faithfully gave warning of the approach of Heresie, and vigorously set himself against it. For notwithstanding the care and vigilance of the good and pious Men of those days (as \* *Eusebius* observes) envious Men crept in, and sowed Tares among the sincere Apostolic Doctrine : so that the Pastors of the Church were forced to rise up in every place, and to set themselves to drive away these wild Beasts from Christ's Sheep-fold, partly by exhorting and warning the Brethren, partly by entering the Lists with Hereticks themselves, some personally disputing with, and confuting them, others accurately convincing and refuting their Opinions by the books which they wrote against them. Among whom he tells us was our *Theophilus*, who conflicted with these Hereticks, and particularly wrote against *Marcion*, who asserted two Deities, and that the Soul only, as being the divine and better part, and not the Body, was capable of the happiness of the other World, and this too granted to none but his Followers, with many such impious and fond Opinions. Another Book he wrote against *Hermogenes*, one better skilled in Painting than drawing Schemes of new Divinity, he forsook the Church, and fled to the *Stoics*, and being tinctured with their Principles maintained matter to be eternal, out of which God created all things, and that all evils proceeded out of Matter, asserting moreover (as *Clemens* of *Alexandria* † informs us) that our Lord's Body was lodged in the Sun, ridiculously interpreting that place, *in them hath he set a Tabernacle for the Sun*. Nor did our *Theophilus* neglect the weak and younger part of the Charge, he had not only Physic for the sick, and strong meat for them of full age, but milk for Babes, and such as were yet unskilful in the word of Righteousness, composing many Catechetical Discourses, that contained the first rudiments of the Faith.

\* H. Eccl. l. 4. c. 24. p. 146.

† In excerpt, Grec. Theod. ap. Cl. Alex. p. 808. D.

VI. HE sate thirteen years \* in his Bishoprick, (XXI. says the Patriarch of *Alexandria*, †) and died about the second or third year of the Emperor *Commodus*, for that he out-lived *M. Antoninus*, is evident from his

\* Nicoph. C. P. Chronograph. ap. Scalig. p. 311. † Eutych. Anecd. p. 399.



\* *Ad Autol.* l. 3.  
p. 138.

† *Hieron. de*  
*Script. in*  
*Theoph.*

his mentioning \* his death and the time of his reign in his Discourses with *Autolycus*, after which he composed those Discourses, but what kind of death it was, whether natural or violent, is to me unknown. From the calmness and tranquillity of *Commodus* his Reign, as to any Persecution against the Christians, we may probably guess it to have been a peaceable and quiet death. Books he wrote many, whereof † *St. Hieron* gives this Character, that they were elegant Tracts, and greatly conducive to the edification of the Church. And further adds, that he had met with Commentaries upon the Gospel and the Proverbs of *Solomon*, bearing his name, but which seemed not to answer his other Writings in the elegancy and politeness of the stile.

#### His Writings

Extant.		<i>Libri Aliquot Catechetici.</i>
<i>Ad Autolycum Libri</i>	III.	Doubtful.
Not Extant.		<i>Commentarii in Evangelium.</i>
<i>Contra Haresin Hermogenis.</i>		<i>Commentarii in Proverbia</i>
<i>Adversus Marcionem.</i>		<i>Solomonis.</i>

The End of St. THEOPHILUS's Life.

THE

THE LIFE OF  
**S. MELITO,**  
 BISHOP of SARDIS.

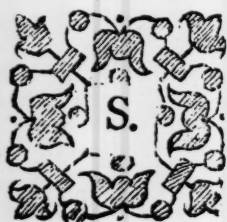


**S. MELITO.**

*His Countrey and Birth-place. His excellent Parts and Learning. His being made Bishop of Sardis. His celibacy. His Prophetic gifts. Persecution under Marcus Aurelius. Melito his Apology for the Christians*

*stians. A fragment of it cited out of Eusebius. The great advantages of Christianity to the Empire. his endeavour to compose the Paschal Controversie. His Book concerning that Subject. His journey to Jerusalem to search what Books of the Old Testament were received by that Church. The Copy of his Letter to his Brother Onesimus concerning the Canon of the Old Testament. What Books omitted by the ancient Church. Solomon's Proverbs stiled by the Ancients the Book of Wisdom. His death and burial. The great variety of his works. Unjustly suspected of dangerous notions. An account given of the titles of two of his Books most liable to suspicion. His Writings enumerated.*

I.



MELITO was born in *Asia*, and probably at *Sardis*, the Metropolis of *Lydia*, a great and ancient City, the Seat of the *Lydian* Kings; it was one of the seven Churches to which St. John wrote Epistles, and wherein he takes notice of some that durst own and stand up for God and Religion in that great degeneracy that was come upon it. He was a Man of admirable parts, enriched with the furniture of all useful Learning, acute and eloquent, but especially conversant in the paths of Divine Knowledge, having made deep enquiries into all the more uncommon parts and speculations of the Christian Doctrine. He was for his singular eminency and usefulness chosen Bishop of *Sardis*, though we cannot exactly define the time, which were I to conjecture, I should guess it about the latter end of *Antoninus Pius* his Reign, or the beginning of his Successors. He filled up all the parts of a very excellent Governour and Guide of Souls, whose good he was careful to advance both by Word and Writing. Which that he might attend with less solicitude and distraction, he not only kept himself within the compass of a single life, but was more than ordinary exemplary for his Chastity and Sobriety, his self-denial and contempt of the World; upon which account he is by *Polycrates* Bishop of *Ephesus* \* stiled an *Eunuch*, that is, in our Saviour's explication, one of those, *who make themselves Eunuchs for the Kingdom of Heavens sake*; who for the service of Religion, and the hopes of a better life, are content to deny themselves the comforts of a married state, and to renounce even the lawful pleasures of this World. And God who delights to multiply his Grace upon pious and holy Souls, crowned his other vertues with the gift of Prophecy, for so † *Tertullian* tells us, that he was accounted by the Orthodox Christians as a Prophet, and *Polycrates* says \* of him, that he did ἐν ἀγνῷ πνεύματι πάντα ποιεῖν, was in all things governed and directed by the *afflatus* and suggestion of the Holy Ghost. Accordingly in the Catalogue † of his Writings we find one περὶ ποδῆς, καὶ περὶ τῶν, of the right way of living, and concerning Prophets, and another concerning Prophecy.

II. It was about the year CLXX. and the tenth \* of *M. Antoninus*, (his Brother *L. Verus*, having died the year before of an Apoplexy, as he fate in his Chariot) when the Persecution grew high against the Christians, greedy and malicious Men taking occasion from the Imperial Edicts lately published, by all the methods of cruelty and rapine, to oppress and spoil innocent Christians. Whereupon as others, so especially † St. *Melito* presents an Apology and humble Supplication in their behalf

to

\* Ap. Euseb. l. 5. c. 24. p. 191.

† Ap. Hieron. de Script. in Melit.

\* Loc. supr. citat.

† Ap. Euseb. l. 4. c. 26. p. 147.

\* Euseb. Chron. ad Ann. CLXXI.

† Euseb. H. Ec. loc. supr. citat.



to the Emperor, wherein among other things he thus bespeaks him;  
 " If these things, Sir, be done by your Order, let them be thought well  
 " done. For a righteous Prince will not at any time command what is  
 " unjust; and we shall not think much to undergo the award of such a  
 " death. This onely request we beg, that your self would please first  
 " to examine the case of these resolute persons, and then impartially de-  
 " termine, whether they deserve punishment and death, or safety and  
 " protection. But if this new Edict and Decree, which ought not to  
 " have been proclaimed against the most barbarous Enemies, did not  
 " come out with your cognizance and consent, we humbly pray, and that  
 " with the greater importunity, that you would not suffer us to be any  
 " longer exposed to this public rapine.

III. A F T E R this he put him in mind how much the Empire had  
 prospered since the rise of Christianity, and that none but the worst of  
 his Predecessors had entertained an implacable spight against the Chri-  
 stians. " This new Sect of Philosophy ( says he ) which we profess, here-  
 " tofore flourished among the *Barbarians* ( by which probably he means  
 " the *Jews*. ) Afterwards under the Reign of *Augustus* your Predecessor,  
 " it spread it self over the Provinces of your Empire, commencing with  
 " a happy omen to it: since which time the Majesty and Greatness of  
 " the *Roman* Empire hath mightily encreased, whereof you are the  
 " wished for Heir and Successor, and together with your Son shall so  
 " continue, especially while you protect that Religion, which begun  
 " with *Augustus*, and grew up together with the Empire, and for which  
 " your Predecessors had together with other Rites of Worship, some  
 " kind of reverence and regard. And that our Religion, which was bred  
 " up with the prosperity of the Empire, was born for public good, there  
 " is this great Argument to convince you, that since the Reign of *Augustus*  
 " there has no considerable mischief hapned; but on the contrary all  
 " things according to every ones desire have fallen out glorious and  
 " successful. None but *Nero* and *Domitian* instigated by cruel and ill  
 " minded men, have attempted to reproach and calumniate our Religion;  
 " whence sprang the common slanders concerning us, the injudicious Vul-  
 " gar greedily entertaining such reports without any strict Examination:  
 " But your Parents of Religious Memory gave a check to this Ignorance  
 " and injustice, by frequent Rescripts reproving those who made any  
 " new attempts in this matter. Among whom was your Grandfather  
 " *Adrian*, who wrote, as to several others, so to *Fundanus* the *Procon-*  
 " *sul* of *Asia*; and your Father, at what time your self was Collegue  
 " with him in the Empire, wrote to several Cities ( particularly to *La-*  
 " *rissa*, *Thessalonica*, *Athens*, and all the Cities of *Greece* ) that they  
 " should not create any new disturbance about this affair. And for  
 " your self, who have the same opinion of us which they had, and a  
 " great deal better, more becoming a good Man and a Philosopher, we  
 " promise our selves that you will grant all our Petitions and Requests.  
 An Address managed with great prudence and ingenuous freedom, and  
 which striking in with other Apologies presented about the same time,  
 did not a little contribute to the general quiet and prosperity of Chri-  
 stians.

IV. N O R was he so wholly swallowed up with care for the general  
 Peace of Christians, as to neglect the particular good of his own, or  
 neighbour Churches. During the Government of *Servilius Paulus*  
 Pro-

\* *Ipsē Melit.*  
ap. *Euseb. l. 4. c.*  
26. p. 147.

† *Ap. Euseb. l.*  
5. c. 24. p. 191.

\* *Ad. Euseb. ubi*  
*supr. p. 147.*

*Proconsul of Asia, Sagaris*, Bishop of *Laodicea* had suffered Martyrdom in the late Persecution; at what time the controversy about the *Paschal* solemnity was hotly ventilated in that Church, some strangers probably, urging the observation of the Festival according to the *Roman* usage celebrating it upon the Lords day, contrary to the custom of those Churches, who had ever kept it upon the fourteenth day of the Moon, according to the manner of the *Jews*. For the quieting of which contention *Melito* presently wrote two Book *πρὸς τὴν Πάσχα*, concerning the *Passover*, wherein no doubt he treated at large of the celebration of *Easter* according to the observation of the *Asian* Churches, and therefore *Polycrates* in his Letter to Pope *Victor* particularly reckons † *Sagaris* and *Melito*, among the chief Champions of the Cause. This *Paschal* Book of St. *Melito* was mentioned also by \* *Clemens* of *Alexandria* in a Tract concerning the same subject, wherein he confesses that he was moved to that undertaking by the discourse which *Melito* had published upon that subject.

V. HOW unwearied is true goodness and a love to Souls! how willing to digest any difficulties, by which anothers happiness may be advanced! his Brother *Onesimus* had desired of him to remark such passages of the Old Testament as principally made for the confirmation of the Christian Religion, and to let him know how many of those Books were admitted into the holy Canon. Wherein that he might at once thoroughly satisfy both his Brother and himself, he took a journey on purpose into the *East*, that is, I suppose, to *Jerusalem*, where he was likeliest to receive full satisfaction in this matter, and where having informed himself, he gave his Brother at his return an account of it. The Letter it self, because but short, and containing so authentic an evidence what Books of the Old Testament were received by the ancient Church, we shall here subjoin.

*Melito to his Brother Onesimus, greeting.*

FORASMUCH as out of your great love to and delight in the Holy Scriptures, you have oft desired me to collect such passages out of the Law and the Prophets as relate to our Saviour, and the several parts of our Christian Faith, and to be certainly informed of the Books of the Old Testament, how many in number, and in what order they were written, I have endeavoured to comply with your desires in this affair. For I know your great zeal and care concerning the Faith, and how much you desire to be instructed in matters of Religion, and especially out of your love to God how infinitely you prefer these above all other things, and are solicitous about your eternal salvation. In order hereunto I travelled into the East, and being arrived at the place where these things were done and published, and having accurately informed my self of the Books of the Old Testament. I have sent you the following account. The five Books of Moses, Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, Deuteronomy, Jesus or Joshua the Son of Nun; Judges, Ruth; the four Books of Kings. Two Books of Chronicles. The Psalms of David. The Proverbs of Solomon, which is Wisdom; Ecclesiastes, the Song of Songs, Job. The Prophets, Isaiah, Jeremiah, the twelve [minor] Prophets in one Book. Daniel, Ezekiel: Esdra or Ezras. Out of all which I have made Collections, which I have digested into six Books.

VI. IN

VI. IN which Catalogue we may observe the Book of *Esther* is omitted, as it is also by (b) *St. Athanasius*, (c) *Gregory Nazianzen*, and (d) *Leontius*, in their enumeration of the Books of the holy Canon: though for what reason is uncertain, unless (as (e) *Sixtus Senensis*, not improbably conjectures) because it was not in those times looked upon as of such unquestionable credit and Authority as the rest; the spurious additions at the end of it causing the whole Book to be called in question. Nor is here any particular mention made of *Nehemiah*, probably because it was anciently comprehended under that of *Esdras*. And by that of *Wisdom* we see is not meant the *Apocryphal Book*, called the *Wisdom of Solomon* (as (f) *Bellarmino* and most Writers of that Church confidently enough assert) but his *Proverbs*, of which (g) *Eusebius* expressly tells us, that not only *Hegesippus* but *Irenaeus*, and all the Ancients were wont to call the *Proverbs of Solomon* by the name of *Wisdom*, παναρετων σοφίαν, a *Wisdom* containing a *System* of all kind of *Vertues*. And indeed that *Melito* in this place could mean no other, the words of his Letter as restored by *Valesius* (Σολομώντος περιμύαι, ἡ καὶ Σοφία) according to *Nicéphorus* his quotation, and the faith of all the best and most ancient Manuscripts, puts the case beyond all peradventure.

VII. AT last this good Man broken with infinite pains and labours, and wearied with the inquietudes of a troublesome World, retreated to the place of rest. The time and manner of his death is unknown; this only we find (h) that he died, and lies buried at *Sardis*, waiting ἕως ἄντι τῆς ἐραυῆς ἐπισκοπῆς, the Episcopal Visitation from Heaven, when our Lord shall come and raise him up from the dead. He was a man, besides the piety of his mind, and the strictness and innocency of his life, of great parts and learning, he had *elegans & declamatorium ingenium*, as (i) *Tertullian* said of him, a smart elegant Wit, able to represent things with their most proper aggravations. He wrote Books almost in all kinds of Subjects, Divine, Moral, and Philosophical, the Monuments of no less Industry than Learning, which are all long since lost, some very few fragments only excepted. I know there are that suspected him to have had notions less Orthodox about some of the great Principles of Religion: which I confess seems to me a most uncharitable and unjust reflection upon so holy and so good a Man, especially seeing the conjecture is founded upon the meer titles of some of his Books, none of the Books themselves being extant, and of those titles a fair account might be given to satisfy any sober and impartial Man; there being but two that can be liable to exception, the one *Περὶ ἐνσωμάτου Θεοῦ*, *de Deo*, not *Corporeo*, (however (k) *Theodoret*, and as it seems from *Origen*, understands it) but *Corporato* (as *Tertullian* would express it) *de Deo corpore induto*, as *Rufinus* of old translated it, concerning God clothed with a body, or the Word made *Flesh*; the other *Περὶ κτίσεως* (most Copies read *πίσεως καὶ γένεσεως*) *Χριστοῦ*, of the *Creation* and *Generation* of *Christ*. Where admit it to have been *κτίσεως*, *Creation*, he alluded I doubt not to that of *Solomon*, the Lord possessed, ἐκ τῆς ἀρχῆς ἐποίησέν με. And evident it is, that before the rise of the *Arrian* Controversies the (l) Fathers

με ἀρχὴν ὁρῶν ἀπὸ τῆς ἐκείνου ἀρχῆς. *Conflic. Apol. s. c. 19. col. 370. Caterum ne tunc quidem solus; habebat enim secum quem habebat in semetipso, rationem suam scilicet: hanc Graeci λόγον, dicunt -- Itaq; Sophiam quoq; exaudi, ut secundum personam conditam. Primò, Dominus creavit me initium viarum in opera sua, &c. nam ut primum Deus voluit ea quae cum Sophiæ ratione & sermone disposuerat intra se, ipsum primum protulit sermonem. -- Hec est nativitas perfecta sermonis, dum ex Deo procedit: conditus ab eo primum ad cogitatum in nomine Sophiæ, Dominus condit me initium viarum. Tertul. adv. Prax. c. 5, 6, 7. p. 503. ubi plura.*

used



used the word for any manner of production, and usually understand that place of *Solomon* of the ineffable Generation of the Son of God.

His Writings,

None whereof are now extant.

<i>De Paschate, Libri II.</i>	<i>De fide [Creation] &amp; Generatione Christi.</i>
<i>De recta vivendiratione, &amp; de Prophetis, liber unus.</i>	<i>De Prophetia.</i>
<i>De Ecclesia.</i>	<i>De Hospitalitate.</i>
<i>De die Dominica.</i>	<i>Liber Clavis dictus.</i>
<i>De Natura Hominis.</i>	<i>De Diabolo.</i>
<i>De Creatione.</i>	<i>De Joannis Apocalypsi.</i>
<i>De Obedientia sensuum fidei.</i>	<i>De Incarnatione Dei.</i>
<i>De Anima, &amp; corpore, &amp; mente.</i>	<i>Apologia ad Imp. Antoninum.</i>
<i>De Lamento.</i>	<i>Excerptorum ex libris Veteris Testamenti, Libri VI.</i>
<i>De Veritate.</i>	

*The End of S. MELITO's Life.*

THE

THE LIFE OF  
**S. PANTÆNUS**  
 CATECHIST OF  
 ALEXANDRIA.



**S. PANTÆNUS.**

*The various conjectures concerning his Original. The probabilities of his Jewish descent, what. Whether born in Sicily or at Alexandria. His first institution. The famous Platonic School erected by Ammonius at Alexan-*

B b

Alexandria. The renown of that place for other parts of Learning. Pantænus addicted to the Sect of the Stoics. The Principles of that Sect shewed to agree best with the dictates of Christianity. His great improvements in the Christian Doctrine. The Catechetic School at Alexandria, with its Antiquity. Pantænus made Regent of it. When he first entered upon this Office. An Embassy from India to the Bishop of Alexandria for some to preach the Christian Faith. Pantænus sent upon this errand. This Country where situate. His arrival in India, and converse with the Brachmans. Their temper, principles, and way of life. Their agreement with the Stoics. Foot-steps of Christianity formerly planted there. S. Matthew's Hebrew Gospel found among them and brought by Pantænus to Alexandria. How far and by whom Christianity was propagated in India afterwards. Pantænus his return to Alexandria, and resuming his Catechetic Office. His Death. His great Piety and Learning.

I.



THE silence of Antiquity as to the Country and Kindred of this excellent person has administered to variety of conjectures concerning his Original. Some conceive him to have been born of Jewish Parents, and they of note and quality. For \* *Clemens Alexandrinus* reckoning up his Tutors, tells us that one, (whom he names last) was of Palestine, an Hebrew of very long descent; and then

adds, that having found the last, (meaning, say some, the last of those whom he had reckoned up) though he justly deserved to be placed first, after he had with infinite diligence and curiosity hunted him out in Egypt, where he lay obscure, he sat down under his Discipline and Institution. This Person † *Eusebius* plainly supposes to have been our *Pantænus*; and that he intended him in the latter clause there is no cause to doubt, the former only is ambiguous, it not being clear, whether the latter sentence be necessarily connected and joined to the former, or that he designed any more, than to intimate the last Master he addressed to, as distinct from those he had named before. And this I am the rather inclined to think, because whoever considerately weighs *Clemens* his period, will find that by his Hebrew or Palestine Master, he means one of the two whom he heard in the East, whereas *Pantænus* was his Master in Egypt, whom he both found and heard there. \* Others make him born in Sicily, because *Clemens* in the following words styles him, a truly Sicilian Bee: But whether there may not be something proverbial in that expression even as it relates to Sicily, I shall not now enquire. However it is certain, that the Inhabitants of that Island were generally Greeks, that many eminent Philosophers were born, or resided there, and particularly the famous *Porphry*, who had retired hither for some years. and here wrote his virulent Books against the Christians. Let this then stand for his Country, till something more probable offer it self, unless we will say, that being descended of Sicilian Ancestors, he was born at Alexandria, the place of his Education.

II. HIS younger years were seasoned with all learned and philosophical studies, under the best Masters which Alexandria (for there I presume to place his education) afforded, at that time a noted staple place of Learning. As Egypt had in all Ages been famous for the choicest parts

\* *Stromat. l. i.*  
p. 274.

† *H. Eccl. l. 5.*  
c. 11. p. 175.  
176.

\* *Valef. Annot.*  
in *Euseb. p. 56.*



parts of literature, and the more uncommon speculations of Theology; so more especially *Alexandria*, where there were Professors in all Arts and Sciences, and public Schools of Institution, not a little advantaged by that noble Library, placed here by *Ptolomy Philadelphus*, and so much celebrated by the Ancients. In after-times here was a fixed and settled succession of Philosophers in the *Platonic School*, begun by *Ammonius Saccas*, and carried on by *Photinus* and *Origen*, and their successors for several Ages. \* *Ammianus Marcellinus* tells us that in his time, though not so famous as formerly, yet in some good degree it still maintained its reputation, and that all ingenuous Arts and Methods of recondite Learning, and celebrated Professors of all sorts flourished here, and that it was enough to recommend a Physician to public notice, if he had studied at *Alexandria*. Nay many Ages after him, *Benjamin the Jew* † at his being there, found near twenty several Schools of *Aristotelians* (the only Men that then ruled the Chair) whither Men flocked from all parts of the World to learn the Peripatetic Philosophy.

\* Lib. 22. not longe à fin. p. 1638.

† Euseb. p. 121.

III. AMONG all the Sects of Philosophy he principally applied himself \* to the *Stoics*, with whose notions and rules of life he was most enamoured; and no wonder, seeing (as *S. Hierom* † observes) their dogmata in many things come nearest to the Doctrines of Christianity. As indeed they do, especially as to the moral and practic part of their Principles. They held that nothing was good but what was just and pious, nothing evil but what was vicious and dishonest; that a bad Man could never be happy, nor a good Man miserable, who was always free, generous, and dear to Heaven; that the Deity was perpetually concerned for humane affairs, and that there was a wise and powerful Providence that particularly superintended the happiness of mankind, and was ready to assist Men in all lawful and vertuous undertakings; that therefore this God was above all things to be admired, adored, and worshipped, prayed to, acknowledged, obeyed, praised, and that it is the most comely and reasonable thing in the World, that we should universally submit to his will, and ἀσπάζεσθαι ὅς ὁ ὅλης τῆ ψυχῆς καὶ συμβάλλοντα πάντα, cheerfully embrace with all our Souls all the issues and determinations of his Providence; that we ought not to think it enough to be happy alone, but that 'tis our duty ἀπὸ καρδίας φιλεῖν, to love Men from the very heart, to relieve and help them, advise and assist them, and contribute what is in our power to their welfare and safety, and this not once or twice, but throughout the whole life, and that unbiassedly, without any little designs of applause, or advantage to our selves; that nothing should be equally dear to a Man as honesty and virtue, and that this is the first thing he should look at, whether the thing he is going about be good or bad, and the part of a good or a wicked Man, and if excellent and vertuous, that he ought not to let any loss or damage, torment, or death it self deter him from it. And whoever runs over the Writings of *Seneca*, *Antoninus*, *Epictetus*, *Arrian*, &c. will find these, and a great many more claiming a very near kindred with the main rules of life prescribed in the Christian Faith. And what wonder if *Pantænus* was in love with such generous and manly principles, which he liked so well, that as he always retained the title of the *Stoic Philosopher*, so for the main he owned the profession of that Sect, even after his being admitted to eminent Offices and Employments in the Christian Church.

\* Euseb. l. 5. c. 10. p. 174.  
† Com. in Eft. c. 11. p. 49: Tom. 5.

(a) Cod.  
CXVIII.  
col. 297.

(b) Loc. *supr.*  
citat.  
\* *Descript. in*  
*Pantæn.*

† *Cap. 9, & 10.*  
*ut *supr.**

\* *Dion. Chrys.*  
*Orat. XXXII.*  
*p. 375. vid.*  
*p. 373.*

† *Hieron. de*  
*Script. ubi*  
*supr.*

\* *Loc. citat.*

IV. BY whom he was instructed in the Principles of the Christian Religion, I find not; (a) *Photius* tells us that he was Scholar to those who had seen the Apostles, though I cannot allow of what he adds, that he had been an Auditor of some of the Apostles themselves, his great distance from their times rendring it next door to impossible. But whoever were his Tutors, he made such vast proficiencies in his Learning, that his singular eminency quickly recommended him to a place of great trust and honour in the Church, to be Master of the *Catechetical School* at *Alexandria*. For there were not only *Academies* and Schools of Human Literature, but an *Ecclesiastical School* for the training persons up in Divine knowledge and the first principles of Christianity: and this *ὁ ἀρχαῖος ἔδρυς*, says (b) *Eusebius*, of very ancient custom, from the very times of *S. Mark* (says \* *S. Hierom*) the first Planter of Christianity and Bishop of that place. From whose time there had been a constant succession of *Catechists* in that School, which *Eusebius* tells us, continued in his time, and was managed by Men famous for eloquence and the study of Divine things. The fame and glory of *Pantænus* did above all others at that time design him for this place, in which he accordingly succeeded, and that (as † *Eusebius* intimates) about the beginning of *Commodus* his Reign, when *Julian* entered upon the See of *Alexandria*, for about that time (says he) he became Governour of the School of the Faithful there. And whereas others before him had discharged the place in a more private way, he made the School more open and public, freely teaching all that addressed themselves to him. In this employment he continued without intermission the whole time of *Julian* (who fate ten years) till under his Successor he was dispatched upon a long and dangerous journey, whereof this the occasion.

V. *ALEXANDRIA* was *πλυνανδρωποτάτη πιασὼν πόλις* (as the Orator \* styles it) one of the most populous and frequented Cities in the World, whither there was a constant resort not only of neighbour Nations, but of the most remote and distant Countries, *Ethiopians*, *Arabians*, *Bactrians*, *Scythians*, *Persians*, and even *Indians* themselves. It happened that some *Indian* Embassadors (whether sent for this particular purpose is not certain) intreated † *Demetrius* then Bishop of *Alexandria* to send some worthy and excellent Person along with them to preach the Faith in those Countries. None appeared qualified for this errand like *Pantænus*, a grave Man, and a great Philosopher, incomparably furnished both with divine and secular Learning. Him *Demetrius* persuades to undertake the Embassy; and though he could not but be sufficiently apprehensive, that he quitted a pleasant and delightful Country, a place where he was beloved and honoured by all with a just esteem and reverence, and that he ventured upon a journey where he must expect to encounter with dangers and hardships, and the greatest difficulties and oppositions, yet were all these easily conquered by his insatiable desire to propagate the Christian Religion, even to the remotest corners of the World. For there were many Evangelical Preachers even at that time (as \* *Eusebius* adds upon this occasion) who inflamed with a divine and holy zeal, in imitation of the Apostles, were willing to travel up and down the World for enlarging the bounds of Christianity, and building Men up on the most holy Faith. What *India* this was to which *Pantænus*, and after him *Fruementius* (for that they both went to the same Country, is highly probable) was dispatched, is not easie to

to determine. There are, and they Men of no inconsiderable note, that conceive it was not the *Oriental*, but *African India*, conterminous to *Ethiopia*, or rather a part of it. These *Indians* were a Colony and Plantation derived at first out of the *East*. For so \* *Eusebius* tells us, that in the more early Ages the *Ethiopians* quitting the parts about the River *Indus*, fate down near *Egypt*. Whence † *Philostratus* expressly stiles the *Ethiopians* a Colony of *Indians*, as \* elsewhere he calls them Ἰνδογενῶν, an *Indian* Generation. The *Metropolis* of this Country was *Axumis*, of which *Fruementius* is afterwards said to be ordained Bishop by *Athanasius*. An opinion, which I confess my self very inclinable to embrace, and should without any scruple comply with, did not † *Eusebius* expressly say, that *Pantenus* preached the Gospel to the *Eastern* Nations, and came as far as to *India* itself. A passage, which how it can suit with the *African India*, and the Countries that lie so directly *South* of *Egypt*, I am not able to imagine. For which reason we have elsewhere fixed it in the *East*. Nor is there any need to send them as far as *India intra Gangem*, there are places in *Asia* nearer hand, and particularly some parts of *Arabia* that anciently passed under that name, whence the *Persian* Gulf is sometimes called the *Indian* Sea. But let the judicious Reader determine as he please in this matter.

VI. BEING arrived in *India*, he set himself to plant the Christian Faith in those parts, especially conversing with the \* *Brachmans*, the Sages and Philosophers of those Countries, whose Principles and way of life seemed more immediately to dispose them for the entertainment of Christianity. Their Children as soon as born

they committed to Nurfes, and then to Guardians according to their different ages, who instructed them in principles according to their capacities and improvements: they were educated with all imaginable severity of Discipline, not suffered so much as to speak or spit, or cough, while their Masters were discoursing to them, and this till they were seven and thirty years of age. They were infinitely strict and abstemious in their Diet, eat no Flesh, drunk no Wine or strong Drink, feeding only upon wild Acorns, and such Roots as Nature furnished them withall, and quenching their thirst at the next Spring or River, and as sparing of all other lawful pleasures and delights. They adored no Images, but sincerely worshipped God, to whom they continually prayed, and in stead of the custom of those *Eastern* Nations of turning to the *East*, they devoutly lift up their Eyes to Heaven, and while they drew near to God, took a peculiar care to keep themselves from being defiled with any vice or wickedness, spending a great part both of Night and Day in Hymns and Prayers to God. They accounted themselves the most free and victorious People, having hardned their Bodies against all external accidents, and subdued in their minds all irregular passions and desires. Gold and Silver they despised, as that which could neither quench their thirst nor allay their hunger, nor heal their wounds, nor cure their distempers, nor serve any real and necessary ends of Nature, but only minister to Vice and Luxury, to trouble and inquietude, and set the mind upon Racks and Tenters. They looked upon none of the little accidents of this World to be either good or evil, frequently discoursed concerning Death, which they maintained to be ἡμεῖς εἰς τὸν αἰῶνα

\* Chron. ad Abrab. COCCIV.  
† Vit. Apollon. l. 6. c. 8 p. 287.  
\* Ibid. l. 3. c. 6. p. 125.

† Hist. Eccl. ubi supr.

\* Hieron. Epist. ad Magn. Orat. p. 327. Tom. 2.

De Brachman. morib. & instit. vid. inter alias Alexand. Polyb. de reb. Indic. ap. Clem. Alex. Stromat. l. 3. p. 451. Strab. Geogr. l. 15. p. 712. Bardejan. Syr. l. de fat. ap. Euseb. Præp. Evang. l. 6. c. 10. p. 272. Plutarch de vit. Alexand. p. 701. Porphy. l. 1. c. 14. Stæb. 17, 18. p. 167, & c. Pallad. de Brachman. p. 8, 9, 15, 16, 17. Traët. de Orig. & Morib. Brachman. inter Ambrosii oper. ad Calc. Tom. 5. Suid. in voc. Βραχμανῶν, p. 578.

αἰῶνος



\* Pallad. de  
Brachman.  
p. 52.

ὡς βίον, a being born into a real and happy life, and in order whereunto they made use of the present time only as a state of preparation for a better life. In short, they seemed in most things to conspire and agree with the *Stoics*, whom therefore of all other Sects they esteemed to be λογίους φιλοσόφους \*, the most excellent Philosophers: and upon that account could not but be somewhat the more acceptable to *Pantænus*, who had so thoroughly imbibed all the wise and rational principles of that Institution.

† Euseb. l. 5. c.  
10. p. 175.  
Hier. de Script.  
in Panten.

\* Socrat. H.  
Eccl. l. 1. c. 19.  
p. 50. Sozom.  
lib. 2. c. 24.  
p. 477. Theod.  
H. Eccl. l. 1.  
c. 23. p. 54.

VII. WHAT success he had in these parts, we are not particularly told. Certainly his preaching could not want some considerable effect, especially where Persons were by the rules of their order, and the course of their life so well qualified to receive it, and that too where Christianity had been heretofore planted, though now overgrown with Weeds and Rubbish for want of due care and culture. For he met with several † that retained the knowledge of Christ, preached here long since by *S. Bartholomew* the *Apostle* (as we have elsewhere shewed in his life) whereof not the least evidence was his finding *S. Matthew's* Gospel written in *Hebrew*, which *S. Bartholomew* had left at his being there, and which *Pantænus* (as *S. Hierom* informs us, though I question whether it be any more than his own conjecture) brought back with him to *Alexandria*, and there no doubt laid it up as an inestimable Treasure. And as our Philosopher succeeded in the labours of *S. Bartholomew* in these *Indian* Plantations, so another afterwards succeeded in his, an account whereof, to make the story more intire, the Reader, I presume, will not think it impertinent, if I here insert. \* *Ædesius* and *Fruventius*, two Youths of *Tyre*, accompanied *Meropius* the Philosopher into *India*, where being taken by the Natives, they were presented to the King of the Country, who pleased with their persons and their parts, made one of them his Butler, the other (*Fruventius*) the Keeper of his Records, or as *Sozomen* will have it, his Treasurer and *Major-domo*, committing to his care the Government of his House. For their great diligence and fidelity the King at his death gave them their liberty, who thereupon determined to return to their own Country, but were prevailed with by the Queen to stay, and superintend affairs during the Minority of her Son. Which they did, the main of the Government being in the hands of *Fruventius*, who assisted by some Christian Merchants that trafficked there, built an Oratory, where they assembled to worship God according to the Rites of Christianity, and instructed several of the Natives, who joined themselves to their Assembly. The young King now of age, *Fruventius* resigned his trust, and begged leave to return; which being with some difficulty obtained, they presently departed; *Ædesius* going for *Tyre*; while *Fruventius* went to *Alexandria*, where he gave *Athanasius*, then Bishop of that place, an account of the whole affair, shewing him what hopes there were that the *Indians* would come over to the Faith of Christ, withall begging of him, to send a Bishop and some Clergy-men among them, and not to neglect so fair an opportunity of advancing their Salvation. *Athanasius* having advised with his Clergy, persuaded *Fruventius* to accept the office, assuring him he had none fitter for it than himself. Which was done accordingly, and *Fruventius* being made Bishop, returned back into *India*, where he preached the Christian Faith, erected many Churches, and being assisted by the Divine Grace wrought innumerable Miracles, healing both

both the souls and bodies of many at the same time. An account of all which *Rufinus* professes to have received from *Ædissus* his own mouth, then Presbyter of the Church of *Tyre*. But it's time to look back to *Pantænus*.

VIII. BEING returned to *Alexandria*, he resumed his *Catechetical* office, which I gather partly from (a) *Eusebius*, who again mentions it just after his *Indian* expedition, and adds *τελευταίων ἡγήται*, that after all, or when he drew near to his latter end, he governed the School of *Alexandria*; partly from *S. Hierom* \*, who says expressly, that he taught in the Reign of *Severus* and *Caracalla*, his first regency being under *Commodus*. He died in the time of *Antoninus Caracalla*, who began his Reign *Ann. CCXI.* though the exact date and manner of his death be lost; his memory is preserved in the *Roman Calendar* on the seventh of *July*. And certainly a just tribute of honour is due to his memory for his admirable zeal and piety, his indefatigable pains and industry, his exquisite abilities, *ὅς ἀπὸ παιδείας ἀνὴρ ἐμπειροτάτος*, as *Eusebius* truly characterizes him, a Man singularly eminent in all kinds of Learning: and (b) *Origen*, who lived nearer to him, and was one of his Successors, commends him for his great usefulness and ability both in Philosophical speculations, and Theological Studies, in the one able to deal with Philosophers, in the other to refute Heretics and Seducers. In his School he displayed (as *Eusebius* tells us) both by word and writing the Treasures of the Sacred Doctrines; though he taught (says *S. Hierom*) rather *viva voce*, than by Books, who mentions only his Commentaries upon the Holy Scripture, and of them not the least fragment is remaining at this day.

(a) *Ubi sup.*

\* *Loc. cit. it.*

(b) *Apud Euseb. l. 6. c. 19. p. 221.*

The End of S. PANTÆNUS's Life.

THE



1112



THE LIFE OF  
S. CLEMENS  
OF  
ALEXANDRIA.



S. CLEMENS ALEXANDRINVS.

*His Country. The Progress of his Studies. His Instruction in the Christian Doctrine. His several Masters. His impartial inquiry after truth. The elective Sect, what. Its excellent genius. Clemens of this Sect.*

*His succeeding Pantæus in the Catechetic School. He is made Presbyter of Alexandria. His Stromata published, when. Lawfulness of flying in time of Persecution. His Journey into the East. What Tracts he wrote there. His going from Jerusalem to Antioch, and return to Alexandria. His death. The Elogia given of him by the Ancients. His admirable Learning. His Writings. His Hypotyposes: Photius his account of them; corrupted by the Arrians. His Books yet extant, and the orderly gradation of them. His Stromata, what the design of it. His style, what in this, what in his other Books. A short Apology for some unwary assertions in his Writings. His Writings enumerated.*

(a) Hist.  
XXXII. p. 96.

I.



ITUS Flavius Clemens was, probably, born at Athens. For when (a) Epiphanius tells us, that some affirmed him to be an Alexandrian, others an Athenian, he might well be both; the one being the place of his Nativity, as the other was of his constant Residence and Employment. Nor can I imagine any other account, upon which the title of Athenian should be given to him. And the con-

jecture is further countenanced from the course and progress of his Studies, the foundations whereof were laid in Greece, improved in the East, and perfected in Egypt. And indeed his incomparable abilities in all parts of Science render it a little more probable, that his early years commenced in that great School of Arts and Learning. But he staid not here, his insatiable thirst after Knowledge made him traverse almost all parts of the World, and converse with the learned of all Nations, that he might furnish himself with the Knowledge of whatever was useful and excellent, especially a thorough acquaintance with the mysteries of the Christian Doctrine. He tells us (b) of those lively and powerful Discourses, which he had the happiness to hear from blessed and truly worthy and memorable Persons, who preserving that sincere and excellent Doctrine, which like Children from the hands of their Parents, they had immediately received from Peter, James, John, and Paul, the holy Apostles, were by God's blessing come down to his time, sowing those Ancient and Apostolic Seeds of Truth. A passage, which I doubt not (c) Eusebius intended, when he says, that Clemens speaking concerning himself in the first Book of his Stromata, affirms himself to have been of the next succession to the Apostles.

(b) Stromat. l.  
1. p. 274. &  
ap. Euseb. l. 5.  
c. 11. p. 176.

(c) Lib. c. 3.  
p. 215.

(d) Loc. citat.  
(e) Ad An.  
185. n. IV.

II. OF these venerable Men to whose tuition he committed himself, he himself has given (d) us some, though but obscure account. The first was Ironicus, a Cælo-Syrian, whom he heard in Greece, and whom (e) Baronius conjectures to have been Caius, or Dionysius Bishop of Corinth; a second an Egyptian, under whose Discipline he was, in that part of Italy called Magna Græcia, and since Calabria: hence he travelled into the East, where the first of his Masters was; an Assyrian, supposed by some to have been Bardesanes, by others Tatian, the Scholar of Justin Martyr: the next originally a Jew, of a very ancient stock, whom he heard in Palestine, whom Baronius will have to have been Theophilus Bishop of Casarea (though for his Hebrew descent there be no evidence among the Ancients) others (f) more probably Theodotus, whence the excerpta out of his Hypotyposes still extant, are stiled, ἐκ τῆ Θεοδοῦ τοῦ ἀγατολινῆ διδασκα-

λίας,

(f) Val. An.  
not. in Euseb.  
p. 95.



λιας, the Epitome of Theodotus his Oriental Doctrine, that is, the Doctrine which he learnt from Theodotus in the East. The last of the Masters whom he met with, δυνάμει ὁ ἀεὶ πρῶτος, as he says of him, but the first and chief in power and virtue, was one whom he inquisitively sought out, and found in Egypt, and in whose institution he fully acquiesced, and sought no further. This Person is generally supposed to have been Pantanus, whom Clemens elsewhere \* expressly affirms to have been his Master, and whom in the forementioned Epitome he styles † our Pantanus.

\* In lib. Hypot.  
ap. Euseb. l. 5.  
c. 11. p. 175.  
† Ad Calc.  
Clem. p. 808.

III. BUT though he put himself under the Discipline of so many several Masters, yet was it not out of any vain desultory lightness, or phantastic curiosity, but to make re-searches after truth with an honest and inquisitive mind. He loved what was manly and generous; wherever he met it: and therefore tells us \*, he did not simply approve all Philosophy, but that of which Socrates in Plato speaks concerning their mysterious Rites.

\* Stromat.  
p. 315.

— νερθηςφῶροι μὲ πολλοί· βέλχε δὲ τε παῦροι;

intimating as he expresses it in the stile of the Scripture, *that many are called, but few elect*, or who make the right choice. And such (adds Socrates) and such only, in my opinion, are those who embrace the true Philosophy. Of which sort (says Clemens) through my whole life I have to my Power approved my self, desiring and endeavouring by all means to become one of that number. For this purpose he never tied himself to any particular institution of Philosophy, but took up in the αἵρεσις ἐκλεκτικὴ, the *Elective Sect*, who obliged not themselves to the dictates and sentiments of any one Philosopher, but freely made choice of the most excellent Principles out of all. This Sect (as the Philosophic Historian † informs us) was begun by Potamon, and Alexandria too, who out of every Sect of Philosophy selected what he judged best. He gave himself liberty impartially to inquire into the natures of things, and what was the true standard and measure of truth; he considered, that no Man knows every thing, that some things are obvious to one, that are overseen or neglected by another, that there are wholesome herbs and flowers in every Field, and that if the thing be well said, 'tis no matter who 'tis that says it; that reason is to be submitted to, before Authority, and though a fair regard be due to the opinions and principles of our Friends, yet that it is ὁσον περιμῆεν ἢ ἀληθεῖαν, (as \* Aristotle himself confesses) more pious and reasonable to honour and esteem the truth. And thus he picked up a System of noble principles, like so many Flowers out of several Gardens, professing † this to be the great end of all his disquisitions, ζῶντι καὶ πᾶσαν ἀρετὴν τελείαν, a life perfected according to all the rules of virtue. Of this incomparable Order was our Divine Philosopher: I espoused not (says he \*) *this or that Philosophy, nor the Stoic, nor the Platonic, nor the Epicurean, or that of Aristotle, but whatever any of these Sects had said, that was fit and just, that taught righteousness with a divine and Religious knowledge, τὸ τοῦ σὺντα τοῦ ἐκλεκτικῶν, all that being selected, I call Philosophy.* Though it cannot be denied, but that of any Sect, he came nearest to the Stoics, as appears from his discoursing by way of Paradoxes, and his affected novelty of words, two things peculiar to the Men of that way, as a very learned and ingenious person † has

† D. Laert.  
proem. ad vit.  
Philos. p. 14.

\* Ethic. l. 1.  
c. 4. p. 3.  
To.

† Laert. loc. cit.

\* Strom. l. 1.  
p. 288.

† H. Dodwel:  
Prolegom. Ap.  
ad lib. D.  
Stearn de  
Obstin. p. 115.

obser-



observed. And I doubt not but he was more peculiarly disposed towards this Sect by the instructions of his Master *Pantanus*, so great and professed an admirer of the *Stoical* Philosophy.

IV. *PANTÆNUS* being dead, he succeeded him in the *Schola Καταχρηστων*, the *Catechetical* School at *Alexandria*, though questionless he taught in it long before that, and probably during *Pantanus* his absence in *India*, supplying his place till his return, and succeeding in it after his death, for that he was *Pantanus* his Successor, the Ancients (a) are all agreed. Here he taught with great industry and fidelity, and with no less success, some of the most eminent Men of those times, *Origen*, *Alexander* Bishop of *Hierusalem*, and others being bred under him. And now (as (b) himself confesses) he found his Philosophy and *Gentile* Learning very useful to him: for as the Husbandman first waters the Soil, and then casts in the Seed, so the notions he derived out of the Writings of the *Gentiles*, served first to water and soften τὸ γεωδες αὐτῶν, the gross and terrestrial parts of the Soul, that the spiritual seed might be the better cast in, and take vital root in the minds of Men. Besides the Office of a *Catechist*, he was made *Presbyter* of the Church of *Alexandria*, and that at least about the beginning of *Severus* his Reign; for under that capacity *Eusebius* takes notice of him, *Ann.* CXCIV. About which time prompted by his own zeal, and obliged by the iniquity of the times, he set himself to vindicate the cause of Christianity both against Heathens and Heretics, which he has done at large with singular learning and dexterity in his Book called *Stromata*, published about this time; for drawing down a *Chronological* (c) account of things, he ends his computation in the death of the Emperor *Commodus*. Whence 'tis evident, as (d) *Eusebius* observes, that he compiled that Volume in the Reign of *Severus* that succeeded him.

V. THE Persecution under *Severus* raged in all Provinces of the Empire, and particularly at *Alexandria*, which made many of the Christians for the present willing to retire, and *Clemens* probably among the rest, whom we therefore find particularly discoursing (e) the lawfulness of withdrawing in a time of Persecution: that though we may not cowardly decline a danger or death, when 'tis necessary for the sake of Religion, yet in other cases we are to follow the direction of our Saviour, *when they persecute you in one City, flee ye into another*; and not to obey in such a case, is to be bold and rash, and unwarrantably to precipitate our selves into danger; that if it be a great sin against God to destroy a Man, who is his Image, that Man makes himself guilty of the crime, who offers himself to the public Tribunal; and little better does he, that when he may, declines not the Persecution, but rashly exposes himself to be apprehended, thereby to his power conspiring with the wickedness of his Persecutors. And if further, he irritate and provoke them, he is unquestionably the cause of his own ruine, like a Man that needlessly rouses and enrages a wild Beast to fall upon him. And this opportunity I doubt not he took to visit the *Eastern* parts, where he had studied in his younger days. We find him about this time at *Jerusalem* with *Alexander* shortly after Bishop of that place, between whom there seems to have been a peculiar intimacy, insomuch that St. *Clemens* dedicated (f) his Book to him, called, *The Ecclesiastical Canon*, ἡ πρὸς τοὺς Ἰουδαίους, or *against them that Judaize*. During his stay here he preached constantly, and declined no pains even in that evil time, and with

(a) *Euseb.* l. 6. c. 6. p. 208. *Hieron. de Script.* in *Clement.* Phot. Cod. CXVIII. col. 297.  
(b) *Strom.* l. 1. p. 278.

(c) *Strom.* l. 1. p. 336.  
(d) *Lib.* 6. c. 6. p. 208.

(e) *Stromat.* l. 4. p. 504.

(f) *Euseb.* l. 6. c. 14. p. 214. *Hieron. in Clement.*

with what success, we may see by a piece of a Letter written by *Alexander*, then in Prison, and sent by our *S. Clemens* to *Antioch*, which we here insert. \* *Alexander, a Servant of God, and a Prisoner of Jesus Christ, to the blessed Church at Antioch, in the Lord greeting. Our Lord has made my bonds in this time of my imprisonment light and easie to me, while I understood that Asclepiades, a Person admirably qualified by his eminency in the Faith, was by the Divine Providence become Bishop of your holy Church of Antioch. Concluding, These Letters, worthy Brethren, I have sent you by Clemens, the blessed Presbyter, a Man virtuous and approved, whom ye both do, and shall yet further know: who having been here with us according to the good will and Providence of God, has greatly established and encreased the Church of Christ. By which Epistle we may by the way remarque the error of † Eusebius, who places Asclepiades his coming to the See of Antioch in the first year of Caracalla Ann. CCXII. whereas we see it was while Alexander was yet in Prison under Severus, which he himself makes to be Ann. CCV. From Jerusalem then Clemens went to Antioch, where we cannot question but he took the same pains, and laboured with the same zeal and industry. After which he returned to Alexandria, and the discharge of his Office, where how long he continued; or by what death he died, Antiquity is silent. Certain it is, that for some considerable time he out-lived Pantanus, who died in the time of Caracalla: and when he wrote his Stromata, he tells us that he did it that he might lay up things in store against old Age: a plain intimation that he was then pretty far from it. I add no more but what Alexander of Hierusalem \* says in a Letter to Origen, where having told him that their friendship which had commenced under their Predecessors should continue sacred and inviolable, yea grow more firm and fervent, he adds, "For we acknowledge for our Fathers those blessed Saints, who are gone before us, and to whom we shall go after a little time; Pantanus I mean, the truly happy; and my Master; and the holy Clemens, my Master; and one that was greatly useful and helpful to me.*

\* Apud. Euseb. ib. c. 11. p. 212.

† In Chron. ad Ann. CCXII.

\* Ap. Euseb. l. 6. c. 14. p. 216.

VI. TO commend this excellent Man after the great things spoken of him by the Ancients, were to hold a Candle to the Sun. Let us hear the character which some of them give of him. *The holy and the blessed Clemens, a man very virtuous and approved, as we have seen Alexander Bishop of Jerusalem, who knew him best, testifying of him. Indeed his zeal and piety, modesty and humility, could not but endear him unto all. For his learning, he was in † S. Hierom's judgment the most learned of all the Ancients. A Man admirably learned and skilful, and that searched to the very bottom of all the learning of the Greeks with that exactness that perhaps few before him ever attained to, says \* S. Cyril of Alexandria. An holy Man (says † Theodoret) ἡ πολυτέρεια πάντας ἀπιδίπων, and one that for his vast and diffusive learning incomparably surpassed all other Men. Nor was he less accurate in matters of Theology, than humane Learning; an incomparable Master in the Christian Philosophy, as Eusebius styles him. Witness his many Books, crowded, as \* Eusebius tells us, with variety and plenty of useful knowledge, derived (as † S. Hierom adds) both from the Holy Scriptures and secular learning; wherein there is nothing unlearned, nothing that is not fetched out of the very center and bowels of Philosophy. The titles of them those two Authors have preserved, the far greatest part of the Books themselves having perished, among which the most memorable was the Hypotyposes or Books*

† Epist. ad Magn. Orat. p. 327.

\* Contr. Julian. l. 7. p. 231. Tom. 6. vid. l. 6. p. 205.

† Hieret. Fabul. l. 1. c. 6. p. 197.

\* H. Eccl. l. 6. c. 13. p. 215.

† De Script. in Clem. & ad Magn. Or. loc. cit.

of

\* Cod. CIX.  
col. 235.

† Apol. pro. O-  
rig. inter Oper.  
Hier. Tom. 4.  
p. 195.

of Institution, so often cited by Eusebius, which contained short and strict explications of many passages of Holy Scriptures, wherein \* Photinus tells us there were many wild and impious opinions, as, That Matter was eternal, and that Ideas were introduced by certain Decrees, that there is a transmigration of Souls, and were many Worlds before Adam, that the Son is among the number of created Beings, and that the Word was not really made Flesh, but only appeared so, and many more ἐλασφημοὶ τετραπολοῖαι, monstrous Blasphemies: But withal insinuates, that probably these things were inserted by another hand, as † Rufinus expressly assures us, that Heretics had corrupted Clemens his Writings. Certainly had these Books been infected with these prophane and poisonous Dogmata in Eusebius his time, we can hardly think, but that he would have given us at least some obscure intimations of it. And considerable it is what Photinus observes, that these things are not countenanced by his other Books, nay, many of them plainly contradicted by them.

VII. THE Books yet extant ( besides the little Tract, entituled, Τῆς ὁ σαζήμου πᾶσι, lately published ) are chiefly three, which seem to have been written in a very wise and excellent order, the Λογὸς Παρ-τροπικὸς, or Exhortation to the Gentiles, the *Padagogus*, or Christian Instructor, and the *Stromata*, or various Discourses; in the first he very rationally refutes the follies and impieties of the Gentile Religion, and strongly persuades Men to embrace Christianity: in the second he tutors and instructs new Converts, and by the most admirable rules, and pathetical insinuations prepares and forms them to an holy and truly Christian life: in the third he administers strong meat to them that are of a more full age, a clearer explication of the Christian Doctrine, and a more particular confutation both of Gentile and Heretical opinions, admitting the Disciple after his first purgation and initiation into a more immediate acquaintance with the Sacred Mysteries of Religion. His *Stromata* \* are nothing but Miscellaneous Discourses composed out of the Holy Writings, and the Books of the Gentiles, explaining and ( as occasion is ) confuting the opinions of the Greeks and Barbarians, the Sentiments of Philosophers, the notions of Heretics, inserting variety of Stories, and Treasures out of all sorts of Learning; which as himself tells us †, he therefore stiled *Stromata*, that is, a variegated contexture of Discourses, and which \* he compares not to a curious Garden, wherein the Trees and Plants are disposed according to the exactest rules of Method and Order, but to a thick shady Mountain, whereon Trees of all sorts, the Cypress and the Plantane, the Laurel and the Ivy, the Apple, the Olive, and the Fig-tree, promiscuously grow together. In the two former of his Books ( as † Photinus observes ) his stile is florid, but set off with a well proportioned gravity, and becoming variety of Learning: In the latter he neither designed the ornaments of Eloquence, nor would the nature of his design well admit it, as he truly \* Apologizes for himself; his main care † was so to express things that he might be understood, and further eloquence than this, he neither studied nor desired. If in these Books of his there be what \* Photinus affirms, some few things here and there ἐχ' ὑγιᾶς, not soundly or warily expressed, yet not, as he adds, like those of the *Hypotyposes*, but capable of a candid and benign interpretation, not considerably prejudicial either to the Doctrine and practice of Religion, and such as are generally to be met with in the

Writers

\* Vid. Euf. l. 6.  
c. 13. p. 214.

† Strom. l. 1. p.  
278. l. 4. p.  
476.  
\* Lib. 7. p. 766.

† Loc. supr. cit.  
col. 288.

\* Vbi supra p.  
767.  
† Ib. l. 1. p. 293.

\* Vbi supra.



Writers of those early Ages. And it is no wonder, if the good and pious Men of those times, who were continually engaged in fierce disputes with Heathens on the one side, and Jews and Heretics on the other, did not always *ὁρῶμεν*, *divide the truth aright*, in some nicer lines and strokes of it. The best is, their great piety and serviceableness in their Generations, while they lived, and the singular usefulness of their Writings to Posterity since they are dead, are abundantly enough to weigh down any little failures or mistakes that dropt from them.

His Writings.

Extant.  
*Protrepticon ad Gentes.*  
*Padagogi*, Libri III.  
*Stromateων*, Libri VIII.  
*Orat. Quisnam dives ille sit, qui salvetur.*  
*Epitome Doctrinae Orientalis Theodoti*, &c.

Not Extant.  
*Hypotyposew, seu Institutionum*, Libri VIII.

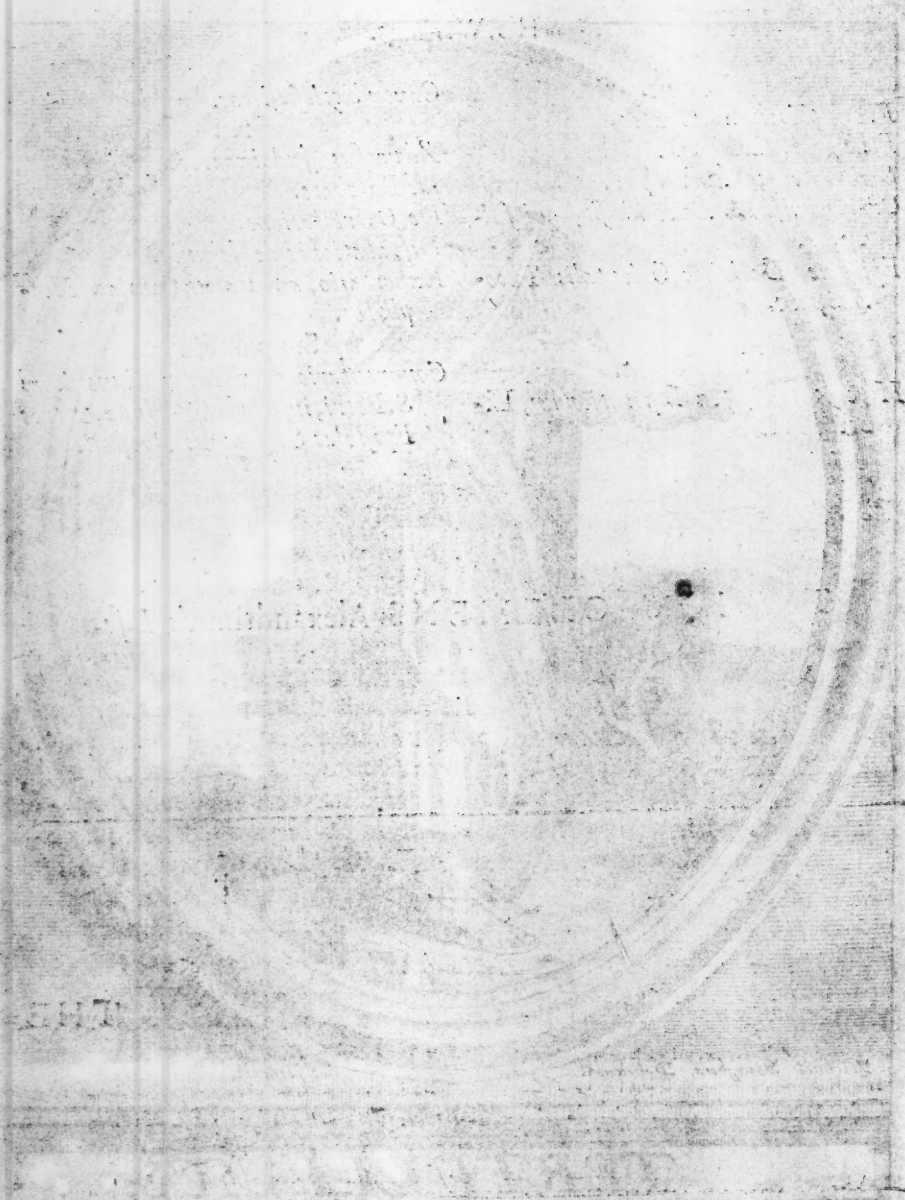
*Canon Ecclesiasticus.*  
feu  
*Adversus Judaizantes.*  
*De Paschate.*  
*De Obsecratione.*  
*Disputationes de Jejunio.*  
*Exhortatio ad Patientiam ad Neophytos.*  
Supposititious.  
*Commentariola in Prim. Canonicam S. Petri, in Epistolam Juda, & tres Epistolas S. Joannis Apostoli.*

*The End of S. CLEMENS Alexandrinus's Life.*

---

THE

---



THE LIFE OF  
**TERTULLIAN**  
 PRESBYTER OF  
 CARTHAGE.



**TERTULLIANUS.**

*His names, whence. His Father, who. His Education in all kinds of Learning. His skill in the Roman Laws. Different from Tertulian the Lawyer. His way of life before his conversion, enquired into. His married*



ried condition. His Conversion to Christianity, when. The great cruelty used towards the Christians. Severus his kindness to them. Tertullian's excellent Apology in their behalf. His address to Scapula, and the tendency of that discourse. Severus his violent persecuting the Christians. His prohibition of the Heteriæ. Tertullian's Book to the Martyrs, and concerning Patience. His zeal against Heresies, and Writings that way. His Book De Pallio, when written, and upon what occasion. His becoming Presbyter, when. His Book De Corona, and what the occasion of it. His declining from the Catholic Party. Montanus who, and whence. His principles and practices. Tertullian's owning them, and upon what occasion, His morose and stubborn temper. How far he complied with the Montanists, and acknowledged the Paraclete. How he was imposed upon. His Writings against the Catholics. The severity of the ancient Discipline. Episcopus Episcoporum, in what sense meant by Tertullian concerning the Bishop of Rome. His separate meetings at Carthage. His death. His Character. His singular parts and learning. His Books. His phrase and stile. What contributed to its perplexedness and obscurity. His un-orthodox opinions. A brief plea for him.

I.



QUINTUS Septimius Florens Tertullianus, was (as the Ancients\* affirm, and himself † implies when he calls it his Country) born at Carthage, the Metropolis of Afric, famous above all others for Antiquity, Sovereignty, and Power, inso-much that for some Ages it contended for glory and superiority even with Rome it self. He was called Septimius, because descended of the Gens Septimia, a Tribe of great account among the

Romans, being first Regal, afterwards Plebeian, and last of all Consular and Patrician. Florens from some particular Family of that House, so called, and Quintus (a title common among the Romans) probably because the fifth Child which his Parents had; and Tertullian, a derivative from Tertullus, it is like from his immediate Parent. His Father was a Souldier, a Centurion under the Proconsul of Afric (called therefore by S. Hierom and others Centurio Proconsularis) not a Man of Proconsular dignity, as some make him; he was a Gentile, in which Religion Tertullian also was brought up, as himself \* confesses. He was educated in all the accomplishments which the learning either of the Greeks or Romans could add to him, he seems to have left no paths untraced, to have intimately conversed with Poets, Historians, Orators, not to have looked only, but to have entered into the secrets of Philosophy and the Mathematics, not unseen in Physic, and the curiosities of nature, and as Eusebius † notes, a man famous for other things, but especially admirably skilled in the Roman Laws; though they who would hence infer him to have been a professed Lawyer, and the same with him whose Excerpta are yet extant in the Pandects, are guilty of a notorious mistake, the name of that Lawyer being Tertulianus; besides that dissonancy that is in their stile and language. Or suppose with others that this Tertulian was one of Papinians Scholars in the Reign of Alexander Severus, he must by this account be at least thirty Years after the others Conversion to Christianity. The original of the Error doubtless arose from the nearness and similitude of the names, and the character of his skill

\* Hieron. de script. in Tertul. Niceph. H. Eccl. l. 4. c. 34. p. 334.

† De Pall. c. 1. p. 112. & Apolog. c. 9. p. 9.

\* Apol. c. 18. p. 17.

† H. Eccl. l. 2. c. 2 p. 41.

skill in the *Roman* Laws given by *Eusebius*, which indeed is evident from his Works, and especially his *Apology* for the Christians.

II. WHAT was his particular course of life before he came over to the Christian Religion, is uncertain. They that conceive him to have been an Advocate, and publickly to have pleaded Causes, because after his conversion he \* says of himself, that he owed nothing to the *Forum*, took up no place among the *Rostra*, made no noise among the Benches, did not toss about the Laws, nor clamour out Causes, as if he had done all this before, might by the same reason conclude him to have been a Souldier, because he adds in the same place, that he owed nothing to the Camp, with some other Offices there mentioned by him. That he was married is evident, though whether before or after his embracing the Christian Faith, I cannot positively determine, probably before. However according to the severity of his principles, he lived with his wife a great part of his life in a state of Continency, conversing with her as his sister, exhorting her to perpetual coelibacy, and the utmost strictnesses of a single life, as appears by his two Books written to her upon that Subject.

III. HIS conversion to Christianity we may conceive to have hapned not long after the beginning of *Severus* his reign, and a little before the conclusion of the second Century. Being a Man of an inquisitive and sagacious mind, he had observed the powerful and triumphant efficacy of the Christian Faith over the minds and lives of Men, its great Antiquity, the admirable consent and truth of the Predictions recorded in the Books of the Christians, the frequent Testimonies which the Heathen deities themselves gave to its truth and divinity, the ordinary confessions of their *Demons* when forced to abandon the persons they had possessed, at the command of a Christian, all which he shews (a) at large (at least as we may probably guess) to have been the main inducements of his Conversion. In the very entrance of the following *Seculum*, *Severus* being gone to make War upon the *Parthians*, the Magistrates at *Rome*, and proportionably the Governours of Provinces, began to bear hard upon the Christians, beholding them as infamous persons, and especially Traitors to the Empire. Among whom the most principal person, I doubt not, was *Plautianus*, a Man in great favour with the Emperour, whose daughter was married to *Antoninus* the Emperour's eldest Son, and whom *Severus* at his going into the *East*, had made *Præfect* of *Rome*; of him we read, (b) that in the Emperours absence he put to death an infinite number both of the Nobility and Common People. Among whom we cannot question but the Christians had theirs, and its' like the far greatest share. And so notorious was the cruelty, that (c) *Severus* at his return was forced to apologize for himself, that he had no hand in it. And indeed *Severus* in the first part of his reign (was as *Tertullian* informs (d) us) very benign and favourable to the Christians; for having been cured of a dangerous distemper by one *Proculus* a Christian, who anointed him with oyl, he kept him at Court with him ever after. Nor did his kindness terminate here, for when he knew that several both Men and Women of the *Senatorial* Order were Christians, he was so far from persecuting them upon that account, that he gave them an honourable testimony, and restrained the people, when they were raging against the Christians. This I suppose to have been done at his return from the *Parthian* Expedition, when he found both Governours and People engaged in so hot and severe a Persecution of the Christians.

\* *De Pall. c. 5.*  
p. 118.

(a) *Vid. Apol. c.*  
19, 20. p. 18. c.  
23 p. 22, 23 &  
*alibi passim.*

(b) *Dio. Cass. H.*  
*Rom. l. 75. &*  
*Xiphil. in Vit.*  
*Sever. p. 328.*

(c) *Spartian in*  
*vit. Sever. c.*  
15. p. 350.

(d) *Ad Scapula*  
c. 4. p. 71.

IV. THE barbarous and cruel usage which the Christians generally met with, engaged *Tertullian* to vindicate and plead their cause both against the malice and cruelty of their enemies. For which purpose he published and sent abroad his *Apology*, dedicating it to the Magistrates of the Roman Empire, and especially the Senate at Rome (for that he went to Rome himself, and personally presented it to the Senate, I confess, I see no convincing evidence) wherein with incomparable learning and eloquence, with all possible evidence and strength of reason he pleads their Cause, complains of the iniquity and injustice of their enemies, and the methods of their proceedings, particularly demonstrates the vanity and falshood of those crimes that were commonly charged upon the Christians, arguing their meekness and innocency, their temperance and sobriety, their piety to God, and obedience to their Prince, the reasonableness of their principles, and the Holiness of their lives, beyond all just exception. An *Apology* which undoubtedly contributed towards the cooling and qualifying of the present Calentures, especially at *Severus* his return. And indeed it appears not by the whole series of that Discourse, that the Emperour had given any particular countenance to those severities; nay on the contrary, he expressly styles \* him the *most constant Prince*. Not long after this, *Tertullian* found work nearer home, *Scapula* the President, and *Proconsul* of *Afric*, (the same probably with *Scapula Tertyllus*, a Provincial President, to whom there is a *Rescript* of *Marcus* and (a) *Commodus*) treating the Christians much at the same rate that *Plantianus* had done at Rome. To him therefore he addresses himself in a neat and pathetical Discourse, representing the honesty and simplicity of Christians, and their hearty prayers and endeavours for the prosperity of the Empire, and those particular instances of severity which the Divine Providence had lately inflicted upon it, which could not be reasonably supposed to have been sent upon any other errand, so much as to revenge the innocent blood that had been shed; laying before him the clemency and indulgence of former Princes and Presidents, yea and of the present Emperour himself, so great a friend to Christians. A plain evidence that this Book was written at this time, before *Severus* broke out into open violence against them.

\* *Apol. c. 4. p. 5.*

(a) *L. 14. ff. de Offic. Præsidi. lib. 1. Tit. 18.*

(b) *Euseb. Chron. ad eundem An.*

(c) *Æl. Spartian. in vit. Sever. c. 17. p. 352.*

(d) *L. 1. ff. de Offic. Præsidi. l. 14. Tit. 12. lib. 1.*

(e) *Euseb. H. Eccl. l. 6. c. 1. p. 201.*  
(f) *Ibid. c. 6. p. 208.*

V. THE Christians now enjoyed a little respite: but alas it was but like the intermitting fits of a Fever, which being over, the *paroxysm* returns with a fiercer violence, *Ann. Chr. CCII. Severi X.* (b) the Persecution revived, and was now carried on by the command of the Emperour. For *Severus* in his journey through *Palestin* forbade (c) any under the heaviest penalties to become *Jews*; and the same Orders he issued out concerning Christians. The general pretence it's like was the prohibiting the *Hateria*, or unlawful Societies, (which we have elsewhere described) for such a *Rescript* (d) *Vlpian* mentions, whereby *Severus* forbade the *illegal Colleges*, commanding the persons frequenting them to be accused before the *Præfekt* of the City, in which number they usually beheld the Christians; though I doubt not but there were (as *Spartianus* plainly affirms) particular *Edicts* issued out against them. The People, who could hardly be held in before, having now the reins thrown upon their necks, and spurred on by the Imperial Orders, ran apace upon the execution, so that the Churches in all places (e) were filled with Martyrdoms and the blood of the Saints, and it grew so hot, that (f) *Jude* a Writer of those Times drawing down his *Chronology* of *Daniels* LXX Weeks,



Weeks, to this Year, broke off his computation, supposing that the so much celebrated coming of *Antichrist* was now at hand. So exceedingly (says the Historian) were the minds of many shaken and disturbed with the present Persecution. *Tertullian*, that he might speak a word in season, took hold of the present opportunity; and wrote to the Martyrs in prison, to comfort them under their sufferings, and exhort them to constancy and final perseverance; as also for the same reason and about the same time he published his Discourse concerning Patience, wherein he very elegantly describes the advantages and commendations of that Vertue, and especially urges it from the example of God, our blessed Saviour, and speaks therein more favourably than he did afterwards of retiring in a time of Persecution. Nor was he less watchful to defend and preserve the Church from Errour and Heresie, writing his *Prescription against Hereticks*, (for that it was written about this time is evident from several passages, especially where he mentions the time of Persecution, the place of the *Tribunal*, the person of the Judge, the bringing forth of Lions, and the like,) wherein he enumerates and insists upon the several Heresies which had infested the Church till that time; censuring and confuting their absurd opinions, and promising \* a more distinct and particular confutation of them afterwards. Which accordingly he performed in his Discourses against the *Jews*, against *Hermogenes*, the *Valentinians*, *Marcion*, *Praxeas*, and some others of their Profelytes and Disciples, and some of the *Montanists* themselves, writing a particular Tract concerning *Baptism*, and the use of Water in it, and its necessity to salvation, against *Quintilla* a Woman of great note and eminency among the followers of *Montanus*, what value soever he afterwards seemed to put upon that Sect.

\* *De Prescript.*  
*Heret. c. 45.*  
p. 219.

VI. ABOUT the XV. of *Severus*, *Ann. Chr. CCVII.* he published his Book *De Pallio* upon this occasion. He had lately left off the *Gown*, the Garment ordinarily worn in all parts of the *Roman* Empire, and had put on the *Cloak*, the usual habit of Philosophers, and of all those Christians that entered upon a severer state of life, as we have shewn in the life of *Justin Martyr*. Hereupon he was derided by them of *Carthage* for his lightness and vanity, in so wantonly skipping à *Toga ad Pallium*, from the Gown to the Cloak, satyrically taxing his inconstancy in turning from one course of life to another. To vindicate himself he writes this Discourse, wherein he puts forth the keenness of a Sarcastic Wit, and spreads all the sails of his *African* eloquence, retorts the case upon his accusers, shews the antiquity, simplicity, easiness, and gravity of his habit, and smartly upbraids that luxury and prodigality that had over-run all orders and ranks of Men. And that this was done about this time, and not at his first taking upon him the profession of Christianity, is judiciously observed and urged by *Baronius*†, and more fully proved by the learned *Salmasius* in his notes upon that Book. Indeed the circumstances mentioned by \* *Tertullian* do not well suit with any other time, as the *presentis Imperii triplex virtus*, which cannot reasonably be meant of any, but *Severus* and his two Sons, *Antoninus* and *Geta*, whence in several ancient inscriptions they are put together under the title of *AUGUSTI*, and *Emperours*; the present happiness, security, enlargement, and tranquillity of the *Roman* State, which these three powers of the Empire had made like a well-cultivated Field, *eradicato omni aconito hostilitatis*, every poisonous weed of hostility and sedition

† *Ad Ann. 197.*  
n. 3. & seq.

\* *De Pall. cap.*  
2. p. 114.

† *Euseb. Chron.*  
*ad eund. Ann.*

\* *Spart. in vit.*  
*Sever. c. 18.*  
*p. 354.*

(a) *Ibid. c. 4.*  
*p. 118.*  
(b) *Chron. ad*  
*Ann. CCVIII.*

(c) *De Coron.*  
*Milit. c. 1. p.*  
*100.*

dition being rooted up, with a great deal more to the same purpose. Which evidently refers both to his Conquest of *Pescennius Niger*, who usurped the Empire, and whom he overthrew and killed at *Cyzicum* in the East, and to his last years Victory (as † *Eusebius* places it) over *Clodius Albinus* and his Party, whom he subdued and slew at *Lyons* in France, for attempting to make himself Emperour, as afterwards he came into *Britain*, (*maximæ ejus Imperii Decus*, as the \* Historian styles it, the greatest honour and ornament of his Empire) where he conquered the Natives, and secured his Conquests by the famous *Picts Wall* which he built: by which means he rendred the State of the Roman Empire pacate and quiet. At the same time we may suppose it was that *Tertullian* was made *Presbyter* of *Carthage*, and that that was the particular occasion of altering his habit, and assuming the Philosophic *Pallium*, the Clergy of thosetimes being generally those who took upon them an *Ascetic* course of life, and for which reason doubtless the Cloak is called by *Tertullian*, in his Dialect (a), *Sacerdos Suggestus*, the Priestly habit. Accordingly (b) *Eusebius* takes notice of him this very year as becoming famous in the account and esteem of all Christian Churches.

VII. BEFORE *Severus* left *Rome* in order to his *Britanic* expedition, were solemnized the *Decennalia* of *Antoninus Caracalla*, when besides many magnificent Sports and Shews, and a Largess bestowed upon the People, the Emperour gave a *Donative* to the Souldiers, which every one that received, was to come up to the *Tribune* with a *Laurel Crown* upon his head. Among the rest there was one (c) Christian, who brought his Crown along with him in his hand, and being asked the reason why like others he wore it not upon his head? answered, he could not, for that he was a Christian. A Council of War was presently called, and the Man accused before the General, stripped of his Military ornaments, his Cloak, Shoes, and Sword, unmercifully beaten, till he was died in his own blood, and then cast into prison, there expecting Martyrdom, and a better donative and reward from Christ. The rest of the Christians, who were Fellow-Souldiers in the same Army, took offence at his over-nice scrupulosity. What was this but needlessly to betray their liberty, and to Sacrifice the general quiet and peace of Christians to one man's private humour? to give the common Enemy too just a provocation to fall upon them? where did the Laws of their Religion forbid such an innocent compliance, nay rather not only give leave, but command us prudently to decline a danger, by withdrawing from it? what was this but a sturdy and an affected singularity, as if he had been the only Christian? *Tertullian*, whose mighty zeal engaged him to be a Patron to whatever had but the shadow of strictness and severity, presently set himself to defend the fact, and wrote his Book *De Corona Militis*, wherein he cries up the Act as an heroic piece of Zeal and Christian Magnanimity, not only warrantable, but honourable, not only lawful, but just and necessary, fortifying his assertion with several arguments, and endeavouring to disable the most specious objections that were made against it. This Military Act, and *Tertullian's* vindication of it, hapned (as we have here placed it) *Ann. Chr. CCVIII. Sever. XVI.* while others refer it to the year *CXCIX. Sever. VII.* when the Emperour by the decree of the *Senate* created his elder Son *Antoninus* Emperour, and his younger *Geta, Cesar*, in testimony whereof he entertained the People with various Shews and Solemnities, and bestowed

flowed a *Donative* upon the Souldiers. If the Reader like this period of time better, I will not contend with him, it being what I my self upon second thoughts do not think improbable.

VIII. BUT *let him that thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall.* Tertullian, who had hitherto stood firm and right in the Communion of the Catholic Church, began now, about the middle of his Age, says \* S. Hierom (which I am inclinable rather to understand of his Age as a Christian, than the current of his life) to incline towards the errors of the *Montanists*. Of which before we give an account, it may not be amiss a little to enquire into the Author and Principles of that Sect. † *Montanus* was born at *Ardaba*, a little Village in *Mysia* in the confines of *Phrygia*, where about the latter times of *Antoninus Pius*, but especially in the Reign of his Successor, he began to shew himself. *Pride* and an immoderate ambition betrayed the man into the snare and condemnation of the Devil. At which breach *Satan* having entred, took possession of the man, who acted by the influence of an evil Spirit; was wont on a sudden to fall into Enthusiastic fits and Ecstatic raptures, and while he was in them, in a furious and a frantic manner he poured out wild and unheard of things, prophesying of what was to come in a way and strain that had not been used hitherto in the Church. Profelytes he wanted not, that came over to his Party. At first only some few of his Countrymen, the *Phrygians* (whence his Sect derived the title of *Cataphryges*) were drawn into the snare, whom he instructed in the Arts of Evil speaking, teaching them to reproach the whole Christian Church for refusing to entertain and honour his Pseudo-Prophetic Spirit; the same Spirit on the contrary pronouncing them blessed that joyned themselves to this new Prophet, and swelling them with the mighty hopes and promises of what should happen to them, sometimes also gently reproving and condemning them. Among the rest of his Disciples two Women were especially remarkable, *Prisca*, and *Maximilla*, whom having first corrupted, he imparted his *Demon* to them, whereby they were presently enabled to utter the most frantic incoherent and extravagant Discourses. The truth is he seemed to lay his Scene with all imaginable craft and subtlety; in the great and foundation-principles of Religion he agreed with the Catholics, embraced entirely the holy Scriptures, and pretended that he must receive the gifts of Divine Grace extraordinarily conferred upon him; which he gave out were more immediately the Holy Ghost: he made a singular shew of some uncommon rigours and severities in Religion, gave Laws for more strict and solemn Fasts, and more frequently to be observed, than were among the Orthodox, taught Divorces to be lawful, and forbad all second marriages, called *Pepuza* and *Tymium*, two little Towns of *Phrygia*, *Jerusalem*, that so he might the more plausibly invite simple and unwary Profelytes to flock thither. And because he knew no surer way to oblige such persons as would be serviceable to him, than by Proposals of gain and advantage, he used all methods of extorting money from his deluded followers, especially under the notion of Gifts and Offerings, for which purpose he appointed Collectors to receive the Oblations that were brought in, with which he maintained under-Officers, and paid Salaries to those that propagated his Doctrines up and down the World. Such were the Arts, such the Principles of the Sect first started by *Montanus*; what additions were made by his followers in after-Ages, I am not now concerned to enquire.

\* De Script. in Tertull.

† Vet. Script. ap. Euseb. l. 5. c. 16. p. 180, &c. Appollon. ibid. c. 18. p. 184. E. i. h. Heres. XLVIII. p. 175. Tertull. de Prescript. Heretic. c. 52. p. 223.



\* *Ubi supra*  
*vid. Niceph. l.*  
*4. c. 12. p. 994.*

† *Lib. 6. c. 20.*  
*p. 222. l. 2. c.*  
*25. p. 67. Hieron. de Script.*  
*in Caio.*  
 \* *De jejuni. c. 1.*  
*p. 544.*

IX. ALLURED with the smooth and specious pretences of this Sect, *Tertullian* began to look that way, though the particular occasion of his starting aside, \* *S. Hierom* tells us, was the envy and reproaches which he met with from the Clergy of the Church of *Rome*. They that conceive him to have sued for the See of *Carthage*, vacant by the death of *Agrippinus*, and that he was opposed and repulsed in it by the Clergy of *Rome* and so highly resented the affront, as thereupon to quit the Communion of the Catholic Church, talk at random, and little consider the mortified temper of the Man, and his known contempt of the World. Probable it is, that being generally noted for the excessive and over-rigorous strictness of his manners, he had been charged by some of the *Roman* Clergy for compliance with *Montanus*, and it may be admonished to recant, or disown those Principles. Which his stubborn and resolute temper not admitting, he was together with *Proclus* and the rest of the *Cataphrygian* Party cut off by the Bishop of *Rome* from all Communion with that Church. For there had been lately a disputation held at *Rome* between *Caius*, an ancient Orthodox Divine, and *Proclus*, one of the Heads of the *Montanist* Party ( as † *Eusebius* who read the account of it published by *Caius*, informs us ) wherein *Proclus* being worsted, was together with all the followers of that Sect excommunicated, and *Tertullian* himself among the rest, as he sufficiently \* intimates. This, a Man of a morose and unyielding disposition, and who could brook no moderation that seemed to intrench upon the Discipline and Practice of Religion, could not bear, and therefore making light of the judgment and censures of that Church, flew off, and joined himself to *Montanus* his Party, whose pretended austerities seemed of all others most agreeable to his humour and genius, and most exactly to conspire with the course and method of his life. But as it cannot be doubted that he looked no further than to the appearances and pretensions of that Sect ( not seeing the corrupt Springs by which the Engine was managed within ) so it is most reasonable and charitable to conceive, that he never understood their principles in the utmost latitude and extent of them. If he seems sometimes to acknowledge *Montanus* to be the *Paraclete* that was to come into the World, probably he meant not something distinct from the Holy Spirit bestowed upon the Apostles, but a mighty power and extraordinary assistance of the Holy Ghost shed upon *Montanus*, whom God had sent into the World, more fully and perfectly to explain the Doctrines of the Gospel, and to urge the rules and institutions of the Christian life, which our Lord had delivered when he was upon Earth, but did not with the greatest accuracy the things were capable of, the minds of Men not being then duly qualified to receive them. That for this end he thought *Montanus* invested with miraculous powers and a Spirit of Prophecy ( a thing not unusual even in those times ) and might believe his two Prophetesses to be acted with the same Spirit. All which might consist with an honest mind, imposed upon by crafty and plausible pretences. And plain it is that for some considerable time *Montanus* maintained the reputation of great piety, zeal, sanctity, and extraordinary gifts, before he was discovered to the World. And *Tertullian* in all likelihood had his accounts concerning him, not from himself, but from *Proclus*, or some others of the Party, who might easily delude him, especially in matters of fact, with false informations. However nothing can be more evident, than that he looked

looked \* upon these new Prophets as innovating nothing in the Principles of Christianity; that *Montanus* Preached no other God, nor asserted any thing to the prejudice of our blessed Saviour, nor subverted any rule of Faith or Hope, but only introduced greater severities than other men: that he was not the Author, but the restorer of Discipline, and only reduced things to that ancient strictness, from which he supposed they had degenerated, especially in the cases of cœlibacy, single marriages, and such like, as he † more than once particularly tells us. Not to say, that *Montanus* his followers (as is usual with the after-brood of every Sect) asserted many things, which their Master himself never dreamt of, which yet without distinction are laid at his door, and *Tertullian* too because a favourer of the Party, drawn into the guilt, and made liable to many improvements, to the *Hay and Stubble* which the Successors of that Sect built upon it.

\* *De Jejun. loc. citat.*

† *Vid. l. de Monogam. c. 1. p. 525. & c. 3. & 4. & passim de Jejun. c. 12. p. 550, 551.*

X. BUT however it was, he stomached his Excommunication, and was highly offended at the looseness and remissness of the Discipline among the Catholics, whom with great smartness he persecutes under the name of *Psychici*, or *Animal* persons, as those that took too much liberty in their manners and practices of Devotion, stiling his own Party *Spirituales*, as whom he thought more immediately guided by the Spirit, more plentifully endowed with the gifts of it, and conversant in a more divine and spiritual life. Against these *Psychici* he presently published a Tract *De Jejuniis*, wherein he defends the *Montanists* in the observation of their Fasts, their abstinence from Flesh, and feeding only upon dried meats, their Stationary days, and the keeping them till the very evening, while the Orthodox broke up theirs about three of the Clock in the afternoon; in all which respects he makes many tart and severe reflections upon them. Indeed the devotions of those times were brisk and fervent, their usages strict and punctual, their Ecclesiastic Discipline generally very rigid and extream, seldom admitting persons that had lapsed after Baptism to Penance and the Communion of the Church. But this was looked upon by moderate and sober men as making the gate too strait, and that which could not but discourage Converts from entering in. Accordingly it began to be relaxed in several places, and particularly the Bishop of Rome \* had lately published a constitution, wherein he admitted persons guilty of Adultery and Fornication (and probably other crimes) to a place among the Penitents. Against this *Tertullian* storms, cries up the severity of the ancient Discipline, writes his Book *De Pudicitia*, wherein he considers and disputes the case, and aggravates the greatness of those offences, and undertakes the Arguments that pleaded for remission and indulgence. And if in the mentioning of this Decree the Bishop of Rome be stiled *Episcopus Episcoporum*, the Champions of that Church before they make such advantage of it, should do well to prove it to have been a part of the Decree, or, if it was, that it was mentioned by *Tertullian* as his just right and privilege, and not rather (which is infinitely more probable) *Tertullian's* Sarcasm, intended by him as an Ironical reflection, and a tart upbraiding the Pride and Ambition of the Bishops of that Church, who took too much upon them, and began (as appears from Pope *Victor's* carriage towards the *Asian* Churches in the case of *Easter*.) to domineer over their Brethren, and usurp an insolent Authority over the whole Christian Church. And that this was his meaning, I am abundantly satisfied from

\* *Ter. de Pudicit. c. 1. p. 553.*

\* Apud Cypr.  
p. 282.

\* Cyprian's using the phrase in this very sense in the famous Synod at *Carthage*, where reflecting upon the rash and violent proceedings of the Bishops of *Rome* (whom though he particularly names not, yet all who are acquainted with the Story know whom he means) against those who were engaged in the cause of re-baptizing Heretics, he adds, "That as for themselves (the Bishops then in the Synod) none of them made himself *Bishop of Bishops*, or by a tyrannical threatening forced his Col-leagues into a necessity of compliance: since every Bishop according to the power and liberty granted to him, had his proper jurisdiction, and could no more be judged by another, than he himself could judge others."

† *August de*  
*Heret. c. 86.*  
*Tom. 6. col. 31.*

\* *De Script. in*  
*Tertul.*

XI. WHETHER ever he was reconciled to the Catholic Communion, appears not; 'tis certain that for the main he forsook the † *Catharyrians*, and kept his separate meetings at *Carthage*, and his Church was yet remaining till St. *Augustin's* time, by whose labours the very reliques of his followers, called *Tertullianists*, were dispersed, and quite disappeared. How long he continued after his departure from the Church, is not known; St. *Hierom* \* says that he lived to a very decrepit Age, but whether he died under the Reign of *Alexander Severus*, or before, the Ancients tells us not, as neither whether he died a natural or violent death. He seems indeed to have been possessed with a passionate desire of laying down his life for the Faith; though had he been a Martyr, some mention would without peradventure have been made of it in the Writings of the Church.

† *Loc. citat.*

XII. HE was a Man of a smart and acute wit, though a little too much edged with Keeness and Satyrism, *acris & vehementis ingenii*, as † S. *Hierom* characters him, one that knew not how to treat an adversary without salt and sharpness. He was of a stiff and rugged disposition, a rigid Cenfor, inclined to Choler, and impatient of opposition, a strict observer of Rites and Discipline, and a zealous asserter of the highest rigors and most nice severities of Religion. His learning was admirable, wherein though many excelled, he had no Superiours, and few equals in the Age he lived in: *Tertulliano quid eruditius, quid acutius?* says S. \* *Hierom*, who adds that his *Apology*, and Book against the *Gentiles* took in all the treasures of Humane Learning. † *Vincentius* of St. *Lerin* gives him this notable *Elogium*. "He is justly (*says he*) to be esteemed the Prince among the Writers of the *Latin Church*. For what more learned? who more conversant both in divine and humane Studies? who by a strange largeness and capacity of mind hath drawn all Philosophy, and its several Sects, the Authors and Abettors of Heresies with all their Rites and Principles, and the whole circumference of History and all kind of Study within the compass of his own breast. A Man of such quick and weighty parts, that there was scarce any thing which he set himself against, which he did not either pierce through with the *acumen* of his Wit, or batter down with the strength and solidity of his Arguments. Who can sufficiently commend his Discourses, so thick set with Troops of Reasons, that whom they cannot persuade, they are ready to force to an assent? who hath almost as many sentences as words, and not more periods, than Victories over those whom he hath to deal with."

\* *Epist. ad Mag*  
*Orator. p. 328.*  
*T. 2.*  
† *Commonit.*  
*adv. Heret. cap.*  
*24. p. 59, 60.*

XIII. FOR his Books, though time has devoured many, yet a great number still remain, and some of them written after his withdrawal from



from the Church. His stile is for the most part abrupt and haughty, and its face full of ancient wrinkles, of which \* *Lactantius* long since gave this censure, that though he himself was skilled in all points of Learning; yet his stile was rugged and uneasy, and very obscure; as indeed it requires a very attentive and diligent, a sharp and sagacious understanding, yet is it lofty and masculine, and carries a kind of majestic eloquence along with it, that gives a pleasant relish to the judicious and inquisitive Reader. It is deeply tinged with the *African* Dialect, and owes not a little of its perplexedness and obscurity to his conversing so much in the Writings of the *Greeks*, whose forms and idioms he had so made his own, that they naturally flowed into his pen; and how great a Master he was of that Tongue is plain, in that himself† tells us he wrote a Book concerning *Baptism*, and some others, in *Greek*; which could not but exceedingly vitiate and infect his native stile, and render it less smooth, elegant, and delightful, as we see in *Ammianus Marcellinus*, who being a *Greek* born, wrote his *Roman History* in *Latin*, in a stile rough and unpleasant, and next door to Barbarous. Besides what was in it self obscure and uneven, became infinitely worse by the ignorance of succeeding Ages, who changed, what they did not understand, and crowded in spurious words in the room of those which were proper and natural; till they had made it look like quite another thing than what it was, when it first came from under the hand of its Author.

XIV. HIS errors and unsound opinions are frequently noted by St. *Augustin* and the Ancients, (not to mention later *Censors*) and *Pameli*us has reduced his *Paradoxes* to thirty one, which together with their Explications and Antidotes he has prefixed before the Editions of his Works. That of *Montanus* his being the *Paraclete*, we noted before, and for other things relating to that Sect, they are rather matters concerning Order and Discipline, than Articles and Points of Faith. It cannot be denied but that he has some unwarrantable notions, common with other Writers of those Times, and some more peculiar to himself. But he lived in an Age, when the Faith was yet green and tender, when the Church had not publickly and solemnly defined things by explicit Articles, and nice Propositions, when the Philosophy of the Schools was mainly predominant, and Men ran immediately from the *Stoa* and the *Academy* to the Church, when a greater latitude of opening was indulged, and good Men were infinitely more solicitous about piety and a good life, than about modes of Speech, and how to express every thing so critically and exactly, that it should not be liable to a severe scrutiny and examination.

\* *Lib. 5. cap. 1. p. 459.*

† *De Baptism. c. 15. p. 230. de Coron. c. 6. p. 104.*

## His Writings.

## Genuine.

*Apologeticus.*  
*Ad Nationes, Libri II.*  
*De Testimonio Anima.*  
*Ad Scapulam.*  
*De Spectaculis.*  
*De Idololatria.*  
*De Corona.*  
*De Pallio.*  
*De Penitentia.*  
*De Oratione.*  
*Ad Martyres.*  
*De Patientia.*  
*De cultu fœminarum, Lib. II.*  
*Ad Uxorem, Lib. II.*  
*De Virginibus Velandis.*  
*Adversus Judæos.*  
*De Præscriptione Hereticorum.*  
*De Baptismo.*  
*Adversus Hermogenem.*  
*Adversus Valentinianos.*  
*De Anima.*  
*De Carne Christi.*  
*De Resurrectione Carnis.*  
*Adversus Marcionem, Lib. V.*  
*Scorpiace.*  
*Adversus Praxeam.*

## Libri Post Lapsum in Montanifum scripti.

*De Exhortatione Castitatis.*  
*De Monogamia.*  
*De fuga in Persecutione.*  
*De Jejuniis.*  
*De Pudicitia.*

## Supposititious.

## Poemata.

*Adversus Marcionem, Lib. V.*  
*De judicio Domini.*  
*Genesis.*  
*Sodoma.*

## Not Extant.

*De Paradiso.*  
*De Spe Fidelium.*  
*De Ecstasi.*  
*Adversus Apollonium.*  
*Adversus Apellecianos.*  
*De Vestibus Aaron.*  
*De Censu Anima.*

## Græce.

*De Corona.*  
*De Virginibus Velandis.*  
*De Baptismo.*

*The End of* TERTULLIAN's *Life.*

THE

# THE LIFE OF ORIGEN

Presbyter, Catechist of  
ALEXANDRIA.



Origen, where and when born. Several conjectures about the original of his name. His Father who. His juvenile education, and great towardliness in the knowledge of the Scriptures. His Philosophical Studies under Clemens



mens Alexandrinus. *His Institution under Ammonius.* Ammonius who. *His fame and excellency confessed by the Gentile Philosophers.* Another Origen his contemporary: These two heedlessly confounded. *His Fathers Martyrdom, and the Confiscation of his Estate.* Origen's resolute encouragement of his Father. *His own passionate desire of Martyrdom.* His maintenance by an honourable Matron of Alexandria: His zeal against Hereticks. *His setting up a private School.* His succeeding Clemens in the Catechetic School at eighteen years of Age. The frequency of his Auditors. Many of them Martyrs for the Faith. Origen's resolution in attending upon the Martyrs. His danger. His courageous act at the Temple of Serapis. His emasculating himself, and the reasons of it. The eminent Chastity of those Primitive times. Origen's Journey to Rome and return to Alexandria. His taking in a Colleague into the Catechetic Office. His learning the Hebrew Tongue. The prudent method of his Teaching. Ambrosius Converted. Who he was, His great intimacy with Origen. Origen sent for by the Governor of Arabia. His Journey into Palestin, and teaching at Cæsarea. Remanded by the Bishop of Alexandria. Alexander Severus his excellent virtues, and kindness for the Christian Religion. Origen sent for by the Empress Mammæa to Antioch. He begins to write his Commentaries. How many Notaries, and Transcribers employed, and by whom maintained. Notaries, their Original and Office: Their use and institution in the Primitive Church. His Journey into Greece. His passage through Palestin, and being ordained Presbyter at Cæsarea. Demetrius of Alexandria his envy and rage against him. Origen condemned in two Synods at Alexandria, and one at Rome. The resignation of his Catechetic School to Heraclas. Heraclas who. The Story of his offering Sacrifice. The credit of this story questioned, and why. His departure from Alexandria, and fixing at Cæsarea. The eminency of his School there. Gregorius Thaumaturgus his Scholar. His Friendship with Firmilian: Firmilian who. The Persecution under Maximinus. Origen's Book written to the Martyrs. His retirement whither. His comparing the Versions of the Bible. His Tetrapla, Hexapla, and Octapla, what, and how managed: A Specimen given of them. His second Journey to Athens. His going to Nicomedia, and Letter to Africanus about the History of Sufanna. His confutation of Beryllus in Arabia. His answer to Celsus. Celsus who. Origen's Letters to Philip the Emperor. The vanity of making him a Christian. Origen's journey into Arabia to refute Heresies. The Helcesaitæ who: What their Principles. Alexander's Miraculous Election to the See of Jerusalem. His Coadjutor-ship, Government, Sufferings, and Martyrdom. Origen's grievous Sufferings at Tyre under the Decian Persecution. His deliverance out of Prison; Age, and Death. His Character. His strict life. His mighty zeal, abstinence, contempt of the World, indefatigable diligence, and patience noted. His natural parts: incomparable learning. His Books, and their several Classes. His stile, what. His unsound Opinions. The great Out-cry against him in all Ages. The Apologies written in his behalf. Several things noted out of the Ancients to extenuate the charge. His assertions not Dogmatical, not intended for public view. Generally, such as were not determined by the Church. His Books corrupted, and by whom. His own complaints to that purpose. The Testimonies of Athanasius, and Theodotus, and Haymo in his vindication. Great errors and mistakes acknowledged

known. *What things contributed to them. His great kindness for the Platonic Principles. St. Hierom's moderate censure of him. His repenting of his rash Propositions. His Writings enumerated, and what now extant.*

I.



**ORIGEN**, called also *Adamantius* (either from the unwearied temper of his mind, and that strength of reason wherewith he compacted his Discourses, or his firmness and constancy in Religion; notwithstanding all the assaults made against it) was born at *Alexandria*, the known *Metropolis* of *Egypt*; unless we will suppose, that upon some particular

Tumult or Persecution raised against the Christians in that City, his Parents fled for refuge to the Mountainous parts thereabouts, where his Mother was delivered of him, and that thence he was called *Origenes*, quasi ἐν ὄρεσι γεννηθείς (which most conceive to be the Etymology of his name) *one born in the Mountains*. But whether that be the proper derivation of the word, or the other the particular occasion of its imposition, let the Reader determine as he please. However I believe the Reader will think it a much more probable and reasonable conjecture, than what one \* supposes, that he was so called because born of holy Parents; the Saints in Scripture being (as he tells us) sometimes metaphorically stiled *Mountains*. The first and the last I dare say that ever made that conjecture. A learned Man † supposes him rather (and thinks no doubt can be made of it) so called from *Orus*, an *Egyptian* word, and with them the title of *Apollo* or the *Sun* (from ὥς no question, which signifies light or fire) one of their Principal Deities. Hence *Orus*, the name of one of the *Egyptian* Kings, as it has been also of many others. And thus as ἀπὸ τοῦ Διὸς comes *Diogenes*, one born of *Jupiter*, so ἀπὸ τοῦ Ὀρεῖ is derived *Origenes*, one descended of *Or* or *Orus*, a Deity solemnly Worshipped at *Alexandria*. A conjecture that might have commanded its own entertainment, did not one prejudice lye against it, that we can hardly conceive so good a Man, and so severe a Christian as *Origen's* Father, would impose a name upon his Child, for which he must be beholden to an Heathen Deity, and whom he might see every day worshipped with the most sottish Idolatry, that he should let him perpetually carry about that remembrance of Pagan Idolatry in his name, which they so particularly and so solemnly renounced in their Baptism. But to return.

II. **HE** was born about the year of our Lord **CLXXXVI.** being seventeen \* years of age at his Fathers death, who suffered, *Ann. Chr. CCII. Severi X.* His Father was *Leonides*, whom *Suidas* † and some others (without any authority, that I know of, from the Ancients) make a Bishop: to be sure he was a good Man, and a Martyr for the Faith. In his younger years he was brought up under the tutorage of his own \* Father, who instructed him in all the grounds of humane literature, and together with them took especial care to instill the principles of Religion, seasoning his early age with the notices of divine things, so that like another *Timothy*, from a Child he knew the holy Scriptures, and was thoroughly exercised and instructed in them. Nor was his Father more diligent to insinuate his instructions, than the subject he managed was capable to receive them. Part of his daily task was to learn and repeat some

\* Oerfuns, δ  
ἐν τοῖς ὄρεσι  
γεννηθείς. Suid.  
in voc. Ὀρεῖ.  
P. 330. T. 2.

\* Halloix not,  
ad Orig. de-  
sens. c. p. 1.

† Voss. de Idol.  
l. 2. c. 10. p.  
182.

\* Euseb. H. Ec.  
l. 6. c. 2. p. 203.  
† In voc. Ὀρε-  
ῖ, p. 339.  
Tom. 2.

\* Euseb. ibid.  
p. 202.

some parts of the holy Scriptures, which he readily discharged. But not satisfied with the bare reading or recital of them, he began to enquire more narrowly into the more profound sense of them, often importuning his Father with questions, what such or such a passage of Scripture meant. The good Man though seemingly reproving his busie forwardness, and admonishing him to be content with the plain obvious sense, and not to ask questions above his age, did yet inwardly rejoyce in his own mind, and heartily bless God that he had made him the Father of such a Child. Much ado had the prudent Man to keep the exuberance of his love and joy from running over before others, but in private he gave it vent, frequently going into the Chamber where the Youth lay asleep, and reverently kissing his naked Breast, the treasury of an early piety and a divine Spirit, reflected upon himself how happy he was in so excellent a Son. So great a comfort, so invaluable a blessing is it to pious Parents to see their Children setting out betimes in the way of Righteousness, and sucking in Religion almost with their Mothers Milk.

III. HAVING passed over his paternal education, he was put to perfect his Studies under the Institution of *Clemens Alexandrinus*, then Regent of the *Catechist* School at *Alexandria*, where according to the acuteness of his Parts, and the greatness of his Industry he made vast improvements in all sort of Learning. From him he betook himself to *Ammonius*, who had then newly set up a *Platonic* School at *Alexandria*, and had reconciled \* those inveterate feuds and differences that had been between the Schools of *Plato* and *Aristotle*, and which had reigned among their Disciples till his time, which he did (says my Author) ἐκ θεοεισίας πρὸς τὸ τῆς φιλοσοφίας ἀληθινόν, out of a divine transport for the truth of Philosophy, despising the little opinions, and wrangling contentions of peevish Men, and propounding a more free and generous kind of Philosophy to his Auditors. Among whom was our *Origen*, as *Porphry* † besides others witnesses, who saw *Origen* when himself was but a Youth. This *Ammonius* was called *Saccas*, (from his carrying \* Sacks of Corn upon his Back, being a Porter by employment, before he betook himself to the Study of Philosophy) one of the most learned and eloquent Men of those times, a great Philosopher, and the chief of the *Platonic* Sect, and which was above all, a Christian, born and brought up among them, as † *Porphry* himself is forced to confess; though when he tells us, that afterwards upon maturer consideration, and his entring upon Philosophy, he renounced Christianity, and embraced Paganism and the Religion of the Empire, he is as little to be credited, and guilty of as notorious a falsehood (as *Eusebius* observes) as when he affirms that *Origen* was born and bred up a *Gentile*, and then turned off to Christianity, when as nothing was more evident, than that *Origen* was born of Christian Parents, and that *Ammonius* retained his Christian and divine Philosophy to the very last minute of his life, whereof the Books which he left behind him were a standing evidence. Indeed \* *Eutychius* Patriarch of *Alexandria* (if he means the same) seems to give some countenance to *Porphry*'s report, and farther adds, that *Ammonius* was one of the twenty Bishops, which *Heraclas* then Bishop of *Alexandria*, constituted over the *Egyptian* Churches, but that he deserted his Religion. Which *Heraclas* no sooner heard of, but he convened a Synod of Bishops and went to the City, where *Ammonius* was Bishop, where having thoroughly scanned and discussed the matter, he reduced him back again to

\* Hierocl. l. i. de provid. & Fat. ap. Phot. Cod. CCXIV. col. 349. & Cod. CCLI. col. 1381.

† Apud. Euseb. ibid. c. 19. p. 220. vid. Theod. Serm. VI. de Provid. p. 96. \* Vid. Theod. loco. citat.

† Loc. citat.

\* Anax. p. 332. Edit. Pocock. vid. etiam Selden. not. in Eutych. Steff. 23. p. 147.



to the truth. Whether he found this among the Records of that Church, or took it from the mouth of Tradition and Report, is uncertain, the thing not being mentioned by any other Writer. But however it was, 'tis plain that *Ammonius* was a Man of incomparable parts and learning, (a) *Hierocles* himself styles him Θεοδιδάκτωρ, one taught of God, and when *Plotinus* the great *Platonist* had found him out, he (b) told his friend in a kind of triumph, that this was the Man whom he had fought after. Under him *Origen* made himself perfect Master of the *Platonic* Notions, being daily conversant in the Writings of *Plato*, *Numenius*, *Cronius*, *Apollophanes*, *Longinus*, *Moderatus*, *Nicomachus*, and the most principal among the *Pythagoreans*, as also of *Charemon* and *Cornutus*, *Stoics*; from whom (as *Porphyr* truly enough observes) he learned that allegorical and mystical way of interpretation, which he introduced into the Christian Doctrine.

(a) Lib. de Provid. & fat. ubi supr.  
(b) Porphyr. in vit. Plotin. p. 2. Plotin. Oper. Pref. Porphyr. ap. Euseb. ubi supr.

IV. BESIDES our *Adamantius*, there was another *Origen* his Contemporary, a *Gentile* Philosopher, honourably mentioned by (c) *Longinus* (d) *Porphyr*, (e) *Hierocles*, (f) *Eunapius*, (g) *Proclus*, and others; a Person of that learning and accurate judgment, that coming (h) one day into *Plotinus* his School, the grave Philosopher was ashamed, and would have given place: and when intreated by *Origen* to go on with his Lecture, he answered with a complement, that a Man could have but little mind to speak there, where he was to discourse to them, who understood things as well as himself, and so after a very short discourse, broke up the meeting. I am not ignorant that most learned Men have carelessly confounded this person with our *Origen*: Whence (i) *Holstenius* wonders why *Eunapius* should make him School-fellow with *Porphyr*, who was much his junior, whom *Porphyr* says indeed he knew, being himself then very young, and this probably not at *Alexandria* but at *Tyre* where he was born, and where *Origen* a long time resided. So that his wonder would have ceased, had he considered what is plain enough, that *Eunapius* meant it of this other *Origen*, *Porphyr*'s fellow-Pupil, not under *Ammonius* at *Alexandria*, but under *Plotinus* at *Rome*. Indeed were there nothing else, this were enough to distinguish them, that the account given of *Origen* and what he wrote by *Longinus*, by *Porphyr* in the life of *Plotinus*, and others, does no ways agree to our Christian Writer.

(c) Lib. de Titulo apud Porphyr. in vit. Plotin.  
(d) Ibid.  
(e) Lib. de Fat. ubi supr.  
(f) In vit. Porphyr. p. 19.  
(g) In Plat. Theol. l. 2. c. 4. p. 90.  
(h) Ap Porphyr. loc. cit.  
(i) De Vit. & Script. Porphyr. c. 2. p. 11.

V. THE Persecution under *Severus* in the tenth year of his Reign was now grown hot at *Alexandria*, *Latus* the Governour daily adding fuel to the flames, where among the great numbers of Martyrs (k) *Leontides*, *Origen*'s Father, was first imprisoned, then beheaded, and his Estate confiscate and reduced into the public Exchequer. During his imprisonment (l) *Origen* began to discover a most impatient desire of Martyrdom, from which scarce any intreaties or considerations could restrain him. He knew the deplorable estate wherein he was like to leave his Wife and Children, could not but have a sad influence upon his Fathers mind, whom therefore by Letters he passionately exhorted to persevere unto Martyrdom, adding this clause among the rest, *Take heed, Sir, that for our sakes you do not change your mind*. And himself had gone not only to Prison, but to the very block with his Father, if the Divine Providence had not interposed. His Mother perceiving his resolutions, treated him with all the charms and endearments of so affectionate a Relation, attempted him with prayers and tears, intreating him if not for his own, that at least for her sake, and his nearest relatives, he would spare himself.

(k) Euseb. ib. c. 1. p. 201.

(l) Id. c. 2. p. 202.

All which not prevailing, especially after his Father's apprehension, she was forced to betake her self to little Arts, hiding all his cloths, that meer shame might confine him to the House. A mighty instance, as the Historian notes, of a juvenile forwardness and maturity, and a most hearty affection for the true Religion.

(a) *Euseb. ibid.*  
p. 203.

VI. HIS Father being dead, and the (a) Estate seized for the Emperours use, he and the Family were reduced to great straits. When behold the Providence of God ( who peculiarly takes care of Widows and Orphans, and especially the relicts of those that suffer for him ) made way for their relief. A rich and honourable Matron of *Alexandria* pitying his miserable case, liberally contributed to his necessities, as she did to others, and among them maintained one *Paul* of *Antioch*, a ring-leader of all the Heretics at *Alexandria*, who by subtle artifices had so far insinuated himself into her, that she had adopted him to be her Son. *Origen* though he held his livelihood purely at her bounty, would not yet comply with this Favourite, not so much as to join in prayer with him, no not when an innumerable multitude not only of Heretics, but of Orthodox daily flocked to him, taken with the eloquence of his discourses. For from his childhood he had religiously observed the Rule and Canon of the Church, and abominated ( as himself expresses it ) all heretical Doctrines. Whether this noble Lady upon this occasion withdrew her Charity, or whether he thought it more agreeable to the Christian Rule to live by his own labour, than to depend wholly upon anothers bounty, I know not: but having perfected those Studies of Foreign Learning, the foundations whereof he had laid under the Discipline of his Father, he now began to set up for himself, opening a School for the profession of the learned Arts, where besides the good he did to others, he raised a considerable maintenance to himself. And though then but a very Youth, yet did not the Grave and the Learned, the Philosophers, and greatest Masters of Heresie disdain to be present at his Lectures, whose opinions he impartially weighed and examined, as himself (b) informs us: many of whom of Auditors (c) became his Converts, yea and Martyrs for the Faith, as we shall see by and by.

(b) *Epist. ap.*  
*Euseb. ib. c. 19.*  
p. 221.  
(c) *Ibid. c. 30.*  
p. 204.

VII. BY this time his fame had recommended him to public notice, and he was thought fit, though but eighteen years of age, to be made Master of the *Catechetical* School at *Alexandria*, whether as Colleague with his Master *Clemens*, or upon resignation, his Successor, is uncertain: the latter seems most probable, because (d) *Eusebius* reports that *Demetrius* Bishop of *Alexandria* committed the instruction of the *Catechumens* to him only, unless we will understand it of some private and particular School, distinct from the ordinary *Catechetical* School, till *Clemens* his death, whose Successor the Ancients generally make him. Scholars in very great numbers daily crowded in upon him, so that finding he had enough to do, and that his different employments did not well consist together, he left off teaching the Arts and Sciences, and gave up himself intirely to the instructing his Disciples in the rudiments of Christianity. Being settled in this Office, he followed it with infinite diligence, and no less success. For he not only built up those who were already Christians, but (e) gained over a great number of *Gentile* Philosophers to the Faith, who embraced Christianity with so hearty and sincere a mind, as readily to seal it with their Blood. Among which of most note were *Plutarch*, whom *Origen* attending to his Martyrdom, was

(d) *Ibid. p.*  
205.

(e) *Ibid. c. 4.*  
p. 206.

was like to have been killed by the People for being the Author of his Conversion; *Serenus*, who was burnt for his Religion, *Heraclides* and *Heron*, both beheaded, the one while but a *Catechumen*, the other a Novice; next came a second *Serenus*, who after he had endured infinite torments, lost his Head, and gained a Crown. Nay the weaker Sex also put in for a share, one *Herais* a *Catechumen*, and *Origen's* Scholar, being as himself expresses it, τὸ βάπτισμα τὸ ἀπὸ πυρὸς λαβεῖν, baptized by fire, left this World, and in those flames mounted up to Heaven. Nor was *Origen* so wholly swallowed up with the care of his School, as not to perform (a) duties of Piety and humanity towards others, especially Martyrs, and those that were condemned to die. For *Aquila*, *Letus* his Successor in the Government of *Alexandria*, that he might do something singular in the entrance upon his place, renewed the Persecution, which was so severe, that every one consulted his own safety, and kept close; so that when the Martyrs were in Prison, or led to Trial or Execution, there was none to comfort them, or minister unto them. This Office *Origen* boldly took upon him, attending the Martyrs to the very place of Execution, embracing and saluting them as they were led along, till the enraged Multitude pelted him with showers of Stones, and an hundred times was he in danger of his life, had not the Divine Providence immediately interposed to rescue him. At last they resolved to find him out, great multitudes besetting his House, and because he had vast numbers of Scholars, they brought a Guard of Soldiers along with them, who hunted him from house to house, so that no place could afford him a quiet refuge. And to this period of time I find some learned Men (and I think very probably) ascribing that passage which (b) *Epiphanius* reports concerning him, that he was haled up and down the City, reviled and reproached, and treated with insolent scorn and fury. Once having shaved his head after the manner of the *Egyptian* Priests, they set him upon the steps of *Serapis's* Temple, commanding him to give branches of Palm-trees, as the Priests used to do, to them that went up to perform their holy Rites. He taking the branches with a ready and unterrified mind, cried out aloud, *Come hither, and take the branch, not of an Idol-Temple, but of Christ*. A piece of courage which I suppose did not contribute to mitigate their rage against him.

VIII. ABOUT this time he made that famous attempt upon himself, so much commended by some, but condemned by others, his making himself an *Eunuch*, which (as appears from (c) *Epiphanius*) some of the Ancients conceived to have been done by Medicinal applications, which enervated the powers and tendencies of Nature that way: though others, and (d) *S. Hierom* expressly, say it was done with the Knife. But however it was, he did it partly out of a perverse interpretation (e) of our Saviours meaning, when he says, *there be some which make themselves Eunuchs for the Kingdom of Heavens sake*, which he would needs literally understand; partly out of a desire to take away all suspicion of wantonness and incontineny, which the *Gentiles* might be apt enough to cast upon him, when they saw him admit not Men only, but Women into his Discipline; besides that hereby he himself was secured from any temptations to immodest and irregular embraces. How strict and severe was the chastity of those Primitive times, we have shewed at large in another place; so great, that (f) *Justin the Martyr* tells us of a young Man of *Alexandria*, who to convince the *Gentiles* of the falshood of that ma-

(a) Ib. p. 204.

(b) *Heres.*  
LXIV. p. 227.(c) *Ubi sup.*  
p. 228.(d) *Ad Pa-*  
*mach. de Error.*  
*Orig. Tom. 2. 7.*  
192.(e) *Enseb. ibid.*  
c. 8. p. 209.(f) *Apolog. II.*  
p. 71.



licious charge of incontinency and promiscuous mixtures, which they usually laid upon the Christians, presented a Petition to *Felix* the President of *Alexandria*, desiring his leave that the Physicians might make him an *Eunuch*, which the President refused, as prohibited by the Laws of the *Roman* Empire; as it was afterwards by several Proviso's and Canons of the Church. This fact though *Origen* endeavoured to conceal from some of his Friends, yet did it quickly break out, and *Demetrius* the Bishop who now admired it as an heroic act of temperance, and an instance of a great and a daring mind, did afterwards load it with all its aggravations, and bring it in as an inexcusable charge against him. I add no more concerning this than that whatever *Origen* might do now in the vigour of his youth, and through the sprightliness of his devout Zeal, yet in his more considerate and reduced age he was of another mind, condemning (a) such kind of attempts, soberly enough expounding that passage of our Saviour, which before he had so fatally misunderstood.

(a) *Vid. Comment. in Matt. p. 358. & p. 370, 371. Edit. Huet.*

(b) *Euseb. ib. c. 14. p. 215.*

(c) *Ibid. c. 15. p. 217.*

(d) *Apolog. adv. Rufin. Tom. 2. p. 201.*

IX. *SEVERUS* the Emperour, that violent enemy of Christians, being dead *Ann. Chr. CCXI.* *Origen* (b) had a great desire to see the Church of *Rome*, so venerable for its Antiquity and Renown, and accordingly came thither, while Pope *Zephyrin* late Bishop of that See, where he staid not long, but returned back to *Alexandria*. and to his accustomed *Catechetic* office, *Demetrius* earnestly importuning him to resume it. But finding the employment (c) grow upon him, and so wholly to engross his time, as not to allow him the least leisure for retirement and contemplation, and the study of the Scriptures, so fast did Auditors press in upon him from morning to night. he took in *Heraclas*, who had been his Scholar, a Man versed both in divine and humane Studies, to be his Partner, dividing the work between them, the younger and more untutored *Catechumens* he committed to him; the maturer, and those who had been of a longer standing he reserved to be instructed by himself. And now he gave up himself to a closer and more accurate Study of the Holy Scriptures, which that he might manage with the better success, he set himself to learn the *Hebrew* Tongue, the true Key to unlock the Door, (wherein as (d) *S. Hierom* probably intimates, he was assisted by the help of *Huillus* the *Jewish* Patriarch at that time, at least in the Rabbinic Exposition of the Scripture,) a thing little understood in those times, and the place he lived in, and to him who was now in the prime of his age, and the Flower of more pleasing and delightful Studies, no doubt very difficult and uneasy. But nothing is hard to an industrious diligence, and a willing mind.

(e) *Euseb. c. 18. p. 218.*

X. *NOR* did his pains in this, interrupt his activity in his other employments; where he perceived (e) any of his Scholars of more smart and acute understandings, he first instructed them in *Geometry*, *Arithmetic*, and other preparatory Institutions, and then brought them through a course of Philosophy, discovering the Principles of each Sect, and explaining the Books of the Ancients, and sometimes himself writing Comments upon them, so that the very *Gentiles* cried him up for an eminent Philosopher. The ruder and more unpolished part of his Auditory he would often exhort to the Study of humane Arts, assuring them that they would not a little conduce to the right understanding of the Holy Scriptures. Many flocked to him to make trial of his famed Skill and Learning; others to be instructed in the Precepts both of Philosophy

lofophy and Chriftianity. Great numbers of Heretics were his Auditors, fome of whom he converted from the error of their way : and among the reft \* *Ambrofius*, a Man of Nobility and Eftate at *Alexandria*, having been feduced into the Errors of *Marcion* and *Valentinus*, being convinced by *Origen's* Difcourfes, renounced his former Herefies, and returned to the Catholic Doctrine of the Church, and ever after became his intimate Friend, his great Patron and Benefactor. He was a Man of neat, elegant parts, and was continually prompting *Origen* to explain and interpret fome part of the Scripture; as oft as they were together, (as (a) *Origen* himfelf informs us) he fuffered not a Supper time to pafs without difcourfes to this purpofe, nor their very walks and recreations to be without them; a great part of the night, befides their morning ftudies, were fpent upon thefe pious exercifes; their meals and their reft were ushered in with continual Lectures, and both night and day where Prayer ended, Reading began, as after Reading they again betook themfelves to Prayer. Indeed this *Ambrofe* was a pious and good Man, and though fo great a Perfon, did not difdain to take upon him the Office of a *Deacon* in the Church, nay to undergo great hardships and fufferings, becoming an eminent *Confeflor* for the Faith. And there is only this blot (b) that I know of, that fticks upon his memory, that when he died rich, he remembred not his dear and ancient Friends, whofe low and mean condition might well have admitted, as his pains and intimacy might defervedly have challenged, a bountiful Legacy to have been bequeathed to him.

\* *Euseb. ib. Hieron. de Script. in Ambros. Suid. in Voc. ex. Epiph. ubi fupr. p. 228.*

(a) *Epist. ap. Suid. ubi fupr. 390. vid. Hieron. Ep. ad Marcell. p. 129. Tom. 1.*

(b) *Hieron. de Script. in Ambros.*

XI. ABOUT this time came a (c) Meflenger from the Governor of *Arabia* with Letters to *Demetrius* the Bifhop, and to the *Prefect* of *Egypt*, defiring that with all fpeed *Origen* might be fent to impart the Chriftian Doctrine to him: fo confiderable had the fame of this great Man rendred him abroad in Foreign Nations. Accordingly he went into *Arabia*, where having difpatched his errand, he came back to *Alexandria*. Not long after whofe return, the Emperor *Caracalla* drew his Army into thofe parts, intending to fall feverely upon that City. To avoid whofe rage and cruelty *Origen* thought good to withdraw himfelf, and not knowing any place in *Egypt* that could afford him fhelter, he retired into *Paleftine*, and fixed his refidence at *Cafarea*. Where his excellent abilities being foon taken notice of, he was requested by the Bifhops of thofe parts, though but then in the capacity of a *Laic*, publicly in the Church, and before themfelves to expound the Scriptures to the People. The news hereof was prefently carried to *Alexandria*, and highly reſented by *Demetrius*, who by Letters expoſtulated the caſe with *Theodotiftus*, Bifhop of *Cafarea*, and *Alexander* of *Jeruſalem*, as a thing never heard of before in the Chriftian Church; who in their answer put him in mind, that this had been no ſuch unuſual thing, whereof they give him particular inſtances. All which ſatisfied not *Demetrius*, who by Letters commanded *Origen* to return, and ſent *Deacons* on purpoſe to urge him to it, whereupon he came back and applied himſelf to his wonted charge.

(c) *Euseb. ibid. c. 19. p. 221.*

XII. *ALEXANDER SEVERUS* the preſent Emperor in order to his expedition againſt the *Persians*, was come to *Antioch*, attended with his Mother *Mammae*, a wife and prudent, and ( ſays (d) *Eusebius*) a moſt pious and religious Princeſs, a great influence ſhe had upon her Son, whom ſhe engaged in a moſt ſtrict and conſtant adminiſtration of

(d) *Ibid. c. 27. p. 223. vid. excerpt. ex Jo. Antioch. p. 803.*

Juſtice,

Justice, and the affairs of the Empire, that he might have no leisure to be debauched by Vice and Luxury. Indeed he was a Prince of incomparable Vertues, Historians representing him as mild and gentle, compassionate and charitable, sober and temperate, just and impartial, devout and pious, one advanced to the Empire for the recovery and happiness of Mankind. He was no enemy to Christians, whom he did not only not persecute, but favour at every turn; and in his private *Oration* he had among other *Heroes* the Images of *Abraham* and of *Christ*, and was once minded to have built a Temple to him, and publicly admitted him into the number of their gods. He highly admired some precepts of the Christian Religion, and from their Discipline learned some Rites which he made use of in the Government of the Empire. But to return to *Mammaea*: Being a *Syrian* born, she could not be unacquainted with the affairs both of *Jews* and *Christians*, and having heard of the great fame of (a) *Origen*, was very desirous to see him, and hear him discourse concerning Religion, that she might know what it was, for which the whole World had him in such veneration. And for this purpose she sent for him, ordering a Military Guard to conduct him to *Antioch*, where he staid some considerable time, and having fully opened the Doctrines of our Religion, and given her many demonstrations of the Faith of Christians, to the great honour of God and of Religion, he was dismissed, and permitted to return to his old charge at *Alexandria*.

(a) *Esf. loc. cit.*

(b) *Ibid. c. 23.*  
p. 224.

XIII. HENCEFORWARD he set upon writing (b) *Commentaries* on the Holy Scripture, at the instigation of his dear friend *Ambrosius*, who did not only earnestly importune him to it, but furnish him with all conveniences necessary for it; allowing him besides his maintenance, seven (and as occasion was, more) *Notaries* to attend upon him, who by turns might take from his mouth what he dictated to them; and as many *Transcribers*, besides Virgins employed for that purpose, who copied out fair, what the others had hastily taken from his mouth. These *Notaries* were very common both among the *Greeks* and *Romans*, making use of certain peculiar notes and signs, either by way of occult or short-writing, being able by the dexterity of their Art to take not words only but entire sentences. The Original of it is by some ascribed to *Tyro* *Cicero's* Servant, by others to *Aquila* Servant to *Mecenas*, by others to *Ennius*, and that it was polished and enlarged afterwards, first by *Tyro*, then by *Aquila* and some others. It may be in its first rudeness it was much more ancient, and improved and perfected by degrees, every new addition entitling it self to the first invention, till it arrived to that accuracy and perfection, that (as appears from what (c) *Martial* says in the case, and *Ausonius* (d) reports of his *Amanuensis*) they were able not only to keep pace with, but many times to out-run the speaker. That they were of frequent use in the Primitive Church, is without all doubt, being chiefly employed to write the *Acts* of the Martyrs; for which end they were wont to frequent the Prisons, to be present at all Trials and Examinations; and if the thing was done *intra Velum*, within the *Secretarium*, they used by bribes to procure Copies of the Examinations and Answers from the *Proconsul's* Register; thence they followed the Martyrs to the place of Execution, there to remarque their sayings and their sufferings. This was done in the most early Ages, as is evident from (e) *Tertullian's* mentioning the *Fasti Ecclesie*, and from what (f) *S. Cyprian* says in his *Epistle*

(c) *Lib. 14.*  
*Epigr. 208.*  
(d) *Epigram.*  
36.

(e) *De Coron.*  
c. 13. p. 109.  
(f) *Epist.*  
XXXVII.  
p. 51.



file to the Clergy of his Church, and (g) *Pontius* the Deacon in his life; where he tells us, that their Fore-fathers were wont to Register whatever concerned the Martyrdom of the meanest Christian, the Acts whereof descended down to his time. Thus (h) *Eusebius* speaking of the Martyrdom of *Apollonius* in the Reign of *Commodus*, tells us, that all his Answers and Discourses before the President's Tribunal, and his brave *Apology* before the *Sena'te*, were contained in the Acts of his Martyrdom, which together with others, he had collected into one Volume. So that the Original of the Institution is not without probability referred to the times of *S. Clemens* Bishop of *Rome*. All which I the rather note, because it gives us a reasonable account how the Answers and Speeches of the Martyrs, the Arguments and Discourses of Synods and Councils, and the *Extempore Homilies* of the Fathers came to be transmitted so intire and perfect to us. But I return to *Origen*, whom we left dictating to his *Notaries*, and they delivering it to those many *Transcribers* that were allowed him; all which were maintained at *Ambrosius's* sole expence. (a) *Photius* indeed makes this charge to have been allowed by *Hippolytus*, deriving his mistake it's plain, from the *Greek* Interpreter of (b) *S. Hierom's* Catalogue, who did not rightly apprehend *S. Hierom's* meaning, and who himself speaking of *Hippolytus*, inserts this passage concerning *Ambrose* I know not how, and for no other reason that I can imagine, but because in *Eusebius* his History he found it immediately following the account that was given of *Hippolytus* his Works. (d) *Epiphanius* will have these Commentaries written, and the expences allowed to that purpose by *Ambrosius* at *Tyre*, and that for that end he resided there XXVIII. years together. An intolerable mistake, not only disagreeing with *Eusebius* his account, but plainly inconsistent with the course of *Origen's* life. And indeed *Epiphanius* alledges no better an Author than *ως ο λόγος ἔχει*, having picked up the Story from some vulgar tradition and report. His industry and diligence in these Studies was incredible, few parts of the Bible escaping his narrow and critical researches: wherein he attained to so admirable an accuracy and perfection, that (e) *S. Hierom* himself (not always over-civil to him) professes he could be content to bear that load of envy that was cast upon his name, so that he had but withall his skill and knowledge in the Scriptures. A passage which (f) *Ruffinus* afterwards smartly enough returns upon him.

XIV. BUT a stop for the present was put to this work by some affairs of the Church, which called him into *Achaia*, then disturbed with divers Heresies that over-ran those Churches. And at this time doubtless it was that he staid a while at *Athens*, where (as (g) *Epiphanius* tells us) he frequented the Schools of the Philosophers, and conversed with the Sages of that place. In his journey to *Achaia* he went through (h) *Palestine*, and took *Casarea* in his way, where producing his Letters of recommendation from *Demetrius*, he was ordained *Presbyter* by *Alexander* of *Jerusalem*, and *Theotistus* Bishop of *Casarea*. Not that this was done by any sinister Arts, or the ambitious procurement of *Origen* himself, but was intirely the act of those two excellent Persons, who designed by this means to furnish him with a greater authority for the management of his Embassie, and to render him more serviceable to the affairs of the Church. However the thing was infinitely resented by *Demetrius*, as

(g) *In vit. Cyr. non long. abinit.*

(h) *H. Eccl. l. 5. c. 21. p. 189.*

(a) *Cod. CXXI. col. 301.*

(b) *Vid Hieron. de Script. in Hippol.*

(d) *Heret. LXIV. p. 228.*

(e) *Hoc unum dico, quod vellem cum invidia nominis ejus habere etiam scientiam Scripturarum, fluctipendens imagines umbrasque larvarum: quarum natura esse dicitur, terrene parvulus, & in angulis garrere tenebrosus. Hieron. Pref. in Quest. in Genes. Tom. 3. p. 201.*  
(f) *Invektiv. II. in Hieron. inter oper. Hier. Tom. 4. p. 225.*

(g) *Ubi supr. p. 227.*

(h) *Euseb. Inc. cit. Hier. de Script. in Alex.*

an affront against his Jurisdiction, and a contempt of his Authority, and now the wind is turned into a blustering quarter, and nothing but *anathema's* are thundred out against him from *Alexandria*. *Demetrius* had for some time born him a secret grudge, and he takes this occasion to fall upon him. The truth is, he \*envied the honour and reputation which *Origen's* Learning and Vertue had raised him in the thoughts and mouths of all Men, and wanting hitherto an opportunity to vent his emulation, he had now one put into his hand, and accordingly charges him with all that spight and spleen can invent, publicly accusing him (what before he admired in him) for making himself an *Eunuch*, and severely reflecting upon the Bishops that ordained him. Nay so high did he raise the storm, that he procured *Origen* to be condemned (a) in two several Synods, one of Bishops and Presbyters, who decreed that he should be banished *Alexandria*, and not permitted either to live, or teach there: the other under *Demetrius*, who with some Bishops of *Egypt* pronounced him to be degraded from his Priesthood, his greatest favourers subscribing the Decree. (b) *S. Hierom* adds, that the greatest part of the Christian World consented to this condemnation, and that *Rome* it self convened a Synod against him, not for Heresie or Innovations in Doctrine; but meerly out of envy, as not able to bear the glory and renown of his Learning and Eloquence; seeing (while he taught) they were looked upon as mute and dumb, as the Stars disappear at the presence of the Sun. And yet all this combustion vanished into smoke, *Origen* still retaining his Priesthood, publicly preaching in the Church, and being honourably entertained where-ever he came, by the wiser and more moderate party of the Church.

XV. WEARIED out with the vexatious assaults of his enemies, he resolved to quit *Alexandria*, where the sentence of the Synods would not suffer him long to abide, having first resigned the Government of his *Catechetical* School intirely to his Colleague *Heraclas* (c). This *Heraclas* was a *Gentile* born, Brother to *Plutarch*, who (as before we noted) suffered Martyrdom for the Faith, together with whom he became *Origen's* Scholar, by whom he was converted, and built up in the Faith, then taken in as his *Usher* or Partner in the *Catechetical* Office, afterwards his Successor, and last of all Bishop of *Alexandria*. A Man of unwearied diligence and a strict life; learned and eloquent, a great Master in Philosophy and all humane, but especially versed in Divine Studies. He retained his *Philosophic habit* even after he was made Presbyter of *Alexandria*, and ceased not with a mighty industry still to read over and converse with the Writings of the *Gentiles*; indeed arrived to that singular fame and reputation, that *Julius Africanus*, one of the most learned Men of those times came (d) on purpose to *Alexandria* to see and hear him. No wonder therefore if *Origen* committed this great care and trust to him, whose personal merit, and particular obligations as his Scholar, might seem to challenge it. Before his departure (for they that refer it to the time of *Decius*, speak at random, *Origen* not being then at *Alexandria*) an accident fell out, which (if true) hastned his flight with more shame and sorrow than all the malice of his bitterest enemies could create him. Thus then we are told; (e) some *Gentiles* that were his mortal enemies, seized upon him and reduced him to this strait, that either he should abuse his Body with a *Blackmoor*, or do sacrifice to an Idol. Of the two he chose to sacrifice, though it was rather their act than his, for putting Frankincense

\* *Euseb. ib. c. 8.*  
p. 209.

(a) *Pamphil. Apolog. ap. Phot. Cod. CXVIII.*  
col. 297.

(b) *Apud Rufin. Ioseph. II. in Hieron. inter oper. Hier. T. 4. p. 225.*

(c) *Euseb. ib. c. 26.*  
p. 228.

(d) *Ibid. c. 31.*  
p. 230.

(e) *Epiph. Ubi sup. p. 228.*  
*Leont. de Sect. Act. X. p.*

cense into his hand, they led him up to the Altar, and forced him to throw it into the fire. Which yet drew so great a blot upon his name, and derived so much guilt upon his Conscience, that not able to bear the public reproach, he immediately left the City. The credit of this Story is not a little shaken by the universal silence of the more ancient Writers in this matter, not so much as intimated by *Eusebius*, *Pamphilus*, or *Origen's* own contemporary, *Dionysius* of *Alexandria*; not objected by his greatest adversaries, as is plain from the Apologies written in his behalf; not mentioned by *Porphyry* who lived in those times, and whom we cannot suppose either to have been ignorant of it, or willing to conceal it, when we find him falsely reporting of *Ammonius*, that he Apostatized from Christianity, and of *Origen* himself, that he was born and bred an Heathen. In short, not mentioned by any before *Epiphanius*, and besides him, not by any else of that time, not *St. Hierom*, *Rufinus*, *Vincentius Lerinensis*, or *Theophilus* of *Alexandria*, some of whom were enemies enough to *Origen*. So that it was not without some plausibility of Reason that \* *Baronius* suspected this passage to have been foisted into *Epiphanius*, and not to have been the genuine issue of his Pen. Though in my mind *Epiphanius* himself says enough to make any wise Man ready to suspend his belief; for he tells † us, that many strange things were reported concerning *Origen*, which he himself gave no credit to, though he thought good to set down the reports; and how often he catches up any common rumors and builds upon them, none need to be told, that are acquainted with his Writings. Nor is it likely he would balk any Story that tended to *Origen's* disgrace, who had himself so bitter a zeal and spleen against him. I might further argue the improbability of this Story from hence, that this being a long time after his famous emasculating of himself, which by this time was known all abroad, it is not reasonable to suppose, that the Heathens should make the prostituting himself in committing Adultery one part of his choice, which his self-contracted impotency and *Eunuchism* had long since made impossible to him. However supposing the matter of Fact to be true, it sounds not more (especially considering how much there was of force and compulsion in it) to his disparagement, than his solemn repentance afterwards made for his honour, and when the desire to preserve his chastity inviolable is laid in the Scale with his offering Sacrifice.

\* Ad Ann. 253.  
n. CXXIII.

† Ibid. p. 229.

XVI. ANN. CCXXXIII. \* *Origen* left *Alexandria*, and directing his course for *Palestine*, went to his good friend and Patron *Theoctistus* Bishop of *Casarea*, and from thence to *Jerusalem*, to salute *Alexander* Bishop of it, and to visit the venerable Antiquities of that place. And here *Epiphanius* in pursuance of the foregoing Story tells us, that being mightily importuned to Preach, he stood up in the Congregation, and having pronounced those words of penitent *David*, *But unto the wicked God saith, What hast thou to do to declare my statutes, and that thou shouldst take my covenant in thy mouth?* He could go on no further, but shut the Book, and laid it down, and sitting down, burst out into sighs and tears, the whole Congregation bearing part with him in that mournful Scene. And to carry on the humour, and make the Story more compleat, after Ages present us with a † Discourse under his name, called *Origen's Complaint*, wherein he passionately resents and laments his fall, as a desperate wound to himself, a grief to good Men, and an unconceivable dishonour to God, and to Religion. And pity it is, if the Story be true, that

\* Euseb. ib. c.  
25. p. 2. 8.

† Extat inter  
Oper. Orig.  
Tom. I. p. 752.  
Edit. Erasmi.



this *Lamentation* were not genuine; but as it is, the best ground it has to support it self, is, that it is calculated to gratifie a pious fanſie and a melting paſſion, there being nothing in it otherwiſe worthy of this great Man, and I fear was firſt deſigned by him that made it, as a reflection upon him, and to give countenance to the report that was raiſed concerning him. From *Jeruſalem* he not long after returned back to *Caeſarea* where (as before he had done at *Alexandria*) he ſet up a \* School both for divine and humane Learning, and his great name quickly procured him Scholars from all parts, not only of the Country thereabouts, but from the remoteſt Provinces. Among which of moſt remarque were *Gregory* called afterwards *Thaumaturgus*, and his Brother *Athenodorus*, who leaving the Study of the Law, as being more delighted with Philoſophy and humane Arts, committed themſelves to his conduct and tutorage, who firſt inſtructed them in Philoſophy, and then trained them up to a more accurate knowledg of the Chriſtian Faith. Five years they remained under his Diſcipline, when being ſufficiently enriched with the knowledg of Religion, they returned into *Pontus*, their own Countrey, where they both became *Biſhops*, and proved eminent Lights and Governors of the Church. During his reſidence at *Caeſarea*, there was a firm intimacy and league † of friendſhip contracted between *Origen* and *Firmilian* Biſhop of *Caeſarea* in *Cappadocia*, who had ſo great a kindneſs for him that ſometime he would prevail with him to come over into that Province for the edification of the Churches in thoſe parts, ſometimes he himſelf would go into *Judea* to viſit him, and ſtay a conſiderable while with him to perfect himſelf by his ſociety and converſe. This *Firmilian* was a Gentleman of *Cappadocia*, afterwards made Biſhop of *Caeſarea* in that countrey. A perſon of great name and note, and who held correſpondence with moſt of the eminent Men of thoſe times. Few conſiderable affairs of the Church, wherein he was not concerned either by his præſence or advice. Great conteſts were between *Stephen* Biſhop of *Rome* concerning the Baptiſm of heretical perſons, wherein he took part with *Cyprian*. He waſtwice at *Antioch* to examine the caſe of *Paul* of *Samofata* Biſhop of that Church, and coming a third time to a Synod convened there for that purpoſe, died at *Tarſus* by the way. Nor was *Origen* admired and courted only by foreigners and young Men who had been his Scholars, but by the grave and the wiſe at home: both *Alexander* and *Theoctiſtus*, though ancient Biſhops, did not diſdain in a manner to become his Diſciples, committing to his ſingle care the power of interpreting the Holy Scriptures, and whatever concerned the Eccleſiaſtical Doctrines.

XVII. IT was now about the year CCXXXV. when *Maximinus* the *Thracian* ſucceeded in the Empire: a Man fierce and ill natured, and according to his education brutiſh and cruel. He hated whatever had relation to his Predeceſſor, and becauſe the \* Chriſtians had found ſome favourable entertainment in his Family, he began firſt with them, and eſpecially the Biſhops, as the chief pillars and promoters of their Religion, whom he every where commanded to be put to death. To contribute toward the conſolation of Chriſtians in this evil time, *Origen* wrote his Book concerning *Martyrdom*, which he joyntly dedicated to

\* *Id. ibid. c.*  
30. p. 229.

† *Ibid. c.* 27.  
p. 228.

\* *Id. ib. c.* 28.

Νῦν ὡς περὶ  
πομπῶν  
αἰρών τ' εὐ-  
εὐν τῷ Ἰησῷ, ἰερὲ  
Ἀμβρόσιος, καὶ ἀκολουθῶν αὐτοῦ, περὶ τῆς  
ἐκείνου τῆς ἐκείνου καὶ σοφίας καὶ τοῦ  
πρωτοκλήτου καὶ συμπαρτηρῶν ὑμῶν, τοῖς ἀνα-  
πληρῶσι ταῦτα ὑπερμελῶς ὅτι παθῆματων τῶ  
Χριστοῦ σὺν ἡμῖν γένηται ὁ παρὰ τὸν  
Θεόν. Orig. Exhort. ad Martyr.  
pag. 200.

his dear *Ambrosius*, and to *Procloctetus* Presbyter of *Cæsarea*, as who had undergone a joint share of imprisonment and sufferings under the present Persecution, and had made a glorious and illustrious confession of the Christian Faith. As for *Origen* himself, he is said to have taken sanctuary in the house of *Juliana*, a wealthy and charitable Lady, who courteously entertained him, and furnished him with Books useful for him, particularly with *Symmachus* \* his Version of the Old Testament, and his Commentaries in defence of the *Ebionites*, particularly levelled against *S. Matthew's Gospel*: Books which *Juliana* enjoyed as by right of inheritance devolved upon her.

\* *Euseb. lib. c.*  
17. p. 218.

XVIII. WHILE he enjoyed the happy opportunity of this retirement, he more directly applied himself to what he had long since designed, the collecting and collating the several Editions and Versions of the Old Testament with the Original Text, which he finished by three several parts †, the *Tetrapla*, the *Hexapla*, and the *Octapla*. In the first (which considered as a distinct part, was made last) were four Translations, set one over against another, that of *Aquila*, *Symmachus*, the *Septuagint*, and *Theodotion*; these made up the *Tetrapla*. In the second were these four Versions disposed in the same order, and two other columns set before them, thus; first the *Hebrew Text* in its own Letters, then in a column next adjoining the same *Hebrew Text* in *Greek* characters, that they who were strangers to the one, might be able to read the other: next followed the several Versions of *Aquila*, *Symmachus*, the *Septuagint*, and *Theodotion*. And these constituted the *Hexapla*. Where the *Septuagint* being placed after that of *Aquila* and *Symmachus*, gave some ignorant undiscerning persons occasion to think, that it had been made after the two former: whereas it was placed in the middle (as *Epiphanius* \* informs us) only as a Standard, by which the goodness and sincerity of the rest were to be tried and judged. In the third which made the *Octapla*, were all that were in the former, and in the same manner, and two more Versions, added at the end of them, one called the *Fifth Edition*, found by a Student at *Jerusalem* in a Hogsheed at *Jericho* in the time of the *Emperour Caracalla*; and another stiled the *Sixth Edition*, found by one of *Origen's* Scholars at *Nicopolis* near *Actium*, in the Reign of *Alexander Severus*. All which in the *Octapla* were disposed in several columns in this order: in the first column was the Original *Hebrew*, in its native characters, in the next the *Hebrew* in *Greek* Letters, in the third the translation of *Aquila*, then that of *Symmachus*, next the *Septuagint*, in the sixth that of *Theodotion*, and in the two last that of *Jericho*, and the other of *Nicopolis*. Indeed plain it is from what † *S. Hierom* tells us, that these two last were not compleat and intire Translations, but contained only some parts of the Old Testament, especially the Prophetical Books. But whether from hence we may conclude the *Hexapla* and the *Octapla* to have been but one and the same Work, only receiving its different title according to those Parts that had these two last Versions annexed to them, I will not say. Besides these there was a *Seventh Edition*; but this belonging only to the Book of *Psalms*, made no alteration in the title of the whole. The frame and order of this excellent contrivance, the Reader will better apprehend by this following Scheme, formed according to a Specimen of the *Hexapla* extant in *Cardinal Barberine's* very ancient Manuscript of the *Minor Prophets*, upon these words, *When Israel was a Child, then I loved him, and called my Son out of Egypt.*

† *Id. ibid. c. 16.*  
p. 217. *Epiph.*  
*loc. sup. cit. at.*  
*de pond. &*  
*mensur. p. m.*  
534. 539. *Hier.*  
*de Script. in*  
*Orig. & Suid.*  
*in voc. Orig.*

\* *Ibid. p. 539.*

† *Comment. in*  
*Tit. c. 3. p.*  
256. T. 9.

*Hof. XI. 1.*

[illegible]

And to make the Work more compleat and useful, he distinguished the additions and deficiencies by several marks \*, where any thing had been added by the LXX. besides the Faith of the Original Text, he prefixed an *Obelus* before it ; where any thing was wanting, which yet was in the *Hebrew*, he inserted the words with an *Asteric*, to distinguish them from the rest of the *Septuagint* Translation. Where

\* *Vid. præter script. citat. Orig. Comment. in Matth. Edit. Huet. gr. l. p. 381. & Resp. ad Epist. Afric. p. 226, 227. Edit. Basil. vid. Ruffin. Invelt. II. in Hieron. inter oper. Hier. T. 4. p. 230.*



Where various Lectiōns were confirmed by the greater number of Translations, he added a note called *Lemniscus*, where two of them only concurred, an *Hypolemniscus*. By which means he did right to truth, without doing wrong to any. A work of infinite labour and admirable use, and which was therefore particularly stiled by the Ancients *Opus Ecclesie*, the Work of the Church, upon the account whereof S. Hierom \* calls him *Immortale illud ingenium*, as indeed had there been nothing else, this alone had been sufficient to have eternized his name, and to have rendred him memorable to posterity: and how happy had it been, had it been preserved, the loss whereof I can attribute to nothing more than the pains and charge, the trouble and difficulty of transcribing it. Though some part of it, viz. the *Septuagint* was taken out, and published more exact and correct from the faults which had crept into it by transcribing by Eusebius and Pamphilus afterwards. It was a Work of time, and not finished by Origen all at once, begun by him at *Casarea*, and perfected at *Tyre*, as Epiphanius plainly intimates.

\* In Tit. loc. supr. cit.

XIX. FROM *Casarea* Origen, upon what occasion I know not, seems to have taken a second journey to *Athens*. For during his stay there, we find him finishing his Commentaries † upon *Ezekiel*, and beginning his Exposition upon the *Canticles*, five Books whereof he there perfected, making an end of the rest at his return to *Casarea*. The opportunity of his journey, it's conceived by some, he took to go to *Nicomedia*, to visit his friend *Ambrosius*, who with his wife and Children at that time resided there. While he continued here (which was not long) he returned an answer to the Letter which he had lately received from *Julius Africanus* concerning the History of *Susanna*, which *Africanus* by short but very forcible arguments maintained to be a fictitious and spurious relation. Origen undertakes the cause, and justifies the Story to be sincere and genuine, but by arguments, which rather manifest the acuteness of his parts, than the goodness of his cause, and clearly shew how much Men of the greatest learning and abilities are put to it, when engaged to uphold a weak side, and which has no truth of its own to support it self. It happened about this time that *Beryllus* (a) Bishop of *Bosra* in *Arabia*, fell into absurd and dangerous errors, asserting, that our Lord before his Incarnation had no proper substance, no personal Deity, but only a derivative divinity from his Father. The Bishops of those parts met about it, but could not reclaim the Man, whereupon Origen's assistance was requested, who went thither, and treated with him both in private conferences and in public Synods. His greatest difficulty was to know what the Man meant, which when he had once found out, he plied him so hard with cogent reasonings and demonstrations, that he was forced to let go his hold, recant his errors, and return back into the way of truth. Which done, Origen took his leave, and came back for *Palestin*. And *Beryllus* (b), as became a true Convert, in several Letters gave thanks to Origen for his kind pains in his conviction, kissing the hand that brought him back.

† Euseb. ib. c. 32. p. 231.

(a) Ibid. c. 33.

(b) Hieron. de Script. in Beryll.

XX. ORIGEN was now advanced (c) above the age of threescore, and yet remitted nothing of his incredible industry either in preaching or writing. At *Ambrosius* his intreaty he took to task *Celsus* his Book against the Christians. This *Celsus* was an *Epicurean* Philosopher, contemporary with *Lucian*, the witty Atheist, who dedicated his *Pseudomantis* to him, as indeed there seems to have been a more than ordinary sympathy

(c) Euseb. Ibid. c. 36. p. 232.

sympathy of humour and *genius* between these two persons. *Celsus* was a Man of Wit and Parts, and had all the advantages which Learning, Philosophy, and Eloquence could add to him; but a severe and incurable enemy to the Christian Religion, against which he wrote a Book entitled Ἀληθὴς λόγος, or *the true Discourse*, wherein he attempted Christianity with all the Arts of insinuation, all the witty reflections, virulent aspersions, plausible reasonings, wherewith a Man of parts and malice was capable to assault it. To this *Origen* returns a full and solid answer in eight Books, wherein as he had the better cause, so he managed it with that strength of Reason, clearness of Argument, and convictive evidence of truth, that were there nothing else to testify the abilities of this great Man, this Book alone were enough to do it. It was written probably about the beginning of the Reign of *Philip* the Emperour, with whom *Origen* seems to have had some acquaintance, who

\* *Id. Ibid.* p. 233.

† *Rod. Wtsteinus* Præfat. in *Orig. Dial. contr. Marc.* c. 2. à se Edit. *Basil.* 1674. 4.

\* wrote one Letter to him, and another to the Empress. From whence, and some other little probabilities, *Eusebius* first, and after him the generality of Ecclesiastic Writers, have made that Emperour to have been a Christian, and the first of the Imperial Line that was so. The vanity of which mistake, and the original from whence it sprung, we have shewed elsewhere. Nor is the matter mended by those, who say that *Philip* was privately baptized by *Fabian* Bishop of *Rome*, and so his Christian Profession was known only to the *Christians*, but concealed from the *Gentiles*; which being but a conjecture, and a *gratis dictum*, without any Authority to confirm it, may with the same ease and as much justice be rejected, as it is obtruded and imposed upon us. Nor has the late learned publisher † of some Tracts of *Origen* (who in order to the securing the *Dialogue against the Marcionites* to belong to *Origen*, has newly enforced this argument) said any thing that may persuade a wise Man to believe a Story, so improbable in all its circumstances, and which must have made a louder noise in the World, and have had more and better witnesses to attest it, than an obscure and uncertain report, the only Authority which *Eusebius*, who gave the first hint of it, pretends in this matter.

\* *Ibid.* c. 37.

XXI. THE good success which *Origen* lately had in *Arabia* in the cause of *Beryllus* made him famous in all those parts, and his help was now again \* desired upon a like occasion. For a sort of Heretics were started up, who affirmed, that at death both Body and Soul did expire together, and were resolved into the same state of corruption, and that at the resurrection they should revive and rise together to eternal life. For this purpose a general Synod of those parts was called, and *Origen* desired to be present at it, who managed the cause with such weighty Arguments, such unanswerable and clear convictions, that the adverse party threw down their weapons, and relinquished the sentiments which they maintained before. Another heretical crew appeared at this time in the *East*, the impious and abominable Sect of the *Helcesaitæ*, against whom also *Origen* seems to have been engaged, concerning whom himself † gives us this account. They rejected a great part both of the Old and New Canon, making use only of some few parts of Scripture, and such without question as they could make look most favourably upon their cause. *S. Paul* they wholly rejected, and held that it was lawful and indifferent to deny the Faith; and that he was the wise Man, that in his words would renounce Christianity in a time of danger and Persecution, but

† *Homil. in Psal. 82. ap. Euseb. ibid.* c. 38. p. 233.

maintain

maintain the truth in his heart. They carried a Book about with them which they affirmed to have been immediately dropt down from Heaven which whoever received and gave credit to, should receive remission of sins, though different from that pardon which our Lord Jesus bestowed upon his followers. But how far *Origen* was concerned against this absurd and senseless generation, is to me unknown. The best on't is, this Sect like a blazing Comet, though its influence was malignant and pestilential, suddenly arose, and as suddenly disappeared.

XXII. *PHILIP* the Emperor being slain by the Souldiers, *Decius* made a shift by the help of the Army to step into the Throne; a mortal enemy to the \* Church, in whose short reign more Martyrs, especially Men of note and eminency, came to the Stake, than in those who governed that Empire ten times his reign. In *Palastin* *Alexander* the aged and venerable Bishop of *Jerusalem* was thrown into Prison, where after long and hard usage, and an illustrious confession of the Christian Faith before the public Tribunal, he died. This *Alexander* (whom we have often mentioned) had been first Bishop of *Cappadocia* †, where out of a religious curiosity he had resolved upon a Pilgrimage to *Jerusalem* to visit the holy and venerable Antiquities of that place, whereunto he was particularly excited by a divine Revelation intimating to him that it was the will of God that he should be assistant to the Bishop of that place. It happened at this time that *Narcissus* Bishop of *Jerusalem* being some years since returned to his See (which he had deserted many years before) was become incapable through his great age and infirmity (being CXVI. years old) duly to manage his charge. *Alexander* approaching near *Jerusalem*, they were warned by a Vision and a Voice from Heaven to go out of the City, and there receive him whom Heaven had designed to be their Bishop. They did so, and finding *Alexander*, entertained and introduced him with all possible kindness and respect, where by the importunity of the people, and the consent of all the neighbour-Bishops, he was constrained to become Colleague with *Narcissus* in the government of that Church. This I suppose is the first express instance that we meet with in Church Antiquity of two Bishops sitting at once (and that by consent) in one See. But the case was warranted by an extraordinary authority; besides that, *Narcissus* seems rather to have resigned and quitted the place, retaining nothing but the Title, nor intermeddling any further, than by joyning in prayers and devotions for the good of the Church, surviving not above three or four years at most. *Alexander* succeeding in the sole Presidency, governed his Church with singular prudence and fidelity, and among other memorable acts, erected a Library at *Jerusalem*, \*, which he especially stored with Ecclesiastical Epistles and Records, from whence *Eusebius* confesses he furnished himself with many considerable *Memoires* and materials for the composing of his History. He sate Bishop XXXIX. years, and after several arraignments and various imprisonments and sufferings, died now in prison at *Casarea*, to the unconceivable loss and resentment of the whole Church, and especially of *Origen*, who had been Ordained by him, and whom he had ever found a fast Friend and Patron. Nor did *Origen* himself, who was at this time at *Tyre*, escape without his share. *Eusebius* does but briefly intimate his sufferings, having given a larger account of them in another Book, long since lost, he tells † us that the Devil mustered up all his Forces against him, and assaulted him with

\* *Ibid.* c. 39. p. 234.

† *Ibid.* c. 11. p. 212.

\* *Ibid.* c. 20. p. 222.

† *Ubi* *supr.* p. 334.



with all his Arts and Engins, singling him out above all others of that time to make him the object of his utmost rage and fury. He was cast into the bottom of a loathsome and uncomfortable dungeon, loaded with irons, a chain about his neck, his feet set in the Stocks, with his legs stretched four holes distant from each other many days together; he was threatened with fire, and tried with all the torments that a merciless enemy could inflict. Which meeting with a person of his age, and a body broken with such, and so many cares and labours, must needs render it a very heavy burden. And yet he bore all with a generous patience, and was ready to submit to the last fatal stroke, but that the Judge to give all possible accents to his misery, ordered them so to torment him, that they should not kill him.

XXIII. HUMAN E Councils and Resolutions, when most active and violent, yet *he that is higher than the highest* can over-rule them, and *there be that are higher than they*. His Enemies had hitherto exercised him only with preparatory cruelties, reserving him for a more solemn Execution. But God, *to whom belong the issues from death*, prevented their malice, and made way for him to escape, which in all probability was effected by the death of *Decius*, who was cut off, when he had reigned two years and an half. Being delivered out of Prison, \* he improved his time to pious purposes, comforting the weak and the disconsolate, and writing Letters to that end up and down the World. Some few years he out-lived the *Decian* Persecution, and died at *Tyre* about the first year of *Valerian*. Indeed *Eusebius* intimates that he departed this life about the beginning of *Gallus* his reign. But I cannot see how that can stand: For seeing elsewhere he positively affirms that he was seventeen years old at the time of his Fathers Martyrdom, *Ann. Chr. CCII.* his death must happen the first of *Valerian*, *Ann. Chr. CCLIV.* which falls in with the sixty ninth year of his age, in which *Eusebius* tells us he left this World. Otherwise he could not be more than *LXVII.* years old; whereas none make him less than *LXIX.* *Pamphilus* † the Martyr, and some others, from the relation of those that had seen him, report that an honourable Martyrdom put a period to his life, when *Decius* raised the Persecution at *Cæsarea*. But besides that \* *Epiphanius* expressly denies that he died a Martyr, others (as *Photius* adds, and among them *Eusebius* † and *St. Hierom* \*) tells us, that he continued till the time of *Gallus* and *Volusian*, and being sixty nine years old died, and was buried at *Tyre*. Which, as he observes, must needs be so, seeing he wrote many Epistles after the *Decian* Persecution. And probable it is, that *Pamphilus* meant it, or at least his mistake thence arose, of that great and glorious confession, a preparatory Martyrdom, which he made under the reign of *Decius*, which he survived two or three years, peaceably ending his days at *Tyre*, where his body found a place of Rest, and where in a great Church dedicated to the memory of our Saviour's Sepulchre; behind the high Altar his remains were laid up, as the tradition † of the last Age informs us. Nay long before that, *Brocard* \* the Monk tells us that when he was there, he saw his Tomb, and read his Epitaph; and before both, † *William*, who was himself *Arch-Bishop* of *Tyre*, reckons *Origen's* Tomb among the Monuments and venerable Antiquities of that City, his marble Monument being adorned with Gold and precious Stones.

XXIV. HAVING thus brought this great Man to his Grave, let us a little

\* *Euseb. ibid.*  
p. 235.

† *Apud Phot.*  
*Cod. CXVIII.*  
col. 297.

\* *De pond. & mensur.* p. 539.  
† *Lib. 7. c. 1.*  
p. 250.  
\* *De Script. in Origen.*

† *Cotovic. itin.* l. 1. c. 19.  
p. 121.  
\* *Descript. Tyr.* S. c. 2.  
† *Guliel. Tyr.* H. sacr. l. 13.  
non longe ab init. vid. etiam *Adricom. Theatr. S. in Trib.* Aler. n. 84. in. 1. n.

little look back upon him, and we shall find him a more than ordinary person. His life was truly strict and Philosophical \*, and an admirable instance of Discipline and Vertue; such as his discourses were, such were his manners, and his life the image of his mind: that wise and good Man, whom he was wont to describe in his Lectures to his Scholars (as one † of the most eminent of them assures us) he himself had first formed, and drawn in the example of his own life. He had a mighty regard to the glory of God, and the good of Souls, whose happiness he studied by all ways to promote, and thought nothing hard, nothing mean or servile that might advance it. He was modest and humble, chaste and temperate; so exemplary his abstinence and sobriety, that he lived upon what was next door to nothing, for many years \* abstaining from Wine, and every thing but what was absolutely necessary for the support of life, till by too much abstinence he had almost ruined his health, and endangered the weakning of Nature past recovery. Singular his contempt of the World, literally making good that precept of our Lord to his Disciples, not to have *two Cloaks*, to provide *no Shoes*, nor to be anxiously careful for to morrow. When many out of consideration of his unwearied diligence would have communicated part of what they had towards his necessities, he would not, but rather than be needlessly burdensome to any, sold his Library, agreeing with the buyer to allow him four *oboli*, or five pence, for his daily maintenance. His diligence in study, in preaching, writing, travelling, confuting Heathens and Heretics, composing schisms and differences in the Church, was indefatigable, upon which account the titles of *Adamantius* and *Chalcenterus* are supposed by the Ancients to have been given to him, nothing but an industry of Brass and Iron being able to hold out under such infinite labours. The day he spent part in fasting, part in other religious exercises and employments; the night he bestowed upon the study of the Scripture, reserving some little portion for sleep and rest, which he usually took not in bed, but upon the bare ground. This admirably exercised and advanced his patience, which he improved by further austerities, fasting, and enduring cold and nakedness, studying standing, and for many years together going barefoot, remitting nothing of his rigours and hardships, notwithstanding all the counsels and persuasions of his friends, who were troubled at the excessive severities of his life. Whereby notwithstanding he gained upon Men, and converted many of the *Gentile* Philosophers, famous for learning and Philosophy, not only to the admiration but imitation of himself.

XXV. VIEW him in his natural parts and acquired abilities, and he had a quick piercing apprehension, a strong and faithful memory, an acute judgement, a ready utterance. All which were adorned and accomplished with a prodigious furniture of learning, and all the improvements which *Rome* or *Greece* could afford; being incomparably skilled (as \* *S. Hierom* and † *Suidas* observes) both in *Gentile* and *Christians* Learning, *Logic*, *Geometry*, *Arithmetic*, *Music*, *Philosophy*, *Rhetoric*, and the several sentiments and opinions of all the Sects of Philosophy, and who always entertained his Auditors with something above common observation. So great the force and acuteness of his parts (says *Vincentius Lerinenfis* \*) so profound, quick and elegant, that none could come near him: so vast his stock of all sorts of Learning, that there were few corners of divine, and perhaps none of humane Philosophy,

H H

which

\* *Euseb. l. 6. c. 3. p. 205.*

† *Greg. Noces. Orat. Panegy. in Orig. p. 205.*

\* *Euseb. ib. p. 206.*

† *De Script. in Orig. p. 387.*

† *Contr. Hæres. c. 23. p. 55.*

which he had not accurately, searched into; and when the *Greeks* could lead him no further, with an unparallel'd industry he conquered the language and learning of the *Jews*. But no other character need be given him than what *Porphry* (a), who knew him, ( though a learned man (b), who from that passage in *Eusebius* makes him have been his Scholar, proceeds doubtless upon a great mistake ) and was an enemy, bestows upon him, that he was held in very great esteem in those times, and had purchased a more than ordinary glory and renown from the greatest Masters which Christianity then had in the World, and that under the Discipline of *Ammonius* he attained to an admirable skill in Learning and Philosophy. The monuments and evidences whereof ( as he there observes ) were the Books and Writings which he left behind him, considerable, not for their Subjects only, but their multitude, arising to that vast number, that *Epiphanius* (c) tells us, it was commonly reported that he wrote six thousand Volumes: The greatest part of which being understood of Epistles, and single Homilies, the account will not be above belief, nor give any just foundation for *Ruffinus* and *S. Hierom* to wrangle so much about it, the latter of whom point-blank denies, that ever himself read, or that *Origen* himself wrote so many. (d) *Vincentius* affirms, that no man ever wrote so much as he, and that all his Books could not only not be read, but not so much as be found out by any. So that it was not without reason that antiquity fastned the title of *Syntacticus*, or the *Composer* upon him, his innumerable Discourses upon all sorts of Subjects justly appropriating that title to him. His Books were of old enumerated by many, and digested into their proper Classes, whether *Scholia*, short strictures upon obscure difficult places, *Homilies* and *Tomes*, as the Ancients divided them; or *Exegetica* and *Syntagmata*, under which rank some Modern Writers comprehend them, the greatest part whereof, though they have long since perished through the carelessness and ill will of succeeding Times, yet does a very large portion of them still remain. His phrase and way of writing is clear and unaffected, fluent and copious. (e) *Erasmus* gives a high *encomium* of it, preferring it before most other Writers of the Church, that it is neither turgid and lofty, like that of *S. Hilary*, flying above the reach of ordinary Readers; nor set off with gaudy and far-fetched ornaments, like that of *S. Hierom*; nor abounding with flowers of Rhetoric, and smart witty sentences, like that of *S. Ambrose*: nor over-seasoned with tart and satirical reflections, and obscured with obsolete and antiquated terms, as that of *Tertullian*; nor superstitious in the curious and accurate structure of its several parts, like that of *S. Gregory*; nor running out into large digressions, nor affecting a chiming cadency of words, like that of *St. Augustin*: but always brisk and lively, easie and natural. But when he commends it for its conciseness and brevity, he certainly forgot himself, or mistook ( and what wonder he should, when, 'tis like, he took his measures not so much from the Original as Translations.) For his stile though it be generally plain and perspicuous, yet it is diffusive and luxuriant, flowing with plenty of words, which might be often spread, and therefore charged by some of his critical adversaries that he did *infinita verba multiplicare* (f), multiply an infinite crown of words: and that (g) *Eusebius*, *Antioch. dissert. de Engastrym.* *adv. Orig. inter. Crit. S. Tom. 8.* *col. 441. 453.* *κευθολογία ἀπειροχόας ἀπεροπληθεὶ τὸν νόμον*, he filled the World with a company of needless and idle words, which he unmeasurably poured out, and that he did *φλυαρία πολλῇ ταυτολογεῖν*, exceedingly trifle with vain

(a) *Ap. Euseb. l. 6. c. 19. p. 220.*  
(b) *L. Holst. de vit. & scrip. Porphyr. c. 6. p. 27.*

(c) *Ubi sup. p. 256. vid. Rufin. Apol. pro. Orig. inter O. per. Hier. T. 4. p. 197.*

(d) *Loc. citat.*

(e) *Censur. de Oper. Orig.*

(f) *Epiph. Ep. ad Joan. Hierosol. ap. Hieron. T. 2. p. 153.*  
(g) *Euseb. Antioch. dissert. de Engastrym. adv. Orig. inter. Crit. S. Tom. 8. col. 441. 453.*



vain tautologies and repetitions. A censure wherein envy and emulation must be supposed to have had the predominant and over-ruling stroke. For though abounding with words, he was always allowed to be eloquent, for which *Vincentius* highly commends him, affirming his phrase to be so sweet, pleasant, and delightful, that there seemed to him to have dropt not words so much as honey from his mouth.

*Ubi supr.*

XXVI. BUT that alas, which has cast clouds and darkness upon all his glory, and buried so much of his fame in ignominy and reproach, is the dangerous and unsound doctrines and principles which are scattered up and down his writings, for which almost all Ages without any reverence to his parts, learning, piety, and the judgment of the wisest and best of the times he lived in, have without any mercy pronounced him Heretic, and his sentiments and speculations, rash, absurd, pernicious, blasphemous, and indeed what not. The alarm began of old, and was pursued with a mighty clamour and fierceness, especially by *Methodius* Bishop of *Olympus*, *Eustathius*, of *Antioch*, *Apollinaris*, *Theophilus* of *Alexandria*, and *Epiphanius*, and the cry carried on with a loud noise in after-ages, insomuch that the very mention of his name is in the Greek Church abominable at this day. I had once resolved to have considered the Chief of those notions and principles for which *Origen* is so heavily charged by the Ancients, but superseded that labor, when I found that the industry of the learned *Monsieur Huit* in his *Origeniana* had left no room for any to come after him, so fully, so clearly, so impartially, with such infinite variety of reading has he discussed and canvassed this matter, and thither I remit the learned and capable Reader. And for those that cannot or will not be at the pains to read his large and excellent Discourses, they may consult nearer hand the ingenious Author of the *Letter of Resolution concerning Origen, and the chief of his opinions*; where they will find the most obnoxious of his *dogmata* reckoned up, and the Apologies and Defences which a sincere lover of *Origen* might be supposed to make in his behalf, and these pleas represented with all the advantages with which Wit, Reason, and Eloquence could set them off.

*Edit. Lond.*  
1661. 4.

XXVII. NOR wanted there of old those who stood up to plead and defend his cause, especially *Pamphilus* the Martyr, and *Eusebius* who published an *Apology* in six Books in his behalf; the first five whereof were written by *Pamphilus* with *Eusebius* his assistance, while they were in prison, the last finished and added by *Eusebius* after the others Martyrdom. Besides which, (a) *Photius* tells us, there were many other famous Men in those times, who wrote Apologies for him, he gives us a particular account (b) of one, though without a name, where in five Books the Author endeavours to justify *Origen* as sound and Orthodox, and cites *Dionysius*, *Demetrius*, and *Clemens*, all of *Alexandria*, and several others to give evidence for him. The main of these Apologies are perished long ago, otherwise probably *Origen's* cause might appear with a better face, seeing we have now nothing but his notions dressed up and glossed by his professed enemies, and many things ascribed to him which he never owned, but were coined by his pretended followers. For my own part, I shall only note from the Ancients some general remarques, which may be pleaded in abatement of the rigour and severity of the sentence usually passed upon him. And first, many things were said and written by him, not positively and dogmatically, but *παραοις αειν*, says the (c) Author of his *Apology* in *Photius*, by way of exercita-

(a) *Cod.*  
*CXVIII. col.*  
297.  
(b) *Cod.*  
*CXVII. col.*  
293.

(c) *Ibid. col.*  
296.

tion; and this he himself was wont to plead at every turn, and to beg the Readers pardon, and profess that he propounded these things not as Doctrines, but as disputable Problems, and with a design to search and find out the truth, as (a) *Pamphilus* assures us, and S. *Hierom* himself (b) cannot but confess: and if we had the testimony of neither, there is enough to this purpose in his Books still extant, to put it beyond all just exception. Thus discoursing concerning the union of the two natures in the person of our blessed Saviour, he affirms (c) to be a mystery which no created understanding can sufficiently explain; concerning which (says he) not from any rashness of ours, but only as the order of Discourse requires, we shall briefly speak rather what our Faith contains, than what humane Reason is wont to assert, producing rather our own conjectures, than any plain and peremptory affirmations. And to the same purpose he expresses himself at every turn. Not to say that he wrote many things in the heat of disputation, which it may be his cooler and more considering thoughts would have set right. So the Apologist in *Photius* (d) pleads, that whatever he said amiss in the doctrine of the *Trinity*, proceeded meerly from a vehement opposition of *Sabellius*, who confounded the number and differences of persons, and whose Sect was one of the most prevailing Heresies of that time. The confutation whereof made him attempt a greater difference and distinction in the persons, than the rules of Faith did strictly allow. Secondly, those Books of his (e), wherein he betrays the most unsound and unwarrantable notions, were written privately, and with no intention of being made public, but as secrets communicable among friends, and not as doctrines to disturb the Church. And this he freely acknowledged in his Letter to *Fabian* (f) Bishop of *Rome*, and cast the blame upon his friend *Ambrosius*, *quod secretò edita in publicum protulerit*, that he had published those things which he meant should go no further than the breasts or hands of his dearest friends. And there is always allowed a greater freedom and latitude in debating things among friends, the secrets whereof ought not to be divulged, nor the Public made Judges of that innocent liberty which is taken within mens private walls. Thirdly, the disallowed opinions that he maintains are many of them such as were not the Catholic and determined Doctrines of the Church, not defined by Synods, nor disputed by Divines, but either Philosophical, or Speculations which had not been thought on before, and which he himself at every turn cautiously distinguishes from those propositions which were entertained by the common and current consent and approbation of the Christian Church. Sure I am he lays it down as a fundamental maxim, in the very entrance upon that (g) Book, wherein his most dangerous assertions are contained, that those Ecclesiastic Doctrines are to be preserved, which had been successively delivered from the Apostles, and were then received, and that nothing was to be embraced for truth that any ways differed from the tradition of the Church.

XXVIII. FOURTHLY, Divers of *Origen's* works have been corrupted and interpolated by evil hands; and Heretics, to add a lustre and authority to their opinions by the veneration of so great a name, have inserted their own assertions, or altered his, and made him speak their language. An argument which however laughed at by S. *Hierom* (a), is yet stiffly maintained by *Ruffinus* (b), who shews this to have been an old and common art of Heretics, and that they dealt thus with the writings of

(a) *Apolog. ap. Hieron. Tom.*

4. p. 172.

(b) *Ad. Avit. p. 151. Tom. 2.*

(c) *Περί ἀρχ. l. 2. c. 6. p. 698.*

(d) *Cod. CXVII. col. 296.*

(e) *Pamph. Ap. not supr. p. 174. 177.*

(f) *Ap. Hieron. in Epist. ad Pammach. de err. Orig. p. 193. T. 2.*

(g) *Pref. ad lib. Περὶ ἀρχ. p. 665.*

(a) *Ad Pammach. ubi supr. (b) Ap. pro Orig. apud Hier. Tom. 4. p. 194, 195. & c. & Pref. ad lib. Περὶ ἀρχ. ib. Tom. 2. p. 188.*

of *Clemens Romanus*, of *Clemens*, and *Dionysius of Alexandria*, of *Athanasius*, *Hilary*, *Cyprian*, and many more. *Dionysius* (c) the famous Bishop of *Corinth*, who lived many years before *Origen*, assures us he was served at this rate; that at the request of the brethren he had written several Epistles, but that the Apostles and emissaries of the Devil had filled them with weeds and tares, expunging some things, and adding others. The *Apologist* in *Photius* (d) tells us, *Origen* himself complained of this in his life time; and so indeed he does in his (e) Letter to them of *Alexandria*, where he smartly resents that charge of blasphemy had been ascribed to him and his doctrine, of which he was never guilty, and that it was less wonder if his doctrine was adulterated, when the great *S. Paul* could not escape their hands; he tells them of an eminent Heretic, that having taken a Copy of a dispute which he had had with him, did afterwards cut off, and add what he pleas'd, and change it into another thing, carrying it about with him, and glorying in it. And when some friends in *Palestin* sent it to him then at *Athens*, he returned them a true and authentic Copy of it. And the same foul play he lets them know he had met with in other places, as at *Ephesus* and at *Antioch*, as he there particularly relates. And if they durst do this while he was yet alive, and able (as he did) to right himself, what may we think they would do after his death, when there were none to controul them? And upon this account most of those assertions must especially be discharged, wherein *Origen* is made to contradict himself, it being highly improbable (as *Ruffinus* (f) well urges) that so prudent and learned a person, one far enough from being either fool or mad Man, should write things so contrary and repugnant to one another. And that not only in divers, but in one and the same Book.

XXIX. I might further observe his constant zeal against Heretick, his opposing and refuting of them where-ever he came, both by word and writing, his being sent for into foreign Countries to convince gainfayers, his professing to abominate all heretical doctrines, and his refusing so much as to communicate in prayer with *Paul* the Heretic of *Antioch*, though his whole maintenance did depend upon it. And methinks it deserves to be considered, that *Athanasius* in all the heat of the *Arrian* controversies (than whom certainly none was ever more diligent to search out heretical persons and opinions, or more accurate in examining and refuting the chief of those doctrines, that are laid at *Origen's* door) should never charge him upon that account. Nay he particularly quotes him (g) to prove our Lord's coeternity and coessentiality with the Father exactly according to the decisions of the *Nicene Synod*, dismissing him with the honourable character of *δογμαστὸς καὶ φιλοπονώτατος*, the most admirable, and infinitely industrious person. Nor is there any heterodox opinion of his, that I know of, once taken notice of in all his works, but only that concerning the duration of future torments, and that too but (h) obliquely mentioned. Whence I am apt to conclude, either that *Origen's* writings were not then so notoriously guilty, or that this great Man, and zealous defender of the Churches doctrine (who being Bishop of *Alexandria* could not be ignorant of what *Origen* had taught or written, nay assures us, he had read his Books) did not look upon those dangerous things that were in them, as his sense. And indeed so he says expressly; that what things he wrote by way of controversy and disputation, are not to be looked upon as his own words and

(c) *Ap. Euseb. H. Eccl. l. 4. c. 23. p. 145.*

(d) *Ubl. sup.*

(e) *Ap. Ruffin. ib. Tom. 4. p. 195.*

(f) *Loc. cit. p. 195.*

(g) *Decret. Synod. Nic. contr. Heres. Arrian. p. 277. T. 1. vid. de Blasph. in SS. p. 971. & Soc. H. E. l. 6. c. 13. p. 320.*  
(h) *De Com. essent. Patr. F. & SS. p. 235. T. 1.*

sen-



(a) *Socrat. H. Eccl.* l. 6. c. 12. p. 319.

(b) *Breviar. H. Eccl.* l. 6. c. 3. p. 108, 109.

(c) *Ap. Euseb. contr. Marcel.* l. 1. p. 23.

(d) *Ad Pamach de error. Orig.* p. 192. Tom. 2.

sentiments, but as those of his contentious adversaries whom he had to deal with, which accordingly in the passages he cites he carefully distinguishes from *Origen's* own words and sense. To all which I may add, that when the controversy about the condemnation of his Books was driven (a) on most furiously by *Theophilus* and *Epiphanius*, *Theotimus* the good *Scythian* Bishop plainly told *Epiphanius*, that for his part he would never so much dishonour a person so venerable for his piety and antiquity, nor durst he condemn what their Ancestors never rejected, especially when there were no ill and mischievous Doctrines in *Origen's* Works; therewithal pulling out a Book of *Origen's*, which he read before the whole Convention, and shewed it to contain Expositions agreeable to the Articles of the Church. With these two excellent persons let me join the judgment of a Writer of the middle Ages of the Church (b) *Haymo* Bishop of *Halberstadt*, who speaking of the things laid to *Origen's* charge: "For my part (says he) saving the faith of the "Ancients, I affirm of him, either that he never wrote these things, but "that they were wickedly forged by Heretics, and fathered upon his "name; or if he did write them, he wrote them not as his own judgment, but as the opinion of others. And if, as some would have it, "they were his own sentiments, we ought rather to deal compassionately "with so learned a Man, who has conveyed so vast a treasury of Learning to us. What faults there are in his Writings, those orthodox and "useful things which they contain, are abundantly sufficient to overballance."

XXX. THIS and a great deal more is, and may be pleaded in *Origen's* defence, and yet after all it must be confessed, that he was guilty of great mistakes, and rash propositions, which the largest charity cannot excuse. He had a natural warmth and fervor of mind, a comprehensive wit, an insatiable thirst after knowledge, and a desire to understand the most abstruse and mysterious speculations of Theology, which made him give himself an unbounded liberty in inquiring into, and discoursing of the nature of things, he wrote much, and dictated apace, and was engaged in infinite variety of business, which seldom gave him leisure to review and correct his writings, and to let them pass the censure of second and maturer thoughts; he traded greatly in the writings of the Heathens, and was infinitely solicitous to make the doctrines of Christianity look as little unlike as might be to their best and beloved notions. And certainly what *Marcellus* (c) Bishop of *Ancyra* long since objected against him, is unquestionably true (notwithstanding what *Eusebius* has said to falsify it) that coming fresh out of the philosophic Schools, and having been a long time accurately trained up in the principles and Books of *Plato*, he applied himself to divine things, before he was sufficiently disposed to receive them, and fell upon writing concerning them, while secular learning had yet the predominancy in his mind, and so unwarily mingled Philosophic notions with Christian principles, further than the analogy of the Christian faith would allow. And I doubt not but whoever would parallel his and the *Platonic* principles, would find that most of the *κατασκευαί* he is charged with, his Master-notions were brought out of the School of *Plato*, as the above mentioned *Huetius* has in many things particularly observed. *S. Hierom* himself (whom the torrent of that time made a severe enemy to *Origen*) could but have so much tenderness for him, even in that very Tract (b) wherein he passes the

the deepest censures upon him, after he had commended him for his parts, zeal, and strictness of life; "Which of us (says he) is able to read so much as he has written? Who would not admire the ardent and sprightly temper of his mind toward the holy Scriptures? But if any envious Zealot shall object his errors to us, let him freely hear what was said of old:

— Quandoque bonus dormitat Homerus.  
Verum opere in longo fas est obrepere somnum.

Horat. de Art.  
Poet. v. 359.  
p. 815.

In a long Work each slip the Censor's Rod  
Does not deserve. Homer does sometimes nod.

"Let us not intimate his Faults, whose Vertues we cannot reach. Others both Greeks and Latines have erred in the Faith as well as he, whom it's not necessary to name, lest we might seem to defend him, not by his own merit, but by the mistakes of other Men. To all that has been hitherto said, I may add this, that suppose him guilty of as pestilent and dangerous errors as the worst of his enemies lay to his charge, yet he afterwards repented of what he had rashly and unadvisedly written, as appears by his Epistle to Fabian \* Bishop of Rome. And is it not intolerable rudeness and incivility at least, perpetually to upbraid and reproach a Man with the faults of his past life, and which he himself has disowned? Sorrow for what is past in some measure repairs the breach, and repentance must be allowed next door to Innocence.

\* Ap. Hier. ubi  
supr. p. 193. vid.  
Russ. Invekt. I.  
in Hieron. in-  
ter oper. Hier.  
T. 4. p. 219.  
Primus felici-  
tatis gradus  
est, non delin-

quere: Secundus, delicta cognoscere. Illic, currit innocentia integra & illibata que servat, hic succedit medela que sanat.  
Cypr. ad Cornel. Epist. 55. p. 83.

His Writings mentioned by the Ancients, and which of them extant at this day.

Homiliarum mysticarum in Genes.

Lib. II.

Commentar. in Genes. Lib. XIII.

Extant Latine Homilia XVII.

Commentar. Tomi in Exodum

Ext. Latine Homilia XII.

Scholia in Leviticum

Ext. Homilia XVI.

In Numeros extant Lat. Homilia XXVIII.

In Deuteronomium Homilia.

In Libr. Jesu Nave ext. Homil. XXVI. Lat.

In Libr. Judicum ext. Hom. IX. Lat.

In I. Lib. Regum Homil. IV.

In Lib. II. extat Homilia una.

In Lib. Paralipom. Homil. I.

In duos Esdrae Libros Homilia.

In Libr. Job Tractatus.

In Psalmos { Commentarii.  
Homilia.  
Scholia.

Ext. Lat. in Psalm. 36. Hom. V. in Psalm. 37. Hom. II. in Psalm. 38.

Hom. II.

In Proverbia Salom. Commentar.

Explicatio Ecclesiastis.

In Canticum Cantic. Commentarii.

Ext. Lat. Homilia II.

In Esaiam { Commentar. Libri XXX.  
Homilia XXV.  
Scholia.

Ext. Lat. Homilia IX.

In Jeremiam Homilia XLV.

Extant Gr. Lat. Homil. XVII.

In Threnos Tomi IX.

In Ezechielem Tomi XXV.

Ext. Lat. Homil. XIV.

In

In Daniele Expositio.

In XII. Prophetas Tomi XXV.

Comment. Lib. XXV.

In Matthaum } Homilia XXV.

Scholia.

Ext. Gr. Lat. Tomi VII.

In Lucam Commentar. Tomi V.

Ext. Lat. Homilia XXXIX.

In Joannem commentar. Tom. XXXII.

Ext. Gr. Lat. Tom. IX.

In Acta Apostolorum Homil. aliquot.

In Epistolam ad Romanos Explan-  
ationum Lib. XX.

Ext. Lat. Libri X.

In I. ad Corinthios Commentarii.

Commentarii.

In Epist. ad Galatas } Homilia.

Scholia.

In Epist. ad Ephes. Comment. Lib. III.

In Epist. ad Coloss. Commentarii.

In I. ad Thess. Vol. (ut minimum) III.

In Epist. ad Titum.

Commentarii.

In Epist. ad Hebraeos } Homilia.

Tetrapla.

Hexapla.

Octapla.

Commentarii in Veteres Philosophos.

De Resurrectione Libri II.

De Resurrectione Dialogi.

Stromateion Libri X.

Disputationes cum Beryllo.

Περὶ ἀρχῶν, seu de Principiis Lib. IV.

Ext. Lat.

Contra Celsum Lib. VIII Ext. Gr. L.

De Martyrio. Ext. Gr. L.

Homil. de Engastrimytho. Ext. G. L.

De Oratione. Ext. Gr. MS.

Philocalia de aliquot præcipuis Theo-

logia locis & questionibus ex Ori-

genis scriptis à S. Basilio & Gregor.

Naz. excerptis, cap XXVII. Ext.

Gr. L.

Epistolæ fere infinitæ, ex  
his hodie ext.

Epistola ad Jul. Africanum de Histor.

Susanne, Gr. L.

Epistola ad Gregorium Thaumatur-

gum. Ext. Gr. L. in Philocalia.

Doubtful.

Dialogus contra Marcionitas, de recta

in Deum fide. Ext. Gr. L.

Supposititious

In Librum Job Tract. III. & com-

ment. in eundem.

Commentarius in Evangl. S. Marci.

Homilia in diversos.

De Philosophorum Sectis & dogma-  
tibus.

Lamentum Origenis.

Scholia in Orationem Dominicam, &

in Cantica B. Virginis, Zacharia,

& Simeonis.

The End of ORIGEN's Life.

THE




THE LIFE OF  
**S. BABYLAS**  
 BISHOP OF  
 ANTIOCH.



**S. BABYLAS ANTIOCHENUS.**

*His Original obscure. His education and accomplishments enquired into.  
 Made Bishop of Antioch, when. Antioch taken by the King of Persia:  
 Recovered by the Roman Emperor. Babylas his fidelity in his charge.*

*The Decian Persecution, and the grounds of it: severely urged by the Emperors Edicts. Decius his coming to Antioch. His attempt to break into the Christian Congregation. Babylas his bold resistance. This applied to Numerianus, and the ground of the mistake. The like reported of Philip the Emperor. Decius his bloody act related by S. Chrysostom. His rage against Babylas, and his examination of him. The Martyrs resolute answer. His imprisonment and hard usage. The different accounts concerning his death. Three Youths his fellow-sufferers, in vain attempted by the Emperor. Their Martyrdom first, and why. Babylas beheaded. His command that his chains should be buried with him. The translation of his body under Constantius. The great sweetness and pleasantness of the Daphne. Apollo's Temple there. S. Babylas his bones translated thither by Gallus Cæsar. The Oracle immediately rendered dumb. In vain consulted by Julian. The confession of the Dæmon. Julian's command for removing Babylas his bones. The Martyrs Remains triumphantly carried into the City. The credit of this Story sufficiently attested. The thing owned by Libanius and Julian. Why such honour suffered to be done to the Martyr. Julian afraid of an immediate vengeance. His Persecution against the Christians at Antioch. The sufferings of Theodorus. The Temple of Apollo fired from Heaven.*

- I.  O great and general is the silence of Church-Antiquity in the Acts of this holy Martyr, especially the former part of his life, that I should wholly pass him over, did not his latter times furnish us with some few memorable passages concerning him. His Country, Parents, Education, and way of life, are all unknown, as also whether he was born and bred a Gentile, or a Christian. No doubt he was trained up under the advantages of a liberal and ingenious Education, living in places that opportunely ministered unto it, and in times when none but Men of known parts and eminency both for Learning and Piety were advanced to the Government of the Church: and when great measures of Arts and Learning were not only commendable, but necessary, both to feed and preserve the Flock of God, to resist and convince gainfayers, and to defend Christianity against the attempts both of secret and open Enemies. For as the Christian Church never wanted professed Adversaries from without, who endeavoured both by Sword and Pen to stifle and suppress its growth, nor pretended Friends from within, who by Schisms and Heresies disturbed its Peace, and tore out its very Bowels; so never were these more predominant than in those times, and parts of the World wherein this good Man lived.

\* Euseb. H. Ec.  
l. 16. c. 29.  
p. 229.  
† Homil. de  
S. Babyl. p.  
641. Tom. 1.

\* Capitol. in  
Gordian. III.  
c. 26. p. 669.

II. ANN. Chr. CCXXXIX. Gordian-Imper. I. died, \* Zebinus Bishop of Antioch, in whose room Babylas succeeded. He was a stout and prudent Pilot, who (as S. Chrysostom † says of him) guided the holy Vessel of that Church in the midst of Storms and Tempests, and the many waves that beat upon it. Indeed in the beginning of his Presidency over that Church he met not with much trouble from the Roman Powers, the old Enemies of Christianity, but a fierce storm blew from another quarter. For Sapor King of \* Persia had lately invaded the Roman Empire, and having over-run all Syria, had besieged and taken Antioch, and so great a dread

dread did his Conquests strike into all parts, that the terror of them flew into *Italy*, and startled them even at *Rome* it self. He grievously oppressed the People of *Antioch*, and what treatment the Christians there must needs find under so merciless and insolent an Enemy (at no time favourable to Christians) is no hard matter to imagine. But it was not long before God broke this yoke from off their necks. For *Gordian* the Emperor raising a mighty Army, marched into the *East*, and having cleared the Countries as he went along, came into *Syria*, and went directly for *Antioch*, where he totally routed the *Persian* Army, recovered *Antioch* and the conquered Cities, and gained some considerable places belonging to *Sapor*, whom he forced to retire back into his own Countrey: of all which he gives an account in a \* Letter to the Senate, who joyfully received the news, and decreed him a triumph at his return to *Rome*. \* *Ibid.* c. 27. p. 670.

III. THE Church of *Antioch* being thus restored to its former tranquillity, *Babylas* attended his charge with all diligence and fidelity, instructing, feeding, and governing his Flock, preparing both young and old to undergo the hardest things, which their Religion might expose them to, as if he had particularly foreseen that black and dismal Persecution that was shortly to overtake them. Having quietly passed through the Reign of *Philip* (who was so far from creating any disturbance to the Christians, that he is generally, though groundlessly, supposed to have been a Christian himself) he fell into the troublesome and stormy times of *Decius*, who was unexpectedly advanced, and in a manner forced upon the Empire. One, whose character might have passed among none of the worst of Princes, if he had not so indeleibly stained his memory with his outrageous violence against the Christians. The main cause whereof the generality of Writers, taking the hint from *Eusebius* † make to have been hatred to his Predecessor *Philip*, a Christian, as they account him, and whom he resolved to punish in his Spleen and Malice against them. But methinks much more probable is the account which *Gregory Nyssen* \* gives of this matter, viz. the large spread and triumphant prevalency of the Christian Faith, which had diffused it self over all parts and planted every corner, and filled not Cities only, but Country Villages; the Temples were forsaken, and Churches frequented, Altars overthrown, and Sacrifices turned out of doors. This vast increase of Christianity, and great declension of Paganism, awakened *Decius* to look about him: he was vexed to see the Religion of the Empire trodden under foot, and the worship of the gods every where slighted and neglected, opposed and undermined by a novel and upstart Sect of Christians, which daily multiplied into greater numbers. This made him resolve with all possible force to check and controul this growing Sect, and to try by methods of cruelty to weary Christians out of their Profession, and to reduce the People to the Religion of their Ancestors. Whereupon he issued out Edicts to the Governors of Provinces, strictly commanding them to proceed with all severity against Christians, and to spare no manner of torments, unless they returned to the obedience and worship of the Gods. Though I doubt not but this was the main Spring that set the rage and malice of their enemies on work, yet *Cyprian* † like a Man of great piety and modesty, seeks a cause nearer home, ingenuously confessing, that their own sins had set open the Flood-gates for the Divine displeasure to break in upon them, while † *H. Eccl.* l. 6: c. 39. p. 234.  
\* *De vit. Greg. Thaum.* p. 999. Tom. 2.  
† *Epi.* VII. p. 16.



Pride, and Self-seeking, Schism and Faction reigned so much among them, the very Martyrs themselves, who should have been a good example unto others, casting off the order and discipline of the Church; and being swelled with so vain and immoderate a tumor, it was time God should send them a thorn in the flesh to cure it.

IV. THE Provincial Governors forward enough to run of themselves upon such an errand, made much more haste, when they were not only encouraged, but threatened into it by the Imperial Edicts; so that the Persecution was carried on in all parts with a quick and a high hand, concerning the severity whereof we shall speak more elsewhere. At present it may suffice to remarque that it swept away many of the most eminent Bishops of the Church, *Fabian* Bishop of *Rome*, *Alexander* Bishop of *Hierusalem*, and several others. Nor was it long before it came to *S. Babylas's* door. For *Decius* probably about the middle of his Reign, or some time before his *Thracian* Expedition, wherein he lost his life, came into *Syria*, and so to *Antioch*, to take order about his affairs that concerned the *Persian* War. I confess his coming into these parts is not mentioned in the *Roman* Histories, and no wonder, the accounts of his life either not having been written by the *Historiæ Augustæ Scriptores*, or if they were, having long since perished, and few of his Acts are taken notice of in those Historians that yet remain. However the thing is plainly enough owned by Ecclesiastical Writers. While \* he continued here, either out of curiosity, or a design to take some more plausible advantage to fall upon them, he would needs go into the Christian Congregation, when the public Assembly was met together. This *Babylas* would by no means give way to, but standing in the Church Porch, with an undaunted courage and resolution opposed him, telling him, that as much as lay in his power, he would never endure that a Wolf should break in upon Christs Sheepfold. The Emperor urged it no further at present, either being unwilling to exasperate the rage and fury of the People, or designing to effect it some other way. This passage there are, and *Nicephorus* among the rest, (with whom accord exactly the *Menaæ* and *Menologies* of the Greek Church) that ascribe not to *Decius*, but *Numerianus* (whom *Suidas* his Translator corruptly files *Marianus*) who reigned at least thirty years after. A mistake without any pillar or ground of truth to support it, there being at that time no *Babylas* Bishop of *Antioch*, whom all agree to have suffered under the *Decian* Persecution. And it is not improbable what *Baronius* † conjectures, but the mistake might at first arise from this, that there was under *Decius* one *Numerius*, one of the Generals of the Army, a violent Persecutor of the Christians, whom 'tis not to be doubted the first mistakers of the report confounded with *Numerianus*, and applied to him what belonged to the Emperor, under whom he served.

V. *EUSEBIUS* \* relates a like passage to this, but attributes it to the Emperor *Philip*, *Decius* his Predecessor, telling us, that when on the *Vigils* of *Easter* he would have gone with the rest of the Christians into the Church, to be present at their Prayers, the Bishop of the place would by no means suffer him, unless he would make public confession of his sins, and pass through the Order of the Penitents, for that he had been guilty of many heinous and enormous crimes, which he readily submitted to. But besides that, this is laid as the main foundation of *Philip's* falsely supposed Christianity, *Eusebius* justifies it by no better Authority than

\* *Chrysost. lib. de S. Babyl. Tom. 6. p. 658. & passim. Philost. H. Eccl. l. 7. c. 8. p. 94. Suid. in voc. Βαβυλ. 26. Niceph. H. Eccl. l. 10. c. 28. p. 63.*

† *Ad Ann. 223. n. CXXVI. vid. S. Metaphr. in Martyr. S. Isidor. apud. Str. Feb. V. p. 48.*

\* *H. Eccl. l. 6. c. 34. p. 232.*

than Fame and meer Report. And indeed stands alone in this matter. For though some of the Ancients referred it to *Numerian*, yet none but he, entitled *Philip* to it. S. *Chrysostom* in a large \* *Encomiastic* (wherein he describes this Act of *Babylas* in all the colours wherein Wit and Eloquence could represent it, particularly equalling it with the spirit and freedom of *Elias* and *John the Baptist*) tells us, that when the Emperor made this attempt he had newly washed his hands in innocent blood, having barbarously, and against the Faith of his most Solemn Oath, and the Laws of Nations, put to death the little Son of a certain King, whom his Father had given in Hostage to secure a Peace made between them. This probably was either the Son of some petty Prince in those parts, who entered into a League with him while he was at *Antioch*, or some young Prince of *Persia*, pawned as a pledge to ensure the Peace between those two Crowns, and whom he had no sooner received, but either to gratifie his cruelty, or else pretending some fraud in the Articles, he inhumanly butchered. The Author of the † *Alexandrian Chronicon* tells us, and vouches *Leontius* Bishop of *Antioch* for the relation, that *Philip* (in the Greek is added ὁ Ἰουλιανός probably for ὁ Ἰουλιανός, the surname of that Emperor, and not *Junior*, the younger, as the Translator renders it, and elsewhere corrects it by Πρεσβύτερος, the Elder) being Governor of a Province in the Reign of *Gordianus*, *Gordian* had committed the care of his young Son to him, whom after his Fathers death he slew, and usurped the Empire: that being thus guilty of murder, though he was a Christian, yet S. *Babylas* would not admit Him or his Wife into the Church; for which affront offered to so great Persons, and not meerly because he was a Christian himself, *Decius* afterwards put S. *Babylas* to death. A strange medley of true and false, as indeed 'tis the custom of that Author to confound times, things, and Persons. However most evident it is from *Chrysostom*, that it was the same Emperor by whom this young Prince was murdered, and S. *Babylas* put to death, which could be no other than *Decius*; who with hands thus reeking in the blood of the innocent, would have irreverently rushed into the holy place of the Christian Sanctuary, where none but pure hands were lift up to Heaven.

VI. *DECIVS*, though for the present he dissembled \* his anger and went away, yet inwardly resented the affront; and being returned to the Palace, sent for *Babylas*, and having sharply expostulated with him for the boldness and insolency of the Fact, commanded him to do Sacrifice to the gods, assuring him that this was the only expedient to expiate his crime, divert his punishment, and to purchase him honour and renown. The Martyr answered to all his enquiries with a generous confidence, despised his proffers, and defied his threats, told him, that as to the offence wherewith he charged him, he was obliged as a Pastor readily to do whatever was conducive to the benefit of his Flock; and for his command, he was resolved never to Apostatize from the service of the true God, and Sacrifice to Devils, and those who falsely usurped the name and honour of Deities. The Emperor finding his resolutions firm and inflexible, gave order that chains and fetters should be clapt upon him, with which he was sent to Prison, where he endured † many severe hardships and sufferings, but yet rejoiced in his bonds, and was more troubled at the misery that attended him that sent him thither, than at the weight of his own chains; or the sharpness of those torments

that

\* *Ubi sup.* p. 655.

† *Olymp.* CCLVII. 4. *Decii* 1. *Indict.* XIV. p. 630. *vid. ibid.* p. 968.

\* *Philost.* & *Suid.* *ubi sup.*

† *Chrysost.* *loc. cit.* p. 667. 668. *martyr.* *Rom.* ad 7. *nuar.* XXIV.

that were heaped upon him. So naturally does Christianity teach us *to bless them that curse us, to pray for them that despitefully use and persecute us, and to overcome evil with good.*

VII. THERE is some little difference in the accounts of the Ancients, concerning the manner of his Martyrdom. \* *Ensebius* and some others make him after a famous confession to die in Prison; while † *Chrysostom* (whom I rather incline to believe in this matter, as more capable to know the Traditions and examine the Records of that Church) and *Suidas* affirms, that being bound he was led forth out of Prison to undergo his Martyrdom, the one plainly intimating, the other positively expressing it, that he was beheaded. The fatal sentence being passed, as he was led to Execution, he began his Song of Triumph, *Return unto thy rest, O my soul, for the Lord hath dealt bountifully with me.* Together with him were led along three Youths, Brothers (whose names the *Roman Martyrology* † tells us, were *Urbanus, Prilidianus, and Epolonius*) whom he had carefully instructed in the Faith, and had trained up for so severe a Trial. The Emperor not doubting to prevail upon their tender years, had taken them from their Tutor, and treated them with all kinds of hardship and cruelty, as methods most apt to make impression upon weak and timorous minds. But perceiving them immovably determined not to Sacrifice, he commanded them also to be beheaded. Being arrived at the place of Execution, *Babylas* placed the Children first, giving them the precedency of Martyrdom, lest the spectacle of his bloody fate should relax their constancy, and make them desert their station. As the Officer was taking off their heads, he cried aloud, *Behold, I and the Children which the Lord hath given me*; and after that laid down his own neck upon the block, having first \* given order to his friends, to whom he had committed the care of his body, that his Chains and Fetters should be buried in the same grave with him, that they might there remain as Ensigns of honour, and the Badges of his sufferings, and as Evidences how much he accounted those things which seem most ignominious among Men, to be for Christ's sake most splendid and honourable: imitating therein the great *S. Paul*, who took pleasure in bonds, chains, imprisonments, reproaches, professing to rejoice and glory in nothing so much as in his sufferings, and in the Cross of Christ. Accordingly his chains were laid up with him in the Grave, where *Chrysostom* assures us they remained in his time.

VIII. WHERE his Body was first buried, we are not told; but wherever it was there it rested till the Reign of *Constantine*, when it had a more magnificent interment, which proved the occasion of one of the most remarkable occurrences that Church-Antiquity has conveyed to us. There was a † place in the Suburbs of *Antioch* called *Daphne*, a place that seemed to be contrived by nature on purpose as the highest Scene of pleasure and delight. It was a delicate Grove thick set with *Cypress*, and other Trees which according to the season afforded all manner of Fruits and Flowers. Furnished it was with infinite variety of shady Walks, the Trees joyning their bushy heads forbad the approaches of the Sun to annoy and scorch them; watered with plenty of Crystal Fountains and pleasant Rivulets, the air cool and temperate, and the wind playing within the boughs of the Trees, added a natural harmony and delightful murmur. It was the usual Scene of the Poets amorous and wanton fancies, and indeed so great a temptation to intemperance

\* *Lib. 6. c. 39.*  
p. 234.  
† *Loc. cit. p.*  
669.

† *Loc. citat.*

\* *Chrysost. Suid.*  
*Martyr. Rom.*  
*ubi supra.*

† *Chrysost. ibid.*  
p. 671. *Sozom.*  
l. 6. c. 19. p.  
625. *Niceph. l.*  
10. c. 28. p. 61.



temperance and riot, that it was accounted scandalous for a good Man to be seen there. But that which was the greatest glory of the place was a stately and magnificent Temple, said to be erected there by *Seleucus* Father to *Antiochus*, who built *Antioch*, and by him dedicated to *Apollo Daphneus*, who also had a very costly and ancient Image placed within the Temple, where Oracles were given forth, which gave not the least addition to the renown and honour of it. And in this condition it remained, till *Gallus*, *Julian's* elder Brother being lately created *Cesar* by his Cousin *Constantius*, was sent to reside at *Antioch*, to secure those frontier parts of the Empire against the incursions of the Enemy. He having a singular veneration for the memories of Christian Martyrs, resolved to purge this place from its lewd Customs and Pagan Superstitions. Which he thought he could not more effectually compass than by building a Church over against *Apollo's* Temple; which was no sooner finished and beautified, but he caused *S. Babylas* his Coffin to be translated thither.

IX. THE Devil it seems liked him not for so near a neighbour, his Presence striking him dumb, so that henceforth not one syllable of an Oracle was given out. This silence was at first \*looked upon as the effect only of neglect, that the sullen *Demon* would not answer, because he had not his usual tribute of Sacrifices, Incense, and other Ritual honours paid to him; but was found afterwards to arise from the neighbourhood of *S. Babylas* his ashes, which caused their second removal upon this occasion. *Julian* having succeeded *Constantius* in the Empire, came to *Antioch* in order to his expedition into *Persia*, and being intolerably overgrown with Superstition, presently went up to *Apollo's* Temple, to consult † the Oracle about the success of the War, and some other important affairs of the Empire, offering the choicest Sacrifices, and making very rich and costly Presents. But alas, all in vain, his Prayers, and Gifts, and Sacrifices availed nothing, the *Demon* giving him to understand that the dead kept him from speaking, and that till the place was cleared from the Corps that lay hard by, he could return no answers by the Oracle. *Julian* quickly perceived his meaning, and though many dead Bodies had been buried there, he suspected 'twas *Babylas* his Remains that were particularly aimed at, and therefore commanded the Christians to remove them thence. Who thereupon assembled in infinite numbers, Persons of all Ages and Sexes, and laying the Coffin upon an open Chariot, brought it into the City with most solemn triumph, singing Psalms of joy all the way they went; and at the end of every period, adding this tart stinging *Verse*, *Confounded be all they that worship carved Images.*

X. THE Reader 'tis like may be apt to scruple this story, as favouring a little of Superstition, and giving too much honour to the Reliques of Saints. To which I shall say no more, than that the credit of it seems unquestionable, it being reported not only by *Socrates*, *Sozomen*, and *Theodoret* (who all lived very near that time) but by *Chrysostom*, who was born at *Antioch*, and was a long time Presbyter of that Church, and was Scholar there to *Libanius* the *Sophister* at that very time when the thing was done, and an \*eye-witness of it, and who not only preached the thing, but wrote a discourse against the *Gentiles* upon this very Subject, wherein he appeals † to the knowledge both of young and old then alive, who had seen it, and challenges them to stand up, and contradict,

\*Chrysost. p. 674. & scriptores supra citat.

† Chrysost. Homil. de S. Babyl. p. 644. & l. de S. Babyl. p. 671, 677, 679. Soz. & Niceph. ubi supr. Socrat. l. 3. c. 18. p. 191. Theodor. H. E. l. 3. c. 105. p. 132. Conf. Philost. loc. supr. citat.

\*Vid. lib. citat. p. 554. & Hom. de Bab. p. 641. † Ibid. p. 676.

\* *Monod. sup.*  
*Apoll. Janum*  
*igni exusti. p.*  
*185.*

† *Misapog.*  
*p. 96.*

\* *Ibid. p. 681.*

† *Lib. 23. p.*  
*1641.*

\* *Socr. c. 19. p.*  
*191. Sozom. &*  
*Theod. Ibid.*

tradict, if they could, the truth of what he related. Nay, which further puts the case past all peradventure, \* *Libanius* the Orator evidently confesses it, when he tells us, that *Apollo Daphneus*, though before neglected and forgotten, yet when *Julian* came with Sacrifices and Oblations to kiss his foot, he appeared again in his Rites of Worship, after that he had been freed from the unwelcome neighbourhood of a certain *dead Man*, who lay hard by, to his great trouble and disturbance. And *Julian* himself † tells the Christians that he had sent back τὸν νεκρὸν τῆς Δάφνης. *their dead Man that had been buried in Daphne*. Nor is it improbable that God should suffer such an extraordinary passage to happen, especially at this time, to demonstrate the vanity of the *Gentile Religion*, to correct the Infidelity of the Emperor, and to give testimony to that Religion, which he scorned with so much insolence and sarcasm, and pursued with so much vigour and opposition. If any enquire why *Julian* should so far gratifie the Christians, as to bestow the Martyrs bones upon them, and suffer them to convey them with so much pomp and honour into the City, and not rather scatter the ashes into the Air, throw them into the Fire, or drown the Coffin in the River? \* *Chrysostom* answers, that he durst not, he was afraid lest the Divine vengeance should overtake him, lest a thunderbolt from Heaven should strike him, or an incurable Disease arrest him, as such kind of miserable fates had overtaken some of his predecessors in the height of their activity against the Christians, and he had lately seen sad instances of it that came very near him; his Uncle *Julian* Prefect of the *East*, a petulant scorner and apostate derider of Christians, who having broken into the great Church at *Antioch*, had treated their Communion Plate with the greatest irreverence and contempt, throwing it upon the ground, spurning, and sitting upon it, and after all carrying it away into the Emperors Exchequer, was immediately seized with a loathsome disease, which I am not willing to mention, which within a few days, in spite of all the arts of Physic, put an end to his miserable life. And *Felix* the *Treasurer*, a Man of the same spirit and temper, and enraged with him in the same design, coming up to the Palace, on a sudden fell down upon the top of the steps and burst asunder. *Ammianus Marcellinus* † himself confessing that he died of a sudden Flux of Blood. Others there were, who about that time came to wretched and untimely ends, but these two only are particularly noted by *Chrysostom*. Examples, which 'tis probable had put an awe and restraint upon him.

XI. BUT *evil Men wax worse and worse*. *Julian*, however awed at present, yet his rage quickly found a vent, which all his Philosophy could not stop. Vexed \* to see the Christians pay so solemn a veneration to the Martyr, and especially stung with the hymns which the Christians sung, the very next day he gave order against the advice of his Privy Council, to *Salust* the *Prefect*, to persecute the Christians, many of whom were accordingly apprehended, and cast into Prison. And among the rest one *Theodorus* a Youth, was caught up in the streets, and put upon the Rack, his flesh torn off with Iron Pincers, scourged and beaten, and when no tortures could shake his constancy, or so much as move his patience, he was at length dismissed. *Ruffinus* afterwards met with this *Theodorus*, and asking him whether in the midst of his torments he felt any pain; he told him, at first he was a little sensible, but that one in the shape of a young Man stood by him, who gently wiped off the sweat from

from his face, refreshed him with cold water, and supported his Spirit with present consolations, so that his Rack was rather a pleasure than a torment to him. But to return.

XII. H E A V E N shewed it self not well pleased with the proceedings of the Emperour. For immediately the Temple of *Apollo* in the *Daphne* took fire, which in a few hours burnt the famed Image of the God, and reduced the Temple, excepting only the Walls and Pillars, into ashes. This the Christians ascribed to the divine vengeance, the *Gentiles* imputed it to the malice of the Christians: and though the Priests and Warders of the Temple were racked to make them say so, yet could they not be brought to affirm any more, than that it was fired by a light from Heaven. This conflagration is mentioned not only by Christian Writers, but by \* *Ammianus Marcellinus*, and by † *Julian* himself, but especially by *Libanius* the Orator, who in an Oration on purpose made to the People, elegantly bewails its unhappy fate; whose Discourse *St. Chrysostom* takes to task, and makes witty and eloquent remarks upon it. If the Reader ask what became of *Babylas* his Remains after all this noise and bustle, they were entombed within the City in a Church dedicated to his name and memory, and in after-Ages are \* said to have been translated ( by some Christian Princes, probably, during their Wars in the holy Land ) to *Cremona* in *Italy*, where how oft they have been honourably reposed, and with how much pomp and ceremonious veneration they are still entertained, they who are curious after such things may enquire.

\* *Lib. 22. p. 1629.*  
† *Loc. supr. cit.*

\* *Vid. Bolland. ad Jan. XXIV. p. 580.*

The End of S. B A B Y L A S's Life.

K k

THE





SCYPRIANUS CARTHAGINENSIS

THE LIFE OF  
**S. CYPRIAN**  
 BISHOP OF  
 CARTHAGE.



**S. CYPRIANUS CARTHAGINENSIS**

*His Birth-place. The Nobility of his Family exploded. The confounding him with another Cyprian Bishop of Antioch. These two vastly distinct. St. Cyprian's education. His professing Rhetoric. His conversion to Christianity*

stianity by the persuasions of Cæcilius. Their mutual endearment. His great Charity to the Poor. His Baptism. Made Presbyter and Bishop of Carthage. His modest declining the honour. His proscription, recess, and care of his Church during that retirement. The case of the Lapsed. A brief account of the rise of the Novatian Sect. The fierceness of the Persecution at Carthage under Decius. The courage and patience of the Christians. Cyprian's return. A Synod at Carthage about the case of the Lapsed, and the case of Novatian. Their determination of these matters, Ratified by a Synod at Rome: and another at Antioch. A Second Synod about the same affair. Moderation in the Ecclesiastic Discipline used in the time of Persecution. The great Pestilence at Carthage. The miserable state of that City. The mighty Charity of St. Cyprian and the Christians at that time. These evils charged upon the Christians. St. Cyprian's vindication of them. The time of Baptizing Infants determined in a Synod. Another Synod to decide the case of the Spanish Bishops that had lapsed in the time of Persecution. The Controversie concerning the Re-baptizing those who had been Baptized by Heretics. This resolved upon in a Synod of LXXXVII. African Bishops. The immoderate heats between Cyprian, Firmilian, and Stephen Bishop of Rome about this matter. Cyprian arraigned before the Proconsul. His resolute carriage His banishment to Curubis. His Martyrdom foretold him by a Vision. His Letters during his exile. The severe usage of the Christians. His withdrawalment, and why. His apprehension and examination before the Proconsul. The Sentence passed upon him His Martyrdom, and place of burial. His Piety, Fidelity, Chastity, Humility, Modesty Charity, &c. His natural parts. His Learning wherein it mainly consisted. The politeness and elegance of his style. His quick proficiency in Christian studies. His frequent converse with Tertullian's Writings. His Books. The excellency of those ascribed to him. The great honour done to his memory.

I.



**H**ASCIVS Cæcilius Cyprian was born at Carthage, in the declining part of the foregoing *Sæculum*, though the particular year cannot be ascertained. Who or what his Parents were is unknown. \* Cardinal Baronius (not to mention others) makes him descended of a rich honourable Family, and himself to have been one of the chief of the *Senatorial* Order; and this upon the Authority of † Nazianzen, who indeed af-

firms, it; but then certainly forgot that in very few lines before he had exploded as a fabulous mistake, the confounding our Cyprian with another of the same name, of whom Nazianzen unquestionably meant it. For besides our *Carthaginian* Cyprian, there was another born at *Antioch*, a person of great learning and eminency, who travelled through *Greece*, *Phrygia*, *Egypt*, *India*, *Chaldea*, and where not? famous for the Study and the Arts of *Magic*, by which he sought to compass the affections of *Justina*, a noble Christian Virgin at *Antioch*, by whose Prayers and endeavours he was converted, baptized, made first *Sexton*, then *Deacon* of that Church, was indued with miraculous powers, and afterwards consecrated Bishop of that Church, (though I confess I find not his name in the Catalogue of the Bishops of that See, drawn up by *Nicephorus* of *Constan-*

\* *Ad Ann.* 250.  
n. v. *vid. not.*  
*ad. Martyrol.*  
*Rom. Sept.*  
*XXVI. p. 600.*  
† *Orat in laud.*  
*S. Cypr. p. 275.*



Constantinople) and at last having been miserably tormented at *Antioch*, was sent to *Dioclesian* himself then at *Nicomedia*, by whose command together with *Justina*, sent thither also at the same time from *Damascus*, he was beheaded. The History of all which was largely described in three Books in Verse, written by the noble Empress *Eudocia*, the *excerpta* whereof are still extant in \* *Photius*. This account *Simeon* the *Metaphrast*, *Nicephorus* and the later *Greeks* without any Scruple attribute to St. *Cyprian* of *Carthage*, nay some of them make him to suffer Martyrdom under the *Decian* Persecution. Though in the whole mistake the more to be pardoned, in that not only *Prudentius*, but *Nazianzen* had long before manifestly confounded these two eminent persons, who finding several passages of the *Antiochian Cyprian* very near akin to the other, carried all the rest along with them, as two persons very like are oft mistaken the one for the other. To prove that our *Cyprian* was not him described by *Nazianzen*, were a vain and needless attempt, the accounts concerning them being so vastly different, both as to their Countrey, Education, manner of Life, Episcopal charge, the time, place, and companions of their death, that it is plainly impossible to reconcile them. But of this enough.

\* Cod.  
CLXXXIV. col.  
416.

II. St. CYPRIAN's education was ingenuous †, polished by Study and the liberal Arts, though principally he addicted himself to the Study of Oratory and Eloquence, wherein he made such vast improvements, that publicly and with great applause he taught Rhetoric at \* *Carthage*. All which time he lived in great pomp and plenty, in honour and power, his garb splendid, his retinue stately; never going abroad (as himself tells us †) but he was thronged with a crowd of Clients and Followers. The far greatest part of his life he passed among the errors of the *Gentile* Religion, and was at least upon the borders of old Age when he was rescued from the Vassalage of inveterate Customs, the darkness of Idolatry, and the errors and vices of his past life, as \* himself intimates in his Epistle to *Donatus*. He was converted to Christianity by the arguments and importunities of *Cacilius* † a Presbyter of *Carthage*, a person whom ever after he loved as a friend, and revered as a father. And so mutual an endearment was there between them, that *Cyprian* in honour to him assumed the title of *Cacilius*; and the other at his death made him his Executor, and committed his Wife and Children to his sole care and tutelage. Being yet a *Catechumen* \* he gave early instances of a great and generous piety: professed a strict and severe temperance and sobriety, accounting it one of the best preparations for the entertainment of the truth, to subdue and tread down all irregular appetites and inclinations. His estate, at least the greatest part of it, he sold, and distributed among the necessities of the poor, at once triumphing over the love of the World, and exercising that great duty of Mercy and Charity, which God values above all the Ritual Devotions in the World. So that by the speedy progress of his piety (says *Pontius* his Friend and Deacon) he became almost a perfect Christian, before he had learnt the rules of Christianity.

† Pont. Diac. in  
vit. Cypr. non  
longe ab init.

\* Hier. descript.  
in Cypriano.

† Ad Donat.  
Epist. 1. p. 2.

\* Ubi supra.

† Pont. ibid. p.  
12.

\* Id ibid. p. 11.

III. BEING fully instructed in the rudiments of the Christian Faith, he was Baptized †, when the mighty assistances which he received from above, perfectly dispelled all doubts, enlightened all obscurities, and enabled him with ease to do things, which before he looked upon as impossible to be discharged. Not long after, he was called to the inferior

† Epist. 1. p.  
2, 3.

Eccle-

\* *Epist.* 55.  
p. 82.

† *Epist.* 40.  
p. 53.  
\* *P. Liac.* p.  
12.

† *Ep.* 55. p. 80.

Ecclesiastic Offices, and then advanced to the degree of Presbyter, wherein he so admirably behaved himself, that he was quickly summoned to the highest Order and Honour in the Church. *Donatus* his immediate predecessor in the See of *Carthage* (as his own words \* seem to imply) being dead, the general vogue both of Clergy and People (*Felicissimus* the Presbyter and some very few of his Party only dissenting †) was for *Cyprian* to succeed him. But the great modesty and humility of the Man made him flee \* from the first approaches of the news, he thought himself unfit for so weighty and honourable an employment, and therefore desired that a more worthy person, and some of his Seniors in the Faith might possess the place. His declining it did but set so much the keener an edge upon the desires and expectations of the People; his doors were immediately crowded, and all passages of escape blocked up; he would indeed have fled out at the window, but finding it in vain, he unwillingly yielded, the People in the mean while impatiently waiting, divided between hope and fear, till seeing him come forth, they received him with an universal joy and satisfaction. This Charge he entered upon *Ann.* CCXLVIII. as himself † plainly intimates, when in his Letter to *Cornelius* he tells him he had been four years Bishop of *Carthage*: which Epistle was written not long after the beginning of *Cornelius* his Pontificat, *Ann.* CCLI. It was the third Consulship of *Philip* the Emperor; a memorable time, it being the thousandth year *ab Urbe Condita*, when the *Ludi Saculares* were celebrated at *Rome* with all imaginable magnificence and solemnity. Though indeed it was then but the declining part of the *Annus Milleimus*, which began with the *Palilia*, about *April* XXI. of the foregoing year, and ended with the *Palilia* of this: whence in the Ancient coins of this Emperour these *Secular Sports* are sometimes ascribed to his second, sometimes, to his third Consulship, as commencing in the one, and being compleated in the other.

\* *Epist.* 69. p.  
117. *Ep.* 55 p.  
80. *id.* *Mont. de*  
*cit. Cypri.* p. 12.

† *Epist.* 9. p. 22.  
\* *Ep.* 14. p. 27.

*Lec. citat.*

IV. THE entrance upon his Care and Government was calm and peaceable, but he had not been long in it before a storm overtook him, and upon what occasion I know not, he was publicly \* proscribed by the name of *Cacilius Cyprian Bishop of the Christians*, and every Man commanded not to hide or conceal his goods. And not satisfied with this, they frequently called out, that he might be thrown to the Lions. So that being warned by a divine admonition and command from God (as he pleads for himself †) and left by his resolute defiance of the public sentence he should provoke his adversaries \* to fall more severely upon the whole Church, he thought good at present to withdraw himself, hoping that malice would cool and die, and the fire go out when the fuel that kindled it was taken away. During this recess, though absent in body, yet was he present in Spirit, supplying the want of his presence by Letters, (whereof he wrote no less than XXXVIII) by pious counsels, grave admonitions, frequent reproofs, earnest exhortations, and especially by hearty prayers to heaven for the welfare and prosperity of the Church. That which created him the greatest trouble, was the case of the lapsed, whom some Presbyters without the knowledge and consent of the Bishop, rashly admitted to the Communion of the Church upon very easie terms. *Cyprian*, a stiff asserter of Ecclesiastic Discipline, and the rights of his place, would not brook this, but by several Letters not only complained of it, but endeavoured to reform it,

not

not sparing the Martyrs themselves, who presuming upon their great merits in the cause of Religion, took upon them to give *Libels of Peace* to the lapsed, whereby they were again taken into Communion, sooner than the Rules of the Church did allow.

V. THIS remissness of Discipline, and easie admission of Penitents, gave occasion to *Novatus*, one of the Presbyters of *Carthage* to start aside, and draw a Faction after him, denying any place to the lapsed, though penitent, in the peace and communion of the Church; not that they absolutely excluded them the mercy and pardon of God (for they left them to the sentence of the divine *Tribunal*) but maintained that the Church had no power to absolve them that once lapsed after Baptism, and to receive them again into Communion. Having sufficiently imbroiled the Church at home (where he was in danger to be Excommunicated by *Cyprian* for his scandalous, irregular, and unpeaceable practices) over he goes with some of his Party to *Rome*, where by a pretence of uncommon sanctity and severity, besides some Confessors lately delivered out of Prison, he seduced *Novatianus* (who by the Greek Fathers is almost perpetually confounded with *Novatus*) a Presbyter of the *Roman* Church, a Man of an insolent and ambitious temper, and who had attempted to thrust himself into that Chair. Him the Party procures by clancular Arts and uncanonical means to be consecrated Bishop, and then set him up against *Cornelius*, lately ordained Bishop of that See, whom they peculiarly charged \* with holding a communion with *Trophimus* and some others of the *Thuriscari*, who had done Sacrifice in the late Persecution. Which though plausibly pretended, was yet a false allegation; *Trophimus* and his Party not being taken in, till by great humility † and a public penance they had given satisfaction to the Church, nor he then suffered to communicate any otherwise than in a Lay-capacity. Being disappointed in their designs, they now openly shew themselves in their own colours, separate from the Church, which they charge with looseness and licentiousness in admitting scandalous offenders, and by way of distinction, stiling themselves *Cathari*, the pure undefiled Party, those who kept themselves from all society with the lapsed, or them that communicated with them. Hereupon they were on all hands opposed by private persons, and condemned by public Synods, and cried down by the common Vote of the Church, probably not so much upon the account of their different sentiments and opinions in point of pardon of sin, and Ecclesiastical Penance (wherein they stood not at so wide a distance from the doctrine and practice of the early Ages of the Church) as for their insolent and domineering temper, their proud and surly carriage, their rigorous and imperious imposing their way upon other Churches, their taking upon them by their own private Authority to judge, censure and condemn those that joyned not with them, or opposed them, their bold devesting the Governors of the Church of that great power lodged in them, of remitting crimes upon repentance, which seem to have been the very Soul and Spirit of the *Novatian* Sect.

VI. IN the mean while the Persecution under *Decius* raged with an uncontrolled fury over the *African* Provinces, and especially at *Carthage*, concerning which *Cyprian* every where \* gives large and sad accounts, whereof this the sum. They were scourged, and beaten, and racked, and roasted, and their flesh pulled off with burning pincers, beheaded with swords, and run through with spears, more instruments

\* *Vid. Ep. 55. ad Antonian. p. 66.*

† *Ibid. p. 69.*

\* *Ep. 53. p. 75. Epist. 7. p. 16. Epist. 8. p. 19. lib. ad Demetr. p. 200.*



of torment being many times imployed about the man at once, than there were limbs and members of his Body : they were spoiled and plundred, chained and imprifoned, thrown to wild Beasts, and burnt at the stake. And when they had run over all their old methods of execution, they studied for more, *excogitat novas penas ingeniofa crudelitas*, as he complains. Nor did they only vary, but repeat the torments, and where one ended, another began ; they tortured them without hopes of dying, and added this cruelty to all the reft, to ftop them in their Journey to Heaven ; many who were importunately defirous of death, were fo tortured, that they might not die, they were purpofely kept upon the Rack, that they might die by piece-meals, that their pains might be lingering, and their fenfe of them without intermiffion, they gave them no intervals, or times of refpite, unlefs any of them chanced to give them the flip and expire in the midft of torments. All which did but render their Faith and Patience more illuftrious, and make them more earneftly long for Heaven. They tired out their Tormenters, and overcame the sharpeft engines of execution, and fmiled at the bufie Officers that were raking in their wounds, and when their flefh was wearied, their Faith was unconquerable. The multitude beheld with admiration thefe heavenly conflicts, and stood aftonifhed to hear the fervants of Chrift in the midft of all this with an unshaken mind making a free and bold confeffion of him, deftitute of any external fuccour, but armed with a divine power, and defending themfelves with *the Shield of Faith*.

VII. TWO full years St. Cyprian had remained in his retirement, when the Persecution being fomewhat abated by the death of *Decius*, he returned to *Carthage*, Ann. CCLI. where he fet himfelf to reform diforders, and to compofe the differences that difturbed his Church. For which purpofe he conven'd a Synod of his neighbour-Bifhops, to confult about the caufe of the *lapsed*. Who were no fooner met, \* but there arrived meffengers with Letters from *Novatian*, fignifying his Ordination to the See of *Rome*, and bringing an accusation and charge againft *Cornelius*. But the Men no fooner appeared, but were difowned, and rejected from Communion, efpecially after that *Pompeius* and *Stephanus* were arrived from *Rome*, and had brought a true account and relation of the cafe. The Synod therefore advifed and charged them to defift from their turbulent and fchifmatical proceedings, not to rend the Church by propagating a pernicious Faction, that it was their beft way and the fafeft counfel they could take to fhew themfelves true Chriftians, by returning back to the Peace of the Church. As for the *lapsed*, having difcuffed their cafe † according to the Rules of the holy Scripture, they concluded upon this wife and moderate expedient, that neither all hopes of Peace and Communion fhould be denied them, left looking upon themfelves as in a desperate cafe, they fhould ftart back into a total Apoftafie from the Faith, nor yet the censures of the Church be fo far relaxed, as rashly to admit them to Communion : but that the cafes being examined, and regard being had to the will of the Delinquents, and the aggravations of particular cafes, their time of Penance fhould be accordingly prolonged, and the divine clemency be obtained by acts of a great sorrow and repentance. Their meaning is, that the *lapsed* being of feveral forts, fhould be treated according to the nature of their crimes ; the *Libellatici*, who had only purchafed Libels of fecurity and difmiffion from the Heathen Magiftrate to excufe them from doing Sacrifice in time of perfecution, fhould

\* Ad Cornel.  
Epist. 41. p. 55.

† Ad Anton.  
Epist. 52. p. 67.

should have a a shorter time of penance assigned them, the *Sacrificati*, who had actually sacrificed to Idols, should not be taken in till they had expiated their offence by a very long penance, and (as they sometimes call it) *satisfaction*. This Synodical determination \* was presently sent to *Rome*, and ratified by *Cornelius* and a Council of sixty Bishops, and above as many Presbyters and Deacons, concluding (and the Decree examined, assented to, and published by the Bishops in their several Provinces) that *Novatus* and his insolent Party, and all that adhered to his inhumane and mercileſs opinion, should be excluded the Communion of the Church; but that the Brethren who had fallen into that calamity, should be gently dealt with, and restored by methods of repentance. About the ſame time there was a Synod alſo held at *Antioch* by the *Eastern* Bishops about the ſame affair. For ſo *Dionysius* † Biſhop of *Alexandria* in his Letter to *Cornelius* of *Rome*, tells him, that he had been ſummoned by *Helenus* Biſhop of *Tarſus*, *Firmilian* of *Cappadocia*, and *Theoſtiſtus* of *Caeſarea* in *Paleſtin*, to meet in Council at *Antioch*, to ſuppreſs the endeavours of ſome, who fought there to eſtabliſh the *Novatian* Schiſm.

\* *Id. ibid. Epiſt. l. 6. c. 43. p. 242.*

† *Ap. Epiſt. H. Eccleſ. l. 6. c. 46. p. 247.*

VIII. THE next Year *May XV. Ann. CCLII* began another \* Council at *Carthage* about this matter, and wherein they ſteered the ſame courſe they had done before, being rather ſwayed to moderate counſels herein, becauſe frequently admoniſhed by divine revelations of an approaching Perſecution, and therefore did not think it prudent and reaſonable, that Men ſhould be left naked and unarmed in the day of battel, but that they might be able to defend themſelves with the ſhield of Chriſts body and blood. For how ſhould they ever hope to perſuade them to ſhed their own blood in the cauſe of Chriſt, if they denied them the benefit of his blood? how could it be expected they ſhould be ready to drink of the cup of Martyrdom, whom the Church debarred the privilege to drink of the cup of Chriſt? While peace and tranquillity ſmiled upon the Church, they protracted the time of penance, and allowed not the *Sacrificati* to be re-admitted, but at the hour of death. But that now the enemy was breaking in upon them, and Chriſtians were to be prepared and heartned on for ſuffering, and encouragement to be given to thoſe who by the ſincerity of their repentance had ſhewed themſelves ready to reſiſt unto blood, and to contend earneſtly for the Faith. This they did not to patronize the Lazy, but excite the Diligent, the Churches Peace being granted not in order to eaſe and ſoftneſs, but to conflict and contention. And if any improved the indulgence to worſer purpoſes, they did but cheat themſelves, and ſuch they remitted to the divine Tribunal. At this Synod appeared one † *Privatus*, who having ſome years ſince been condemned for Hereſie and other crimes by a Council of XC. Biſhops, deſired that his cauſe might be heard over again, but was rejected by the Synod, whereupon gathering a Party of the lapſed, or the Schiſmatics, he ordained at *Carthage* one *Fortunatus* Biſhop, giving out that no leſs than five and twenty Biſhops were preſent at the conſecration. But the notorious falſhood and vanity of their pretences being diſcovered, they left the place and fled over to *Rome*.

\* *Epiſt. Synod. ad Cornel. Ep. 54. p. 76. & Ep. 55. p. 82.*

† *Ibid. p. 82.*

IX. ABOUT this time happened that miſerable Plague, that ſo much afflicted the *Roman* World, wherein *Carthage* had a very deep ſhare. \* Vaſt multitudes were ſwep away every day, the fatal Meſ-

senger knocking as he went along at every door. The streets were filled with the carcasses of the dead, which seemed to implore the assistance of the living, and to challenge it as a right by the Laws of Nature and Humanity, as that which shortly themselves might stand in need of. But alas all in vain, every one trembled, and fled and shifted for himself, deserted their dearest friends and nearest relations; none considered what might be his own case, nor how reasonable it was that he should do for another, what he would another should do for him, and if any staid behind, it was only to make a prey. In this calamitous and tragic Scene, *S. Cyprian* calls the Christians together, instructs them in the duties of Mercy and Charity, and from the Precepts and Examples of the holy Scripture shews them what a mighty influence they have to oblige God to us; that it was no wonder if their Charity extended only to their own Party, the way to be perfect, and to be Christians indeed, was to do something *more than Heathens and Publicans, to overcome evil with good*, and in imitation of the divine benignity to *love our Enemies*, and according to our Lord's advice, to pray for the happiness of them that persecute us; that God constantly makes his Sun to rise, and his rain to fall upon the Seeds and Plants, not only for the advantage of his own Children, but of all other Men; that therefore they should act as became the nobility of their new birth, and imitate the example of such a Father, who professed themselves to be his Children. Persuaded by this and much more that he discoursed to the same effect, enough to convince the very *Gentiles* themselves, they presently divided their help according to each ones rank and quality. Those who by reason of poverty could contribute nothing to the charge, did what was infinitely more, personally laboured in the common calamity, an assistance infinitely beyond all other Contributions. Indeed every one was ambitious to engage under the conduct of such a Commander, and in a service wherein they might so eminently approve themselves to God the Father and Christ the Judge of all, and in the mean time to so pious and good a Bishop. And by this large and abundant charity great advantage redounded not to themselves only, who were *of the household of Faith*, but universally to all. And that he might not be wanting to any, he penned at this time his excellent Discourse *concerning Mortality*, wherein he so eloquently teaches a Christian to triumph over the fears of death, and shews how little reason there is excessively to mourn for those friends and relations, that are taken from us.

X. THIS horrible pestilence, together with the Wars which of late had, and even then did, over-run the Empire, the *Gentiles* generally charged upon the Christian Religion, as that for which the gods were implacably angry with the World. To vindicate it from this common objection, *Cyprian* addresses himself in a Discourse to *Demetrian* the *Proconsul*, wherein he proves that these evils that came upon the World, could not be laid at

*Exoritur ultio violati nominis Christiani, & usquequo ad profigandas Ecclesias edicta Decii cucurverunt, eatenus incredibilium morborum pestis extenditur. Nulla fere provincia Romana, nulla Civitas, nulla domus fuit, que non illa generali pestilentia correpta atque vastata sit. P. Orosius Hist. adv. Pagan. l. 7. c. 21. fol. 310. p. 2.*

the door of Christianity, assigning other reasons of them, and among the rest their wild and brutish rage against the Christians, which had provoked the deity to bring these calamities upon them, as a just punishment of their folly and madness in persecuting a Religion, so innocent and dear to Heaven. The Persecution being over, a controverſie arose concerning the time of baptizing Infants, started espe-



especially by *Fidus* \* an *African* Bishop, who asserted that Baptism was not to be administered on the third or fourth, but as Circumcision under the *Jewish* state to be deferred till the eighth day. S. *Cyprian* in a Synod of sixty six Bishops determined this question, that it was not necessary to be deferred so long, nor the grace and mercy of God to be denied to any as soon as born into the World; that it was their universal sentence and resolution, that none ought to be prohibited Baptism and the grace of God; which as it was to be observed and retained towards all, so much more towards Infants and new born Children. Not long after which, another Council was held by † *Cyprian*, (importuned thereunto by the Bishops of *Spain*) to consult concerning the case of *Basilides* Bishop of *Asturica*, and *Martial* of *Emerita* in *Spain*, who had lapsed into the most horrible idolatry in the late Persecution, and yet still retained their places in the Church. The Synod resolved, that they were fallen from their Episcopal Order, and the very lowest degree of the Ministry, and that upon their repentance they were to be restored to no more than the capacity of *Laics* in the communion of the Church.

\* *Vid. Epist. Synod. ad Fid. Ep. 59. p. 94.*

† *Epist. 68. p. 112. & seq.*

XI. IN this Synod, or another called not long after, the famous contest about re-baptizing those who had been baptized by Heretics, received its first approbation. It had been sometime since by occasion of the *Montanists* and *Novatians* canvassed in the *Eastern* parts, thence it flew over to *Numidia*, by the Bishops whereof it had been brought before *Cyprian*, and the Council at *Carthage*, who determined that the thing was necessary to be observed, and that this was no novel sentence, but had been so decreed by his Predecessors, and the thing constantly practised and observed among them, as he assures them in the Synodical \* Epistle about this matter. Among others to whom they sent their Decrees, the Synod † especially wrote to *Stephen* Bishop of *Rome* (who had so far espoused the contrary opinion, as to excommunicate the Synod at *Isonium* for making the like determination) him they acquainted with the sentence they had passed, and the reasons of it, which they hoped he also would assent to, however did not magisterially impose it upon him, every Bishop having a proper Authority within the jurisdiction of his own Church, whereof he is to render an account to God. Pope *Stephen* (with whom stood a great part of the Church) liked not their proceedings; whereupon a more general Council was summoned, where no less than LXXXVII. Bishops from all parts of the *African* Churches met together, who unanimously ratified the former sentence, whose names and particular votes are extant in the † *Acts* of that Council. But numbers made the cause never the better resented at *Rome*, and indeed the controversy arose to that height between these two good Men, that *Stephen* gave *Cyprian* very rude and unchristian language \*, styling him *false Christ*, *false Apostle*, *deceitful worker*, and such like: while on the other hand *Cyprian* treated him with more than ordinary sharpness and severity, charging † him with pride and impertinence, and self-contradiction, with ignorance and indiscretion, with childishness and obstinacy, and other expressions, far enough from that reverence and regard, which S. *Stephen's* Successors claim at this day. And no better usage did he find from *Firmilian* Bishop of *Cæsarea* in *Cappadocia*, as may be seen in his Letter to *Cyprian* \*, charging *Stephen* with sacrificing the Churches Peace to a petulant humour, where inhumanity, audaciousness, insolence, wickedness, are some of the characters bestowed

\* *Epist. 69. p. 117.*  
† *Epist. 72. p. 121.*

† *Apud Cyp. p. 131. & Concil. Tom. 1. col. 786. Edit. nov. ff.*

\* *Firmil. Epist. ad Cyp. p. 150.*

† *Ad Pompei. Epist. 74. p. 129.*

\* *Apud. Cyp. p. 143.*

\* *Ad Quint. E-*  
*pist. 71. p. 119.*

upon him. A great instance how far passion and prejudice may transport wise and good Men beyond the merits of the cause, and what the Laws of Kindness and Charity do allow. I note no more concerning this, than that *Cyprian* and his Party \* expressly disowned *Anabaptism*, or rebaptization, they freely confessed that there was but one Baptism, and that those who came over from Heretical Churches, where they had had their Baptism, were not rebaptized, but baptized, their former Baptism being *ipso facto* null and invalid, and they did then receive, what (lawfully) they had not before.

† *Act. Pass. S.*  
*Cyprian, ap.*  
*Cypr. p. 16, 17.*  
24.

XII. IT was now the Year CCLVII. when *Aspasius Paternus* the *Proconsul* of *Afric* sent † for *Cyprian* to appear before him, telling him, that he had lately received orders from the Emperours (*Valerian* and *Gallienus*) commanding that all that were of a Foreign Religion should worship the gods according to the *Roman* Rites, desiring to know what was his resolution? *Cyprian* answered, *I am a Christian and a Bishop, I acknowledge no other gods, but one only true God, who made Heaven and Earth, and all that therein is. This is he whom we Christians serve, to whom we pray day and night, for our selves and for all Men, and for the happiness and prosperity of the Emperours.* And is this then thy resolution? said the *Proconsul*. That resolution, replied the Martyr, which is founded in God, cannot be altered. Then he told him, that he was to search out the *Presbyters* as well as *Bishops*, requiring him to discover them. To which *Cyprian* gave no other answer, than that according to their own Laws, they were not bound to be Informers. The *Proconsul* then acquainted him, that he was commanded to prohibit all private Assemblies, and to proceed with capital severity against them that frequented them. Whereat the good Man told him, that his best way was to do as he was commanded. The *Proconsul* finding 'twas in vain to treat with him, commanded him to be banished, and accordingly he was transported to *Carubine*, a little City standing in a *Peninsula* within the *Libyan* Sea, not far from *Pentapolis*, a \* place pleasant and delightful enough, and where he met with a kind and a courteous usage, was frequently visited by the Brethren, and furnished with all conveniences necessary for him.

\* *P. Disc. in*  
*vit. Cypr. p. 14.*

*Loc. citat.*

XIII. BUT the greatest entertainment in this retirement, were those divine and heavenly Visions with which God was pleased to honour him, by one whereof the very first day of his coming thither he was particularly forewarned of his approaching Martyrdom, whereof *Pontius* the *Deacon*, who accompanied him in his banishment, gives us this account from the Martyr's own mouth. There appeared to him as he was going to rest, a young Man of a prodigious stature, who seemed to lead him to the *Prætorium* and to present him to the *Proconsul* then sitting upon the Bench: who looking upon him, began to write something in a Book, which the young Man who looked over his shoulder, read, but not daring to speak, intimated by signs what it was: for extending one of his hands at length, he made a cross stroke over it with the other, by which *Cyprian* presently guessed the manner of his death. Whereupon he importunately begged of the *Proconsul* but one days respite to dispose his affairs, and partly by the pleasingness of the Judges countenance, partly by the signs which the young Man made of what the *Proconsul* was noting in his Book, he immediately gathered that his request was granted. And just so it accordingly came to pass, both as to the time and man.

manner of his Martyrdom, that very day twelve-month, whereon he had this vision, proving the period of his life.

XIV. HOW active and diligent he was to improve his opportunities to the best advantage, appears from the several Letters he wrote during his confinement, especially to the Martyrs in Prison, whose Spirits he refreshed by proper consolations, and pressed them to persevere unto the Crown. While he was here he had news brought \* him of the daily increase of the Persecution, the Emperor *Valerian* having sent a *Rescript* to the *Senate*, that Bishops, Presbyters, and Deacons should be put to death without delay; that Senators, and persons of rank and quality should lose their honours and preferments, forfeit their estates, and if still they continued Christians, lose their heads; and that Matrons having had their goods confiscated, should be banished: that *Xystus* and *Quartus* had already suffered in the *Cemetery*, where their solemn assemblies were held; and that the Governours of the City carried on the Persecution with might and main, spoiling and putting to death all that they could meet with. This sad and uncomfortable news † gave the good Man just reason to expect and provide for his own fate, which he waited and wished for every day. Indeed some persons of the highest rank and quality his ancient friends came to him, and persuaded him for the present to withdraw, offering to provide a secure place for his retreat. But the desire of that Crown which he had in his eye, had set him above the World, and made him deaf to their kind offers and intreaties. True it is that when news was brought that the Officers were coming for him, to carry him to *Utica* to suffer there, by the advice of his friends he stept aside, being unwilling to suffer any where but at *Carthage*, in the eye of the People, where he had so long, and so successfully preached the Christian Faith, the truth whereof he was desirous to seal with his Blood; it being very fit and congruous, that a Bishop should suffer for our Lord in that place where he had governed his Church, and by that eminent confession edifie and encourage the Flock committed to him, as he tells \* the People of his charge in the last Letter that ever he wrote. As for themselves, he advised them to peace and unity, not to create trouble to one another, not to offer themselves to the *Gentiles*, but if any was apprehended, to stand to it, and freely confess, as God should enable him to declare himself.

XV. *GALERIUS Maximus* the new *Proconsul* being returned to *Carthage* †, *Cyprian* (who resolved but till then to conceal himself) came home, and took up his residence in his own Gardens. Where Officers were presently sent to apprehend him, who putting him into a Chariot, carried him to the place where the *Proconsul* was retired for his health, who commanded him to be kept till the next day, which was done in the house of one of the Officers that secured him, the People alarm'd with the news of his return and apprehension, flocking to the doors, and watching there all night. The next morning being *Septemb. XIV. Ann. Chr. CCLVIII.* he was led to the *Proconsul's* Palace, who not being yet come forth, he was carried aside into a by-place, where he rested himself upon a seat, which by chance was covered with a linnen cloth, that so (says my Author) even in the hour of his Passion he might enjoy some part of Episcopal honour. The length and hurry of his walk, had put the infirm and aged Man into a violent sweat, which being observed by a Military Messenger, who had formerly been a Christian, he came to him

\* *Ad Success.*  
*Epiß. 82. p.*  
*160.*

† *P. Diae. ubi*  
*supr. p. 19.*

\* *Epiß. 82. p.*  
*161.*

† *Pont. ib. p. 14.*  
*Act. Passion. ib.*  
*p. 16, 18, 19,*  
*24.*



him and offered to accommodate him with dry linnen instead of that wet and moist that was about him: this he did in a pretended civility, but really with design to have secured some Monument of the Martyrs last agony and labour, who returned no other answer, than, *We seek to cure complaints and sorrows, which perhaps to day shall be no more for ever.* By this time the Proconsul was come out, who looking upon him, said, *Art thou Thascius Cyprian, who hast been Bishop and Father to Men of an impious mind? The sacred Emperour commands thee to do sacrifice. Be well advised, and do not throw away thy life.* The holy Martyr replied, *I am Cyprian, I am a Christian, and I cannot sacrifice to the gods; do as thou art commanded; as for me, in so just a cause there needs no consultation.* The Proconsul was angry at his resolute constancy, and told him, that he had been a long time of this sacrilegious humour; had seduced abundance into the same wicked conspiracy with himself, and shewn himself an enemy to the gods and Religion of the Roman Empire, one whom the pious and religious Emperours could never reduce to the observance of their holy Rites: that therefore being found to be the Author and Ring-leader of so hainous a crime, he should be made an example to those whom he had seduced into so great a wickedness, and that Discipline and severity should be established in his Blood. Whereupon he read his sentence out of a Table-book, *I will that Thascius Cyprian be beheaded.* To which the Martyr only answered, *I heartily thank Almighty God, who is pleased to set me free from the chains of the Body.*

XVI. SENTENCE being passed, he was led away from the Tribunal with a strong guard of Souldiers, infinite numbers of People crouding after, the Christians weeping and mourning, and crying out, *Let us also be beheaded with him.* The place of Execution was *Sextus* his Field, a large circuit of Ground, where the Trees (whereof the place was full) were loaded with persons to behold the Spectacle. The Martyr presently began to strip himself, first putting off his Cloak, which he folded up, and laid at his feet, and falling down upon his knees, recommended his Soul to God in prayer; after which he put off his *Dalmatic*, or under-coat which he delivered to the Deacons, and so standing in nothing but a linnen vestment, expected the headsmen, to whom he commanded

*Cum venisset Spiculator, jussit suis, ut eadem Spiculatori XXV. (alia Acta habent XX.) arreos darent. A& Cyp. p. 18. Auctus sub imperatoribus Romanis valuit de nostro 15 s. sed sub Alexandro Severo primo casu sunt Semissis Aurei (de nostro 7s. 6d.) & Tremissis Aurei, qui valuit de nostro 5 s. vid. Brierw. de Num. cap. 14. de ultimo hunc ex Actis Cypriani locum intellegendum puto.*

the sum of about VI. pounds to be given, the Brethren spreading linnen Cloths about him to preserve his Blood from being spilt upon the ground, his shirt sleeves being tied by *Julian* (or as one of the Acts call him, *Tullian*) the Presbyter, and *Julian* the Sub-deacon, he covered his eyes with his own hand, and the Executioner did his Office. His Body was by the Christi-

ans deposited not far off, but at night for fear of the Gentiles, removed, and with abundance of lights and torches solemnly interred in the Cemetery of *Macrobius Candidus* a Procurator, near the Fish-ponds in the *Mappalian* way. This was done *Ann. CCLVIII. Valeriani & Gallien. V.* so extravagantly wide is the account of the \* *Alexandrian Chronicle* (if it means the same person) when it tells us, that *S. Cyprian* suffered Martyrdom *Ann. Alexandri Imp. XIII.* that is *Ann. Chr. CCXXXIV.* though the *Consuls* under which he places it (and this agrees better with his other accounts, both of the *Olympiads*, and of *Christs Ascension*) assign it to the last years of *Maximinus*, *Ann. Chr. CCXXXVII.* for so he says, that

\* *Ann. 4. Olympiad. CCLIII. Indict. XIII. p. 626.*

that it was CCV. years after our Lords ascension into Heaven. Which was however far enough from truth. Indeed elsewhere \* he places S. Cyprian's Martyrdom *Valeriani* II. which (as appears by the *Consuls* should be V. that is *Ann. Chr. CCLVIII.* But it is no new thing with that Author to confound times and persons, and assign the same events to different years. Thus died this good Man, the first Bishop of his See that suffered Martyrdom, as † *Pontius* his Deacon informs us, who was a true lover of him, and followed him to the last, and professes himself not to rejoice so much at the glory and triumph of his Master, as to mourn that he himself was left behind.

\* *An. I. Olymp.*  
259. *Ind. IV.*  
*Valer. II.*

† *Ibid. pag. 16.*

XVII. S. CYPRIAN though starting late, ran apace in the Christian race. He had a Soul inflamed with a mighty love and zeal for God, whose honour he studied by all ways to promote. A wife and prudent Governour, a great asserter of the Churches Rights, a resolute Patron and defender of the Truth, a faithful and vigilant Overseer of his flock, powerful and diligent in preaching, prudent in his determinations, moderate in his counsels, grave and severe in his admonitions, pathetic and affectionate in his persuasives, indulgent to the Penitent, but inflexible to the obstinate and contumacious. Infinite pains he took to reclaim the *lapsed*, and to restore them to the Church by

*Quæcunque bona id multis libris tuis intulisti, nescius ipsum te nobis designasti: es enim omnibus in tractatu major, in sermone sacundior, in consilio sapientior, in patientia simplicior, in operibus largior, in abstinentia sanctior, in obsequio humilior, & in actu bono innocentior. Nemes. &c. Martyr. Epist. ad Cyp. p. 157.*

methods of penance \* and due humiliation: he invited them kindly, treated them tenderly; if their minds were honest, and their desires sincere, he would not rigorously examin their crimes by over-nice weights and measures; and so prone to pity and compassion, that he was afraid lest he himself offended in remitting other mens offences. He valued the good of Souls above the love of his own life, constant in the profession of Religion, from which neither by hopes nor fears could he be drawn aside. How strictly chaste and continent he was, even in his first entrance upon Christianity, we have noted in the beginning of his life. His humility eminently appeared in his declining the honour of the Episcopal Order, and desire that it might be conferred upon a more deserving person; and when some factious and schismatical persons traduced him as taking too much upon him, because he controlled their wild and licentious courses, he vindicates his humility at large in a Letter to *Pupianus* †, who had made himself Head of the Party that appeared against him. So modest, that in all great transactions concerning the Church, he always consulted both his Colleagues and his Flock, himself assuring us \*, that from the very entrance upon his Bishoprick he determined, not to adjudge any thing by his own private Order without the counsel of the Clergy, and the consent of the People.

\* *Vid. ad Cornel. E. lib. 55.*  
p. 85.

† *Epist. 69. p. 116.*

\* *Ad. Presb. & Diac. Epist. 5.*  
p. 14.

† *P. Diac in vit. Cyp. p. 12.*

His behaviour was composed and sober †, his countenance grave, yet chearful, neither guilty of a frowning severity, nor an over-pleasant mirth, but an equal *decorum* and temperament of both, it being hard to say, whether he more deserved to be loved or feared, but that he equally deserved both. And the very same he was in his garb, sober and moderate, observing a just distance both from slovenliness and superfluity, such as neither argued him to be swelled with pride and vanity, nor infected with a sordid and penurious mind. But that which set the Crown upon the head of all his other Vertues, was his admirable and exemplary Charity, he was of a kind and compassionate temper

per

per, and he gave it vent. Upon his first embracing the Christian Religion he sold his estate ( which was not mean and inconsiderable ) and gave almost all of it to the Poor, from which he suffered no considerations to restrain him. His hand, and tongue, and heart, were open upon all occasions; we find him at one time not only earnestly \* pressing others to contribute towards the redemption of Christians taken captive by the *Barbarians*, but himself sending a collection of a great many thousand Crowns. Nor was this a single act done once in his life, but his ordinary practice; his doors † were open to all that came, the Widow never returned empty from him; to any that were blind, he would be their guide to direct them; those that were lame, he was ready to lend his assistance to support them; if any were oppressed by might, he was at hand to rescue and protect them. Which things, he was wont to say, they ought to do, who desired to render themselves truly acceptable and dear to God.

XVIII. HIS natural parts seem to have been ready and acute enough, which how far he improved by secular and *Gentile* Learning, is unknown. He seems to have laid no deep foundations in the Study of Philosophy, whereof few or no footsteps are to be seen in any of his Writings: his main excellency was eloquence, Rhetoric being his proper profession before his conversion to Christianity; wherein he attained to so great a pitch, that *Erasmus*, a competent judge of these matters, sticks not to affirm, \* that among all the Ecclesiastics he is the only *African* Writer, that attained the native purity of the *Latin* Tongue. *Tertullian* is difficult and obscure, S. *Augustin* strangely perplexed and dry; but *Cyprian* (as S. *Hierom* † long since truly censured) like a pure Fountain is smooth and sweet. And *Lactantius* \* long before him passed this judgment, that *Cyprian* alone was the chief and famous Writer, eminent for his teaching Oratory, and writing Books admirable in their kind: that he had a facile, copious, pleasant, and ( which is the greatest grace of Speech )

clear and perspicuous wit, that a Man can hardly discern, whether he be more eloquent in his expressions, easie in his explications, or potent in his persuasives. Indeed his stile is very natural and easie, nothing elaborate or affected in it, or which favours of craft and ostentation, but such every where the tenor of his language ( I speak \* *Erasmus* his sense as well as my own ) that you will think you hear a truly Christian Bishop, and one designed for Martyrdom speaking to you. His mind was inflamed with piety, and his speech was answerable to his mind: he spake elegantly, and yet things more powerful than elegant, nor

did he speak powerful things so much as live them. After his coming over to the Church, he made such quick and vast proficiencies in Christian Theology, that † *Baronius* thinks it not improbable to suppose either that before his conversion he had been conversant in Books of Christians, or that he was miraculously instructed from above. 'Tis certain that afterwards he kept close to *Tertullian's* writings, without which he scarce ever passed one day, often saying to his Notary, *Reach hither my Master*, meaning *Tertullian*. A passage which S. *Hierom* \* tells us he received from *Paulus* of *Concordia* in *Italy*, who had

\* *Ad Episc.*  
*Numid. Epist.*  
60. p. 97.

† *Pont. ubi.*  
*supr.*

\* *Praef. in Cyp.*  
*inter Eras.*  
*Ep. l. 28. Epist.*  
6. col. 1616.  
† *Epist. ad Paul.*  
*lin. p. 104.*  
*Tom. I.*

\* *De Justit. l.*  
5. c. 1. p. 459.

*Incubat in Lybia sanguis, sed ubique lingua pollet:*  
*Sola superstes agit de corpore, sola olivæ nascit.*  
*Dum genus esse hominum Christus fuit & vigere mun-*  
*dum.*

*Dum liber ullus erit, dum scrinia sacra literarum,*  
*Te legat omnis amans Christum, tua, Cypriane, dis-*  
*cet.*

*Spiritus ille, Dei, qui fluxerat auctor in Prophetas,*  
*Fontibus eloquii te cœlitus actus irrigavit.*  
*O nive candidius lingue genus! O roborum saporem!*  
*Ut liquor ambrosius, cor mitigat, imbuit palatum,*  
*Sidem animæ penetrat, mentem fovet, & pererrat*  
*artus:*

*Sic Deus interius sentitur, & inditur medullis.*  
*Prudent. Hæc. 272. Hymn. XII. in Passion.*  
*Cypr. Martyris, & Episc. Carthag.*

\* *Loc citat.*

† *Ad. ann. 250.*  
*n. XI.*

\* *De script. in*  
*Tertull.*



had it from the mouth of *Cyprian's* own *Amanuensis* at Rome. And certainly it sounds not a little to the commendation of his judgment, that he could drink so freely at that great man's Fountain, and suck in none of his odd and uncouth opinions, that he could pick the Flowers, and pass by the useless or noxious weeds; as a wise Man many times is so far from being corrupted, that he is the more warned and confirmed in the right by another man's errors and mistakes. As for his Writings, *S. Hierom* (a) passes them over with this character, that it was superfluous to reckon them up, being clearer and more obvious than the Sun. Many of them are undoubtedly lost, the greatest part of what remain, are Epistles, and all of them such, as admirably tend to promote the peace and order of the Church, and advance piety and a godly life. A great number of *Tracts*, either dubious or evidently supposititious, are laid at his door, some of them very ancient, and most of them useful, it being his happiness above all other Writers of the Church (says (b) *Erasmus*) that nothing is fathered upon him but what is learned, and what was the issue of some considerable Pen.

(a) *Ibid. in Cyp.*

(b) *Ubi sup.*

XIX. HE was highly honoured while he lived, not only by Men, consulted and appealed to in all weighty cases by foreign Churches, but by frequent visions and divine condescensions (as he was wont to call them) whereby he was immediately warned and directed in all important affairs and exigences of the Church. After his death his memory was had in great veneration, the people of *Carthage* (c) erecting two eminent Churches to it, one in the place of his Martyrdom, the other in the *Mappalian* way, where he was buried. The former was stiled *Mensa Cypriani*, *Cyprian's* Table, because there he had been offered up a Sacrifice acceptable unto God. And here they had their anniversary commemorations of him. Whether this was the Church mentioned by *Procopius* (d), I cannot tell, who informs us, that the *Carthaginians* above all people in the World honoured *S. Cyprian*, building a magnificent Church to his memory without the City Walls near the Sea side, and besides other expressions of honour done to him, they kept a yearly Festival, which they called *Cypriana*. This Church *Honorius* King of the *Vandals* afterwards took from the *Catholics*, casting out the Orthodox Clergy with disgrace and contempt, and bestowed it upon the *Arrians*, which XCV. years after was recovered by the Emperor *Justinian* under the conduct of *Belisarius*, who besieged and took *Carthage*, and drove the *Vandals* out of all those parts.

(c) *Vit. de Pers. sec. Vandal. l. 1. inter Orthod. PP. p. 801. Tom. 2.*

(d) *De Bell. Vandal. l. 1. vid. Niceph. l. 17. c. 12. p. 751.*

#### His Writings.

##### Genuine.

*Epistola ad Donatum statim à Baptismo conscripta.*  
*Epistola in Secessu toto biennio conscripta XXXVIII.*  
*Epistola sub Pontificatu Cornelii & Lucii XVIII.*  
*Epistola Miscellanea in pace variis temporibus conscripta VIII.*  
*Epistola sub Pontificatu Stephani, & de rebaptizandis Hæreticis X.*

*Epistola in exilio scripta sub finem vite VII.*  
*De disciplina & habitu Virginum.*  
*De Lapsis.*  
*De Unitate Ecclesie Catholicae.*  
*De Oratione Dominica.*  
*Ad Demetrianum.*  
*De Idolorum vanitate.*  
*De Mortalitate.*  
*De Opere & Eleemosynis.*  
*De Bono Patientia*

M m

Dc

*De Zelo & Livore.**De exhortatione Martyrii ad Fortunatum.**Testimoniorum adversus Judæos Lib. III.**Consilium Carthaginense, de baptizandis Hereticis.**Supposititious.**De Spectaculis.**De Disciplina & bono pudicitia.**De Laude Martyrii ad Mosen, &c.**Ad Novatianum, quod Lapsis spes venia non sit deneganda.**De Cardinalibus Christi operibus.**De Nativitate Christi.**De Ratione Circumcisionis.**De Stella & Magis, ac innocentium nece.**De Baptismo Christi, & manifestatione Trinitatis.**De jejunio & tentationibus Christi.**De Cæna Domini.**De Ablutione pedum.**De unctione Chrismatis, & aliis Sacramentis.**De Passione Christi**De Resurrectione Christi.**De Ascensione Christi.**De Spiritu Sancto.**De Aleatoribus.**De montibus Sina & Sion contr. Judæos.**Carmen, Genesi.**Carmen, Sodoma.**Carmen, ad Senatorem Apostatam.**Hymnus de Pascha Domini.**Oratio pro Martyribus.**Oratio in die Passionis sue.**De singularitate Clericorum.**In Symbolum Apostolorum Expositio.**De Judaica incredulitate.**Adv. Judæos, qui Christum infecuti sunt.**De revelatione Capiti B. Joan. Baptista.**De duplici Martyrio, ad Fortunatum.**De XII. Abusibus Saculi.**Dispositio Cæna.**The End of S. CYPRIAN's Life.*

THE

THE LIFE OF  
**S. GREGORY**  
 BISHOP OF  
 NEOCÆSAREA.



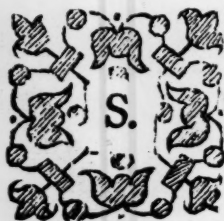
**S. GREGORIUS THAUMATURGUS**

*S. Gregory, where born. His Kindred and Relations. The rank and quality of his Parents. His youthful studies. His study of the Laws. His travel to Alexandria. The calumny there fixed upon him; and his*  
 M m 2 *miraculous*



miraculous vindication. His return through Greece. His studying the Law at Berytus, and upon what occasion. His fixing at Casarea, and putting himself under the tutorage of Origen. The course of his studies. His Panegyric to Origen at his departure. Origen's Letter to him, and the importance of it. His refusal to stay at Neocæsarea, and retirement into the Wilderness. His shunning to be made Bishop of Neocæsarea. Consecrated Bishop of that City during his absence. His acceptance of the charge, and the state of that place at his entrance upon it. His miraculous instruction in the great mysteries of Christianity. His Creed. The miracles wrought by him in his return. His expelling Dæmons out of a Gentile Temple, and the success of it. His welcome entrance into the City, and kind entertainment. His diligent preaching to the People. His erecting a Church for Divine Worship, and its signal preservation. An horrible Plague stopped by his Prayers. The great influence of it upon the minds of the People. His judging in Civil Causes. His drying up a Lake by his Prayers, which had been the cause of an implacable quarrel between two Brothers; and his restraining the overflowings of the River Lycus. The signal vengeance inflicted upon two Jews, counterfeit Beggars. The fame and multitude of his miracles, and the Authorities to justify the credibility of them. The rage and cruelty of the Decian Persecution in the Regions of Pontus and Cappadocia. His persuading the Christians to withdraw. His own retirement. The narrow search made for him, and his miraculous escape. His betrayer converted. His return to Neocæsarea, and instituting solemnities to the memories of the Martyrs, and the reasons of it. The inundations of the Northern Nations upon the Roman Empire. His Canonical Epistle to rectify the disorders committed by occasion of those inroads. His meeting with others in the Synod at Antioch, about the cause of Paulus Samosatenus. His return home, age, and death. His solemn thanks to God for the flourishing state of his Church, and command concerning his Burial. The excellent Character given of him by S. Basil. His Writings. The charge of Sabellianism. S. Basil's Apology for him in that behalf. Modesty to be used in censuring the ancient Fathers, and why.

I.



GREGORY, called originally *Theodorus*, was born at \* *Neocæsarea*, the Metropolis of *Cappadocia*, situate upon the River *Lycus*. His Parents were *Gentiles*, but eminent for their birth and fortunes. He had a Brother called *Athenodorus*, his fellow-pupil, and afterwards Colleague in the Episcopal Order in his own Country, and one Sister at least, married to a Judge under the Governour

of *Palestin*. His Father † was a Zealot for his Religion, wherein he took care to educate him, together with the Learning of the *Gentile World*. When he was fourteen years of age his Father died, after which he took a greater liberty of enquiring into things, and as his reason grew more quick and manly, and was advantaged by the improvements of education, he saw more plainly the folly and vanity of that Religion, wherein he had been brought up, which presently abated his edge, and turned his inclinations towards Christianity. But though he had lost his Father, his Mother \* took care to compleat his breeding, placing him and his brother under Masters of Rhetoric and Eloquence.

By

\* *Greg. Nyss. in vit. Gr. Thaum. p. 969. Tom. 2.*

† *Gr. Thaum. Panegy. ad Orig. p. 182.*

\* *Ibid. p. 184.*

By one of which, who was appointed to teach him the *Latin* Tongue, as a necessary piece of noble and ingenious education, he was persuaded to the study of the *Roman* Laws, as what would be a mighty advantage to him in what way soever he should make use of his Rhetorical Studies afterwards. And the Man himself being no inconsiderable Lawyer, read Lectures to him with great accuracy and diligence, which he as sedulously attended to, rather to gratifie his humour and his fanisie, than out of any love to those Studies, or design to arrive at perfection in them. Which however sufficiently commends his industry, those Laws (as himself observes \*) being vast and various, and not to be learned without trouble and difficulty. And which above all encreased the labour was, that they were all written in *Latin*, a Language (as he confesses) great indeed and admirable, and suited to the Majesty of the Empire; but which he found troublesome enough to make himself but a competent Master of.

\* *Ibid.* p. 171.

II. HAVING laid the foundations of his first and most necessary studies at home, he designed yet further to accomplish himself by foreign travels, going probably first for *Alexandria*, grown more than ordinarily famous by the *Platonic* School lately erected there. Indeed I am not confident of the precise assigning this period of his life, but know that I cannot be much wide the mark, *Gregory* of *Nyssa* † assuring us that he came thither in his Youth, where by the closeness of his Studies, but especially by the admirable sobriety and strictness of his life, he visibly reproached the debaucheries of his fellow-Students, who were of more wanton and dissolute manners. They presently fall a meditating revenge, confederating with a common strumpet to put an abuse and affront upon him. Accordingly dressed in a loose wanton garb, she came to him one day as he was engaged in a serious and grave discourse with some learned and peculiar friends, impudently charging him with over-familiar converses, relating what she thought good to affirm had either been said, or had passed between them; charging him moreover with cheating her of the reward of their lewd embraces. The company, who knew him to be a person of quite another temper, stormed at the boldness and impudence of the Woman, while he regardless of the affront, said nothing to it, calmly desiring a friend to give her the money that she asked, that they might be no longer interrupted in their discourses. But behold how ready Heaven is to vindicate the cause of injured innocence. The Money was no sooner paid into her hand, but as if acted by a furious *Demon*, she fell into fits of the most wild and extravagant madness, roaring out the most horrid noise, throwing herself upon the ground, pulling and tearing of her hair, distorting her eyes, and foaming at the Mouth, nor could she be freed from the rude treatments of the merciless *Demon*, till he whom she had wronged had forgiven her, and interceded with Heaven for her.

† *Ubi supra* p. 972.

III. DEPARTING from *Alexandria*, he came back, as we may probably suppose through *Greece*, and staid a while at *Athens*, where \* *Socrates* tells us he studied, and thence, returned to his own Country, applying himself to his old study of the Law, which he had now a great opportunity to improve by going to *Berytus*, a City of *Phanicia*, and a famous University, for the Profession of the *Roman* Laws, whence *Eunapius* † says of *Anatolius*, 'twas no wonder if he was incomparably skill'd in the Laws, being born at *Berytus*, the Mother of those Studies. Hither

\* *H. Eccl.* l. 4. c. 27. p. 244.

† *In vit. Proa-* ref. p. 117.

he

\* *Panegyr. ad Orig.* p. 185.

† *Ibid.* p. 183.

\* *Gr. Nyssib. p.* 97.

† *Vit. Orig. Pref. Orig. Oper.*

\* *H. Eccl. l. 5. c. 20.* p. 369.

† *Paneg. p.* 197, &c.

\* *Ibid.* p. 178. 181.

† *Ibid.* p. 218, &c.

he came upon this occasion \*. The *President* of *Palestin* had taken his Brother-in-law, an eminent Lawyer, along with him to be his *Assessor* and assistant in governing the affairs of that Province, who not long after sent for his Wife, and a request that he also would come along with her. All things conspired to make him willing to undertake this journey, the gratifying his Sister with his company, the importunity and persuasion of his friends, the conveniency of residing at *Berytus*, for the study of the Law, and the advantage of conveyance, and the public carriages that were sent to fetch his sister and her retinue into those parts. Whether he actually studied at *Berytus*, cannot be gathered from any account that he himself gives of it, nay rather the contrary †, though *S. Hierom* and others expressly affirm it. If he did, he staid not long, quickly growing weary of his Law-studies, being tempted with the more pleasant and charming speculations of Philosophy. The fame of *Origen*, who at that time had opened a School at *Casarea* in *Palestin*, and whose renown no doubt he had heard sufficiently celebrated at *Alexandria*, soon reached him, to whom he immediately betook himself, where meeting \* accidentally with *Firmilian* a *Cappadocian* Gentleman, and afterwards Bishop of *Casarea* in that Countrey, and finding a more than ordinary sympathy and agreeableness in their tempers and studies, they entered into a League of friendship, and jointly put themselves, together with his Brother *Athenodorus*, under the tutorage of that so much celebrated Master. Where † *Erasmus* his mistake must be pardoned, making our *Gregory* and *Theodorus* two distinct Scholars of *Origen*, when 'tis so notoriously known they were but two names of the same person. Though herein the more easily to be excused, that † *Nicephorus Callistus* long before him, had besides ours, made another *Theodorus* Scholar also to *Origen* at that same time at *Casarea*, who was, as he tells us, an eminent Bishop in *Palestin*. But herein there is an universal silence in all other Writers, not the least intimation of it in *Eusebius*, from whom he derives his accounts of things. So plain it is, that of two several names he made two different persons.

IV. GLAD he was to have fallen under so happy an institution, *Origen* by the most apt and easie methods leading him through the whole region and circumference of Philosophy. By how many Stages he brought him through the several parts of Discipline, *Logic*, *Physicks*, *Mathematics*, *Ethicks*, *Metaphysics*, and how he introduced him into the mysteries of Theology, *S. Gregory* himself has given us \* large and particular accounts, which it is not material here to insist upon. Above all he endeavoured to settle him in the full belief and persuasion of the Christian Religion, whereinto he had some insight before, and to ground him in the knowledge of the Holy Scriptures, as the best *System* of true Wisdom and Philosophy. Five years he continued *Origen's* Disciple, when he was recalled into his own Countrey. Being to take his leave, he made an Oration before his Master, and in a numerous Auditory, wherein as he gives *Origen* his just commendations, so he particularly blesses God † for the happy advantages of his instructions, and returns thanks to his tutelar and guardian *Angel*, which as it had superintended him from his birth, so had especially conducted him to so good a Master: elegantly bewailing \* his departure from that School, as a kind of banishment out of *Paradise*, a being turned like the Prodigal out of his Fathers house, and a being carried captive as the *Jews* were into *Babylon*: concluding, that  
of



of all things upon earth, nothing could give so great an ease and consolation to his mind, as if his kind and benign Angel would bring him back to that place again.

V. HE was no sooner returned to *Neocæsarea*, but *Origen* followed him with a Letter \*, commending his excellent parts, able to render him either an eminent Lawyer among the *Romans*, or a great Philosopher among the *Greeks*, but especially persuading him to improve them to the ends of Christianity, and the practice of Piety and Vertue. For which purpose he lets him know, that he instructed him mainly in those Sciences and parts of Philosophy, which might be introductory to the Christian Religion, acquainting him with those things in Geometry and Astronomy, which might be useful for the understanding and explaining the holy Scriptures, these things being as previously advantageous to the knowledge of the Christian Doctrine, as Geometry, Music, Grammar, Rhetoric, and Astronomy, are preparatory to the study of Philosophy. Advising him before all things to read the Scripture, and that with the most profound and diligent attention, and not rashly to entertain notions of divine things, or to speak of them without solemn premeditation; and not only to *seek* but *knock*, to pray with faith and fervency, it being in vain to think that the door should be opened where prayer is not sent before-hand to unlock it. At his return † all mens eyes were upon him, expecting that in publick meetings he should shew himself, and let them reap some fruit of all his studies; and to this he was universally courted and importuned, and especially by the wise and great Men of the City, intreating him to reside among them, and by his excellent precepts and rules of life to reform and direct the manners of Men. But the modest young Man knowing how unfit they generally were to entertain the dictates of true Philosophy, and fearing lest by a great concourse and applause he might be insensibly ensnared into pride and vain-glory, resisted all addresses, and withdrew himself into the Wilderness, where he resigned up himself to solitude and contemplation, conversing with God and his own mind, and delighting his thoughts with the pleasant speculations of nature, and the curious and admirable works of the great Artificer of the World.

VI. *NEOCÆSAREÆ* was a place large and populous, but miserably over-grown with Superstition and Idolatry, so that it seemed the place where *Satans seat* was, and whither Christianity had as yet scarce made its entrance, to the great grief and resentment of all good Men, who heartily wished that Religion and the fear of God were planted in that place. \* *Phadimus* Bishop of *Amasea*, a neighbour City in that Province, a Man indued with a Prophetic Spirit, had cast his eye upon our young Philosopher, as one whose ripe parts and piety did more than weigh down his want of age, and rendred him a person fit to be a Guide of Souls to the place of his Nativity, whose relation\* to the place would more endear the employment to him. The notice hereof being intimated to him, he shifted his Quarters, and as oft as sought for, fled from one Desert and solitary shelter to another, so that the good Man by all his arts and industry could not lay hold of him, the one not being more earnest to find him out, than the other was vigilant to decline him. *Phadimus* at last despairing to meet with him, resolved however to go on with his design, and being acted ὁρμήν τινα θεοτέραν, by a divine and immediate impetus betook himself to this pious stratagem ( the like precedent

\* Extat in  
Orig. Philocal.  
c. 13. p. 41.

† Gr. Nyss. ib.  
p. 975.

\* Id. ib. p. 976.

cedent probably not to be met with in the Antiquities of the Church ) not regarding *Gregorius* his absence ( who was at that time no less than three days journey distant from him ) he made his address and prayer to God, and having declared that both himself and *Gregory* were at that moment equally seen by God, as if they were present, in stead of imposition of hands, he directed a Discourse to S. *Gregory*, wherein he set him apart to God, and constituted him Bishop of that place, and God who steers the hearts of Men, inclined him, how averse soever before, to accept the charge, when, probably, he had a more formal and solemn Consecration.

\* *Id. ubi supr.*  
p. 977.

VII. THE Province he entered upon was difficult, the City and parts thereabouts being wholly given to the worship of *Demons* \*, and enslaved to the observance of Diabolic Rites, there not being above seventeen Christians in those parts, so that he must found a Church before he could govern it; and which was not the least inconvenience, Heresies had spread themselves over those Countries, and he himself though accomplished with a sufficient furniture of humane Learning, yet altogether unexercised in Theological studies, and the mysteries of Religion. For remedy whereof he is said to have had an immediate assistance from Heaven. For while one night he was deeply considering of these things, and discussing matters of Faith in his own mind, he had a vision, wherein two august and venerable persons ( whom he understood to be S. *John* the *Evangelist* and the blessed *Virgin* ) appeared in the Chamber where he was, and discoursed before him concerning those points of Faith, which he had been before debating with himself. After whose departure he immediately penned that *Canon* and rule of Faith which they had declared, and which he ever after made the Standard of his Doctrine, and bequeathed as an inestimable Legacy and *deposi-um* to his Successors, the Tenor whereof we shall here insert, together with the Original *Greek*: which being very difficult to be exactly rendred into our Language, the learned Reader ( if he likes not mine ) may translate for himself.

Εἰς Θεός, πατήρ λόγῳ ζῶν· σφίς ὑπερσώσις καὶ διωάμεως, καὶ χαρὰ κτήρ· αἰδῖς· τέλει· τελεῖν ἡνιπάρ· πατήρ ὑμῶν μοι· Εἰς κύριος, μόνος ἐκ μόνου, Θεός ἐκ Θεῶ· χαρὰ κτήρ καὶ εἰκὼν τῆς διότητος, λόγος ἐνεργός, σοφία τῆς ὅλων συστάσεως ὡσεὶ ἐκτικῆς, καὶ διωάμεως τῆς ὅλης κτίσεως ποιητικῆς, υἱὸς ἀληθινὸς ἀληθινῷ πατρὶ· ἀόρατος ἀόρατος, καὶ ἀφθάρτος ἀφθάρτος, καὶ ἀθάνατος ἀθάνατος, καὶ αἰὶς αἰδῖς. Καὶ ἐν πνεύμα ἁγίῳ ἐκ Θεῶ ἡ ὑπαρξὶς ἔχον, καὶ οἱ ὑμῶν πεφωλός, δι· λαδὴ τῆς αἰδρώπο· εἰκὼν ἡ ὑμῶν, τελεῖν τελεῖα ζῶν, ζῶντων αἰτία· πηγὴ ἁγία, ἁγιότης ἁγιασμὸς χρηγός. ἐν ᾧ φανερεῖται Θεός ὁ πατήρ, ὁ ἐπὶ πάντων, καὶ ἐν πᾶσι. Καὶ Θεός ὁ υἱός, ὁ διὰ πάντων· Τελεῖς τελεῖα, δοξὴ καὶ αἰδιότης

There is one God, the Father of the living Word, and of the subsisting Wisdom and Power, and of Him who is his Eternal Image, the perfect begetter of Him that is perfect, the Father of the only begotten Son. There is one Lord, the only [ Son ] of the only [ Father ] God of God, the Character and Image of the Godhead, the powerful Word, the comprehensive Wisdom, by which all things were made, and the Power that gave Being to the whole Creation, the true Son of the true Father, the Invisible of the Invisible, the Incorruptible of the Incorruptible, the Immortal of the Immortal, and the Eternal of Him that is Eternal. There is one Holy Ghost, having its subsistence of God, which appeared through

ἡ βασιλεία, μὴ μερίζομένη, μηδὲ ἀ-  
παλοτριμμένη.

the Son to mankind, the perfect Image  
of the perfect Son, the Life-giving  
Life, the holy Fountain, the Sanctuary

and the Author of Sanctification: by whom God the Father is made manifest,  
who is over all, and in all; and God the Son, who is through all. A perfect  
Trinity, which neither in Glory, Eternity, or Dominion is divided, or separated  
from it self.

To this Creed he always kept himself, the Original whereof written  
with his own hand, my Author assures us was preserved in that Church  
in his name.

VIII. THUS incomparably furnished, he began to apply himself  
more directly to the charge committed to him, in the happy success  
whereof he was infinitely advantaged by a power of working miracles  
(so much talked of among the Ancients) bestowed upon him. As he  
was \* returning home from the Wilderness, being benighted, and over-  
taken with a storm, he together with his company turned aside to shelter  
themselves in a *Gentile* Temple, famous for Oracles and Divinations,  
where they spent the night in prayers and hymns to God. Early in  
the morning came the *Gentile* Priest to pay the accustomed devotions to  
the *Demons* of the place, who had told him, it seems, that they must  
henceforth relinquish it by reason of him that lodged there; he made  
his lustrations, and offered his Sacrifices, but all in vain, the *Demons*  
being deaf to all importunities and invocations. Whereupon he burst  
out into a rage and passion, exclaiming against the holy Man, and threaten-  
ing to complain of him to the Magistrates, and the Emperour. But  
when he saw him generously despising all his threatnings, and invested  
with a power of commanding *Demons* in and out at pleasure, he turned  
his fury into admiration, and intreated the Bishop as a further evidence  
of that divine authority that attended him, to bring the *Demons* once  
more back again into the Temple. For whose satisfaction he is said to  
have torn off a piece of Paper, and therein to have written these words,  
*Gregory to Satan, enter.* Which Schedule was no sooner laid upon the  
Altar, and the usual incense and oblations made, but the *Demons* appeared  
again as they were wont to do. Whereby he was plainly convinced  
that it was an Authority superiour to all infernal powers, and accordingly  
resolved to accompany him; but being unsatisfied in some parts of the  
Christian Doctrine, was fully brought over after he had seen S. *Gregory*  
confirm his discourses by another evident miracle; whereupon he freely  
forsook house and home, friends, and relations, and resigned up himself  
to the instructions of his divine Wisdom and Philosophy.

\* *Ibid.* p. 980.

IX. THE fame of his strange and miraculous actions had prepared  
† the People of *Neocæsarea* to entertain him with a prodigious reverence  
and regard, the People generally flocking out of the City to meet him,  
every one being ambitious to see the person of whom such great things  
were spoken. He unconcerned in the applause and expectations of all  
the Spectators that were about him, without so much as casting his eye  
on the one side or the other, passed directly through the midst of the  
crowds into the City. Whither being come, his friends that had accom-  
panied him out of his solitudes, were very folicitous where and by  
whom he should be entertained. But he reproving their anxiety, asked

† *Id. ibid.* p.  
983.

N n

them



them, whether they thought themselves banished the divine Protection? whether Gods Providence was not the best and safest refuge and habitation? that whatever became of their bodies, it was infinitely of more importance to look after their minds, as the only fit and proper habitations, which were by the vertues of a good life to be trimmed and prepared, furnished, and built up for Heaven. But there wanted not many, who were ready enough to set open their doors to so welcome a guest, among which especially was *Musonius*, a person of greatest honour, esteem, and power in the City, who intreated him to honour his house with his presence, and to take up his lodging there: whose kindness, as being first offered he accepted, dismissing the rest with a grateful acknowledgment of that civility and respect which they had offered to him.

\* *Ubi supra* p.  
985.

X. IT was no little abatement to the good mans joy to think in what a Prophane and Idolatrous place his lot was fallen, and that therefore it concerned him to lose no time. Accordingly that very day \* he fell to preaching, and with so good success, that before night he had converted a little Church. Early the next morning the doors were crowded, persons of all ranks, ages, infirmities and distempers flocking to him, upon whom he wrought two cures at once, healing both Soul and Body, instructing their minds, convincing their errors, reclaiming and reforming their manners; and that with ease, because at the same time strengthening the infirm, curing the sick, healing the diseased, banishing *Demons* out of the possessed; Men greedily embracing the Religion he taught, while they beheld such sensible demonstrations of its power and Divinity before their eyes, and heard nothing reported but what was verified by the testimony of their own senses. Having thus prepared a numerous Congregation, his next care was to erect a Church where they might assemble for the public solemnities of Religion, which by the cheerful contributions of some, and the industrious labour of others, was in a little time both begun and finished. And the foundations of it seem to have been laid upon a firmer basis than other buildings, seeing it stood not only Earthquakes, frequent in those parts, but the violent storm of *Dioclesian's* Reign, who commanded the Churches of the Christians in all places to be demolished; and was still standing in *Gregory Nyssen's* time, who further tells us that when a terrible Earthquake lately happened in that place, wherewith almost all the buildings both public and private were destroyed and ruined, this Church only remained entire, and not the least stone was shaken to the ground.

† *Ibid.* p. 1007.

XI. St. *Gregory Nyssen* † reports one more memorable passage than the rest; which at his first coming to the place made his conversion of the people much more quick and easie. There was a public Festival held in honour of one of the gods of that Countrey, whereto not only the *Neocæsareans*, but all the inhabitants of the neighbour-Countrey came in, and that in such infinite numbers, that the *Theater* was quickly full, and the crowd so great, and the noise so confused and loud, that the Shows could not begin, nor the solemn Rites be performed. The people hereupon universally cried out to the *Demon*, *Jupiter we beseech thee make us room*. St. *Gregory* being told of this, sent them this message, that their prayer would be granted, and that greater room would be quickly made them, than they desired. Immediately a terrible Plague brake in upon them, that turned their Music into Weeping, and filled all places with

with cries and dying groans. The distemper spread like Wild-fire, and persons were sick and dead in a few moments. The Temples, whither many fled in hopes of cure, were filled with carcases; the Fountains and the Ditches, whither the heat and fervour of the infection had led them to quench their thirst; were dammed up with the multitudes of those that fell into them; some of their own accord went and fate among the Tombs, securing a Sepulchre to themselves, there not being living enough to perform the last offices to the dead. The cause of this sad calamity being understood, that it proceeded from their rash and foolish invocation of the *Damon*, they addressed themselves to the Bishop, intreating him to intercede with his God (whom they believed to be a more potent and superiour Being) in their behalf, that he would restrain that violent distemper that raged among them. He did so, and the Pestilence abated, and the destroying Angel took his leave. And the issue was, that the People generally deserted their Temples, Oracles, Sacrifices, and the idolatrous Rites of their Religion, and took Sanctuary in Christianity, as the securest refuge, and the best way to oblige Heaven to protect them.

XII. HIS known prudence, and the reputation of his mighty and (as my Author \* calls them) *Apostolical* miracles advanced him into so much favour and veneration with the People, that they looked upon whatever he said or did, as the effect of a divine power. And even in secular causes, where the case was any thing knotty and difficult, it was usually brought to him, whose sentence was accounted more just and impartial, more firm and valid than any other decision whatsoever. It happened that two Brothers were at Law about a Lake, which both challenged as belonging to that part of their inheritance their Father had left them. The Umpirage of the case was left to him, who by all the persuasive arts of insinuation first endeavoured to reconcile them, and peaceably to accommodate the difference between them. But his pains proved fruitless and ineffectual, the young Men stormed, and resolved each to maintain his right by force of Arms, and a day was set when they were to try their titles by all the power which their Tenants of each side could bring into the field. To prevent which the holy Bishop went the night before to the place, where he continued all night in the exercises of devotion, and by his Prayers to Heaven procured the Lake to be turned into a parcel of dry and solid ground, removing thereby the bone of contention that was between them, the remains of which Lake were shewed many Ages after. Thus † also he is said to have miraculously restrained the violence of the River *Lycus*, which coming down from the Mountains of *Armenia* with a swift rapid torrent, and swelled by the tributary concurrence of other Rivers, fell down into a plain Champain Countrey, where over-swelling and sometimes breaking down its Banks, it overflowed the Countrey thereabouts, to the irreparable damage of the inhabitants, and very often to the hazard and loss of their lives. Unable to deal with it any other way, they apply themselves to S. Gregory to improve his interest in Heaven, that God, who alone *rules the raging of the Sea*, would put a stop to it. He goes along with them to the place, makes his address to him, who has *set a bound to the Waters, that they may not pass over, nor turn again to cover the Earth*, thrusts his Staff down into the Bank, and prayed that that might be the boundary of the insolent and raging stream, and so

\* *Id. ib. p. 986.*

† *Id. ib. p. 990.*

departed. And it took effect, the River ever after mannerly keeping within its Banks, and the Tradition adds, that the Staff it self grew up into a large spreading Tree, and was shewed to Travellers together with the relation of the miracle in my Authors days. In his return from *Comana* \* (whither he had been invited and importuned both by the Magistrates and People, to constitute a fit person Bishop of that City) he was espied by two *Jews*, who knowing his charitable temper, either out of covetousness, or a design to abuse him, agreed to put a trick upon him. To that purpose one of them lies along upon the ground and feigns himself dead, the other deploras the miserable fate of his Companion, and begs of the holy Bishop as he passed by to give somewhat towards his burial, who taking off his Coat that was upon him, cast it upon the Man, and went on his way. No sooner was he gone out of sight, but the *Impostor* came laughing to his fellow, bad him rise, and let them make themselves merry with the cheat. He called, pulled, and kicked him, but alas in vain, the comical sport ended in a real Tragedy, the Man was dead indeed, his breath expiring that very moment the Garment was cast upon him, and so the Coat really served for what he intended it, as a covering to his burial.

XIII. IN an Age so remote from the miraculous Ages of the Church, and after that the World has been so long abused by the impostures of a Church, pretending to miracles as one of the main notes and evidences of its Catholicism and Truth, these passages may possibly seem suspicious, and not obtain a very easie belief with the more scrupulous Reader. To which perhaps it may be enough to say, at least to justify my relating them, that the things are reported by persons of undoubted credit and integrity, especially *S. Basil* and his Brother *Gregory*, both of them wise and good Men, and who lived themselves within less than an hundred years after our *S. Gregory*; and what is more considerable, were capable of deriving their intelligence from a surer hand than ordinary, their aged Grandmother *Macrina*, who taught them in their youth, and superintended their education, having in her younger years been Scholar and Auditor of our *S. Gregory*, and from her I doubt not they received the most material passages of his life, and the account of his miracles, of many whereof she her self was capable of being an eye-witness, and wherewith she acquainted them, as she also did with the doctrine that he taught, wherein *S. Basil* † particularly tells us she instructed them, and told them the very words which she had heard from him, and which she perfectly remembred at that age. Besides, that his Brother solemnly \* professes in recounting this great Mans miracles, to set them down in a plain and naked relation, without any Rhetorical arts to amplify and set them off, and to mention only some few of those great things that had been done by him, and purposely to suppress † many yet in memory, lest Men of incredulous minds should disbelieve them, and count all Fables which were above the standard of their sentiments and apprehensions. Indeed as to the main of the thing, I might challenge the Faith of all Ages ever since, who have unanimously believed, and conveyed the report of it down to us, and upon this account the title of *Thaumaturgus*, the Wonder-worker, is constantly and uncontrollably ascribed to him in the Writings of the Church. And *S. Basil* \* assures us that upon this very account the *Gentiles* were wont to call him a *Second Moses*, and that in his time he was had in such un-

versal

\* *Ibid.* p. 997.

† *Ad Neoces. ar. Epist.* LXXV. p. 131. Tom 3.

\* *ubi* *supr.* p. 985.

*Ib.* p. 995.

† *Ibid.* p. 1009.

\* *De Spir. S.* c. 29. p. 350. Tom. 2.



versal admiration among the People of that Countrey, and his memory so fresh among them, that no time would be able to blot it out.

XIV. IN this faithful and successful management of his place, he quietly continued till about the year CCL. when the Emperour † *Decius* † *Id. ibid. p. 999.* vexed to see the Christian Religion so much yet the ground of declining Paganism, published very severe edicts against the Christians, commanding the Governours of Provinces as they valued their heads, to put them into a strict and rigorous execution; wherein *Pontus* and *Cappadocia* shared if not deeper, to be sure equal with the rest. All other business seemed to give way to this, persecuting the Christians was the debate of all public Councils, and the great care of Magistrates, which did not vent it self in a few threatnings; and hard words, but in studying methods of cruelty, and instruments of torment, the very apprehension whereof is dreadful and amazing to humane nature, Swords and Axes, Fire, Wild Beasts, Snakes, and Engines to stretch and distend the limbs, Iron Chairs made red hot, frames of Timber set up strait, in which the bodies of the tormented, as they stood were raked with nails that tore off the flesh: and innumerable other arts daily invented, every great Man being careful that another should not seem to be more fierce and cruel than himself. Some came in as Informers, others as Witnesses, some searched all private corners, others seized upon them that fled, and some who gaped for their Neighbours Estates, took hold of the opportunity to accuse and persecute them for being Christians. So that there was a general confusion and consternation, every Man being afraid of his nearest relatives, the Father not consulting the safety of his Child, nor the Child regarding its duty to its Parents; the *Gentile* Son betraying his Christian Father, and the Infidel Father accusing his Son for embracing Christianity, and the Brother accounting it a piece of Piety to violate the Laws of Nature in the cause of Religion, and to condemn his own Brother, because a Christian. By this means the Woods became full, and the Cities empty, and yet no sooner were many Houses rid of their proper owners, but they were turned into common Gaols, the public Prisons not being able to contain the multitudes of Christians, that were sent to them. You could not go into the Markets, or places of usual concourse, but you might have seen some apprehended, others led to trial or execution, some weeping, others laughing and rejoicing at the common misery: no regard had to Age, or Sex, or Vertue, or Merit, but as in a City stormed by a proud and potent Conquerour, every thing was without mercy exposed to the rage and rudeness of a barbarous and inhumane enemy.

XV. S. GREGORY beholding the sad and calamitous state of the present time, and having considered \* seriously with himself the frailty and imbecillity of humane Nature, and how few (of his new Converts especially) would be able to bear up under those fierce conflicts which the cause of Religion would engage them in, timely advised his Church a little to decline the force of the present storms, telling them 'twas better by flying to save their Souls, than by abiding those furious trials to hazard their falling from the Faith. And to let them see that this might be done, and that herein there was no prejudice to their Souls, he resolved to shew them the way by his example, himself first retiring out of danger, retreating to a Desert Mountain, accompanied with none but the *Gentile* Priest whom he had converted, and who ministered to him in the

the capacity of a Deacon. And it was but time he should withdraw, the enemy chiefly aiming at him as the head of the Party, and laying all possible snares to take him. Being informed where he lay concealed, they went in vast numbers to hunt him out, some besetting round the foot of the Mountain, that he might not escape, others going up searched every place till they came very near him. He persuading his Deacon to a firm confidence of the divine protection, presently fell to Prayer, as the other also did by his example, with eyes and hands lift up to Heaven. The Persecutors in the mean time pried into all places, examined every bush and shrub, every crevice of a Rock, every nook and hole, but finding nothing, returned back to their Companions at the bottom, hoping that by this time he might be fallen into their hands. And when the Informer described the very place where he lay, they affirmed they saw nothing there but a couple of Trees a little distant from each other. The company being gone, the Informer staid behind, and went directly to the place, where finding them at their devotions, and concluding their escape to be the immediate effect of a divine preservation ( God having blinded their eyes that they should not see them) fell down at the Bishop's feet, gave up himself to be a Christian, and a Companion of his solitudes and dangers.

*ibid.* p. 1002.

XVI. DESPAIRING now of meeting with the Shepherd, the Wolves fell with the fiercer rage upon the Flock that staid behind, and not there onely, but ran up and down all parts of the Province, seizing upon Men, Women, and Children, that had but any reverence for the name of Christ, dragging them to the City, and casting them into Prison, where they were sure to be entertained with variety of Tortures. S. Gregory in the mean time remained in his solitary retirement, till God having mercifully commanded the Storm to blow over, and the Tyranny of the Persecution to cease, he quitted his shady and melancholy Walks, and came back to *Neocæsarea*, and visiting his Diocess all about, established in every place anniversary Festivals and Solemnities, to do honour to the memory of the Martyrs, that had suffered in the late Persecution. A great instance of his wisdom and prudence at that time, not onely in doing right to the memory of the Martyrs, but by this means training up People to a readier embracing of Religion, when they saw that it indulged them a little mirth and freedom in the midst of those severe Yokes that it put upon them. He had observed what advantage the idolatry of the *Gentiles* made by permitting its Votaries liberty ( indeed licentiousness ) in their religious solemnities, and he reasonably presumed it would be no little encouragement to some to desert their superstitions, and come over to Christianity, if they were suffered to rejoice, and use a little more innocent freedom than at other times, which could not be better done than at the *Memorials* of the Martyrs, though it cannot be denied, but that this custom produced ill effects afterwards.

XVII. IN the Reign of the Emperour *Gallienus* about the year CCLX. and for some years before, God being ( as *Orosius* \* truly enough conjectures ) offended with the cruel usage which the Christians met withall from the present Powers, was resolved to punish the World. And to that end did not only suffer *Valerian* the Emperour ( friendly enough at first, but afterwards a bitter Persecutor of the Christians ) to be betrayed into the hands of *Sapor* King of *Persia* ( who treated him with the highest instances of scorn and insolence ) but permitted the *Northern* † Nations

like

\* *Hist. l. 7. c. 22. fol. 311.*  
† *Treb. Poll. in vit. Gallien. c. 4. s. p. 717.*  
*718. vid. Zosim. Hist. lib. 1. p. 352. & c. 259.*  
*& Treb. Poll. in vit. Claud. c. 8. p. 806.*

like a mighty inundation to break down the Banks, and overflow most parts of the Roman Empire. The Germans betook themselves some into Spain, others passed the Alps, and came through Italy as far as Ravenna; the Alemanni Foraged France, and invaded Italy; the Quades and Sarmata wasted Pannonia, the Parthians fell into Mesopotamia and Syria, and the Goths broke in upon Pontus, Asia, and some parts of Greece. Intolerable were the outrages which these barbarous people committed wherever they came, but especially upon the Christians, whose goods they plundered, ravished their Wives and Daughters, tortured their persons, and compelled them to offer Sacrifice, and communicate in their Idol Feasts: many of the Renegadoes spoiling their fellow-Christians, and some under pretence of finding, stole, or at least kept their neighbours goods to their own use. In this general confusion, a neighbour Bishop of those parts writes to St. Gregory of Neocæsarea to beg his advice what to do in this sad state of affairs. Who by Euphrosynus sent back a Canonical Epistle, (so often cited and magnified by the Ancients, and still extant) to rectify these irregularities and disorders, wherein he prescribes the several stations and orders of Penitents, but especially reproves and censures their inordinate avarice, shewing how uncomely it is in it self, how unsuitable to Christians, how abhorrent to God and to all good Men to cover and grasp what is another Mans; and how much more barbarous and inhumane in this calamitous time to spoil the oppressed, and to enrich themselves by the blood and ruines of their miserable brethren. And because some might be apt to plead they did not steal, but only take up what they accidentally met with, he lets them know, that whatever they had found of their neighbours, nay though it were their enemies, they were bound by God's Law to restore it, much more to their Brethren, who were fellow-sufferers with them in the same condition. And if any thought it were warrant enough to keep what they had found, though belonging to others, having been such deep losers themselves, he tells them, this is to justify one wickedness with another, and because the Goths had been enemies to them, they would become Goths and Barbarians unto others. Nay many (as he tells us) joyned in with the Barbarians in open persecuting, captivating, and tormenting of their Brethren. In all which cases he pronounces them fit to be excluded the Communion of the Saints, and not to be re-admitted till by a just penance according to the various circumstances of the case, they had made public and solemn satisfaction to the Church.

XVIII. NOT long after this, Paulus of Samosata Bishop of Antioch began to broach very pernicious Doctrines concerning the person of our blessed Saviour. To prevent the infection whereof, the most eminent of the Bishops and Clergy of all those parts frequently met in Synod at Antioch, the chief of whom\* were Firmilian Bishop of Cæsarea in Cappadocia, our St. Gregory and his Brother Athenodorus Bishop also in Pontus, and some others. The Synod being sate, and having canvased the matter, the crafty Heretic saw 'twas in vain to contend, and therefore dissembling his errors as well as he could, he confessed, what could not be hid, and by a feigned repentance salved his credit for the present, and secured his continuance in that honourable place he held in the Church. This Council was held *Anno Chr.* CCLXIV. which our St. Gregory seems not long to have survived, dying either this, or most probably the following

\* Euseb. H. E. l. 7. c. 27. p. 278.



\* *Lib. 6.c. 17.*  
*p. 408.*

† *In voc. Gen.*  
*p. 628.*

† *Gr. Nys. ubi*  
*supr. p. 1006.*

lowing year. \* *Nicephorus* makes him to have lived to a very great age, which he must, if (as he affirms) he died under *Dioclesian*; and † *Suidas* by a mistake much more prodigious, makes him to de cease in the reign of *Julian*. A little before his death, being sensible that his time drew near, he sent \* up and down the City and the Vicinage to make a strict enquiry whether there were any that yet were strangers to the Christian Faith. And being told that there were but seventeen in all, he sighed, and lifting up his eyes to Heaven, appealed to God how much it troubled him, that he should leave any part of mens Salvation incomplete, but that withall it was a mercy that challenged the most grateful repentment, that when he himself had found but seventeen Christians at his first coming thither, he should leave but seventeen Idolaters to his Successor. Having heartily prayed for the Conversion of Infidels, and the increase and consummation of those that were converted, he calmly and peaceably resigned up his Soul to God: having first enjoyed his friends to make no trouble about his Funeral, nor procure him any proper or peculiar place of burial, but that as in his life time he had carried himself as a Pilgrim and Foreigner in the World, claiming nothing for himself, so after death he might enjoy the portion of a Stranger, and be cast into the common lot.

\* *De Spir. S.c.*  
*29. p. 359.*  
*Tom. 2.*  
 † *Id. ad Cler.*  
*Neocæs. Epist.*  
*LXIII. p. 97.*  
*T. 3.*

XIX. HE was a Man (says † *St. Basil*) of a Prophetical and Apostolic temper, and who in the whole course of his life expressed the height and accuracy of Evangelical Conversation. In all his \* devotions he was wont to shew the greatest reverence, never covering his head in Prayer, as accounting that of the Apostle most proper and rational, that *every one Praying or Prophesying with his head covered, dishonoureth his head*. All Oaths he avoided, making *Yea* and *Nay* the usual measure of his communication. Out of regard to our Lord's threatening, he durst never call his Brother *Fool*; no anger, wrath, or bitterness proceeded out of his mouth. Slandering and reproaching others he greatly hated, as a quality opposite to a state of salvation. Envy and Pride were strangers to his innocent and guileless Soul. Never did he approach the holy Altar, till first reconciled to his Brother. He severely abominated lies and falsehood, and all cunning and artificial methods of detraction; well knowing that every lie is the spawn and issue of the Devil, and that God will destroy all those that speak lies.

\* *De Script. in*  
*Theodor.*

XX. HIS Writings are first particularly mentioned by \* *St. Hierom*, who reckons up his *Eucharistical Panegyric* to *Origen*, his short and (as he calls it) very useful *Metaphrase* upon *Ecclesiastes*, several Epistles (in which doubtless his Canonical Epistle had the first place) and his *Creed* or short Exposition of Faith, which though not taken notice of in some, is extant in other Editions of *St. Hierom's Catalogue*. All which (some of his Epistles excepted) are still extant, and probably are all he ever wrote. For though there are other Tracts commonly ascribed to him, yet without any great reason or evidence to warrant their legitimacy, whereof their strongest assertors are not very confident. It appears from † *St. Basil* that he was by some of old suspected as inclining to *Sabellianism*, which confounded the persons in the holy Trinity, and that many sheltered themselves under his Authority from an expression of his affirming that *the Father and Son are two in the consideration of the mind, but one in person*. For † this *St. Basil* makes a large Apology, and shews that it was spoken in the heat of disputation against *Ælian* a Gen-

† *Ad Doct. Ec.*  
*cles. Nicæsar.*  
*Epist. LXIV.*  
*p. 101.*

*tile*

tile, ὡς δὲ γυμνατικῶς, ἀλλ' ἀγωνιστικῶς, not dogmatically as a point of Doctrine; but in haste and in the fervency of disputation, when judgment and consideration is not at leisure to weigh every thing by nice scruples; that his earnest desire to gain the *Gentile* made him less cautious and solicitous about exactness of words, and that he indulged something to the apprehensions of his adversary, that so he might get the better advantage upon him in the greater and more important principles; that this betraid him into some unwary expressions, which the Hereticks of after-times improved to bad purposes, and strained to another sense than what was originally intended by him that spake them: That as to the particular charge of the *Sabellian* error\*, he was so far from it, that it had been chiefly confuted and laid asleep by the evidence of that very doctrine which S. Gregory had preached, the memory whereof was preserved fresh among them. However nothing can be more true and modest than what † S. Hierom observes in such cases, that it's great rashness and irreverence presently to charge the Ancients with Heresie for a few obnoxious expressions, since it may be, they erred with a simple and an honest mind, or wrote them in another sense, or the passages have been since altered by ignorant Transcribers, or they took less heed and care to deliver their minds with the utmost accuracy and exactness, while as yet Men of perverse minds had not sown their tares, nor disturbed the Church with the clamour of their disputations, nor infected mens minds with their poisonous and corrupt opinions.

\* Ibid. p. 99.

† Apol. adv. Rufin. lib. 2. p. 219. Tom. 2.

#### His Writings.

##### Genuine.

Πανηγυρικὸν εὐχαριστίας ad Originem.  
Metaphrasis in Ecclesiastem.  
Brevis expositio fidei.  
Epistola Canonica.

Aliæ Epistolæ plures, quæ non extant.

##### Supposititious.

Ἡ κτ' μέρος Πίσις.  
Capita XII. de fide, cum Anathematismis.  
In Annunciationem S. Dei Genitricis Sermones III.  
Sermo in Sancta Theophania.  
Ad Tatianum de Anima λόγος καφ' αὐτῷ.

The End of S. GREGORY Thaumaturgus's Life.

14

1942

1950-1951

STVSP



THE LIFE OF  
**S. DIONYSIUS**  
 BISHOP OF  
 ALEXANDRIA.

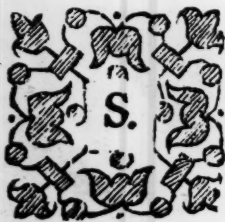


**S. DIONYSIUS ALEXANDRINUS.**

*The place of his Nativity. His Family and Relations. His conversion how.  
 His studies under Origen. Whether a professed Rhetorician. His suc-  
 ceeding Heraclas in the Catechetical School. His being constituted Bishop of*

of Alexandria, and the time of it. A preparatory Persecution at Alexandria, how begun. The severity of it. The Martyrdom of Apollonia, and the fond honours done her in the Church of Rome. The Persecution continued and promoted by Decius his Edicts. The miserable condition of the Christians. The sudden Conversion and Martyrdom of a Guard of Souldiers. Dionysius apprehended and carried into banishment, there to be beheaded. A pleasant account of his unexpected deliverance by means of a drunken rout. His retirement into the Desarts. His return to Alexandria. The great number and quality of the Lapsed in the late Persecution. The contests about this matter. Dionysius his judgment and practice herein. The case of Serapion. His dealing with Novatian about his Schism, and the copy of his Letter to him. His being engaged in the controversy about Rebaptization, and great moderation in it. His Letter to Pope Sixtus about a person baptized by Heretics. Valerianus the Emperour's kindness to Christians. How turned to cruelty. Dionysius brought before Æmilian. His discourse with him, and resolute constancy. He is condemned to be banished. His transportation into the Desarts of Lybia. The success of his Ministry there. Innumerable Barbarians converted to the Faith. Gallienus his relaxing the Persecution. His Letter to Dionysius granting liberty to the Christians. Alexandria shut up by the usurpation of Æmilian. The Divisions within, and Siege without. The horrible Pestilence at Alexandria; and the singular kindness and compassion of the Christians there above the Heathens. Dionysius his confutation of Sabellius. His unwary expressions, and the charge against him. His vindication, both by himself and by S. Athanasius. His writing against Nepos. Nepos who, and what his Principles and Followers. Dionysius his encounter with the herds of the Party; His convincing and reducing them back to the Orthodox Church. His engaging in the Controversie against Paulus Samosatenus. The loose, extravagant, and insolent temper and manners of that Man. Dionysius his Letter to the Synod at Antioch concerning him. The success of that affair. Dionysius his death. His Writings and Epistles. The loss of them bewailed.

I.



**DIONYSIUS** was in all probability born at Alexandria, where his Parents \* seem to have been persons of considerable note and quality, and his Father, and possibly his Ancestors, to have born very honourable Offices, and himself to have lived some time in great secular pomp and power. He was born and bred a Gentile,

but by what particular occasion converted to Christianity, I know not, more than what we learn from a Vision and Voice that spake to him, mentioned by † himself, that by a diligent reading whatever Books fell into his hand, and an impartial examination of the things contained in them, he was first brought over to the Faith. Having passed his juvenile studies, he put himself under the institution of the renowned \* Origen, the great Master at that time at Alexandria, famous both for Philosophic and Christian Lectures, after which he is said by some † to have publicly professed Rhetoric and Eloquence; as indeed there seems a more peculiar vein of Fancy and Rhetoric to run through those fragments of his Discourses which do yet

\* Vid. Euseb. l. 7. c. 11. p. 260. A.

† Epist. ad Phil. l. 1. c. 7. p. 263.

\* Ibid. l. 6. c. 29. p. 229. Hieron. de Script. in Dionys.

† Anastas. Sinait. "Osn". c. 22. p. 341. Maxim. Schol. in c. 5. de Cælest. Hierarch. p. 24. Tom. 2.

yet remain. But I can scarce believe that the *Dionysius* mentioned by *Anastasius* and *Maximus*, and by them said of a Rhetorician to be made Bishop of *Alexandria*, to have been the same with ours, were it for no other reason, than that he is said to have written *Scholia* on the Works of *S. Denys the Areopagite*, which we are well assured had no being in the World till many Years after his time. *Ann. CCXXXII.* *Demetrius* Bishop of *Alexandria* being dead, *Heraclas* one of *Origen's* Scholars, and his successor in the *Catechetical School*, succeeded in his room; upon whose preferment *Dionysius* then Presbyter of that Church was advanced to his place. Wherein he discharged himself with so much care and diligence, such universal applause and satisfaction; that upon *Heraclas* his death, who sat fifteen or sixteen Years; none was thought so fit to be again his successor as *Dionysius*, who accordingly entred upon that See \* *Euseb. ib. c. 35. p. 232.* *Ann. CCXVI.* though *Eusebius* his *Chronicon* places it two Years after, *Philippi Imp. Ann. V.* expressly contrary to his History, where he assigns the third Year of that Emperour, for the time of his consecration to that place.

II. THE first Years of his Episcopal charge were calm and peaceable, till *Decius* succeeding in the Empire *Ann. CCXLIX.* turned all into hurry and combustion, persecuting the Christians with the utmost violence, whereof the Church of *Alexandria* had a heavy portion. Indeed the Persecution there had begun † a Year before, while *Philip* the Emperour was yet alive, upon this occasion: A certain *Gentile* Priest or Poet led the Dance, exciting the People of that place (naturally prone to superstition) to revenge the quarrel of their gods. The multitude once raised, ran on with an uncontrolable fury, accounting cruelty to the Christians, the only instance of piety to their gods. Immediately they lay hands upon one *Metras* an aged Man, who refusing to Blaspheme his Saviour, they beat him with Clubs, pricked him in the face and eyes with sharp Reeds, and afterwards leading him into the Suburbs, stoned him. The next they seized on was a Woman called *Quinta*, whom they carried to the Temple where having refused to worship the Idol, she was dragged by the feet through the streets of the City over the sharp flints, dashed against great stones, scourged with whips, and in the same place dispatched by the same death. *Apollonia* an ancient Virgin being apprehended, had all her teeth dashed out, and was threatned to be burnt alive, who only begging a little respite, of her own accord chearfully leapt into the flames. Incredible it is (but that the case is evident from more instances than one) with how fond a veneration the Church of *Rome* celebrates the memory of this Martyr \*. They infinitely extol her for the nobility of her Birth, the eminent Piety and Vertues of her Life, her chastity, humility, frequent fastings, fervent devotions, &c. (though not one syllable of all this mentioned by any ancient Writer) bring in a voice from Heaven styling her, the *Spouse of Christ*, and telling her, that God had granted her what she had asked. They make her the tutelar Goddess or Guardian of all that are troubled with the tooth or headach, and in many solemn Offices of that Church, pray that at her intercession God would cure them of those pains; nay formally address their prayers to her, that she would intercede with God for them on that behalf, and by her *Passion* obtain for them (they are the very words of the Prayer) the remission of all the sins which with teeth and mouth they had committed through gluttony and speaking. Innumerable

are

† Ep. ejus ad Fab. ibid. c. 41. p. 236.

\* Vid. Bolland. de vit. SS. ad Febr. IX.



\* *Vid. Chemnit.  
exam. Concil.  
Tvid. Part. IV.  
de reliq. SS. p.  
13. c. 1.*

are the miracles reported of her, and to me it seems a miracle, and to exceed all the rest, were it true, what is related of the vast number of her teeth. For besides those which are preserved among the Reliques of foreign Churches (which are not a few) we are \* told, that when King Edward, then afflicted with the Tooth-ach, commanded that all S. Apollonia's teeth in the Kingdom should be sought out and sent him; so many were brought in, that several great Tuns could not hold them. It seems they were resolved to make her ampleamends for those few teeth she lost at the time of her Martyrdom. But it is time to return to the *Alexandrian* Persecution, where they every where broke open the Christians Houses, taking away the best of their Goods, and burning what was not worth the carrying away. A Christian could not stir out day or night, but they presently cried out, *Away with him to the fire.* In which manner they continued, till quarrelling among them selves they fell foul upon one another, and gave the Christians a little breathing time from the pursuits of their malice and inhumanity.

† *Ibid. p. 238.*

\* *Id. c. 42. p.  
240.*

III. IN this posture stood affairs when *Decius* having usurped the Empire, routed and killed his Master *Philip*, his Edict arrived at *Alexandria*, which gave new life to their rage and cruelty. And now they fall on a fresh, and persons of all ages, qualities, and professions are accused, summoned, dragged, tortured, and executed with all imaginable severity; multitudes of whom, † *Dionysius* particularly reckons up, together with the manner of their Martyrdom and Execution. Vast numbers \* that fled for shelter to the Woods and Mountains, met with a worse death abroad, than that which they sought to avoid at home, being famished with hunger and thirst, starved with cold, over-run with diseases, surprized by Thieves, or worried by wild Beasts, and many taken by the *Arabs* and barbarous *Saracens*, who reduced them into a state of slavery more miserable than Death it self. In this evil time though many revolted from the Faith, yet others maintained their station with a firm and unshaken courage, and several who till that moment had been strangers and enemies to the Christian Religion, on a sudden came in and publicly professed themselves Christians in open defiance of those immediate dangers that attended it. Whereof one instance may suffice. One who was thought to be a Christian, and ready to renounce his Religion, being led into the place of Judicature, *Ammon*, *Zeno*, and the rest of the military Guard that stood at the door, derided him as he was going in, gnashing upon him with their Teeth, and making such grimaces, such mimic and antique gestures, that all Mens eyes were upon them. When behold on a sudden before any one laid hand upon them, they came into open Court, and unanimously professed themselves to be Christians. An accident wherewith the Governors and the Assessors upon the Bench were strangely surprized and troubled. The condemned were chearful and courageous, and most ready to undergo their torments, while the Judges themselves were amazed and trembled. Sentence being passed upon them, they went out of Court in a kind of pomp and state, rejoicing in the testimony they were to give to the Faith, and that God would so gloriously triumph in their execution.

† *Epi. Dion.  
ad German. ib.  
c. 40. p. 235.*

IV. S. *DIONYSIUS* bore a part in the common Tragedy, though God was pleased to preserve him from the last and severest act, as a person eminently useful to his Church. No sooner had † *Sabinus* the *Præfect* received the Imperial Orders, but he immediately dispatched a *Frumen-*  
*tarius*,

*tarius*, or military Officer ( whose place it was to seize Delinquents, and enquire out seditious reports and practices against the State, and therefore particularly belonging to Judges and Governours of Provinces ) to apprehend him. The Serjeant went all about, and narrowly ransacked every corner, searching all ways and places where he thought he might hide himself, but in the mean time never searched his own house, concluding he would not dare to abide at home, and yet there he staid four days together, expecting the Officers coming thither. At length being warned of God, he left his house with his servants and some of the Brethren that attended him, but not long after fell into the hands of the Souldiers, and having received his sentence, was conducted by a Guard under the command and conduct of a Centurion and some other Officers to *Taposiris*, a little Town between *Alexandria*, and *Canopus*, there probably to be beheaded with less noise and clamour. It happened in the mean while that *Timotheus* one of his friends, knowing nothing of his apprehension, came to the house where he had been, and finding it empty, and a Guard at the door, fled after him in a great amazement and distraction, whom a Country Man meeting upon the Road, enquired of him the cause why he made so much hast. He probably supposing to have heard some news of them, gave him a broken and imperfect relation of the matter. The Man was going to a Wedding feast ( which there they were wont to keep all night : and entering the house told, his company what he had heard. They heated with Wine, and elevated with mirth, rose all up and ran out of doors, and with a mighty clamour came towards the place where he was. The Guard hearing such a noise and confusion at that time of night, left their Prisoner and ran away, whom the rabble coming in found in bed. The good Man supposing them to be Thieves, was reaching his cloaths that lay by him to give them ; but they commanded him to rise presently and go along with them, whereat he besought them ( understanding now the errand upon which they came ) to dismiss him and depart, at least to be so kind to him, as to take the Souldiers Office upon them, and themselves behead him. While he was thus passionately importuning them, they forced him to rise, and when he had thrown himself upon the ground, they began to drag him out by the hands and feet, but quitted him not long after, and returned it's like to their drunken sports. This Trage-comic Scene thus over, *Caius* and *Faustus*, *Peter* and *Paul*, Presbyters, and his fellow-prisoners, took him up, and leaving the Town, set him upon an Ass, and conveyed him away \* into a desolate and uncomfortable part of the Defarts of *Lybia*, where he, together with *Peter* and *Caius*, lay concealed, till the storm was over-past.

\* Vid. *Epist. ejus ad Domit. ib. l. 7. c. 11. p. 260.*

V. THE Persecution being in a great measure blown over by the death of *Decius*, *Dionysius* came out of his Solitudes, and returned to *Alexandria*, where he found the affairs of his Church infinitely entangled and out of order, especially by reason of those great numbers that had denied the Faith, and lapsed into Idolatry in the late Persecution, among which were many of the wealthy and the honourable, and who had places of authority and power ; some freely renouncing, others so far degenerating from the Gallantry of a Christian Spirit, that when cited to appear and sacrifice to the gods ( as he tells us † ) they trembled, and looked as pale and gassy, as if they had come not to offer, but to be made a sacrifice, insomuch that the very *Gentiles* derided and despised them.

† *ib. l. 6. c. 40. p. 238.*

them. Most of these after his return sued to be re-admitted to the Communion of the Church, which the Ecclesiastic Discipline of those Times did not easily allow of, especially after the *Novatian* principles began to prevail, which denied all communion to the lapsed, though expressing their sorrow by never so long and great a penance. Upon what occasion *Novatus* and his partner *Novatian* first started this rigorous and severe opinion, how eagerly *Cyprian* and the *African* Bishops stickled against it, how far it was condemned both there and at *Rome*, in what cases and by what measures of Penance the lapsed Penitents were to be taken in, we have already noted in *Cyprian's* Life. *S. Dionysius* was of the moderate Party, wherein he had the concurrence of most of the *Eastern* Bishops, and as he \* pleads the general judgment and practice of the holy Martyrs, many of whom had before their death received the lapsed upon their repentance again into the Church, and had themselves freely communicated with them. Whose judgment he thought it not reasonable should be despised, nor their practice controlled, nor the accustomed order overturned. Indeed he himself had ever observed this course, and therefore at the beginning of the Persecution had given † order to the Presbyters of the Church to restore peace, and give the Eucharist to Penitents, especially in danger of death, and where they had before earnestly desired it. Which was done accordingly, as appears from the memorable instance of *Serapion*, an aged person, mentioned by him who having lapsed in the time of Persecution, had often desired reconciliation, but in that confused time could not obtain it: but being suddenly surprized by a summons of death, and having laid three days speechless, on the fourth had only so much use of his tongue restored him, as to bid his Nephew, a Boy that attended him, go for one of the Presbyters, to give him absolution, without which he could not die. The Presbyter was at that time sick, but pitying the mans case, gave the Boy a little part of the consecrated Eucharist, which he kept by him, bidding him moisten it, and put it into his mouth. Which was no sooner done but he breathed out his Soul with unspeakable comfort and satisfaction, that he now died in communion with the Church.

VI. NOR was his care herein confined to his single Diocese, but he wrote Letters about this matter to most of the eminent Bishops and Governours of the Church. And that he might leave nothing unattempted, he treated with *Novatian* (or as he calls him *Novatus*) himself, endeavouring by all mild and gentle methods to reduce him to the peace and order of the Church. His Epistle to him, being but short and very pathetic, we shall here subjoin †.

*Dionysius* to *Novatus* our Brother, greeting :

FORasmuch as you your self confess, you were unwillingly drawn into this Schism, make it appear so by your willing and ready returning to the Church. For better it were to suffer anything, than that the Church of God should be rent asunder. Nor is it less glorious to suffer Martyrdom upon this account, than in the case of not sacrificing to Idols. Yea, in my mind much more honourable. For in the one case a Man suffers only for his own Soul, but in this he undergoes Martyrdom for the whole Church of God. And if now thou shalt persuade and reduce thy brethren to peace and concord, thy merit

\* *Epist. ad Fab.*  
*ibid. c. 42. p.*  
*241.*

† *Ibid. c. 44.*  
*p. 146.*

† *Ibid. c. 45.*  
*p. 247.*



*merit will out-weigh thy crime. The one will not be charged to thy reproach, and the other will be mentioned to thy praise. and suppose thou shalt not be able to persuade them, yet however save thy own Soul. I pray that thou mayest live peaceably, and farewell in the Lord.*

VII. NO sooner had he well rid his hands of this, but he was engaged in another controversy, which involved and disturbed the whole Christian Church, I mean that concerning the rebaptizing those who had been baptized by Heretics, so hotly disputed between S. Cyprian and Stephen Bishop of Rome. \* *Dionysius* together with *Firmilian* Bishop of *Cæsarea* in *Cappadocia*, and a great many others in the *East*, stood on *Cyprian's* side, maintaining that they ought to be baptized. But however carried himself in it with great temper and moderation; he distinguished between Apostates who had received their baptism in the Catholic Church, and those upon their return they did not baptize (as *Cyprian* also affirms) but only admitted by imposition of hands, and this rule and practice, he tells us†, he had learned from his predecessor *Heracles*: but then for pure Heretics, who had no other baptism than what had been conferred by Heretical persons, which in reality was null and of no effect) these he thought fit to be entered into the Church by Catholic baptism. Besides that, he engaged more as a Mediator, than a Party, writing to Pope *Stephen* to use moderation in the case, as he did also to *Sixtus* his successor, and most other Bishops of that time. Indeed that he was not stiff and rigorous in his sentiments, may appear from the instance he relates \* in his Epistle to Pope *Sixtus*, wherein he begs his advice. A certain Man in his Church, who went among the Classe of the faithful, both in his and his Predecessors days, beholding the form and manner of Baptism as it was administered among the Orthodox, came to *Dionysius*, and with tears bewailed his own case, and falling at his feet, confessed that the Baptism which he had received among the Hereticks was nothing like this, but full of blasphemy and impiety, that for this reason he was infinitely troubled in conscience, and durst not lift up his eyes to Heaven, begging that he might partake of the true and sincere Baptism, and that grace and acceptance that was conferred by it. This *Dionysius* would not admit, telling him that his long communion with the Church was equivalent to it, that he that had so often been present at the giving of thanks, and said *Amen* to the prayers of the Congregation, that had stood before the holy Table, and had taken the holy food into his hands, and been so very long partaker of the body and blood of our Lord *Jesus Christ*, that having done thus for so many years together, he durst not admit him to another Baptism: bidding him to be of good cheer, and with a firm faith and a good conscience approach the holy Sacrament. All which notwithstanding did not quiet the mans mind, but that still he droopt under his fears and scruples, durst not be present at the Lords Table, nor could hardly be persuaded to come to the public Prayers. What answer *Sixtus* returned to this instance, is uncertain, but by this it is evident, that S. *Dionysius* was no zealot for the contrary opinion, though it must be confessed, there was something particular in this, that occurred not in ordinary cases, he presuming that so long a communion with the Church, so continued and open a profession of the Orthodox Faith did tantamount a being legally initiated and baptized into it.

\* *Dion. Epist.*  
ad *Hermarum.*  
*ib. c. 1. p. 250.*

† *Ibid. c. 10.*  
*p. 255.*

VIII. IN these contests he passed over the short reign of *Gallus*, *Decius* his successor, who not taking warning \* by his predecessors errors stumbled at the same stone. And when he found all things quiet and peaceable, must needs fall a persecuting the Christians, whose prayers with Heaven secured the peace and prosperity of the Empire. But this alas was but a preparatory storm to that which followed in the reign of *Valerian*, whom our *Dionysius* † makes to be the *Beast* in the *Revelation*, to whom was given a mouth speaking great things, and blasphemies, and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months. He was at first extraordinarily kind to Christians beyond any of the precedent Emperours, even those who were themselves accounted Christians: so that his whole Family was full of pious and good Men, and his house a kind of Church. But this weather was too fair and benign to last long: Being seduced and deluded by an Arch-Magician of *Egypt*, he was prevailed with to fall from his kindness, and to persecute the Christians, whom the Conjuror represented as persons, who by wicked and execrable charms hindred the Emperours prosperity, colouring his pretence from their power over *Demons*, whose mischievous Arts they abstracted, and whom they ordinarily banished with the speaking of a word; and persuading him that to urge the *Gentile* Rites, to maintain Lustrations, Sacrifices, Divinations by the blood and intrails of Men and Beasts, was the ready way to make him happy. Whereupon Edicts were every where published against the Christians, and they without the least protection exposed to the common rage.

\* *Ep. ejus ad*  
*Germ. ib. c. 11.*  
*p. 257.*

IX. ORDERS being come to *Alexandria*, *Dionysius* \* accompanied with some of his Clergy, addressed himself to *Emilian* the Governour, who did not at first downright forbid him to hold their solemn Assemblies, but endeavoured to persuade him to leave off that way of Worship, presuming others would quickly follow his example. The answer he returned was short and Apostolical, that *we must obey God rather than Men*, openly assuring him, that he would worship the true God, and none but him, from which resolution he would never start, nor ever cease to be a Christian. The Governour told them, that both by word and writing he had acquainted them with the great clemency of the Emperours towards them, permitting them to be safe, if they would but act agreeably to nature, and adore the Gods that were Protectors of the Empire, and he hoped they would be more grateful than to refuse it. The Bishop replied, that every one worshipped those whom they thought to be gods, that as for themselves they adored and served that one God, who is the Creator of the World, and who gave that Government to the Emperours, and to whom they offered up dayly prayers for the permanency and stability of their Empire. To which the other rejoined, that if he were a God, none hindred them from worshipping him together with them who were truly gods, they being enjoined to worship [not one, but] gods, and those whom all Men owed to be so. *Dionysius* answered, *We cannot worship any other*. "I see, replied *Emilian*, that you are a company of foolish and ingrateful people, and not sensible of the favour of our Lords the Emperours: wherefore you shall stay no longer in this City, but be sent to *Cephro* in the parts of *Lybia*, for thither according to the Emperours command, I resolve to banish you. Nor shall either you, or any of your Sect have leave to keep your meetings, or to frequent your *Cameteria* ;

" which

“ which if any dare to attempt, it shall be at his peril, and he shall be punished suitably to his crime. Be gone therefore to the place allotted you.

X. THE sentence was speedily put into execution, *Dionysius* though then sick, not being allowed one days respite to recover himself, or provide for his journey thither. Indeed when he came distinctly to understand the place of his exile, he was a little troubled, knowing it to be a place destitute of the society of good Men, and perpetually exposed to the incursions of Thieves and Robbers; but was better satisfied when told that it was near a great and populous City, whose neighbourhood would furnish him with persons both for Converse, and for opportunities of Conversion. *Cephro* was the most rude and barbarous Tract of the *Lybian* Desert, and *Colythius* ( which as \* *Nicephorus* tells us, was that particular part of it to which *Dionysius* was designed ) the most uncomfortable it's like of all the rest. Thither therefore was he sent, whom great numbers of Christians quickly followed, partly from *Alexandria*, and partly out of other parts of *Egypt*. At his first arrival he was treated with rudeness and showres of stones, but had not been long there, before he not only civilized their barbarous manners, but reclaimed them from idolatry, and brought them to embrace the Christian Faith. And as he met with success, so he shifted his quarters, preaching up and down those wild and disconsolate parts, and turning the Wilderness into a Church. Nor could all the malice and threatnings of the Governor hinder, but that the Christians still assembled at *Alexandria*, notwithstanding that their beloved Bishop was ravished from them, and that *Emilian* proceeded with the utmost rigour against all that were brought before him, killing many with all the arts of cruelty, keeping others for the rack and torment, loading them with chains, and thrusting them into squalid and nasty Dungeons, forbidding any of their friends to come near them. Though even in the height of these afflictions God supported their Spirits, and animated others to venture in, and to administer comfort and necessaries to them, not scrupling though with the peril of their heads to inter the bodies of the Martyrs.

XI. HOW long *Dionysius* continued in his banishment, I find not, probably till *Valerian* was taken captive by the King of *Persia*, *Ann. CCLIX.* when *Gallienus* his Son ruled alone, who from the unhappiness of his Father took the measures of his carriage towards the Christians: he saw that while he favoured the Christians, Heaven smiled upon his designs, and things went on in a smooth and uninterrupted course; but when once he began to bear hard upon them, the Tide turned, and the divine vengeance pursued and overtook them, and that therefore nothing could be more prudent and reasonable, than to give a check to the present fury, and suffer them to go on securely in the exercise of their Religion, which he did by this following Edict\*.

\* *Lib. 6. c. 10.*  
p. 402.

\* *Esseb. l. 7.*  
c. 13. p. 262.



Emperour *Cæsar P. Licinius GALLIENUS*,  
*Pius, Felix, Augustus*, to *Dionysius, Pinna*,  
*Demetrius*, and the rest of the Bishops.

WE have given Order that the Indulgence of our bounty shall be extended throughout the World, that all Religious places shall be freed from force and violence. Wherefore ye also may freely enjoy the benefit of our Rescript, so as no Man shall dare to vex or molest you, and what you now may lawfully enjoy has been long since granted by Us. And for this end Aurelius Cyrenius Our High Steward shall keep the Copy of this Edict which we have now granted.

The like Rescript he also sent to other Bishops, giving them the free leave of their *Cameteria*, the places where they buried their dead, and often assembled for their Religious Solemnities, especially the memorials of the Martyrs.

XII. SCARCE was *Dionysius* quietly settled at home, when he was alarm'd by another accident, which forced him for a while again, if not to retire, at least to keep so close, that he was not capable to execute his charge. \* *Emilianus* the *Præfect* partly by his own ambition, and partly forced by an unhappy accident wherein he was involved, took the Empire upon him, the Roman Army in Egypt joining with him, partly out of dislike to *Gallienus*, partly out of affection to *Emilian*, who was a brisk active Man. Immediately he seized upon the Store-houses, that Country being the common Granary of the Empire. *Gallienus* being acquainted with the news, ordered *Theodotus* his General to march with an Army into those parts, who besieged *Alexandria*, and reduced the City to great extremity. For they were not more vigorously assaulted by the enemy from without; than undermined † by Parties and Factions within, the City being divided into two Factions, one contending for *Gallienus*, and the other for *Emilian*. So that there was no converse nor commerce between them, *Dionysius* being compelled in all his private affairs, and the public concernment of his Church to transact with his friends by Letters, it being safer, as he tells us, for a Man to travel from East to West, than to pass from one part of *Alexandria* to another, so barbarous and inhumane were the outrages committed there. The issue was that *Gallienus* his Party prevailed to let in *Theodotus* and his Army, who seized the Tyrant, and sent him to the Emperour, who caused him to be strangled in Prison.

XIII. HOW stormy and tempestuous is the Region of this Lower World! One Wave perpetually pressing upon the neck of another. The Persecution was seconded by a Civil War and a cruel Famine, and that no sooner over, but a terrible Plague followed close at the heels of it; one of the most dreadful and amazing Judgments which God sends upon mankind. It over-ran City and Country,

\* Tr. Poll. in vit. *Emil.* p. 778. & in vit. *Gall.* c. 4. p. 715.

† *Dionys. Epist. ad Hierarch. ib.* c. 21. p. 266.

try, sweeping away what the fury of the late Wars had left, there not having been known (saith the Historian\*) in any Age so great a destruction of mankind. This Pestilence (which some say\* came first out of *Aethiopia*) began in the reign of *Gallus* and *Volusian*, and ever since more or less straggled over most parts of the *Roman* Empire, and now kept its fatal residence at *Alexandria*, where by an impartial severity it mowed down both *Gentiles* and *Christians*, and turned the *Paschal* solemnity (it being then the time† of *Easter*) into days of weeping and mourning, all places were filled with dying groans, and sorrows either for friends already dead, or those that were ready to depart, it being now, as formerly under that great *Egyptian* Plague, and something worse, *there was a great cry in Egypt, for there was not an house where there was not only one, but many dead.* In this sad and miserable time how vastly different was the carriage of the *Christians* and the *Heathens*. The *Christians* out of the superabundance of their kindness and charity without any regard to their own health and life, boldly ventured into the thickest dangers, daily visiting, assisting, and ministering to their sick and infected brethren, cheerfully taking their pains and distempers upon them, and themselves expiring with them. And when many of those whom they thus attended, recovered and lived, they died themselves, as if by a prodigious and unheard of charity, they had willingly taken their diseases upon them, and died to save them from death. And these the most considerable both of *Clergy* and *People*, cheerfully embracing a death that deserved a title little less than that of *Martyrdom*. They embraced the bodies of the dead, closed their eyes, laid them out, washed and dressed them up in their funeral weeds, took them upon their shoulders, and carried them to their Graves, it not being long before others did the same offices for them. The *Gentiles* on the contrary put off all sense of humanity, when any began to fall sick, they presently cast them out, ran from their dearest friends and relations, and either left them half dead in the high-ways, or threw them out as soon as they were dead, dreading to fall under the same infection, which yet with all their care and diligence they could not avoid.

XIV. NOR were these the only troubles the good Man was exercised with, he had contests of another nature that swallowed up his time and care. *Sabellius* a *Libyan*, born at *Ptolemais* a City of *Pentapolis*, had lately started\* dangerous notions and opinions about the doctrine of the holy Trinity, affirming the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, to be but one subsistence, one person under three several names, which in the time of the Old Testament gave the Law under the notion of the Father, in the New, was made Man in the capacity of the Son, and descended afterwards upon the Apostles in the quality of the Holy Ghost. *Dionysius* as became a vigilant Pastor of his Flock, presently undertakes the Man, and while he managed the cause with too much eagerness and fervency of disputation, he bent the stick too much the other way, asserting not only *ἐτερότητα τῆς οὐσιότητος*†, a distinction of Persons, but *ἑτερότητα διαφύσεων*, a difference of Essence, and an inequality of Power and Glory. For which he is severely censured by *S. Basil* and some of the Ancients, as one of those that mainly opened the gap to those *Arrian* impieties that after broke in upon the World. Though *S. Basil* could not but so far do him right, as to say that it was not any ill meaning, but only an over-vehement desire to oppose his adversary that betrayed him into those

\* *Zosim. Histor.*  
l. 1. p. 347.  
\* *Pomp. Let. iz*  
*vit. Galli, p. m.*  
1235. *Entrop.*  
*H. Rom. l. 9.*  
1924.

† *Dionys. ib.*  
c. 22. p. 258.

\* *Dion. Epist.*  
*ad Sex. ib. c. 6.*  
p. 252 *Niceph.*  
l. 6. c. 26 p. 419.

† *Basil. ad p.*  
*Magn. Philof.*  
*Epist. XLI.*  
p. 60.

*Ubi supr.*

those unwary and inconsiderate assertions. Some Bishops of *Pentapolis* immediately took hold of this, and going over to *Rome* represented his dangerous errors; where the case was discussed in a Synod, and Letters written to *Dionysius* about it, who in a set *Apology* answered for himself, and declared his sense more explicitly in this controversy, as may be seen at large in \* *Athanasius*, who has with infinite pains vindicated our *Dionysius*, his Predecessor, as a Man sound and orthodox, and who was never condemned by the Governours of the Church for impious opinions, or that he held those abominable tenets which *Arrius* broached afterwards. And certainly *S. Basil* might and would have passed a milder censure, had he either perused all *Dionysius* his Writings, or remembered how much he concerned himself to clear *S. Gregory* of *Neocæsarea*, *Dionysius* his contemporary, from the very same charge, for which he could not but confess he had given too just occasion.

\* *De Sentent.*  
*Dionys. Tom. I.*  
*p. 548. & c. & c.*  
*Phot. Cod.*  
*CCXXXII.*  
*col. 901.*

† *Engeb. libid.*  
*c. 24. p. 270.*

XV. NO sooner was this controversy a little over, but he was engaged in another. † *Nepos* an *Egyptian* Bishop lately dead (a man eminent for his constancy in the Faith, his industry and skill in the holy Scriptures, the many Psalms and Hymns he had composed, which the Brethren sung in their public Meetings) had not long since fallen into the Error of the *Millenaries*, and had published Books to shew that the promises made in the Scriptures to good Men, were ἑκατὸν ἔτη, according to the sense and opinion of the *Jews* to be literally understood, and that there was to be a *thousand years* State upon Earth, wherein they were to enjoy sensual pleasures and delights. Endeavouring to make good his assertions from some passages in *S. John's Revelation*, stiling his Book Ἐλεγχος ἀλληγορησῶν, *A Confutation of Allegorical Expositors*. This Book was greedily caught up and read by many, and advanced into that esteem and reputation, that Law and Prophets, and the Writings of the Evangelists and Apostles were neglected and thrown aside, and the doctrine of this Book cried up, as containing μέγα τι καὶ κρυπτόν μυστήριον, some great and extraordinary mystery, concealed before from the World: the more simple and unwary being taught to disband all sublime and magnificent thoughts of our Lord's glorious coming, the Resurrection and final judgment, and our conformity to him in glory, and to hope for a state in the Kingdom of God, wherein they should be entertained with such little and trifling, such fading and transitory things as this World does afford. *Dionysius* being then in the Province of the *Arse-noita*, where this Opinion had prevailed so far, as to draw whole Churches into Schism and Separation, summoned the Presbyters and Teachers, who preached in the Country Villages, and as many of the People as had a mind to come, advising them that in their Sermons they would publicly examine this Doctrine. They presently defended themselves with this Book, whereupon he began more closely to join issue with them, continuing with them three days together from morning to night, weighing and discussing the doctrines contained in it. In all which time he admired their constancy and love to truth, their great quickness and readiness of understanding, with so much order and decency, so much modesty and moderation were the Discourses managed on both sides, doubts propounded, and assent yielded. For they took an especial care not pertinaciously to defend their former opinions, when once they found them to be erroneous, nor to shun any objections which on either part were made against them. As near as might be they kept to the present



present question, which they endeavoured to make good; but if convinced by argument that they were in the wrong, made no scruple to change their minds, and go over to the other side, with honest minds, and sincere intentions, and hearts truly devoted to God, embracing whatever was demonstrated by the holy Scriptures. The issue was, that *Coracion* the Commander and Champion of the other Party, publicly promised and protested before them all, that he would not henceforth either entertain, or dispute, or discourse, or preach these opinions, being sufficiently convinced by the arguments which the other side had offered to him: all the Brethren departing with mutual love, unanimity, and satisfaction. Such was the peaceable conclusion of this Meeting, and less could not be expected from such pious and honest Souls, such wise and regular Disputes. And happy had it been for the Christian World, had all those controversies that have disturbed the Church, been managed by such prudent and orderly debates, which as usually conducted, rather widen the breach, than heal and mend it. *Dionysius* to strike the controversy dead, while his hand was in, wrote a Book concerning the Promises, (which *S. Hierom*, forgetting what he had truly said \* elsewhere, that it was written against *Nepos*, tells † us, was written against *Irenaeus* Bishop of Lyons, mistaking the person probably for his opinion) in the first part whereof he stated the question, laid down his sense concerning it: in the second he treated concerning the Revelation of *S. John* (the main Pillar and Buttress of this Opinion) where both by reason and the testimony of others, he \* contends that it was not written by *S. John* the Apostle and Evangelist, but by another of that name, an account of whose Judgment herein we have represented in another place.

XVI. THE last controversy wherein he was concerned was that against *Paul* of *Samosata* Bishop of *Antioch*, who had † confidently vented these and such like impious *dogmata*, that there is but one person in the Godhead, that our blessed Saviour was, though a holy, yet a meer Man, who came not down from Heaven, but was of a meer earthly extract and original, in whom the word (which he made not any thing distinct from the Father) did sometimes reside, and sometimes depart from him, with abundance of the like wicked and senseless propositions. Besides all which he was infinitely obnoxious in his \* morals (as few Men but serve the design of some lust by Schism and bad opinions) covetous without any bounds, heaping up a vast estate (though born a poor mans Son) partly by fraud and sacrilege, partly by cruel and unjust vexations of his brethren, partly by fomenting differences, and taking bribes to assist the weaker party. Proud and vain-glorious he was beyond all measure, affecting Pomp and Train, and secular Power, and rather to be stiled a temporal Prince than a Bishop, going through the streets and all public places in solemn state, with persons walking before him, and crouds of people following after him. In the Church he caused to be erected a Throne higher than ordinary, and a place which he called *Secretum*, after the manner of Civil Magistrates, who in the inner part of the *Pratorium* had a place railed in, with Curtains hung before it, where they sate to hear Causes. He was wont to clap his hand upon his thigh, and to stamp with his feet upon the Bench, frowning upon, and reproaching those, who did not Theatrically shout and make a noise while he was discoursing to them, wherein he used also to reflect upon his predecessors and the most eminent persons that had been before him, with all

\* Descript. 53  
Dionys.  
† Prefat. in l.  
18. Com. in Esa.  
p. 242. T. 5.

\* Antiq. Apost.  
Life of S. John.  
n. 14.

† Euseb ubi sup.  
c. 27. p. 277.  
281. Epiph.  
Heres. LXV.  
p. 262. Athanas.  
de Synod. Arim.  
& Seleuc. p.  
920. Niceph.  
l. 6. c. 27. p.  
420.  
\* Epist. Synod.  
II. Antioch. ap.  
Euseb. id. c. 20.  
p. 289. &c.

all imaginable scorn and petulancy, magnifying himself as far beyond them. The Hymns that were ordinarily sung in honour of our Lord, he abolished as late and novel, and in stead thereof taught some of his profelyted Females upon the *Easter* solemnity to chaunt out some which he had composed in his own commendation, to the horror and astonishment of all that heard them, procuring the Bishops and Presbyters of the neighbouring parts to publish the same things of him in their Sermons to the People, some of his Profelytes not sticking to affirm, that he was an *Angel* come down from Heaven. All which he was so far from controlling, that he highly encouraged them, and heard them himself not only with patience but delight. He was moreover vehemently suspected of incontinency, maintaining *συνεσθίλις γυναικας*, *subintroduced Women* in his house, and some of them persons of exquisite beauty, contrary to the Canons of the Church, and to the great scandal of Religion. And that he might not be much reproached by those that were about him, he endeavoured to debauch his Clergy, conniving at their Vices and Irregularities, and corrupting others with Pensions, and whom he could not prevail with by evil arts, he awed by power, and his mighty interest in the Princes and great ones of those parts, so that they were forced with sadness to bewail at home, what they durst not publish and declare abroad.

XVII. TO rectify these enormities most of the chief Bishops of the *East* resolved to meet in a Synod at *Antioch*\*, to which they earnestly invited our *Dionysius*. But, alas, age and infirmities had rendred him incapable of such a journey, and had given him a Writ of Ease, upon which account he begged to be excused from it. But that he might not the wanting in what he could, he sent Letters, wherein he declared his sense and opinion of those matters, and in his Epistle to the Church of *Antioch*, to shew his resentment of the thing, he not only wrote not to the Man, but gave him not so much as the civility of a salutation. In this Synod the crafty Fox hid his head, dissembling his sentiments, and palliating his disorders, and confessing and recanting what he was not able to conceal, so that for the present he still continued in his place. How he was afterwards discovered and laid open, convicted, condemned and deposed in another Synod in that City, and *Domnus* substituted in his room; how he refused to submit to the sentence of the Council, and for some time maintained his station by the power of *Zenobia*, a Queen in those parts, and a *Jewish* Profelyte whose favour he had courted and obtained; and how at last upon the Bishops appeal he was turned out, and the Synodical Decree executed by the immediate order of the Emperour *Aurelian*, is without the limits of my business to enquire.

XVIII. A little after this first Synod at *Antioch* died our *S. Denys* in the XII year of *Gallienus*† *Ann.* CCLXV. when he had sitten seventeen years Bishop of *Alexandria*, dying probably the same year and on the same day with *S. Gregory Thaumaturgus*, whose memories are accordingly celebrated *November* XVII. in the *Calendar* of the *Roman Church*. His memory was continued at *Alexandria* (as we learn from \* *Epiphanius*) by a Church dedicated to him, but flourished much more in the incomparable Vertues of his past life, and those excellent Writings he left behind him, which mainly consisted of vast numbers of Epistles; and 'tis probable all his Writings were nothing else, his larger Tracts being written in the nature of Epistles. Which were they still extant, in stead of those

little

\* *Enseb. ib. c.*  
27. p. 277. *Ch.*  
c. 30. p. 279.

† *Vid. ib. c. 28.*  
p. 278.

\* *Hevel. LXIX.*  
p. 311.

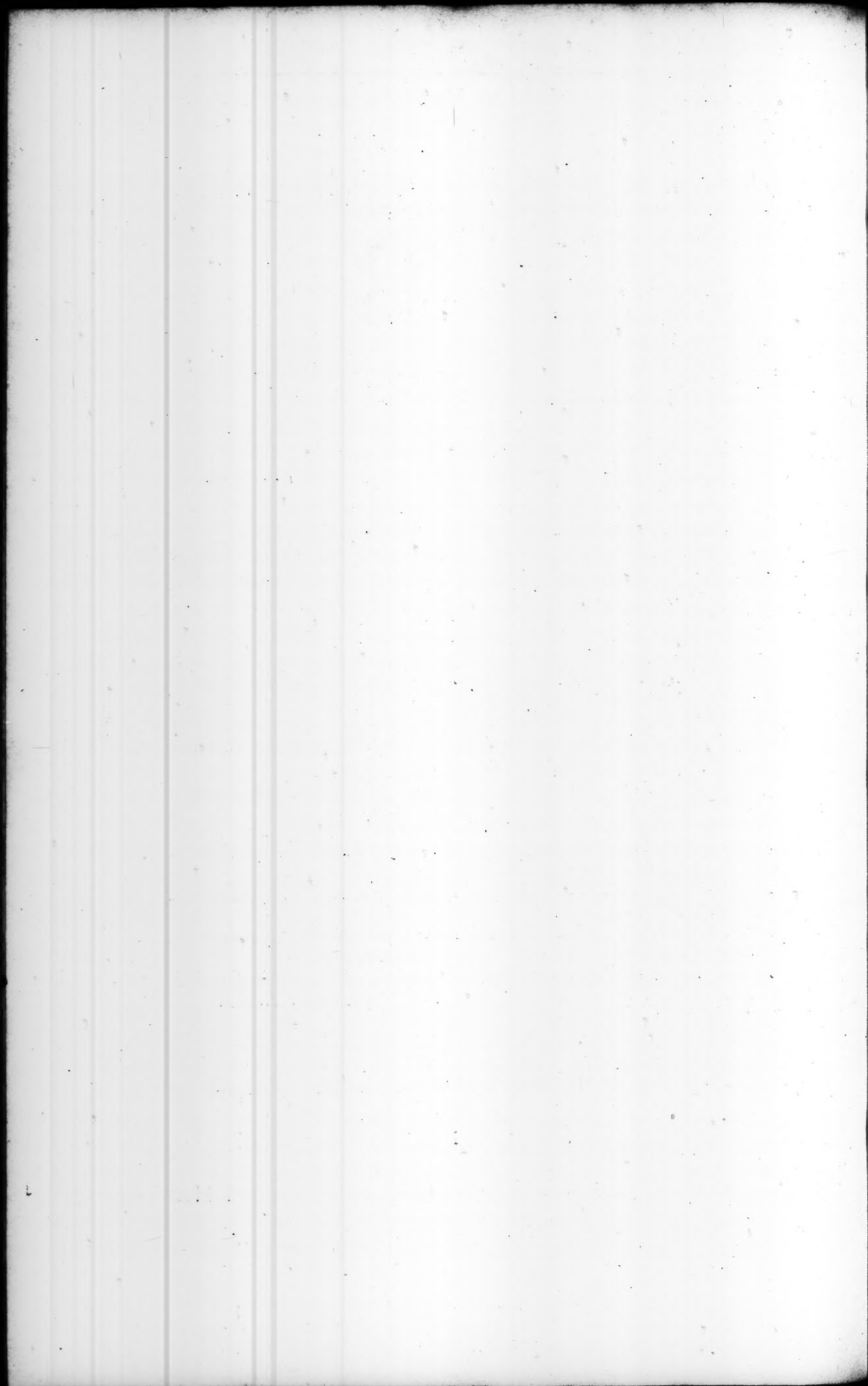
little fragments preserved by *Eusebius*, besides other advantages, they would probably furnish us with the most material transactions of the Christian World in those times, than which in those early Ages there was not a more active and busie period of the Church.

His Writings, whereof some Fragments only are now extant,

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| <i>Liber de Pœnitentia ad Cononem Episcopum Hermopolitanum.</i>   | <i>Epistola suo &amp; Ecclesia sua nomine ad Sixtum &amp; Eccl. Rom. de eadem re.</i>   |
| <i>Libellus de Martyrio ad Originem.</i>                          | <i>Ad Dionysium Romanum de Luciano Epistola.</i>  |
| <i>De Promissionibus adversus Nepotem Libri II.</i>               | <i>Epistola ad Hermammonem.</i>   |
| <i>Ad Dionysium Romanum adversus Sabellium, Libri IV.</i>         | <i>Epistola ad Domitium &amp; Didymum.</i>  |
| <i>Ad Timotheum Libri de Natura.</i>                              | <i>Epistola ad Compresbyteros Alexand.</i>  |
| <i>De tentationibus Liber ad Euphran.</i>                         | <i>Epistola ad Hieracem Episc. Ægyptiac.</i>  |
| <i>Commentarius in primam partem Ecclesiastis.</i>                | <i>Epistola de Sabbato.</i>   |
| <i>Epistola ad Cornelium Episcopum Romanum.</i>                   | <i>Epistola de Mortalitate.</i>   |
| <i>Epistola ad Stephanum Episcop. Rom. de Baptismo.</i>           | <i>De Exercitatione Epistola.</i>   |
| <i>Ad Sixtum Papam de Baptismo Epistola III.</i>                  | <i>Epistola ad Ammonem Bernenicensium Episcopum, contra Sabellium.</i>  |
| <i>Adversus Germanum Episc. Epistola.</i>                         | <i>Alia ad Telephorum.</i>  |
| <i>Epistola ad Fabium Antiochia Episc.</i>                        | <i>Ad Euphranorem alia.</i>   |
| <i>Epistola ad Novatianum de Schismate.</i>                       | <i>Ad Ammonem &amp; Euporum Epistola.</i>   |
| <i>Epistola de Pœnitentia ad Fratres per Ægyptum constitutos.</i> | <i>Ad Basilidem Episcopum Pentapolit.</i>   |
| <i>Ad gregem suum Alexandrinum Epistola objuratoria.</i>          | <i>Epistola plures. Ex his superest Epistola Canonica de diversis Capitibus. Extat Gr. L. Tom. I. Concil. &amp; alibi cum Commentario Balsamonis.</i> |
| <i>Epistola ad Laodiceos.</i>                                     | <i>Epistola Ἐορταστικῇ, seu Paschales plurimæ.</i>  |
| <i>Epistola ad Armenios de Pœnitentia.</i>                        | <i>Epistola ad Ecclesiam Antiochenam adversus Paulum Samosatenum.</i>   |
| <i>Epistola ad Romanos Ἀρχονικῇ.</i>                              |   |
| <i>Alia ad eosdem de Pace &amp; Pœnitent.</i>                     |   |
| <i>Ad Confessores Novatianos Roma Epistola III.</i>               | Doubtful, or rather Supposititious.   |
| <i>Ad Philemonem Presbyterum Romanum de Baptismo.</i>             | <i>Epistola ad Paulum Samosatenum Gr. L. Concil. Tom. I.</i>  |
| <i>Epistola itidem ad Dionysium Presbyterum Rom. de Baptismo.</i> | <i>Responsiones ad Pauli Samosateni decem Quaestiones, Gr. L. ibid.</i>   |

The End of S. DIONYSIUS Alexandrinus's Life.





# A CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE

OF THE  
Three First Ages

OF THE  
Christian Church.

---

Tatian. Orat. contr. Græc. p. 167.

Παρ' οἷς ἀσυνάρητος ἔστιν ἡ τῶν χρόνων ἀναγραφὴ, ὥστε τέτταρις ἐστὶ τὰ τῆ ἱστορίας ἀληθεύειν δυνατὸν.

Chrysoft. Homil. II. in verb. Esai. vidi Domin. Tom. 3. p. 740.

Καθόπερ γὰρ ὅροι καὶ σήλαι ἐν τοῖς ἀγροῖς τοὺς ἀρούρας ἐκ ἑῶσι συγκείσθαι· ὅπως οἱ χρόνοι καὶ οἱ καιροὶ τὰ περάγματα ἐκ ἑῶσιν ἀλλήλοις συμπέπτειν, ἀλλὰ διέρρηκταις ἀπ' ἀλλήλων ἀνταί, καὶ κατὰ τὴν περὶ τοῦ χρόνου διατίθεντες τάξιν, πολλὰς ἀπαλάττωσιν ἡμεῖς παρεχόμενοι.

---

L O N D O N,

Printed for Richard Chiswell at the Rose and Crown in  
S. Paul's Church-Yard. MDC LXXXVI.

NO. 1000

1000

1000

1000

1000

1000

1000

1000

1000

1000



Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
1	Augusti, 43	C. Julius Cæsar Vysinia- nus. L. Æmil. Paulus.	Our Lord's Circumcision: His being presented in the Temple. His flight into Ægypt. The Massacre of the Infants at Bethlehem. The death of Herod about the time of the Pasover.
2	44	P. Vinicius Nepos. P. Alphinius Varus.	Archelaus declared Tetrarch of Judæa.
3	45	L. Ælius Lamia. L. Servilius Geminus.	In the beginning of this ( or ra- ther the end of the foregoing year ) our Lord returned out of Ægypt. His education and abode at Na- zareth.
4	46	Sex. Ælius Catus. C. Sentius Saturninus.	Augustus refuses the title of Lord.
5	47	L. Valerius Messala. Cn. Cornelius Cinna.	Great Earthquakes hapned. Tiber overflows. An Eclipse of the Sun, March 28.
6	48	M. Æmil. Lepidus. L. Arruntius Nepos.	About this time the Jews and Samaritans accused Archelaus to Augustus, who banished him to Vien in France.
7	49	A. Licinius Nerva. Q. Cec. Metellus Creticus.	
8	50	M. Furius Camillus. S. Nonius Quintilianus.	
9	51	Q. Sulp. Camerinus. C. Poppæus Sabinus.	
10	52	P. Corn. Dolabella. C. Junius Silanus.	
11	53	M. Æmil. Lepidus. T. Statilius Taurus.	The Jews taxed by Quirinus the Roman Governour. In those days rose up Judas of Galilee, and drew away much people af- ter him. He is slain, and his two Sons crucified.

Our Lord is generally supposed to have been born *Decem. XXV.* six days before the Commencement of the common *Ara. Ann. Augusti Imp. XLII.* For though in strictness the *XLII.* year of *August.* ended *Nov. XXVII.* (accounting his Reign from his entering upon the *Triumvirate*) yet seeing the civil *Roman* year expired not till the last of *Decemb.* it may be said to extend all that time. His *XLIII.* year in common reckoning, and the first year of the vulgar *Ara* of our Lord Commencing *Jan. 1.* when the *Romans* began their year and the new Consuls took place.

Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
12	54	T. Germanicus Cæsar. C. Fonteius Capito.	<i>By occasion of the Pasover our Lord goes up with his Parents to Jerusalem, and there disputes with the Rabbins in the Temple.</i>
13	55	C. Silius Nepos. L. Munacius Plancus.	<i>Augustus solemnly makes his Will, and lays it up with the Vestal Virgins.</i>
14	56	Sex. Pompeius Nepos. Sex. Apuleius Nepos.	<i>Augustus dies, and is interred with great funeral honours. Serv. Numerius affirms upon his Oath, that he saw him ascend into Heaven.</i>
15	1 2	Drusus J. Cæsar. C. Norbanus Flaccus.	
16	2 3	T. Statil. Sefena. L. Scribonius Libo.	<i>The Magicians and Mathematicians banished Rome by Tiberius.</i>
17	3 4	C. Cælius Rufus. L. Pomponius Flaccus.	
18	4 5	Cl. Tib. Nero III. D. German. Cæsar II.	
19	5 6	M. Junius Silanus. L. Norbanus Balbus.	<i>Josephus called Caiaphas made High-priest of the Jews by the favour of Valerius Gratus the Roman Governour.</i>
20	6 7	L. Valerius Messala. M. Aurelius Cotta.	
21	7 8	Cl. Tib. Nero IV. Drusus J. Cæsar II.	
22	8 9	C. Sulpicius Galba. D. Haterius Agrippa.	
23	9 10	C. Asinius Pollio. C. Antistius Vetus.	
24	10 11	Sex. Cornel. Cethegus. L. Vitellius Varro.	

<i>Ann. Chr.</i>	<i>Roman Emperours.</i>	<i>Consuls.</i>	<i>Ecclesiastical Affairs:</i>
25	<i>Tiber.</i> 11	Cossus Cornel. Lentulus.	<i>Towards the end of this Year Pontius Pilate is sent to be Procurator of Judæa.</i>
		12 M. Asinius Agrippa.	
26		12 Cn. Cornel. Lentulus. Gæt.	<i>Pilate commands the Roman Standards, with the Image of Tiberius upon them, to be brought into the Temple, to the great offence of the Jews.</i>
		13 C. Calvifius Sabinus.	
27		13 M. Licinius Crassus.	<i>Herod Antipas putting away the Daughter of Aretas King of Arabia, marries Herodias his Brother Philip's Wife.</i>
		14 L. Calphurnius Piso.	
28		14 Ap. Junius Silanus.	<i>Joseph our Lord's reputed Father is by some said to de cease this Year.</i>
		15 P. Silius Nerva.	
29		15 C. Rubellius } 16 C. Fufius } <i>Gemini.</i>	<i>John the Baptist begins to preach and to baptize, (probably) about Mid-summer, or as B. Usher thinks, Octob. 19.</i>
30		16 C. Cassius Longinus.	<i>Our Lord baptized Jan. 6. having completed the 29. Year of his age, and 13. days.</i>
		17 M. Vinucius Quartinus.	<i>His first Pasover, April 6.</i>
31		17 Tiber. Nero Cæsar. V.	<i>His second Pasover, March 28. His cure of the Paralytic at the Pool of Bethesda. His sending out the 12 Apostles.</i>
		18 L. Ælius Sejanus.	<i>John the Baptist beheaded.</i>
32		18 Cn. Domitius Ænobarbus.	<i>The third Pasover, April 14. 4000 fed with 7 loaves. Christ's Transfiguration. The LXX. Disciples sent out. Zachæus converted. Bartimæus cured of his blindness.</i>
		A. Vitellius Nepos.	
		19 Suff. M. Fur. Camillus Scrib.	
33		19 Ser. Sulpit. Galba.	<i>Lazarus raised. Our Lord's triumphant entry into Jerusalem. The Lord's Supper instituted. The fourth Pasover. Our Lord apprehended, arraigned, crucified, April 3. rises again, and ascends into Heaven.</i>
		20 L. Cornelius Sylla.	<i>The 7 Deacons chosen. S. Stephen stoned, Dec. 25.</i>



Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
34	Tiber. 20	P. Fabius Perficus.	<i>The Persecution following S. Stephen's death.</i>
	21	L. Vitellius Nepos.	S. Philip's preaching at Samaria. His converting and baptizing the Eunuch.
			Peter and John return to Jerusalem.
35		21 C. Cestius Gallus Camerinus.	S. Paul converted, Jan. 25.
		22 M. Servilius Rufus.	S. Peter visits the Churches.
			Jonathan the Son of Annas made High-Priest. Many favours conferred upon the Jews by Vitellius.
36		22 Q. Plautius Plautianus. al. Lælianus.	Peter's Vision.
		23 Sex. Papinius Gallienus.	Cornelius his Conversion.
			Peter accused for his converse with the Gentiles at his return to Jerusalem.
37	Carigula } à Mart. 16.	23 Cn. Acerronius Proculus.	S. Paul comes to Jerusalem, and after 15 days is by revelation commanded to depart thence.
		24 C. Pontius Nigrinus.	He goes for Tarsus.
38		1 C. Cæsar Caligula. II.	A cruel Persecution raised against the Jews at Alexandria by Flaccus the Prefect of Egypt.
		2 L. Apronius Cæfianus.	
39		2 M. Aquilius Julianus.	Pontius Pilate lays violent hands upon himself.
		3 P. Nonius Asprenas.	The great increase of the Church of Antioch. The Believers first called CHRISTIANS there.
40		3 C. Cæsar Caligula III. Suff. L. Gellius Publicola.	Caligula commands Petronius to set up his Statue in the Temple at Jerusalem: but at the great instance of the Jews it is deferred.
		4 M. Cocceius Nerva.	
41	Claudius } à 1. Febr.	4 C. Cæsar Caligula IV. Suff. Q. Pompon. Secundus.	S. James the Great, the Apostle, beheaded by the command of Herod.
		1 Cn. Sentius Saturnus.	Peter delivered out of Prison.
42		1 Tib. Claudius Imp. II.	Barnabas and Paul set forward in their preaching of the Gospel.
		2 C. Licinius Cæcina Largus.	They plant the Christian Faith in Seleucia, Cyprus, and other places.

<i>Ann. Chr.</i>	Roman Emperours.	<i>Consuls.</i>	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
43	<i>Claudii.</i> 2	T. Claudius Imp. III.	Claudius abrogates many of the Roman Festivals.
	3	L. Vitellius II.	Elion is made High-priest of the Jews in the room of Matthias the Son of Ananus deposed.
44	3	L. Q. Crispinus II.	Herod dies, being immediately struck by an Angel for his pride and ambition.
	4	T. Statilius Taurus.	The Blessed Virgin said by some to die this year, by others three years after.
45	4	M. Vicinius Quartinus.	The Apostles disperse themselves to preach the Gospel to the several Provinces of the Gentile World.
	5	M. Statilius Corvinus.	Paul and Barnabas preach at Lystra: *Paul stoned there. Their return to Antioch.
46	5	C. Valerius Asiaticus.	3000 of the Jews, raising a tumult in the Feast of Unleavened Bread slain by Ventidius Cumanus Procurator of Judæa.
	6	M. Valerius Messala.	A Council holden by the Apostles and others at Jerusalem to determine the Controversie about legal Rites. The Decrees of the Synod sent to the Churches.
47	6	T. Claudius Imp. IV.	Barnabas preaches the Gospel in Cyprus: S. Paul in Syria, Cilicia, &c.
	7	L. Vitellius III.	The Jews banished Rome by the Edict of Claudius.
48	7	A. Vitellius <i>postea</i> Imp.	S. Paul having travelled through Macedonia, comes to Athens, disputes with the Philosophers, converts Dionysius the Areopagite, and thence passeth to Corinth, where he resides 18 months.
	8	L. Vispanius Poplicola.	S. Paul continues at Corinth, where he meets with Aquila and Priscilla not long before banished Rome by the Decree of Claudius. Hence he writes to the Theffalon.
49	8	Cn. Pompeius Gallus.	
	9	Q. Verranius Lætus.	
50	9	C. Antistius Vetus.	
	10	M. Suillius Rufus Nervilianus.	
51	10	T. Claudius Imp. V.	
	11	Ser. Cornelius Orfilus.	

<i>Ann. Chr.</i>	<i>Roman Emperours.</i>	<i>Consuls.</i>	<i>Ecclesiastical Affairs.</i>
52		11 P. Cornelius Sylla Faustus.	<i>S. Paul departs from Corinth, passes to Ephesus thence to Jerusalem, and returns back to Ephesus.</i>
		12 L. Salvius Otho Titianus.	
53		12 D. Junius Silanus.	<i>He preaches and disputes daily in the School of Tyrannus, convinces the Jews, and converts great numbers to the Faith.</i>
		13 Q. Haterius Antoninus.	
54	Nero à } 13 Oct.	13 M. Afinius Marcellus.	<i>S. Paul fights with Beasts, i. e. Men of evil and brutish manners at Ephesus. He preaches there still, and in the parts thereabouts.</i>
		14 M. Acilius Aviola.	
55		1 Nero Claudius Imp.	<i>S. Paul's departure from Ephesus. He passes through Macedonia and Greece, and gathers contribution for the Saints at Jerusalem.</i>
		2 L. Antistius Vetus.	
56		2 Q. Volusius Saturninus.	<i>S. Paul comes to Jerusalem, and is apprehended in the Temple, and secured in the Castle. His imprisonment at Cæsarea, and arraignment before Felix the Roman Governor.</i>
		3 P. Cornelius Scipio.	
57		3 Nero Claud. Imp. II.	<i>S. Paul kept prisoner at Cæsarea under Felix.</i>
		4 L. Calpurnius Piso.	
58		4 Nero Cl. Imp. III.	<i>S. Paul's arraignment before Festus. He is sent to Rome, where he arrives about the end of this, or the beginning of the following Year. *</i>
		5 M. Valerius Messala.	
59		5 C. Vipsanius Poplicola. al. Apronianus.	<i>S. Paul's free imprisonment at Rome. He writes his Epistles to the Ephesians, Colossians, Philip- pians, to Timothy and Philemon.</i>
		6 C. Fonteius Capito.	
60		6 Nero Cl. Imp. IV.	<i>About the latter end of this Year S. Paul is set at liberty, and before his departure out of Italy writes his Epistle to the Hebrews.</i>
		7 Cossus Cornelius Lentulus.	

\* The time of S. Paul's being sent to Rome, depends upon Festus his coming into Judea to succeed in the room of Felix: which though it cannot be precisely determined, yet plain it is, that it must be while Pallas (Felix his Brother, by whose mediation with the Emperor, Felix at his return had his life spared when accused by the Jews for his mal-administration) was yet in some favour with Nero, wherein he was declining some time before, and from which he seems wholly to have fallen upon Agrippina's death (upon whose interest he stood at Court) who was slain Neron. V. *Ann. Chr.* LIX. Pallas himself being poisoned Neron. VIII. *Ann.* LXII.



Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
61	Neronis.	7 C. Cæsonius Pætus. 8 C. Petronius Turpilianus al. Sabinus.	S. Paul now released, travels for the propagation of the Gospel, especially in the Western parts, ἐν τῷ πέραρ & Ἰουδαίᾳ ἐλθὼν, Clem. Rom. Ep. ad Corinth. p. 8. probably into Spain, or Britain.
62	.	8 P. Marius Celsus. L. Asinius Gallus. 9 Suff. Seneca & Trebellius.	S. James the less, the Brother of our Lord, and Bishop of Jerusalem, thrown by the Jews from the Temple, and knocked on the head with a Fullers Club.
63		9 L. Memmius Regulus. 10 Paulus Virginus Rufus.	Simeon chosen to be S. James his successor in the See of Jerusalem. Anianus succeeds S. Mark in the Bishoprick of Alexandria. Euseb. Chron.
64		10 C. Lecanius Bassus. 11 M. Licinius Crassus Frugi.	* Nero burns the City of Rome, and to wipe off the odium from himself, charges it upon the Christians, and raises the First Persecution against them under that pretext.
65		11 P. Silius Nerva. C. Julius Atticus Vestinus. 12 Suff. Anicius Cerealis.	* S. Peter and Paul suffer Martyrdom at Rome. Several prodigies at Jerusalem foreshew the destruction of that Church and State.
66		12 C. Suetonius Paulinus. 13 L. Pontius Telesinus.	Nero residing in Achaia, commits the management of the War against the Jews to Vespasian.
67		13 L. Fonteius Capito. 14 C. Julius Rufus.	Vespasian carries on the War with great diligence and success. Josephus is taken prisoner.
68	Galba à } Jun. 10. }	C. Silius Italicus. 1 M. Galerius Trachalus Turpilianus.	Phanassus the Son of Samuel the last High Priest of the Jews.

\* Some of the most learned Chronologists of the Roman Church place the Martyrdom of these two great Apostles two years later, viz. Ann. Chr. LXVII. which if any like better, I will not contend, the Persecution probably extending to the last of Nero, though it seems most probable that they should suffer about the beginning of it.

Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
69	<i>Otho</i> } <i>Jan. 15.</i> } <i>Vitellius</i> } <i>ab April. 20.</i> } <i>Vespasianus</i> } <i>à 1. Julii.</i> }	Ser. Sulpitius Galba. <i>Imp. II.</i> T. Vinius Rufinus. <i>et Crispinianus.</i>	<i>Vespasian being proclaimed Emperour, leaves Judæa, goes to Alexandria, and thence for Rome.</i>
70		1 <i>Fl. Vespasianus Imp. II.</i> 2 <i>T. Vespasianus Cæsar.</i>	<i>Titus remanded by Vespasian to prosecute the Jewish War. Jerusalem besieged, taken, sacked, and burnt.</i> <i>1100000 of the Jews perish, 97000 taken prisoners.</i>
71		2 <i>Imp. Vespasianus III.</i> 3 <i>M. Cocceius Nerva, postea Imper.</i>	<i>The Jewish Nobility, and the spoils of the Temple carried in triumph to Rome.</i> <i>S. Bartholomew the Apostle said to be martyred this, by others, the following Year.</i>
72		3 <i>Imp. Vespasianus IV.</i> 4 <i>T. Vespasianus Cæsar. II.</i>	<i>Ebion, so called from an affected poverty, born at Cocaba a Village in Bafanitis, and Cerinthus noted Heretics, begin more openly to shew themselves about this time.</i>
73		4 <i>Fl. Domitianus.</i> 5 <i>M. Valerius Messalinus.</i>	<i>S. Thomas slain at Maliapor in India.</i> <i>S. Martialis at Ravenna in Italy.</i>
74		5 <i>Imp. Vespasianus V.</i> 6 <i>T. Vespasianus III.</i>	<i>The last Cense made at Rome: several very aged persons then noted, mentioned by Pliny, lib. 7. c. 49. justifying the great Age of several Ecclesiastic persons of those times.</i>
75		6 <i>Imp. Vespasianus VI.</i> 7 <i>Tit. Vespasianus IV.</i> 7 <i>Suff. Domitianus IV.</i>	<i>The Temple of Peace dedicated by Vespasian, and the Jewish spoils laid up in it.</i>
76		7 <i>Imp. Vespasianus VII.</i> 8 <i>Tit. Vespasianus V.</i> 8 <i>Suff. Domitianus V.</i>	

Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs:
77	<i>Vespasiani</i>	8 Imp. Vespasianus VIII. Tit. Vespasianus VI. 9 Suff. Domitianus VI.	Linus Bishop of the Church of the Gentile Christians at Rome suffers Martyrdom, having sate 12 years, 4 months, and 12 days: though others allow but 11 years, 2 months, and 23 days.
78		9 L. Ceionius Commodus Verus. 10 C. Cornelius Priscus.	Antipas a faithful Martyr slain at Pergamus. Onuphr. by others referred to Ann. 93.
79	<i>Titus à 2</i> <i>Jun. 24. §</i>	10 Imp. Vespasianus IX. 1 Tit. Vespasianus VII.	A great eruption of Vesuvius; in the over-curious search whereof Pliny the Elder perished the following year.
80		1 Titus Vespas. Imp. VIII. 2 Fl. Domitianus VII.	Titus commands Josephus his History of the Jewish War to be laid up in the Library at Rome.
81	<i>Domit. à 2</i> <i>Sept. 13. §</i>	2 M. Plautius Sylvanus. 3 1 M. Annius Verus Pollio.	
82		1 Domitianus Imp. VIII. 2 T. Flavius Sabinus.	
83		2 Imp. Domitianus IX. 3 T. Virginus Rufus II.	Domitian banishes the Philosophers out of Rome and Italy, and severely punishes the incest of the Vestal Virgins.
84		3 Imp. Domitianus X. 4 Ap. Junius Sabinus.	
85		4 Imp. Domitianus XI. 5 T. Aurelius Fulvus.	Anianus S. Mark's successor in the Bishoprick of Alexandria, dies, and is succeeded by Avilius.
86		5 Imp. Domitianus XII. 6 Ser. Cornelius Dolabella.	



Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
87	Domit.	6 Imp. Domitianus XIII. 7 A. Volusius Saturninus.	Domitian assumes divine honours, commanding himself to be stiled Lord and God.
88		7 Imp. Domitianus XIV. 8 M. Minucius Rufus.	
89		8 T. Aurelius Fulvius. 9 A Sempronius Atratinus.	Philosophers and Mathematicians again banished out of Rome.
90		9 Imp. Domitianus XV. 10 M. Cocceius Nerva II.	Apollonius Tyanæus the famous Magician, set up by the Gentiles as Rival to our Saviour, is brought before Domitian, shows tricks of Magic, and is said immediately to vanish out of his sight. The Second Persecution.
91		10 M. Ulpius Trajanus. 11 M. Acilius Glabrio.	* Cletus Bishop of Rome martyred this (if not rather the foregoing) year, April 26. he is succeeded by Clemens, May 16.
92		11 Imp. Domitianus XVI. 12 A. Volusius Saturninus II.	About this time S. John is supposed to be sent by the Proconsul of Asia to Rome, and by Domitian to have been put into a Vessel of hot Oil, and then banished into Patmos.
93		12 Sex. Pompeius Collega. 13 Cornelius Priscus.	
94		13 L. Nonius Asprenas Torquatus. 14 M. Arricinius Clemens.	S. John writes his Book of Revelations. Josephus finishes his Book of Jewish Antiquities.
95		14 Imp. Domitianus XVII. 15 T. Flavius Clemens Mart.	Fl. Clemens, Domitian's Cousin-german, and Consul with him this year, put to death for being a Christian. His Wife Fl. Domitilla, Domitian's Niece, banished for the same cause.

\* This Cletus is by the Greeks, and that with greatest probability, made the same with Anacletus, which breeds a great difference in their account of years. But because the account of the Greeks is not so clear and smooth, we have chosen, in assigning the times of the Bishops of Rome, to follow the Writers of that Church.

Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
96	Nerva à } 18. Sept.	15 C. Fulvius Valens. 16 1 C. Antistius Vetus.	Nerva revoking the Acts of Domitian, S. John is released of his banishment, and returns to Ephesus.
97		1 Coc. Nerva Imp. III. T. Virginus Rufus III. Suff. C. Cornelius Tacitus, 2 historicus.	S. John (this Year probably) after solemn preparation writes his Gospel at the earnest request of the Asian Churches.
98	Trajan. } à Jan. 27.	2 Imp. Nerva IV. 1 M. Ulpius Trajanus II.	Avilius dying, Cerdo succeeds in the See of Alexandria. S. Clemens Bishop of Rome is banished, and condemned to the Marble Quarries in the Taurica Cherfoneus.
99		1 C. Sosius Senecio II. 2 A. Cornelius Palma.	
100		2 Im. Trajanus III. M. Cornelius Fronto III. 3 Suff. Plinius junior.	S. John dies, and is buried at Ephesus. S. Clemens of Rome is thrown into the Sea, with an Anchor tied about his neck, November 9. having been sole Bishop of Rome 9 Years, 11 Months, and 12 Days.
101		3 Imp. Trajanus IV. 4 Sex. Articulcius Pætus.	Anacletus (according to the computation of the Church of Rome) succeeds in that See, April 3.
102		4 C. Sosius Senecio III. 5 L. Licinius Sura.	
103		5 Imp. Trajanus V. 6 L. Appius Maximus.	Elxai a false Prophet, Author of a new Sect, arises. Epiph. Hæref. 19.
104		6 L. Licinius Sura II. 7 P. Neratius Marcellus.	

<i>Ann. Chr.</i>	<i>Roman Emperours.</i>	<i>Consuls.</i>	<i>Ecclesiastical Affairs.</i>
105	<i>Trajan.</i>	7 T. Julius Candidus. 8 A. Julius Quadratus.	Barthimæus Bishop of Edessa suffers Martyrdom; others place it, Ann. 109.
106		8 L. Ceionius Commodus Verus. 9 L. Tullius Cerealis.	The Greek Menology mentions 11000 Christian Soldiers banished by Trajan into Armenia, and that 10000 of them were crucified upon Mount Ararat.
107		9 C. Sotius Senecio IV. 10 L. Licinius Sura III.	The Third Persecution wherein Simeon Bishop of Jerusalem is crucified in the 120 year of his age. Ignatius Bishop of Antioch condemned, and sent to Rome to be thrown to wild Beasts.
108		10 Ap. Annius Trebonius Gallus. 11 M. Atilius Bradua.	Ignatius his bones are conveyed back to Antioch, and there solemnly interred.
109		11 A. Cornel. Palma II. 12 C. Calvisius Tullus II.	Onesimus S. Paul's Disciple, whom the Martyrologies make Bishop of Ephesus, stoned at Rome, Feb. 16. Primus made Bishop of Alexandria.
110		12 Clodius Crispinus. 13 Solenus Orfilus Hafta.	Euaristus succeeds Anacletus Bishop of Rome, though the Greeks, who make Cletus and Anacletus the same Person, make him immediately to follow Clements.
111		13 L. Calpurnius Piso. 14 Vettius Rusticus Bolanus.	Justus dying, Zacchæus succeeds in the See of Jerusalem.
112		14 Imp. Trajanus VI. 15 C. Julius Africanus.	



<i>Ann. Chr.</i>	Roman Emperours.	<i>Consuls.</i>	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
113	<i>Trajan</i>	15 L. Publius Celsus.	
		16 C. Clodius Crispinus.	
114		16 Q. Ninnius Hafta.	
		17 P. Manlius Vopiscus.	
115		17 M. Valerius Messala. <i>vel ut al. Adrianus &amp;</i> Salinator.	<i>The Jews at Alexandria, and about Cyrene in Egypt rebel, who are slain in great numbers.</i>
		18 C. Popilius Carus Peto.	
116		18 Æmilius Ælianus.	<i>Papias Bishop of Hierapolis sets on foot the Millenarian Do- ctrine.</i>
		19 L. Antistius Vetus.	
117		19 Quintus Niger.	
		20	
118	<i>Adrianus</i> <i>ab Aug. 9.</i>	1 T. Vipsianus Apronianus.	<i>The Fourth Persecution raised against the Christians, re-inforcing that which had been set on foot by Trajan.</i>
		1 Imp. Adrianus II.	
119		2 T. Claudius Fuscus.	<i>Pope Evaristus martyred. He sate 9 Years, 3 Months, 10 Days. He was succeeded by Alexander a Roman. Justus made Bishop of Alexan- dria.</i>
		2 Imp. Adrianus III.	
120		3 Q. Junius Rusticus.	<i>The Christians severely prose- cuted at Rome, whereof many Martyrs, and more driven to hide themselves in the Cryptæ and Cœ- meteria under ground.</i>
		3 L. Catilius Severus.	
121		4 T. Aurelius Fulvus, postea Imp. Antoninus.	<i>A great tumult at Alexandria about the Idol Apis found there.</i>
		4 M. Annus Verus II.	
122		5 L. Augur.	<i>The Persecution rages in Asia, under the Government of Arrius Antoninus the Proconsul.</i>
		5 M. Acilius Aviola.	
		6 Corellius Pansa.	

<i>Ann. Chr.</i>	<i>Roman Emperours.</i>	<i>Consuls.</i>	<i>Ecclesiastical Affairs.</i>
123	<i>Adriani</i>	6 Q. Arrius Patinus. 7 C. Ventidius Apronianus.	Adrian comes to Athens, and is initiated in the Eleusinian mysteries. Quadratus Bishop of Athens, and Aristides present Apologies to the Emperour in behalf of the Christians.
124		7 M. Acilius Glabrio. 8 C. Bellicius Torquatus.	Serenius Granianus writes to the Emperour in favour of the Christians, by whose Rescript to M. Fundanus Proconsul of Asia (Granianus his successor) the proceedings against them are mitigated.
125		8 P. Cornelius Scipio Asiaticus II. 9 Q. Vettius Aquilinus.	
126		9 Vesproni <sup>9</sup> Candid <sup>9</sup> Ver <sup>9</sup> II. Ambiguus Bibulus. al. M. Loll. Pedius. 10 Q. Jun. Lepidus.	Adrian re-visits Athens, finishes and dedicates the Temple of Jupiter Olympius, and an Altar to himself.
127		10 Gallicanus. 11 C. Cælius Titianus.	
128		11 L. Nonius Asprenas Torquatus. 12 M. Annius Libo.	Aquila, a Kinsman of the Emperours, first turns Christian, then apostatizing to Judaism, translates the Old Testament into Greek.
129		12 Q. Juventius Celsus. 13 Q. Julius Balbus.	
130		13 Q. Fabius Catullinus. 12 M. Flavius Aper.	Ælius Adrianus having repaired Jerusalem, calls it after his own name, Ælia. The Martyrdom of Alexander Bishop of Rome, after he had sate 10 Years, 5 Months, 20 Days, to whom succeeded Sixtus a Roman.

Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
131	Adri- ani.	14 Ser. Octavius Lænas Pon- tianus. 15 M. Antoninus Rufinus.	Hymenæus made Bishop of A- lexandria, being the sixth Bishop of that See.
132		15 Sentius Augurinus. 16 Arrius Severianus.	The Jews rebel against the Ro- mans under the conduct of Barcho- chab an Impostor. Justin Martyr converted to Christianity about this time, or it may be, the following Year.
133		16 Hiberus. 17 Jul. Silanus Sifenna.	The Jews dispersed and over- come by the prudent Arts of Ju- lius Severus the Roman Gene- ral, though not fully suppressed till the following Year, when Barcho- chab was executed.
134		17 C. Julius Servilius Urfus Severianus. 18 C. Vibius Juventius Verus.	Basilides the Hæresiarch makes himself famous at Alexandria.
135		18 Pompeianus Lupercus. 19 L. Junius Atticus Acilianus.	Marcus, the first of the Gentile Converts, made Bishop of Jerusa- lem, all hitherto having been of the Circumcision.
136		19 L. Ceionius Commodus Verus. 20 Sex. Vetulenus Pompeia- nus.	Getulius, Amantius, Cerea- lis, and several others suffer Mar- tyrdom.
137		20 L. Ælius Verus Cæsar II. 21 P. Cælius Balbinus Vibullius Pius.	Phlegon the Trallian, former- ly servant to the Emperour Adri- an here ends his Book of Olympi- ads. Olym. 229. An. 1.
138	Antoninus Pius Jul. 10	21 Sulpicius Camerinus. 1 Quint. Niger Magnus.	
139		1 Imp. Antoninus Pius II. 2 Bruttius Præfens.	



Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
140	Antonini Pii	2 Imp. Anton. Pius III. 3 M. Aurelius Cæsar.	Upon Sixtus his Martyrdom Telephorus is chosen Bishop of Rome, according to the Roman account. J. Martyr presents his first ( u- sually put second ) Apology for the Christians.
141		3 M. Peducæus Syloga Priscinus. 4 T. Hoenius Severus.	
142		4 L. Cuspius Rufinus. 5 L. Statius Quadratus.	About this time the most absurd and senseless Heretics, the Ophitæ, Cainitæ, and Sethiani arise.
143		5 C. Bellicius Torquatus. T. Claudius Atticus. 6 Herodes.	
144		6 Lollianus Avitus. 7 C. Gavius Maximus.	Eumenes or Hymenæus Bi- shop of Alexandria dies, Marcus the seventh Bishop of that See succeeds. Valentinus the Heretic appears.
145		7 Imp. Anton. Pius IV. 8 M. Aurelius Cæsar II.	
146		8 Sex. Erucius Clarus II. 9 Cn. Claudius Severus.	Marcion after his frequent re- cantations, again lapses into He- resie, which he propagates more in- dustriously than before.
147		9 M. Valerius Largus. 10 M. Valerius Messalinus.	
148		10 C. Bellicius Torquatus II. 11 M. Salvius Julianus II.	
149		11 Ser. Cornelius Scipio Orfi- tus. 12 Q. Nonius Priscus.	Celadion succeeds as the eighth Bishop of Alexandria.

Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
150	Anton. Pii.	12 Romulus Gallicanus.	
		13 Antistius Vetus.	
151		13 Sex. Quinctilius Gordianus.	
		14 Sex. Quinct. Maximus.	
152		14 Sex. Acilius Glabrio.	Pope Telesphorus martyred, having sat 11 Years, 9 Months, 3 days. Petav. &c.
		15 C. Valerius Omollus Va- rianus.	Hyginus succeeds.
153		15 Brutius Præfens II.	
		16 M. Antinous Rufinus.	
154		16 L. Aurelius Cæsar.	* Anicetus according to the ac- count of the Greeks succeeds about this time in the See of Rome, not long after which S. Polycarp comes thither: and this no doubt much truer than the computation of the Church of Rome.
		17 Sextilius Lateranus.	
155		17 C. Julius Severus.	
		18 M. Rufinus Sabinianus.	
156		18 Plautius Sylvanus.	Pope Hygynus martyred, after he had sate four Years, wanting two days, to whom Pius succeeds. Petav. Ricciol. Briet. &c.
		19 Sentius Augurinus.	
157		19 Barbatus.	
		20 Regulus.	
158		20 Q. Fl. Tertullus.	
		21 Licinius Sacerdos.	
159		21 Plautius Quinctillus.	
		22 Statius Priscus.	

\* In the Catalogue of the Bishops of Rome, recorded by Optatus and S. Augustin, Anicetus is set before Pius: according to which account Anicetus his succession in that See, and consequently Polycarp's coming to Rome, must be placed fifteen Years sooner. See the life of S. Polycarp, Num. IV. p. 115.

Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
160	Antonini Pii 22	T. Vibius Barus.	
		23 Ap. Annius Bradua.	
161	M. Aurelius L. Ælius Verus. à 6. Martii.	23 M. Aurelius Cæsar III. 1 L. Ælius Verus Cæsar II.	
162		1 Q. Junius Rusticus. 2 Vettius Aquilinus.	Justin the Martyr presents his other Apology to the Emperour in behalf of the Christians. The Fifth Persecution begun.
163		2 L. Papirius Ælianus. 3 Junius Pastor.	Justin suffered Martyrdom (pro- bably about this time) at Rome, or at most, the next Year.
164		3 C. Julius Macrinus. 4 L. Cornelius Celsus.	Marcus and Timotheus mar- tyred at Rome.
165		4 L. Arrius Pudens. 5 M. Gavius Orfitus.	Upon Pope Pius his Martyr- dom, Anicetus is advanced into the Chair: though Eusebius and the Greeks according to their ac- count, make his Pontificate com- mence, Ann. Christ. 154. and accordingly fix the time of Poly- carp's coming to Rome.
166		5 Q. Servilius Pudens. 6 L. Fufidius Pollio.	
167		6 L. Aurelius Verus. 7 T. Numidius Quadratus.	S. Polycarp Bishop of Smyrna suffers Martyrdom there, together with Germanicus and others.
168		7 T. Junius Montanus. 8 L. Vettius Paulus.	Theophilus made Bishop of Antioch, who learnedly defends the cause of Christianity against the Gentiles, Eusebius refers it to the following Year.



Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
169	<i>M. Aurelii</i> <i>L. Ælii</i> <i>Veri.</i> } 8	8 Sotius Priscus. 9 Q. Cælius Apollinaris.	Gervasius and Protasius under- go Martyrdom about this time at Millain.
170		9 L. Julius Clarus. 10 M. Aurelius Cethegus.	Melito Bishop of Sardis, and A- pollinaris Bishop of Hierapolis pre- sent their Apologetics to the Em- perour for the Christians.
171		10 L. Septimius Severus II. al. T. Tibinus Serenus. 11 Herennianus. al. C. Scoedius Natta.	Montanus and his Accomplices Authors of the new Prophecy, be- gin now more plainly to discover themselves, having craftily broa- ched their errors some Years be- fore.
172		11 Claudius Maximus. 12 Cornelius Scipio Orfitus.	Tatian, heretofore Justin Mar- tyr's Scholar, becomes Author of the Sect, called Enkratitæ. Bardesanes the Syrian infected with Valentinianism.
173		12 Claudius Severus. 13 T. Claudius Pompeianus.	Pope Anicetus crowned with Martyrdom, having been Bishop of Rome 8 Years, 2 Months, 7 Days. Soter succeeds.
174		13 Annius Trebonius Gallus. 14 L. Flaccus.	M. Aurelius his Victory over the Quadi and Marcomanni in Germany, gained by the Prayers of the Christian Legion.
175		14 Calpurnius Piso. 15 M. Salvius Julianus.	
176		15 T. Vitrasius Pollio. 16 M. Flavius Aper.	

Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
177	M. Aurel. 16.	L. Aurel. Commodus Imp. 17 Plautius Quintillus.	Soter being taken away by martyrdom, Eleutherus a Greek succeeds in the Church of Rome. Athenagoras the Christian Philosopher of Athens is now supposed to have presented his Apology.
178		17 Vettius Rufus. 18 Cornelius Scipio Orfitus.	The foregoing Year a Persecution raged horribly in France, wherein besides many others died Pothinus Bishop of Lyons, to whom succeeded Irenæus, the Year following.
179		18 Imp. L. Aurelius Commodus II. 19 Vespronius Candidus Verus.	The Cataphrygian Heresie greatly prevails.
180	Commodus 2 à Mart. 16.	19 Bruttius Prasens II. Sex. Quintilius Cordianus.	Julianus created Bishop of Alexandria. Pantænus a Christian Philosopher opens the Catechetical School at Alexandria.
181		1 Imp. Commodus III. 2 Antistius Burrhus.	The Persecution against the Christians much abated.
182		2 Petronius Mamertinus. 3 Trebellius Rufus.	Theodotion of Pontus, first a Marcionite, then a Jew, translates the Old Testament into Greek. The Temple of Serapis at Alexandria burnt down.
183		3 Imp. Commodus IV. 4 M. Aufidius Victorinus.	
184		4 M. Eggius Marullus seu Marcellus. 5 M. Papirius Ælianus.	Commodus introduces the worship of Isis (formerly prohibited) into Rome.

Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
185	Commodi 5	Triarius Maternus.	
		6 M. Atilius Metilius Bradua.	
186		6 Imp. Commodus V.	<i>About this time Lucius a Prince of Britain is said to have sent Letters to Pope Eleutherius to furnish him with Preachers to publish the Christian Faith in these parts.</i>
		7 M. Acilius Glabrio.	<i>Origen born.</i>
187		7 Tullius seu Clodius Crispinus.	<i>Apollonius a great Philosopher, and (as S. Hierom affirms) a Senator, pleads his own, and the cause of the Christian Religion before the Senate, for which he suffers Martyrdom.</i>
		8 Papirius Ælianus.	
188		8 C. Allius Fuscianus.	<i>The Capitol burnt by Lightning, which destroyed the adjacent Buildings, especially the famous Libraries.</i>
		9 Duillius Silanus.	
189		9 Junius Silanus.	<i>Demetrius ordained Bishop of Alexandria, who sate 43 Years.</i>
		10 Q. Servilius Silanus.	<i>Serapion made Bishop of Antioch, this, or as others, the following Year.</i>
190		10 Imp. Commodus VI.	<i>Commodus will have himself accounted Hercules, the Son of Jupiter, and accordingly habits himself; with other extravagant instances of folly.</i>
		11 Petronius Septimianus.	
191		11 Cassius Apronianus.	<i>Julian a Senator, and many others said to be martyred about this time.</i>
		12 M. Attilius Metilius Bradua II.	
192		12 Imp. Commodus VII.	<i>Pope Eleutherius having sate 15 Years and 23 Days, dies; in whose room Victor an African succeeds.</i>
		13 P. Helvius Pertinax.	



Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
193	<i>Pertinax</i> à 1 Jan. <i>Did. Julian</i> <sup>9</sup> à Mart. 28. <i>Severus</i> } à Maii 11. } 1	Q. Sotius Falco.  C. Julius Clarus.	
194	<i>Severi</i> 1	Imp. Severus II.  2 Clodius Albinus Cæsar II.	Clemens Alexandrinus Pantænus his Scholar and successor in the Catechetical School, was famous about this time. Pope Victor excommunicates Theodorus the Heretic.
195		2 Q. Fl. Tertullus.  3 T. Fl. Clemens.	Narcissus made Bishop of Jerusalem. He is famous for miracles and an holy life.
196		3 Cn. Domitius Dexter.  4 L. Valerius Messala Priscus.	Pope Victor revives the controversy about the celebration of Easter, threatens to excommunicate the Asiatic Churches, for which he is severely reprov'd by many, and especially by Irenæus. Several Synods holden to this purpose.
197		4 Ap. Claudius Lateranus. 5 M. Marius Rufinus.	The Jews and Samaritans rebel, and are overcome, and their Religion strictly forbidden. Severus triumphs for that Victory.
198		5 Tib. Aterius Saturninus.  6 C. Annus Treboni <sup>9</sup> Gallus.	
199		6 P. Cornelius Anulinus.  7 M. Aufidius Fronto.	Severus creates his Son Antoninus Emperour, his Son Geta Cæsar, and bestows a large Donative upon the Soldiers, which gave occasion to Tertullian to write his Book De Corona.

Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
200	Severi	7 Tib. Claudius Severus.	<i>The Christians at Rome severely treated by Plautianus Prefect of the City, and in Afric by Saturninus the Proconsul.</i>
		8 C. Aufidius Victorinus.	<i>Tertullian writes his Apologetic either this, or the following Year.</i>
201		8 L. Annius Fabianus.	<i>Pope Victor after 9 Years, and 2 Months, being martyred, leaves the place to Zephyrinus.</i>
		9 M. Nonius Mucianus.	<i>Tertullian presents his Discourse to the President Scapula.</i>
202		9 Imp. Severus III.	<i>The Sixth Persecution; wherein Leonidas, Origen's Father suffers Martyrdom at Alexandria: Irenæus at Lyons in France.</i>
		10 Imp. Antoninus Caracalla.	
203		10 P. Septimius Geta.	<i>Origen a very Youth sets up a Grammar School at Alexandria, and becomes famous.</i>
		11 L. Septimius Plautianus.	<i>At 18 Years of Age he is preferred by Demetrius the Bishop to be Instructor of the Catechumens.</i>
204		11 L. Fabius Chilo Septimius.	<i>The Secular Games celebrated at Rome, upon which occasion, probably, Tertullian wrote his Book De Spectaculis, and it may be, that De Idololatria.</i>
		12 M. Annius Libo.	
205		12 Imp. Antoninus Caracalla II.	
		13 P. Septimius Geta Cæsar.	
206		13 M. Nummi <sup>9</sup> Anni <sup>9</sup> Albinus.	<i>Origen makes the famous attempt upon himself, in making himself an Eunuch.</i>
		14 Fulvius Æmilianus.	

Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
207	Severi	14 M. Flavius Aper.  15 Q. Allius Maximus.	Tertullian writes against the Marcionites; and his Book De Pallio, and was then (probably) made Presbyter of Carthage. About this time Minucius Felix is supposed to publish his Dialogue called Octavius.
208		15 Imp. Antoninus Caracalla III.  16 P. Septimius Geta Cæsar. II.	
209		16 T. Claudius Pompeianus.  17 Lollianus Avitus.	
210		17 M. Acilius Faustinus.  C. Cæsonius Macer 18 Rufinianus.	
211	Antoninus Caracalla a 4 Febr.	18 Q. Epidius Rufus Lollianus Gentianus. 1 Pomponius Bassus.	
212		1 M. Pompeius Asper.  2 P. Asper.  2 Imp. Caracalla IV.	Alexander a Cappadocian Bishop, made Bishop of Jerusalem.
213		3 P. Cælius Balbinus.	
214		3 Silius Messala.  4 Q. Aquilius Sabinus.	A disputation held at Rome between Caius and Proclus one of Montanus his Disciples; whereupon Pope Zephyrin excluded Proclus and Tertullian communion with the Church of Rome, which occasioned Tertullian's starting aside to Montanus his Party.



Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
215	Antonini 4	4 Emilius Lætus.	Tertullian writes against the Orthodox, against whom he inveighs under the name of Psychici.
		5 Anicius Cerealis.	
216		5 Q. Aquilius Sabinus II.	
		6 Sex. Corn. Anulinus.	
217	Macrinus & Diadum. F. d 10. April. }	6 Bruttius Præfens. 7 Extricatus.	A Greek Translation of the Bible, called the Fifth Edition, found in a Hogthead at Jericho, inserted by Origen into his Octapla.
218	Antoninus Elagabalus d 7. Jun. }	2 Anton. Diadumenus Cæsar. 1 Adventus.	
219		1 Imp. Elagabalus II. 2 Licinius Sacerdos.	Pope Zephyrin dies. He sate 22 Years, and so many days. Succeeded by Calistus.
220		2 Imp. Elagabalus III. 3 M. Aurelius Eutychianus Comazon.	Julius Africanus a famous Christian Writer, sent upon an Embassie to the Emperour, for the rebuilding of Nicopolis (anciently Emmaus) a City in Palestin.
221		3 Annius Gratus. 4 Claudius Seleucus.	
222	Alexander Mam. d Martii 6. }	4 Imp. Elagabalus IV. 1 M. Aurelius Severus Alexander Cæsar.	Hyppolytus Bishop of Portus composes his Paschal Canon.

<i>Ann. Chr.</i>	<i>Roman Emperours.</i>	<i>Consuls.</i>	<i>Ecclesiastical Affairs.</i>
223	<i>Alexandri</i>	1 Maximus. 2 Papirius Ælianus.	<i>Among the famous Men of this time was Ulpian the Lawyer, who collected all the Imperial Edicts formerly published against the Christians.</i>
224		2 Claudius Julianus. 3 Claudius Crispinus.	<i>The Christians cruelly persecuted at Rome at the instigation of Ulpian the great Lawyer.</i>  <i>Pope Callistus martyred, after he had sat 5 Years, 1 Month, 12 Days. Urban chosen in his room.</i>
225		3 L. Turpilius Dexter. 4 M. Mæcius Rufus.	
226		4 Imp. Alexander II. 5 C. Quintilius Marcellus.	
227		5 D. Cælius Balbinus II. M. Clodius Pupienus 6 Maximus.	<i>Hippolytus Bishop of Portus suffers Martyrdom.</i>
228		6 Vertius Modestus. 7 Probus.	<i>Origen ordained Presbyter by Alexander Bishop of Jerusalem, and Theoctistus of Cæsarea.</i>
229		7 Imp. Alexander III. 8 Dio Cassius <i>historicus</i> .	<i>The Sixth Greek Edition found at Nicopolis.</i>
230		8 Calpurnius Agricola. 9 Clementinus.	<i>Origen prosecuted, and Synodically condemned by Demetrius Bishop of Alexandria.</i>

<i>Ann. Chr.</i>	Roman Emperours.	<i>Consuls.</i>	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
231	<i>Alexandri</i> 9	T. Claudius Pompeianus.	Origen resigns up his Catechetical School to his Scholar Heraclas, who is soon after chosen Bishop of Alexandria.
	10	Felicianus.	Pope Urban beheaded. He is succeeded by Pontianus.
232	10	Julius Lupus.	Origen departs from Alexandria, and fixes his residence at Cæsarea in Palestin.
	11	Maximus.	Plotinus becomes Ammonius his Scholar at Alexandria.
233	11	Maximus II.	
	12	Ovinus Paternus.	
234	12	Maximus III.	Pontianus Bishop of Rome banished into Sardinia.
	13	Urbanus.	
235	13	L. Catilius Severus.	Maximinus raises the Seventh Persecution against the Christians.
	14		Origen writes his exhortation to Martyrdom.
	18 Martii	L. Ragonius Urinatius Quintianus.	Pope Pontianus suffers Martyrdom in Sardinia.
236	1	Imp. Maximinus.	Anterus succeeds in the Chair.
	2	C. Julius Africanus.	Anterus scarce having possessed his place one Month, is slain; and Fabian elected in his room.
237	2	P. Titius Perpetuus.	
	3	L. Ovinus Rusticus	
	1	Cornelianus.	
	1	M. Ulpus Crinitus.	
238	<i>Gordian</i> 1 <i>amenfe</i> 1 <i>Martii.</i> 1	C. Nonius Proculus Pontianus.	



Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
239	<i>Gordiani</i>	1 Imp. Gordianus. 2 M. Acilius Aviola.	Zebinus Bishop of Antioch dies; Babylas is chosen to that See.
240		2 Vettius Sabinus. 3 Venuſtus.	About this time Origen is thought to have taken his second journey to Athens, where he finished his Commentaries upon Ezekiel.
241		3 Imp. Gordianus II. 4 T. Claudius Pompeianus II.	
242		4 C. Aufidius Atticus. 5 C. Asinius Prætextatus.	
243		5 C. Julius Africanus. 6 Æmilius Pappus.	Origen is sent for into Arabia, where he disputes with, and converts Beryllus from his unsound and erroneous opinions.
244	<i>Philippus</i> à menſe April.	6 Fulvius Æmilianus. 1 Peregrinus.	
245		1 Imp. Philippus. 2 Tib. Fabius Titianus.	
246		2 Bruttius Præſens. 3 Nummius Albinus.	Dionysius, one of Origen's Scholars, and successors in the Schola Κατηχησέων, made Bishop of Alexandria.
247		3 Imp. Philippus II. 4 M. Philippus F. Cæſar.	The Annus Milleſimus ab U. C. begun this, ended the following Year, and celebrated by the Emperor with all imaginable solemnity and magnificence.

Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
248	<i>Philippi</i>	4 Imp. Philippus III. 5 M. Julius Philippus F. II.	Cyprian <i>chosen Bishop of Carthage.</i>
249	<i>Decius</i> à Maio. }	5 Fulvius Æmilianus II. 6 Vettius Aquilinus.	<i>A tumult raised at Alexandria by an Impostor, gives occasion to a preliminary Persecution against the Christians there.</i>
250		1 Imp. Messius Decius. 2 Annius Maximus Gratus.	<i>The Eighth Persecution raised by Decius. S. Cyprian in retirement. Pope Fabian martyred. After whose decease a vacancy in that See for above a Year, Novatian endeavouring to thrust himself in.</i>
251	<i>Gallus &amp; Volusianus</i> F. à Dec. }	2 Imp. Decius II. 3 Q. Etruscus Decius F. Cæsar.	<i>Great Schisms in the African Churches about the lapsed. Cornelius elected Bishop of Rome.</i>
252		1 Imp. Trebonianus Gallus II. 2 C. Vibius Volusianus.	<i>The Novatian Doctrines condemned in a Synod of 60 Bishops at Rome. The Emperours renew the Persecution begun under Decius. A great mortality throughout the World.</i>
253	<i>Valerianus</i> cum Gallieno F. à Dec. }	2 C. Vibius Volusianus II. 3 M. Valerius Maximus.	<i>Cornelius first banished, then recalled, cruelly beaten, and at last beheaded. Lucius succeeds him.</i>
254		1 Imp. Licinius Valerianus II. 2 Imp. Gallienus.	<i>Origen dies, and is buried at Tyre. Valerian the Emperour at first a great Patron of the Christians.</i>
255		2 Imp. Valerianus III. 3 Imp. Gallienus II.	<i>Pope Lucius after one Year, and three Months suffers Martyrdom. Stephen a Roman chosen to be his successor.</i>

<i>Ann. Chr.</i>	Roman Emperours.	<i>Consuls.</i>	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
256	<i>Valeriani</i> 3	M. Maximus.	<i>The great controversie about the re-baptizing such as had been baptized by Heretics hotly ventilated.</i>
	4	M. Acilius Glabrio.	<i>The heats between Cyprian and Stephen of Rome.</i>
257		4 Imp. Valerianus IV.	<i>The Ninth Persecution begun by Valerian.</i>
	5	Imp. Gallienus III.	<i>Sabellius confounds the Persons in the Trinity, and spreads his Heresie.</i>
258		5 M. Aurelius Memmius Fuscus.	<i>Pope Stephen slain Aug. 2. which others refer to the foregoing Year. Sixtus succeeds.</i>
	6	Pomponius Bassus.	<i>S. Cyprian beheaded at Carthage, Sept. 14.</i>
259	<i>Gallienus solus, capto Valer.</i> 6	Fulvius Æmilianus. <i>al. Gallienus IV.</i>	<i>Pope Sixtus and his Deacon Laurentius receive the Crown of Martyrdom.</i>
	7	Pomponius Bassus II. <i>al. Valerianus jun.</i>	<i>Dionysius succeeds in the See of Rome.</i>
260		7 Cornelius Secularis.	<i>Paul of Samosata made Bishop of Antioch.</i>
	8	Junius Donatus.	<i>Gallienus stops the Persecution against the Christians.</i>
261		8 Imp. Gallienus IV.	<i>Dionysius Bishop of Alexandria writes to Pope Dionysius to vindicate himself from the suspicion of Sabellianism charged upon him.</i>
	9	Volusianus.	
262		9 Imp. Gallienus V.	<i>Æmilian attempts to make himself Emperour, and besieges Alexandria, where the Christians are reduced to great straits.</i>
	10	App. Pompeius Fauftinus.	
263		10 Nummius Albinus.	
	11	Maximus Dexter.	



Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
264	<i>Gallieni</i> 11	Imp. Gallienus VI.	
	12	Emilius Saturninus.	
265	12	Valerianus Cæsar II.	<i>A Synod held at Antioch against Paulus Samosatenus the Bishop of it.</i>
	13	L. Cæsonius Lucillus. Macer Rufinianus.	<i>Dionysius Bishop of Alexandria, and Gregory Bishop of Neocæsarea depart this life.</i>
266	13	Imp. Gallienus VII.	
	14	Sabinillus.	<i>Hymenæus ordained Bishop of Jerusalem.</i>
267	14	Ovinus Paternus.	
	15	Arcefilaus.	
268	15	Ovinus Paternus II.	
	<i>Claudius</i> } 1 <i>à Mart. 21.</i>	Marinianus.	<i>Claudius the Emperour persecutes the Christians at Rome.</i>
269	1	Imp. Aur. Claudius.	
	2	Ovinus Paternus III.	
270	2	Flavius Antiochianus.	<i>Another Synod held at Antioch, wherein Paul of Samosata is condemned and deposed, and Domnus placed in his room.</i>
	<i>Aurelianus</i> } 1 <i>à Mart.</i>	Furius Orfitus.	<i>Pope Dionysius dies, Decem. 26.</i>
271	1	Imp. Aurelianus.	
	2	Pomponius Bassus. <i>al. C. Jul. Capitolinus.</i>	<i>Felix chosen Bishop of Rome.</i>
272	2	Quietus.	
	3	Voldumianus.	<i>Many suffer Martyrdom about this time.</i>

Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
273	<i>Aureliani</i> 3	M. Claudius Tacitus.	
		4 Furius Placidianus.	
274		4 Imp. Aurelianus II.	<i>Zenobia Queen of the Palmyreni, a Jewess, and (if some might be credited) a Christian, overcome by Aurelian, and carried in triumph to Rome.</i>
		5 C. Julius Capitolinus.	
275	<i>Tacitus</i> } à 25. Sept.	5 Imp. Aurelianus III.	<i>Pope Felix crowned with martyrdom, after he had sitten 4 Tears and 5 Months. His successor was Eutychianus a Tuscan.</i>
		1 T. Nonius Marcellinus.	
276	<i>Florianus</i> } April 12. <i>Probus</i> à Jul. 1.	1 Imp. M. Cl. Tacitus II.	
		Fulvius Æmilianus.	
277		1 Imp. Aurelius Probus.	<i>The Manichæan Heresie springs up, planted by Manes a Persian, originally called Curbicum, the Author of that wild and execrable Sect.</i>
		2 Anicius Paulinus. <i>al. M. Furius Lupus.</i>	
278		2 Imp. Probus II.	<i>Anatolius Bishop of Laodicea, eminent for his skill in Philosophy and Humane Learning. He had formerly been Colleague with Theotecnus Bishop of Casarea in Palæstin.</i> <i>Cyrillus the 18 Bishop of Antioch.</i>
		3 M. Furius Lupus <i>al. Virius.</i>	
279		3 Imp. Probus III.	
		4 Ovinus Paternus <i>al. C. Junius Tiberianus.</i>	
280		4 Junius Messala.	
		5 Gratus.	

Ann. Chr.	Roman Emperours.	Consuls.	Ecclesiastical Affairs.
281	Probi	5 Imp. Probus IV. 6 C. Junius Tiberianus.	Theonas created Bishop of Alexandria, the 15 Bishop of that Church.
282	Carus cum FF. Numeri- ano, Carino Aug. 12.	6 7 Imp. Probus V. 1 Pomponius Victorinus.	
283		1 Imp. M. Carus. 2 M. A. Carinus Cæsar.	
284	Dioclesia- nus à Sept. 17.	2 Imp. Carinus. 1 Imp. Numerianus.	Eutychianus Bishop of Rome crowned with Martyrdom, Decemb. 8. His successor was Caius, a Dalmatian, and a Kinsman (as is said) of Dioclesian.  The Dioclesian Era begins here.
285		1 Imp. Dioclesianus II. 2 Aristobulus.	
286		2 Maximus Junius Priscillianus. 3 Vettius Aquilinus.	* The Thebean Legion under the command of Mauricius, being sent to attend upon Maximian in his expedition against the Bagaudæ, and refusing to do sacrifice, are first decimated, and then universally destroyed at Octodurus in France.
287		3 Imp. Dioclesianus III. 4 Imp. Maximianus Herculeus.	Dioclesian and Maximian write to the Proconsul of Afric to punish the Manichees, to burn their Books, execute their Persons, and confiscate their Estates.

\* Though this seems the most proper period for the Martyrdom of the Thebean Legion when Maximian was sent, against the Rebels in France; yet is it said in the Acts of their Martyrdom, that in their journey out of the East, they came to Rome, and were confirmed in the Faith by Marcellinus then Bishop of it. Which if so, they could not suffer sooner than Ann. Chr. CCXCVI. when Marcellinus succeeded in that See.



<i>Ann. Chr.</i>	<i>Roman Emperours.</i>	<i>Consuls.</i>	<i>Ecclesiastical Affairs.</i>
288	<i>Dioclesiani</i> 4	M. Aurelius Maximus. 5 Pomponius Januarius.	
289		5 Annius Bassus. 6 L. Ragonius Quinctianus.	
290		6 Imp. Dioclesianus IV. 7 Imp. Maximianus Herculeus II.	Tharacus, Probus, and Andronicus <i>suffer Martyrdom at Tarsus in Cilicia.</i>
291		7 C. Junius Tiberianus. 8 Cassius Dio.	
292		8 Afranius Hannibalianus. 9 M. Aur. Asclepiodotus.	
293		9 Imp. Dioclesianus V. 10 Imp. Maximianus III.	Dioclesian <i>assumes the title of Lord, challenges divine honours, and suffers himself to be adored as God.</i>
294		10 Constantius Chlorus Cæsar. Galerius Maximianus Cæsar. 11	
295		11 Nummius Tuscus. Annius Cornelius 12 Anulinus.	
296		12 Imp. Dioclesianus VI. 13 Constantius Cæsar II.	Caius Bishop of Rome <i>martyred, April 22.</i> Marcellinus a Roman <i>succeeds in the Government of that Church, who in the Dioclesian Persecution lapsed and sacrificed to Idols, though recovering he died a Martyr.</i>

<i>Ann. Chr.</i>	<i>Roman Emperours.</i>	<i>Consuls.</i>	<i>Ecclesiastical Affairs.</i>
297	<i>Dioclesiani</i> 13	Imp. Maximianus Hercules V.	
	14	Galerius Cæsar II.	
298	14	Anicius Faustus.	<i>Zabdas ordained the 27 Bishop of Jerusalem.</i>
	15	Severus Gallus.	
	15	Imp. Dioclesianus VII.	
299	16	Imp. Maximianus Hercules VI.	
300	16	Constantius Chlorus Cæsar III.	<i>The Christians at Rome harassed out in working at Dioclesian's Baths, most of whom, when the Work was finished, were put to death, though the Tenth Persecution did not universally begin till three years after, Ann. Chr. 303. Diocles. 19.</i>
	16	Galerius Armentarius Cæsar III.	

F I N I S.